Stanqua Explorator.

DIANA

OF GEORGE OF MONTEMAYOR:

Tranſlated out of Spaniſh into *Engliſh by* BARTHOLOMEW YONG of the Middle Temple Gentleman.

At London,
Printed by Edm. Boliſant,
Impenſis G. B.
1598

S. Su Ben: Jonſonij.

TO THE RIGHT HONORABLE and my very good Lady *the Lady* RICH.

RIGHT HONORABLE, ſuch are the apparant defects of arte and iudgement in this new pourtraied DIANA, that their diſcouerie muſt needes make me bluſh and abaſe the worke, vnleſſe with vndeſerued fauour erected vpon the high and ſhining pillar of your Honorable protection, they may ſeeme to the beholder leſſe, or none at all. The glorie wherof as with reaſon it can no waies be thought woorthie, but by boldly aduenturing vpon the apparant demonſtration of your magnificent minde, wherein all noble vertues haue their proper ſeate, and on that ſingular deſire, knowledge and delight, wherewith your Ladiſhip entertaineth, embraceth and affecteth honeſt endeuours, learned languages, and this particular ſubiect of DIANA, warranted by all vertue and modeſtie, as COLLIN in his French dedicatorie to the Illuſtrous Prince LEWIS of LORRAINE at large ſetteth downe and commendeth: ſo now preſenting it to ſo ſoueraigne a light, and relying on a gracious acceptance, what can be added more to the full content, deſire and perfection of DIANA, and of her vnwoorthie Interpreter (that hath in Engliſh attire expoſed her to the view of ſtrangers) then for their comfort and defence to be armed with the Honorable titles and countenance of ſo high and excellent a Patroneſſe? But as certaine yeares paſt (my Honorable good Lady) in a publike ſhewe at the Middle Temple, where your Honorable preſence with many noble Lordes and faire Ladies graced and beautified thoſe ſportes, it befell to my lot in that woorthie aſſemblie, vnwoorthily to performe the part of a French Oratour by a deducted ſpeech in the ſame toong, and that amongſt ſo many good conceits and ſuch generall skill in toongs, all the while I was rehearſing it, there was not any, whoſe mature iudgement and cenſure in that language I feared and ſuſpected more then your Ladiſhips, whoſe attentiue eare and eie daunted my imagination with the apprehenſion of my diſabilitie, and your Ladiſhips perfect knowledge in the ſame: Now once againe in this tranſlation out of Spaniſh (which language alſo with the preſent matter being ſo well knowen to your

Ladiſhip) whoſe reprehenſion and ſeuere ſentence of all others may I more iuſtly feare, then that which (Honorable Madame) at election you may herein duely giue, or with fauour take away. But as then by your gracious aſpect and milde countenance I flattered my ſelfe with your fauourable applauſe of the firſt; So now to preuent the ſecond, I haue no other meanes, then the humble inſinuation of it to your moſt Honorable name & clemencie, moſt humbly beſeeching the ſame to pardon all thoſe faultes, which to your learned and iudicious view ſhall occurre. Since then for pledge of the dutifull and zealous deſire I haue to ſerue your Ladiſhip, the great diſproportion of your moſt noble eſtate to the qualitie of my poore condition, can affoorde nothing elſe but this ſmall preſent, my praier ſhall alwaies importune the heauens for the happie increaſe of your high and woorthie degree, and for the full accompliſhment of your moſt Honorable and vertuous deſires.

From High Ongerin Eſſex the 28. of Nouemb. 1598.

Your Honors moſt humbly deuoted,

BARTHOL. YONG.

The Preface to diuers learned Gentlemen, and other my louing friendes.

ABout nineteene yeeres paſt (curteous Gentlemen) comming out of Spaine into my natiue countrey, and hauing ſpent welny three yeeres in ſome ſerious ſtudies and certaine affaires, with no meanes or occaſion to exerciſe the Spaniſh toong (by diſcontinuance whereof it had almoſt ſhaken hands with me) it was my good hap to fall into the companie and acquaintance of my eſpeciall good friend *Edward Baniſter* of Ideſworth in the Countie of Southampton Eſquier; who perceiuing my remiſſenes in the ſaide language, perſwaded & encouraged me earneſtly, by ſome good tranſlation to recal it to her former place: And to that intent he gaue me the firſt and ſecond Part of *Diana* of *Montemayor* in Spaniſh, which Booke (althongh I had beene two yeeres in Spaine) till then I neuer ſaw nor heard of; whoſe friendly care and deſire to preuent ſo great a loſſe, and to preſerue ſuch an ornament in me, I confeſſe was the chiefe and principall cauſe (and therefore the onely credit) of this tranſlation, whereby I recouered that toong againe that lay (as it were) ſmothered in the cinders of obliuion. The ſecond cauſe of this my labour, was the delight I paſſed in diſcurring moſt of thoſe townes and places in it with a pleaſant recordation of my pen, which mine eies ſo often with ioy and ſorrow had beheld. The third, the reſolued then intent I had neuer (howſoeuer now it hath eſcaped my hands) to put it in Print, in proofe whereof it hath lyen by me finiſhed *Horaces* ten and ſixe yeeres more. For till then I neuer tried my vnproper vaine in making an Engliſh verſe: how well or ill then the hard and ſtrange kinde of Spaniſh is turned, I leaue to your fauourable cenſure and pardon: The low and paſtorall ſtile hereof, *Montemayor* in his Epiſtle to the L. of Villanoua excuſeth, entreating of Shepherds, though indeed they were but ſhadowes of great and honorable perſonages, and of their marriages, that not many yeeres agoe liued in the Court of Spaine, whoſe poſteritie to this day liue in noble eſtate. But touching the Bookes following, you muſt vnderſtand that *George* of *Montemayor* a Gentleman ſprung out of the noble houſe of *Montemayor* in Portugal, after he had ended his firſt Part of *Diana*, which he diſtributed into ſeuen Bookes, intending to ſet forth the ſecond Part, and before his departure into Italie (where I heard he died) imparted his purpoſe, and the ſubiect of his intended ſecond Part, to *Alonſo Perez*, who anſwering his intent, wrote the ſecond Part of *Diana*, contayning eight Bookes, promiſing in the end thereof to continue it with a third Part, which yet he hath not done, although I heare he hath a purpoſe to do it. But *Gaſpar Gil Polo* a Valentian Gentleman, who in my opinion excelleth for fine conceit (whether before or after that *Alonſo Perez* ſecond Part came forth) made another Part of *Diana*, naming it the firſt Part of Enamoured *Diana*; the which being diuided into fiue Bookes, he intituleth to follow in due ſequence the firſt ſeuen Bookes of *Diana* of *George* of *Montemayor*. And in the ende of that firſt Part of Enamoured *Diana*, he likewiſe maketh a reference to another Part which he promiſed to ſet foorth; the which and that of *Alonſo Perez*, if euer they come to light, I leaue to ſome finer wit and better iudgement to Engliſh, my ſelfe hauing done too much by launching ſo far into the maine, vnleſſe (happily) in your fauourable iudgements it may finde a friendly

friendly and temperate conſtruction. Hauing compared the French copies with the Spaniſh originall, I iudge the firſt Part to be exquiſite; the other two corruptly done with a confuſion of verſe into Proſe, and leauing out in many places diuers hard ſentences, and ſome leaues in the end of the third Part, wherefore they are but blind guides by any to be imitated. Well might I haue excuſed theſe paines, if onely *Edward Paſton* Eſquier (who heere and there for his owne pleaſure (as I vnderſtand) hath aptly turned out of Spaniſh into Engliſh ſome leaues that liked him beſt) had alſo made an abſolute and complete tranſlation of all the Parts of *Diana*; the which, for his trauell in that Countrey, and great knowledge in that language, accompanied with other learned and good parts in him, had of all others, that euer yet I heard tranſlate theſe Bookes, prooued the rareſt and worthieſt to be embraced. The faults eſcaped in the Printing, the copie being verie darke and enterlined, and I loth to write it out againe, I pray you Gentlemen pardon, ſince all the laſt Terme that it was in the Preſſe (hauing matters of greater conſequence in charge) I could not intende the correction: aduertiſing you by the way that the greateſt faults are at the ende of the Booke ſet downe, the leſſe being of no moment purpoſely omitted. Fare ye well and continue me in your woonted loue and fauours.

Yours in all friendly offices,

B. Y.



THE EPISTLE

To the Illuſtrous and noble Lord *Don Iuan de Caſtella* de Villa Noua, Baron of Bicorb and Queſa, *of* GEORGE *of* Montemayor.

ALthough this cuſtome were not very auncient, moſt noble L. for Authours to dedicate their workes to perſonages of honour and renowne, by whome they were protected and defended; notwithſtanding your rare and high deſerts (as well for your noble and ancient houſe from whence you are deſcended, as alſo for the reſplendant valour and vertue of your perſon) might with greater reaſon then I can expreſſe, incite me to performe more then this obliged dutie. And admit the baſe ſtile of the worke, and the Authours ſmall woorth, in reaſon ought not ſo far extend as to dedicate it to your Lordſhip: yet excluded from all other remedies, I preſumed onely on this, that it was ſomewhat accounted of. For precious ſtones are not ſo highly valued for the name they haue (for they may be falſe and counterfeite) as for his eſtimate in whoſe handes they are: I humbly beſeech your good Lordſhip to entertaine this booke vnder your Hon. ampare and correction, as to the Authour heereof (being but a ſtranger) you haue done no leſſe, ſince his poore abilitie is not able to ſerue your Lordſhip in any other thing: whoſe wiſhed life and noble eſtate our Lord increaſe for many yeeres.

To the ſame Lord.

Mæcenas was to *Maro* of great fame
A ſingular good Lord and louing frend,
And *Alexander* did enioy that ſame
Rare wit of *Homer*, death though him did end:
And ſo the *Villanouas* generous name
The *Luſitan* poore Authour doth defend,
Making a baſe and wanting wit t'aſpire
Vnto the clouds, and yet a great deale higher.

Don Gaſpar Romani to the Authour.

If Lady LAVRAS memorie vnſtained
PETRARC in endleſſe verſe hath left renowned:
And if with Laurell HOMER hath beene crowned
For writing of the wars the Greekes obtained:
If Kings t'aduaunce the glorie they haue gained
In life time, when fierce MARS in battell frowned,
Procure it ſhould not be in LETHE drowned,
But after death by hiſtorie maintained:
More iuſtly then ſhouldſt thou be celebrated
(O excellent DIANA) for the faireſt
Of all the faire ones, that the world hath brought foorth:
Since all thoſe wits, whoſe pens were eſtimated
To write the beſt, in glorie thou impaireſt,
And from them all the Laurell crowne haſt ſought foorth.

Don Hieronymo Sant-Perez, to George of Montemayor.

Parnaſſe, O ſacred mount and full of glorie,
The Poets muſe, delight of their deſires:
Me thinkes thou art too comfortleſſe and ſorie,
Compar'd with this, whoſe famous name aſpires.

In deede I am, ſince that the Muſes left me,
And with their gracious Quire from hence deſcended
To mount this Hill, *whoſe* Greatnes *hath bereft me*
Of all my fame, and glorie that is ended.

Thriſe happie his Diana, *ſince her flower*
In top of this High Hill *was ſet ſo lately,*
That all the world might view it euery hower,
Where ſhe doth liue moſt ſoueraigne and ſtately:

In all the world moſt celebrate and graced,
Being no leſſe excelſe, then highly placed.

The Argument of the first Seuen Bookes.

IN the fieldes of the auncient and principall citie of *Leon* in Spaine, lying along the bankes of the riuer *Ezla*, liued a Shepherdesse called *Diana*, whose beautie was most soueraigne aboue all others in her time. She loued, and was deerely beloued againe of a Shepherd called *Syrenus*, in whose mutuall loue was as great chastitie and vertue as might be. At the same time another Shepherd called *Syluanus* loued her also more then himselfe, but so abhorred of the Shepherdesse, that there was not any thing in the world, which she hated more. But it fell out, that as *Syrenus* was constrained to be out of the kingdom about certaine affaires, which could by no means be excused, nor left vndone, and the Shepherdesse remaining at home very sad for his absence, time, and *Dianas* hart with time were chaunged, who then was married to another Shepherd called *Delius*, burying him, whom she had but of late so greatly loued, in vniust obliuion. Who, after a whole yeere of his absence comming home againe with great affection and desire to see his beloued Shepherdesse, knew before he came, that she was already married. And from hence the first booke begins: and in the others following, they shall finde diuers histories of accidents, that haue truly happened, though they goe mussled vnder pastorall names and style.

The first Booke of Diana *of* George of *Montemayor.*

DOwne from the hils of *Leon* came forgotten *Syrenus*, whom loue, fortune, and time did so entreate, that by the least greefe, that he suffered in his sorrowfull life, he looked for no lesse then to loose the same. The vnfortunate Shepherd did not now bewaile the harme, which her absence did threaten him, and the feare of her forgetfulnes did not greatly trouble his minde, bicause he sawe all the prophecies of his suspicion so greatly to his preiudice accomplished, that now he thought he had no more misfortunes to menace him. But the Shepherd comming to those greene and pleasant meades, which the great riuer *Ezla* watreth with his cristalline streames, the great felicitie and content came to his wandring thoughtes, which sometimes he had enioyed there, being then so absolute a Lord of his owne liberty, as now subiect to one, who had wrongfully enterred him in darke obliuion. He went musing of that happie time, when in those medowes, and on those faire banks he fed his flocks, applying then his minde in the onely care and interest he had to feede them well: and spending the rest of his howers in the onely delight, that he tooke in the sweete smell of those golden flowers, at that time especially, when cheerefull spring-tyde (the merry messenger of sommer) is spread ouer the face of the whole earth: sometimes taking his rebecke, which he euer caried very neate in a scrip, and sometimes his bagpipe, to the tune of which he made most sweete ditties, which of all the

Shepherdesses of those hamlets thereabouts made him most highly commended. The Shepherd busied not his thoughts in the consideration of the prosperous and prepostorous successe of fortune, nor in the mutabilitie and course of times, neither did the painfull diligence and aspiring minde of the ambitious Courtier trouble his quiet rest: nor the presumption and coye disdaine of the proude and nice Ladie (celebrated onely by the appassionate vowes and opinions of her amorous sutours) once occurre to his imaginations. And as little did the swelling pride, and small care of the hawtie priuate man offend his quiet minde. In the field was he borne, bred, and brought vp: in the field he fed his flockes, and so out of the limits of the field his thoughts did neuer range, vntill cruell loue tooke possession of his libertie, which to those he is commonly woont to doe, who thinke themselues freest from his tyrannie. The sad Shepherd therefore came softly on his pace, his eies turned into fountaines, the fresh hew of his face chaunged, and his hart so tempered to suffer Fortunes vnworthie disgraces, that if she would haue giuen him any content, she must haue sought him a new hart to receiue it. The weedes that he did weare, was a long gray coate, as rugged as his haps, carrying a sheepehooke in his right hand, and a scrip hanging on his left arme. He laide himselfe downe at the foote of a thicke hedge, and began to cast foorth his eyes along those faire riuer banks, vntill their beames came to that place, where first they beheld the beautie, grace, and rare vertues of the Shepherdesse *Diana*, she, in whom skilfull nature had consummated all perfections, which in euery part of her dainty body she had equally bestowed. Then did his hart imagine that, which before it diuined of, That sometimes he should finde himselfe put amongst sorrowfull memories. And then could not the wofull Shepherd stop his teares from gushing out, nor smother his sighes which came smoking out of his brest, but lifting vp his eies to heauē began thus to lament. Ah memorie (cruell enemie to my quiet rest) were not thou better occupied to make me forget present corsies, then to put before mine eies passed contents? What saiest thou memorie? That in this medow I beheld my Lady *Diana*, that in the same I began to feele that, which I shal neuer leaue of to lament, That neere to that cleere fountaine (set about with high and greene Sicamours) with many teares she solemnly sware to me, that there was not the deerest thing in the world, no, not the will of her parents, the perswasion of her brethren, nor the importunities of her allies, that were able to remooue her from her setled thoughts? And when she spake these words, there fell out of those faire eies teares like orientall pearles, which seemed to testifie that, which remained in her secret hart, commanding me, vpon paine to be accounted of her a man but of a base and abiect minde, if I did not beleeue that, which so often times she had told me. But stay yet a little Memorie, since now thou hast put before me the foundations of my mishap (and such they were, that the ioy, which I then passed, was but the beginning of the greefe which now I suffer) forget not to tune me this iarring string, to put before mine eies by one and one, the troubles, the turmoiles, the feares, the suspects, the iealousies, the mistrusts, and cares, which leaue not him, that most truly loues. Ah memorie, memorie, how sure am I of this answere at thy hands, that the greatest paine, that I passed in these considerations, was but little in respect of that content, which in lieu of them I receiued. Thou hast great reason memorie, and the worse for me that it is so great: and lying and lamenting in this sort, he tooke a paper out of his bosome, wherein he had a few greene silken strings and haire tyed vp together, and laying them open before him vpon the greene grasse, with abundance of teares he tooke out his Rebecke, not

halfe

halfe ſo iocund as it was woont to be, at what time he was in *Dianas* fauour, and began to ſing that which followeth.

HAire in change what libertie,
Since I ſawe you, haue I ſeene?
How vnſeemely hath this greene
Bene a ſigne of hope to me?
Once I thought no Shepherd might
In theſe fieldes be found (O haire)
(Though I did it with ſome feare)
Worthy to come neere your ſight.
Haire, how many times and tydes
Did my faire Diana *ſpie,*
If I ware or left you by
And a thouſand toyes beſides.
And how oft in weeping ſort
(Of deceitfull teares O ſprings)
Was ſhe iealous of the things,
Which I ſpake or did in ſport?
Thoſe faire eies which wrought my woe,
(Golden haire) tell me what fault
In beleeuing them I caught,
When they did aſſure me ſoe?
Saw you not how ſhe did greeue,
Spilling daily many a teare,
Vnto her till I did ſweare,
That I did her words beleeue?
Who more beautie euer knew
In a ſubiect of ſuch change,
Or more ſorrowes or more ſtrange
In a loue ſo perfect true?
On the ſand her did I ſee
Sitting by yon riuer bright,
Where her finger this did wright
Rather dead then changed be.
See how loue beares vs in hand,
Making vs beleeue the wordes,
That a womans wit affordes,
And recorded in the ſand.

Syrenus had not ſo ſoone made an end of his ſorrowful ſong, if that his teares had not bene at hand, for ſuch an one was he, from whom fortune had cut off all the waies and meanes of his remedie. Sorrowing thus, his Rebecke fell out of his hand, and taking vp the golden haire he put them in their place againe, ſaying, O pledges of the faireſt and moſt diſloyall Shepherdeſſe that humane eies may behold, how with your owne faſetie haue you beguiled me? Woe is me, that I cannot chooſe but ſee you, my whole greefe conſiſting in hauing ſeene you. And pulling his hande out of his ſcrip, he found a letter, that *Diana* in time of his proſperitie had ſent him;

which when he beheld, with a burning ſigh, that came from his very hart, he ſaide. O letter, letter burned maiſt thou be by his handes, who may beſt doe what he liſt: and woe be to him that now ſhall reade thee: But who may doe it? And opening it, he ſawe that it ſaid thus.

Dianas letter to Syrenus.

HOw ill I ſhould brooke thy words (my *Syrenus*) who would not thinke, but that loue made thee vtter them? Thou ſaieſt I loue thee not ſo much as I ought to doe, I knowe not whereby thou perceiueſt it, and conceiue not, how I ſhould loue thee more. Behold, it is now no time not to beleeue me, bicauſe thou ſeeſt, that the loue, which I beare thee, compels me to beleeue that, which from thy very thoughts and affection thou doſt tell me. I imagine oftentimes, that as thou ſuppoſeſt, that I loue thee not (by louing thee more then my ſelfe) ſo muſt thou thinke, that thou loueſt me by hating me. Behold *Syrenus*, how time hath dealt better with thee then thou didſt imagine at the beginning of our loues (with ſafetie yet of mine honour) which owes thee all that it may: wherein is not any thing, that I would not doe for thy ſake, beſeeching thee, as much as I may, not to trouble thy minde with iealouſie and ſuſpicions, bicauſe thou knoweſt, how few eſcape out of their hands with ſafetie of life, which God giue thee with all the content that I wiſh thee.

Is this a letter ſaide *Syrenus*, ſighing, to make one thinke, that obliuion could enter into that hart, from whence ſuch wordes came foorth? And are theſe wordes to be paſſed ſo ſlightly out of memorie? And that ſhe then ſpake them, and now forgee me? O ſorrowfull man, with what great content did I reade this letter when my Miſtreſſe had ſent it me, and how many times in the ſame hower did I reade it ouer againe? But for euery pleaſure then, with ſeuen folde paine I am now apaide: and fortune could doe no leſſe with me, then to make me fall from one extreme to another: For it had ill beſeemed her with partiall hand to exempt me from that, which to all others ſhe is commonly wont to doe.

About this time from the hill beneath, that led from the village to the greene medowe, *Syrenus* might perceiue a Shepherd comming downe pace by pace, and ſtaying awhile at euery ſtep, ſometimes looking vp to heauen, and ſometimes caſting his eies vpon the greene medow and faire riuer bankes, which from aloft he might eaſily view and diſcouer (the thing which more augmented his ſorrow) ſeeing the place, where the beginning and roote of his miſhap did firſt growe. *Syrenus* knew him by and by, and looking towardes the place from whence he came, ſaide. Vnfortunate Shepherd (though not halfe ſo much as I am) that art a corriuall with me in *Dianas* loue, to what end haue thy booteleſſe ſuites ſerued thee, and the diſdaine that this cruell Shepherdeſſe hath done thee, but to put them all on my ſcore? But if thou hadſt knowen that the finall ſumme of all thy paines ſhould haue bene like to mine, what greater fauour hadſt thou found at fortunes hands, by preſeruing thee ſtill in this hapleſſe eſtate of life, then by throwing me headlong downe from it, when I did leſt ſuſpect it? But now deſpiſed *Syluanus* tooke out his bagpipe, and playing on it a little, with great ſorrow and greefe did ſing theſe verſes following.

I Am a louer, but was neuer loued,
Well haue I lou'd, and will though hated euer,
Troubles I paſſe, but neuer any mooued,
Sighes haue I giuen, and yet ſhe heard me neuer:
I would complaine, and ſhe would neuer heare me,

And

And flie from loue, but it is euer neere me:
Obliuion onely blameleſſe doth beſet me,
For that remembreth neuer to forget me.

For euery ill one ſemblant I doe beare ſtill,
To day not ſad, nor yeſterday contented,
To looke behinde, or go before I feare ſtill,
All things to paſſe alike I haue conſented:
I am beſides my ſelfe like him that daunceth,
And mooues his feete at euery ſound that chaunceth:
And ſo all like a ſenſeleſſe foole diſdaines me,
But this is nothing to the greefe that paines me.

The night to certaine louers is a trouble,
When in the day ſome good they are attending:
And other ſome doe hope to gaine ſome double
Pleaſure by night, and wiſh the day were ending:
With that, that greeueth ſome, ſome others eaſe them,
And all do follow that, that beſt doth pleaſe them:
But for the day with teares I am a crying,
Which being come, for night I am a dying.

Of Cupid to complaine who euer craue it,
In waues he writes and to the windes he crieth:
Or ſeeketh helpe of him, that neuer gaue it:
For he at laſt thy paines and thee defieth.
Come but to him ſome good aduiſe to lend thee,
To thouſand od conceits he will commend thee.
What thing is then this loue? It is a ſcience,
That ſets both proofe and ſtudy at defiance.

My Miſtreſſe *loued her* Syrenus *deerely,*
And ſcorned me, whoſe loues yet I auouched,
Left to my greefe, for good I held it cleerely,
Though narrowly my life and ſoule it touched:
Had I but had a heauen as he once ſhining,
Loue would I blame, if it had bene declining.
But loue did take no good from me he ſent me,
For how can loue take that he neuer lent me.

Loue's not a thing, that any may procure it,
Loue's not a thing, that may be bought for treaſure;
Loue's not a thing, that comes when any lure it,
Loue's not a thing, that may be found at pleaſure:
For if it be not borne with thee, refraine it
To thinke, thou muſt be borne anew to gaine it:
Then ſince that loue ſhuns force, and doth diſclame it,
The ſcorned louer hath no cauſe to blame it.

Syrenus was not idle when *Syluanus* was singing theſe verſes, for with his ſighes he anſwered the laſt accents of his wordes, and with his teares did ſolemnize that, which he conceiued by them. The diſdained Shepherd after he had ended his ſong, began to reuolue in his minde the ſmall regarde he had of himſelfe, and how for the loue of his cruell *Miſtreſſe Diana*, he had neglected all his buſines and flockes: and yet he reckoned all this but ſmall. He conſidered, that his ſeruice was without hope of recompence, a great occaſion to make him, that hath but ſmall firmneſſe, eaſily cut off the way of his loue. But his conſtancie was ſo great, that being put in the middes of all the cauſes, which he had to forget her, who neuer thought of him, with his owne ſafetie he came ſo eaſily out of them, and ſo cleerely without preiudice to the ſincere loue, which he bare his Shepherdeſſe, that (without any feare) he neuer committed any ignorance, that might turne to the hurt or hinderance of his faith. But when he ſawe *Syrenus* at the fountaine, he woondred to ſee him ſo ſad, not that he was ignorant of the cauſe of his ſorrow, but bicauſe he thought that if he had taſted but the leſt fauour, that *Syrenus* had ſometimes receiued at *Dianas* handes, ſuch a contentment had bene ynough for him all his life time. He came vnto him and imbraced him, and with many teares on both ſides they ſat them downe vpon the greene graſſe, *Syluanus* beginning to ſpeake in this ſort. God forbid (*Syrenus*) that for the cauſe of my miſhap, or at the leſt for the ſmall remedie thereof, I ſhould take delight or reuenge in thine, which though at mine owne pleaſure I might well doe, yet the great loue which I beare to my Miſtreſſe *Diana*, woulde neuer conſent thereunto, nor ſuffer me to goe againſt that, which with ſuch good will and liking ſhe had ſometimes fauoured: if thy ſorrowes greeue me not, let me neuer haue end of mine; and in ſuch ſort, that as ſoone as *Diana* was about to marry, if it killed not my hart with thinking, that her marriage and thy death ſhould haue bene both at one time, let me neuer enioy any other eſtate and condition of life then now I doe. Canſt thou then thinke (*Syrenus*) that I would wiſh thee ill, bicauſe *Diana* loued thee? And that the fauours that ſhe did thee, were the occaſions to make me hate thee? What man, my faith was neuer ſo baſely poyſed, but that it was euer ſo ſeruiceable to my Miſtreſſe humour, not onely in louing thee, but in louing and honouring all that euer ſhe loued. And yet thou haſt no cauſe to thanke me for this care and compaſſion of thy greefe, for I am ſo diſſolued into cares, that for mine owne good I would be ſorie, how much more then for other mens harmes. This ſtraunge kinde of the Shepherd *Syluanus* his greeting cauſed no ſmall admiration in *Syrenus*, and made him for a while in ſuſpence with himſelfe, woondring at his great ſufferance, and at the ſtrange qualitie of his loue, that he did beare to his Shepherdeſſe. But remembring himſelfe at laſt, he ſaid. Haſt thou (*Syluanus*) happily, bene borne for an example of patience to thoſe, who know not how to ſuffer the aduerſities, that fortune puts before their eies? Or may it be, that nature hath giuen thee ſo ſtrong a minde, that it is not ynough for thee to ſuffer thine owne, but thou wilt needes helpe others to ſupport theirs? I ſee thee ſo conformable to the hard condition of thy fortune, that, promiſing thee no helpe of remedie, thou doeſt aske no other, then that it hath already giuen thee. I tell thee (*Syluanus*) that time ſhewes well by thee, how euery day it diſcouers nouelties and ſtraunge conceites beyonde the compaſſe of mans imagination. O how much more then ought this vnfortunate Shepherd to emulate thee, by ſeeing thee ſuffer thy greefes with ſuch content, which thou mighteſt rather haue done to him, when thou ſaweſt him ſo happily enioy his merry times. Haſt thou not ſeene how greatly ſhe fauoured me, and with

what

what ſweete and gracious wordes ſhe manifeſted her loue vnto me? Didſt thou not ſee, how ſhe could neuer goe with her flockes to the riuer, or take her lambes out of the folde, or in the heate of the day driue her ſheepe into the ſhades of theſe Sicamours without my companie? But for all this, I wiſh I may neuer ſee the remedie of my greefe, if I euer expected or deſired any thing at *Dianas* hands that was repugnant to her honour, or if any ſuch thing did euer paſſe my thought. For ſuch was her beautie, her braue minde, her vertue, and ſuch vnſpotted puritie in her loue to me againe, that they admitted no thought into my minde, which in preiudice of her goodnes and chaſtitie I might haue imagined. I beleeue it well (ſaide *Syluanus* ſighing) for I can ſay as much by my ſelfe, and thinke moreouer that there was neuer any, that caſting his eies on *Dianas* peereleſſe beautie, durſt deſire any other thing, then to ſee her, and to conuerſe with her. Although I knowe not, whether ſuch rare and excellent beautie might in ſome mens thoughts (not ſubiect to ſuch a continent affection as ours) cauſe an exceſſiue deſire: and eſpecially, if they had ſeene her, as I did one day ſitting with thee neere to yon little brooke, when ſhe was kembing her golden haire, and thou holding the glaſſe vnto her, wherein now and then ſhe beheld her diuine figure, though neither of you both did (perhaps) knowe that I eſpied you from thoſe high buſhes, neere to the two great okes, keeping (yet) in minde the verſes, that thou ſungeſt vpon the holding of the glaſſe, whiles ſhe was addreſſing her reſplendant treſſes. How came they to thy handes, ſaide *Syrenus?* The next day following (ſaide *Syluanus*) in that very place I founde the paper wherein they were written, and reading them, committed them to memorie: And then came *Diana* thither weeping for the loſſe of them, and asking me, if I had found them, which was no ſmall ioy and contentment to me, to ſee my Miſtreſſe powre foorth thoſe teares, which I might ſpeedily remedie. And this I remember was the firſt hower, that euer I had a gentle and curteous word of her mouth (how greatly in the meane time ſtood I neede of fauours) when ſhe ſaide vnto me, that I might highly pleaſure her, to helpe her to that, which ſo earneſtly ſhe ſought for: which wordes, like holy relikes, I kept in my minde; for in a whole yeere after I tooke no regarde of all the woes and greefes that I paſſed, for ioy of that one onely word, which had in it but a ſmall apparance of ioy and happineſſe. Now as thou loueſt thy life (ſaide *Syrenus*) rehearſe thoſe verſes, which, thou ſaidſt, I did ſing, ſince thou haſt them ſo well by hart. I am content, ſaide *Syluanus*: and theſe they were.

For a fauour of ſuch woorth
In no doubt I doe remaine,
Since with ſelfe ſame coyne againe
(Miſtreſſe) *thou art paide right foorth.*
For if I enioy with free
Pleaſure, ſeeing before me
Face and eies, where Cupid ſtands:
So thou ſeeing in my hands,
That which in thine eies I ſee.

Let not this to thee ſeeme ill,
That of thy beautie diuine
Thou ſee'ſt but the figure ſhine,
And I natures perfect skill:

Yet

Yet a thought, that's free and set
Neuer yet in Cupids net,
Better then the bond beholdes,
Though the one the liuely mouldes,
Th'other but the counterfet.

When *Syrenus* had heard the song out, he saide to *Syluanus*. I wish that loue, gentle Shepherd, with hope of impossible felicitie may remedie my greefes, if there be any thing in the worlde, that I would sooner choose to passe away my sorrowfull life with, then in thy sweete and gracious companie, and if it greeues me not now to the hart, that *Diana* is so cruell vnto thee, that she hath not (which well she might haue done) once thanked thee, nor showen thee a fauourable and gratefull countenance for all thy long and loyall seruice, and for so true loue that thou hast shewed therein. I could with a little content me (saide *Syluanus* sighing) if my angrie fortune would perswade *Diana* to giue me some hope, which she might well affoord without staine to her honour, or breach of faith to thee. But so hard harted is she, that not onely when I craue it, she denies it me, and flies from me when I come in her sight, but to comfort me with any small signe or token, whereby I might imagine or hope hereafter to enioy it, she would neuer yet consent. Whereupon I saide many times to my selfe. It may fall out that this stonie harted and fierce Tygresse may one day conceiue some displeasure against *Syrenus*, for reuenge whereof, and to despite him, she will perhaps shew me some fained fauour; for so disgraced and comfortlesse a man as I am would be glad but with fained fauours to content him, and to imbrace them as true ones. And when thou wentst out of this countrie, then I infallibly perswaded my selfe, that the remedie of my greefe was knocking (as it were) at my doore, and that obliuion was the certainest thing to be expected after absence, and especially in a womans hart. But after when I saw her teares, her little rest and staying in the village, her delight in seeking out solitarie places, and her continual sighes, when I say I beheld all these things, God knowes with what impatience and greefe of minde I felt them. For though I knewe, that time was an approoued phisition of sorrow, which absence is commonly woont to procure, yet I desired not, that my Mistresse might passe one hower of greefe, although I hoped to get thereby two thousand of content. A few daies after thy departure I saw her at the foote of yonder hill, leaning against an oke, and staying her tender brest vpon her sheepehooke, where she stood in that sort a good while before she espied me, who, though afterwards she lifted vp her eies, yet her teares that issued out so fast, did also hinder her (I thinke) that she could not well perceiue me. She should then be musing on her solitarie and sorrowfull life, and on the greefe that by thy absence she conceiued: But a little after that, not without many teares (accompanied with as many painfull sighes) she tooke out her bagpipe which she caried in a fine scrip, and began to play on it so sweetely, that the hils, and dales, the riuers, the enamoured birdes, and the rockie mountaines of that thicke wood were amazed and rauished with her sweete musicke. And leauing her bagpipe, to the tune that she had plaied, she began to sing this song following.

O Eies, that see not him, who look'd on yow
When that they were the mirrours of his sight,
What can you now behold to your content?

Greene flowrie meade where often I did vew,
And ſtaid for my ſweete friend with great delight,
The ill, which I doe feele with me lament.
Heer did he tell me how his thoughts were bent,
And (wretch) I lent an eare;
But angry more then whelpleſſe Beare
Preſumptuous him I tall'd, and vndiſcreete:
And he layde at my feete,
Where yet (poore man) me thinkes I ſee him lye:
And now I wiſh that I
Might ſee him ſo as then I did: O happy time were this,
Sweete *ſhadowed riuer bankes tell me where my* Syrenus *is.*

Yon is the riuer banke, this is the meade,
From thence the hedge appeeres and ſhadowed lay,
Wherein my flockes d'd feede the ſauourie graſſe:
Behold the ſweete noys'd ſpring, where I did leade
My ſheepe to drinke in heate of all the day,
When heere my ſweeteſt friend the time did paſſe:
Vnder that hedge of liuely greene he was;
And there behold the place,
Where firſt I ſaw his ſweeteſt face
And where he ſawe me, happy was that day,
Had not my ill haps way
To end ſuch happy times, O ſpring,
O hedge, and euery thing
Is heere, but he, for whom I paine continually, and miſſe,
Sweete *ſhadowed riuer bankes tell me where my* Syrenus *is.*

Heere haue I yet his picture that deceaues me,
Since that I ſee my Shepherd when I view it,
(Though it were better from my ſoule abſented)
When I deſire to ſee the man, that leaues me
(Which fond deceipt time ſhowes and makes me rue it)
To yonder ſpring I goe, where I conſented
To hang it on yon Sallow, then contented
I ſit by it, and after
(Fond loue) I looke into the water,
And ſee vs both, then am I ſo content heere,
As when his life he ſpent heere:
This bare deuiſe a while my life ſuſtaineth;
But when no more it faineth,
My hart ſurcharg'd with anguiſh, and cries out, but yet amiſſe,
Sweete *ſhadowed riuer bankes tell me where my* Syrenus *is.*

Speaking to it no wordes it is replying,
And then (me thinkes) reuenge of me it taketh,
Bicauſe ſometime an anſwere I deſpiſed.

But (wofull ſoule) I ſay vnto it crying,
Syrenus *ſpeake, ſince now thy preſence maketh*
Aboade, where neuer once my thoughts ſurmized:
Say, in my ſoule art thou not onely prized?
But not a word it ſaieth,
And as before me there it ſtaieth,
To ſpeake, my ſoule doth pray it (in concluſion)
O what a braue deluſion,
To aske a ſimple picture toong or ſences?
O time, in what offences
Of vaineſt hope is my poore ſoule ſo ſubiect vnto his?
Sweete *ſhadowed riuer bankes tell me where my* Syrenus *is.*

I neuer can go homeward with my ſheepe,
When to the weſt the ſunne begins to gyre,
Nor to the foldes returne from our towne,
But euery where I ſee, and (ſeeing) weepe
The ſheepe cote of my ioy and ſweete deſire,
Broken, decaied, and throwen vnto the ground:
Careleſſe of lambes and ſheepe, there ſit I downe
A little while, vntill
The herdesmen feeding on the hill,
Cry out to me, ſaying, O Shepherdeſſe
What doe thy thoughts poſſeſſe,
And let thy ſheepe goe feeding in the graine?
Our eies doe ſee it plaine:
For them the tender graſſe in pleaſant vales doth growe ywiſſe,
Sweete *ſhadowed riuer bankes tell me where my* Syrenus *is.*

Yet in thine owne opinion greater reaſon
(Syrenus) *it had bene, thus to haue ſtarted*
With more conſtraint, and force then I did ſee yet,
But whom doe I accuſe of guiltleſſe treaſon?
For what could make him ſtay and not haue parted,
If fate and fortune thereto did agree yet?
No fault of thine it was, nor could it be yet
In my beleefe, haue ended
Thou wouldſt in ought, or haue offended
Our loue ſo plaine and ſimple, as to leaue it
Nor will I once conceaue it,
Though many ſhewes and ſignes thereof there were yet:
O no, the fates did ſweare it,
With cloudes of ſorrow to obſcure my heauen of ioy and bliſſe,
Sweete *ſhadowed riuer bankes tell me where my* Syrenus *is.*

My ſong take heede thou goeſt where I betake thee,
Yet ſhalt thou not forſake me:
For it may be that fortune will with ſuch a humour place thee,
That may terme thee importunate and by that meanes diſgrace thee.

After

After *Syluanus* had made an ende of *Dianas* amorous song, he saide to *Syrenus*, who in hearing the louing verses that his Shepherdesse had sung after his departure, was almost besides his wits. When faire *Diana* was singing this song, it was seene by my teares if I felt not those at my hart, which for thy sake she powred out: but making as though I had not heard, nor seene any thing, by dissembling the matter the best I could, (which I could scarce doe) I came to the place where she was. *Syrenus* interrupting him at these wordes, saide. Stay a little *Syluanus*, (I pray thee) and tell me what hart was able to chaunge, that felt such passions? O constancie, O firmnesse, how seldome and how small a time doe you soiourne in a womans hart? That the more subiect she is to loue and to imbrace you, the more ready she is to leaue and forget you. And surely I was of this opinion, that this imperfection was incident to all women, but to my Mistresse *Diana*, in whom I euer thought that nature had not omitted to frame euery good and perfect thing. But *Syluanus* after this prosecuting his historie, saide vnto him. When I came neere to the place where *Diana* was, I sawe her fixing her faire eies in the cleere fountaine, where vsing her accustomed maner, she began to say. O woefull eies, how sooner shall you want teares to water my cheekes, then continuall occasions to powre you out? O my *Syrenus*, I would to God, before the winter with his blustring stormes despoyles the greene medow of fresh and fragrant flowers, the pleasant vallies of fine and tender grasse, and the shadowed trees of their greene leaues, that these eies may behold againe thy presence so much desired of my louing soule, as mine is eschewed and (perhaps) hated of thine: With this she lifted vp her diuine countenance, and by chance espied me, and going about to dissemble her sorrowfull complaint, she coulde not so cunningly doe it, but that her teares made it too manifest, by stopping the passage of her dissimulation. She rose vp at my comming, and saide. Sit downe heere *Syluanus*, and see how thou art now (to mine owne cost) sufficiently reuenged of me. Now doth this miserable woman pay thee home againe those paines, which thou didst suffer (as thou saidst) for her sake, if it be true, that she was euer, or yet is the cause of them. Is it possible *Diana* (saide I againe) that these eares may heare these wordes? In the end, I perceiue, I am not deceiued by saying, that I was borne to discouer euery day new kindes of torments for thy sake, and thou to requite them with the greatest rigour in the world. Dost thou now therefore doubt, that thou art the cause of my greefe? If thou art not, who (dost thou imagine) can deserue so great loue as this: or what hart in the world (but thine) had not before this bene mollified and made pitifull by so many teares? And to these I added many other wordes, which now I doe not so well remember. But the cruell enemie of my rest cut off my wordes, saying. If thy toong, *Syluanus*, fondly presumeth to speake to me againe of these matters, and not to entertaine the time with talke of my *Syrenus*, I will (at thine owne pleasure) leaue thee to enioy the delight of this faire fountaine, where we now sit. For knowest thou not, that euery thing that intreates not of the goodnes of my Shepherd is both hatefull and hurtfull to my eares? And that she, that loueth well, thinketh that time but ill imploied, which is not spent in hearing of her loue? Whereupon, fearing least my wordes might haue bene an occasion to haue made me loose that great content and happines, that I had by her sweete sight and presence, I sealed them vp with silence, and was a good while without speaking a worde, onely delighting my selfe with the felicitie I had, by contemplating her soueraine beautie, vntill night with greater haste then I desired, came on, when both of vs then were constrained to goe homewards with our flockes to our village. Then

Syrenus

Syrenus giuing a great sigh, saide. Thou hast tolde me strange things, *Syluanus*, and all (wretched man) for the increase of my harmes, since I haue tried too soone the small constancie that is in a womans hart, which for the loue that I beare to them all (for her sake) in very trueth greeues me not a little. For I would not, Shepherd, hereafter heare it spoken, that in a moulde, where nature hath conioined such store of peregrine beautie, and mature discretion, there should be a mixture of such vnworthy inconstancie as she hath vsed towards me. And that, which comes neerest to my hart, is, that time shall make her vnderstand, how ill she hath dealt with me, which cannot be, but to the preiudice of her owne content and rest. But how liues she, and with what contentment after her marriage? Some tell me, saide *Syluanus*, that she brookes it but ill, and no maruell, for that *Delius* her husband though he be (as thou knowest) enriched with fortunes giftes, is but poore in those of nature and good education: For, thou knowest, how lowtish of spirit and body he is, and namely for those things, which we Shepherds take a pride in, as in piping, singing, wrestling, darting of our sheepehookes, and daunc'ing with the wenches on Sunday, it seemes that *Delius* was borne for no more, but onely to beholde them. But now good Shepherd, said *Syrenus*, take out thy Kit, and I will take my Bagpipe, for there is no greefe that is not with musicke relented and passed away, and no sorrow, which is not with the same againe increased. And so both the Shepherdes tuning, and playing on their instruments with great grace and sweetnesse began to sing that which followeth.

Syluanus.

SYrenus, *what thought'st thou when I was viewing thee*
From yonder hedge, and in great greefe suspending me
To see with what affliction thou wert ruing thee?
There doe I leaue my flocke, that is attending me:
For while the cleerest sunne goeth not declining it,
Well may I be with thee, by recommending me
Thine ill (my Shepherd) for that (by defining it)
Is passed with lesse cost, then by concealing it:
And sorrow (in the end) departs resigning it.
My greefe I would recount thee, but reuealing it,
It doth increase, and more, by thus recording me
How in most vaine laments I am appealing it:
My life I see (O greefe) long time's affoording me
With dying hart, and haue not to reuiue me it,
And an vnwonted ill I see aboording me,
From whom I hop'd a meane, she doth depriue me it:
But (sooth) I hop'd it neuer, for bewraying it,
With reason she might gainsay to contriue me it.
My passions did sollicite her, essaying yet
With no importune meanes, but seemely grounding them,
And cruell loue went hindering and dismaying it.
My pensiue thoughts were carefully rebounding them
On euery side, to flie the worst, restraining them,
And in vnlawfull motions not confounding them.
They prai'd Diane, *in ils that were not fayning them,*
To giue a meane (but neuer to repell it thee)

And

And that a wretch might so be entertaining them.
But if to giue it me, I should refell it thee,
What wouldst thou doe (O greefe) that thus adiuring it,
Faine would I hide mine ill, and neuer tell it thee.
But after (my Syrenus*) thus procuring it,*
A Shepherdesse *I doe inuoke (the faireſt one)*
And th'end goes thus, vnto my coſt enduring it.

Syrenus.

Syluanus *mine, a loue, of all the rareſt one,*
A beautie, blinding preſently diſcloſing it,
A wit, and in diſcretion the waryeſt one,
A ſweete diſcourſe, that to the eare oppoſing it,
The hardeſt rocks entendereth in ſubduing them.
What ſhall a hapleſſe louer feele in looſing it?
My little ſheepe I ſee, and thinke in viewing them,
How often times I haue beheld her feeding them,
And with her owne to foulde them, not eſchewing them.
How often haue I met her driue, and ſpeeding them
Vnto the riuer, in the heate, where reſting her
With great care ſhe was telling yet, and heeding them.
After, if that ſhe was alone, deuelling her,
Thou ſhouldſt haue ſeene the bright ſunne beames enuying her
Reſplendant hayre, to kembe them manifeſting her.
But on the ſudden meeting, and eſpying her,
(My deereſt friend Syluane*) how oft incended was*
Her faireſt face, with orient bluſhing dying her?
And with what grace, how mildly reprehended was
My ſtaying long, which ſhe did aske, correcting me?
Which if I greeu'd, with blandiſhments amended was.
How many daies haue I found her expecting me
At this cleere fountaine, when that I was ſeeking her
Along that thickeſt hedge, to greefe ſubiecting me?
All paines and troubles what ſo ere (in meeting her)
Of ſheepe, or lambes, we ſtraightway were forgetting them,
When ſhe ſawe me, or when that I was greeting her.
Some other times (Syluane) *we tun'd (in ſetting them)*
Our Bagpipe and the Rebeck, which we plaied on,
And then my verſes ſung we, nothing letting them.
After with bowe and arrowes we eſtraied on,
Sometimes with nets, and ſhe neuer refraining me,
And came not home without ſome chaſe we praied on.
Thus fortune went by theſe meanes entertaining me:
Reſeruing for ſome greater ill, and tendring me,
Which hath no end, but by deathes end reſtraining me.

Syluanus.

Syrenus, *that moſt cruell loue, engendring me*
Such greefe, ſtints not, nor hindreth the perſwading me
Of ſo much ill: I die therein remembring me.

Diane *I ſawe, but ſtraight my ioy was fading me,*
When to my onely ſight ſhe was oppoſing her:
And (to my greefe) I ſaw long life inuading me.
How many tymes haue I found her, in loſing her,
How often loſt, in finding and eſpying her?
And I my death and ſeruice not diſcloſing her.
My life I loſt, when meeting I was eying her
Faire louely eies, which, full of anger, cruelly
She turn'd to me, when that my ſpeech was plying her:
But her faire haire, where Cupides in their fwell tye,
When ſhe vndid and kemb'd, vnſeene, then leauing me,
My ils return'd moſt ſenſibly, which rue well I.
But pitileſſe Diana *then perceiuing me,*
Turn'd like a cruell ſerpent, that in winding it,
Aſſailes the lion: thus my life bereauing me,
One time falſe hope (deceitfully but blinding it)
My hart maintain'd, euen for my comfort chooſing it,
But afterwardes in ſuch an error finding it,
It mocked hope, and then it vanſht looſing it.

Not long after that the Shepherdes had made an ende of their ſorrowfull ſongs, they eſpied a ſhepherdeſſe comming out of the thicket neere to the riuer, playing on a Bagpipe, and ſinging with as ſweete a grace and delicate voice, as with no leſſe ſorrow and greefe, which by her countenance and geſture ſhe ſo liuely expreſſed, that it darkened a great part of her excellent beautie: Whereupon *Syrenus*, who had not of a long time fed in thoſe vallies, asked *Syluanus* what ſhe was, who anſwered: This is a faire Shepherdeſſe, that hath fed but a fewe daies ſince in theſe medowes, complaining greatly of loue, and (as ſome ſay) with good cauſe, though others ſay, that ſhe hath bene a long time mocked by the diſcouerie of a deceite: Why, ſaide *Syrenus*, lies it then in her to perceiue it, and to deliuer her ſelfe from it? It doth, ſaide *Syluanus*, for I thinke there is no woman, though neuer ſo much in loue, whoſe wits and ſenſes the force and paſſion of loue can ſo much blinde, that may not perceiue whether ſhe be beloued againe or not. I am of a contrarie opinion, ſaide *Syrenus*. Of a contrarie, ſaide *Syluanus*? Why, thou ſhalt not flatter thy ſelfe ſo much, for, the affiance which thou hadſt in *Dianas* wordes, hath coſt thee deere, and yet I blame thee not, conſidering that as there is none, whom her beautie ouercomes not, ſo is there not any, whom her wordes deceiue not. How knoweſt thou that, ſince ſhe neuer deceiued thee by word nor deede. It is true, ſaide *Syluanus*, that I was euer (if ſo I may terme it) vndeceiued by her, but I durſt (by that which hath hitherto fallen out) that ſhe neuer meant any deceit to me, but only to deceiue thee. But let vs leaue this, and harken to this Shepherdeſſe, that is a great friend to *Diana*, who is well worthy for the commendable report of her wiſedome and good graces to be harkened vnto. But now was the faire Shepherdeſſe comming towards the fountaine, and began to ſing this Sonnet following.

A Sonnet.

Mine eies, once haue I ſeene you more contented,
And my poore hart, more ioyfull I haue knowne thee:
Woe to the cauſe, whoſe greefes haue ouergrowne thee,

And yet whose sight your comforts once presented.
But as this cruell fortune hath inuented
(Sweete ioy) to roote thee vp, where she had sowen thee,
So now (Seluagia) *she hath ouerthrowen thee:*
Thy pleasures scarce begun, she hath tormented.
Let me to time or to his changing take me,
Let me with motions out of order leade me,
Then I shall see how free my hart is to me.
Then will I trust in hopes that not forsake me,
When I haue staide her wheeles that ouertread me,
And beaten downe the fates that doe vndoe me.

After that the Shepherdesse had made an end of her song, she came directly to the fountaine where the Shepherdes were, and while she was a comming, *Syluanus*, smiling, saide. Marke but those wordes, and the burning sigh wherewith she ended her song, what witnesses they are of her inward loue and greefe. Thereof I haue no doubt, saide *Syrenus*, for I woulde to God I could so speedily remedie her sorrowe, as I beleeue (to my great greefe) all that she hath by dolefull song vttered. And talking thus together, *Seluagia* was by this time come, and knowing the Shepherds, curteously saluted them, saying. What doe you in this greene and pleasant medow, despised Shepherds? Thou saiest not amisse, faire *Seluagia*, by asking vs what we doe, saide *Syluanus*, for we doe so little in respect of that we shoulde doe, that we can neuer conclude and bring any thing to passe, that in our loues we desire to haue. Maruell not thereat, saide *Seluagia*, for there are certaine things, that before they ende, they that desire them, are ended. True, saide *Syluanus*, if a man puts his rest in a womans disposition, for she will first ende his life, before she will ende or determine to giue him any fauour, that he is still hoping to receiue at her handes. Vnhappy women are these, saide *Seluagia*, that are so ill intreated by your wordes: But more vnfortunate are those men, saide *Syluanus*, that are worse handled by your deedes. Can there be a thing more base and of lesse account, then that you are so ready for the lightest thing in the worlde to forget them, to whom you haue borne the greatest loue? For, absent your selues but a day from him whom you loue well, and then shall he neede to commence his suite new againe. Two things I gather, saide *Seluagia*, by thy speech, which make me wonder not a little. The one, to see thy toong goe so much awrie, and contrarie to that which I euer coniectured, and knew by thy behauiour and conditions. For I thought, when I heard thee talke of thy loue, that in the same thou wert a Phœnix, and that none of the best louers to this day came euer neere to the extreme that thou hadst, by louing a Shepherdesse, whom I knowe, a cause sufficient ynough not to speake ill of women, if thy malice were not greater then thy loue. The second, that thou speakest of a thing thou vnderstandest not; for to blame forgetfulnes, who neuer had any triall thereof, must rather be attributed to follie and want of discretion, then to any thing else. For if *Diana* did neuer remember thee, how canst thou complaine of her obliuion? I thinke to answere, saide *Syluanus*, both these pointes, if I shall not wearie thine eares with hearing me. To the first, saying, That I wish I may neuer enioy any more content then now I haue, if any (by the greatest example that he is able to alleage me) can with wordes set downe the force and power, that this thankelesse and disloyall Shepherdesse, whom thou knowest, and I would I knew not, hath ouer my subiected

ſoule. But the greater the loue is I beare her, the more it greeues me, that there is any thing in her that may be reprehended. For heere is *Syrenus*, who was fauoured more of *Diana*, then any louer in the world of his Miſtreſſe, and yet ſhe hath now forgotten him, as thou faire Shepherdeſſe, and all we doe know. To the other point, where thou ſaieſt, that I haue no reaſon to ſpeake ill of that, whereof I neuer had experience, I ſay, that the Phiſition may iudge of that greefe, which he himſelfe neuer had: and will further ſatisfie thee, *Seluagia*, with this opinion of me, that I beare no hate to women, nor (in very trueth) wiſh them ill, for there is nothing in the world, which I would deſire to ſerue with more reuerence and affection. But in requitall of my zealous loue, I am but ill intreated, and with ſuch intolerable diſdaine, which made me ſpeake ſo much by her, who takes a pride and a glorie in giuing me ſuch cauſe of greefe. *Syrenus*, who had held his peace all this while, ſaid to *Seluaggia*: If thou would'ſt but liſten to me, faire Shepherdeſſe, blameleſſe thou wouldeſt hold my riuall, or (to ſpeake more properly) my deere friend *Syluanus*. But tell me, what is the reaſon, that you are ſo inconſtant, that in a moment you throwe a Shepherde downe from the top of his good hap, to the deepeſt bottome of miſerie: knoweſt thou whereunto I attribute it? To nothing elſe but to your owne ſimplicitie: bicauſe you haue no perfect vnderſtanding to conceiue the good, nor knowe the value of that, you haue in your handes. You meddle with loue and are vncapable to iudge what it meanes; how doe you, then, knowe to behaue your ſelues in it. I tell thee, *Syrenus*, ſaide *Seluagia*, that the cauſe why Shepherdeſſes forget their louers, is no other, but bicauſe they are forgotten of them againe. Theſe are things, which loue doth make and vndoe, things which time and place alters and buries in ſilence, but not for the want of womens due knowledge in them, of whom there haue bene an infinite number in the world, who might haue taught men to liue, and to loue, if loue were a thing that might be taught or learned: But yet for all this, there is not (I thinke) any baſer eſtate of life then a womans; for if they ſpeake you faire, you thinke them by and by to die for your loue; if they ſpeake not to you, you thinke them proude and fantaſticall; if their behauiour be not to your liking, you thinke them hypocrites. They haue no kind of paſtaunce, which you thinke not to exceede: if they holde their peace, you ſay they are fooles: if they ſpeake, you ſay they are ſo troubleſome, that none will abide to heare them: if they loue you the moſt in the world, you thinke they goe about to deceiue you: if they forget you, and flie the occaſions of bringing their good names in queſtion, you ſay they are inconſtant, and neuer firme in one minde and purpoſe: So that the good or ill woman can doe no more to pleaſe your mindes, then neuer to exceede the limits of your deſires and diſpoſitions. If euery one faire *Seluagia*, ſaide *Syrenus*, were indued with this fineneſſe of wit and graue vnderſtanding as thou art, they woulde neuer giue vs occaſions to make vs complaine of their ſmall regarde in their loue. But bicauſe we may knowe what reaſon thou haſt to finde thy ſelfe ſo much aggreeued with it, ſo may God giue thee comfort needefull for ſuch an ill, as thou wouldeſt vouchſafe to tell vs the ſubſtance of thy loue, and all the occurrents which haue hitherto befallen thee therein. For (it ſeemes) thou canſt tell vs more of ours, then we are able to informe thee, to ſee, if his effects, which thou haſt paſſed, will giue thee leaue to ſpeake ſo freely as thou doſt: for by thy wordes thou ſeemeſt to haue more experience in them, then any woman that euer I knewe. If I were not the moſt tried woman in them, ſaide *Seluagia*, I am (at the leſt) the worſt intreated by them, as any euer was, and ſuch an one, who with greater reaſon then the reſt may complaine of loues

franticke

franticke effects (a thing ſufficient to make one ſpeake ynough in it.) And bicauſe by that which is paſt, thou maieſt knowe that which I now ſuffer, to be a diuelliſh kinde of paſſion, commit your misfortunes a while to ſilence, and I will tel you greater then euer you heard before.

IN the mightie and inuincible kingdome of Portugall run two great riuers, which wearied with watring the greater part of our Spaine, not far from one another enter into the maine Ocean. Betweene both which are ſituated many olde and ancient townes, by reaſon of the great fertilitie of the ſoile, which hath not the like in the whole world. The inhabitants liues of this prouince are ſo much ſequeſtred and eſtranged from things, that may diſturbe the minde, that there is not any (but when *Venus* by the mightie handes of her blinde ſonne meanes to ſhew her power) who troubles his minde more, then to ſuſtaine a quiet life, by maintaining a meane and competent liuing with thoſe things, which for their poore eſtates are requiſite. The mens endeuours are naturally diſpoſed to ſpend their life time in ſufficient content, & the womens beauties to take it from him, who liueth moſt aſſured of his libertie. There are many houſes in the ſhadowed forreſtes, and pleaſant vales, the which being nouriſhed by the ſiluer deaw of ſoueraine heauen, & tilled by their inhabitants, fauourable ſommer forgetteth not to offer vp into their handes the fruites of their owne trauels, and prouiſion for the neceſſitie of their liues. I liued in a village neere to great *Duerus* one of theſe two riuers, where *Minerua* hath a moſt ſtately temple built vnto her, the which in certaine times of the yeere is viſited of all, or moſt of the Shepherdeſſes, that liue in that prouince: who, with the faire Nymphes thereabouts, begin, a day before the holy feaſt, with ſweete ſongs and hymnes to celebrate it, and the Shepherdes likewiſe to ſolemnize the ſame with challenges of running, leaping, wreſtling, and pitching the barre, appointing ſeuerall rewardes and giftes for them, that beare the bell away, ſometimes a garland of greene Iuie, ſometimes a fine Bagpipe, Flute, or Sheepehooke of knottie Aſhe, and other guerdons which Shepherdes make moſt account of. But the feſtiuall time being come, I with other Shepherdeſſes my friendes and acquaintance, leauing of our ſeruile and worke-day apparell, and putting on the beſt we had, went the day before to that place, determining to watch all that night in the temple, as other yeeres before we were wont to doe. Being therfore in companie of my friendes, we ſawe comming in at the doore a Beuie of faire Shepherdeſſes, attended on by iolly Shepherdes, who leauing them within, and hauing done their due oriſons, went out againe to the pleaſant valley: for the order of that prouince was, that no Shepherd might enter into the temple, but to doe his deuotion, and then preſently to goe foorth againe, vntill the next day, when all came in together to participate the ceremonies and ſacrifices, which were made there. The reaſon was, bicauſe the Shepherdeſſes and Nymphes might ſit alone, and without trouble or occaſion to thinke of any other matter, then deuoutly to celebrate the feaſt, and to make merry with one another, according to the ancient accuſtomed manner. And the Shepherdes to remaine amongſt themſelues without the temple in a faire greene meade hard by, where by the brightneſſe of nocturnall *Diana* they might diſport themſelues. But the foreſaid Shepherdeſſes being come into the ſumptuous temple (after they had ſaide a fewe prayers, and preſented their offerings vpon the altar) they placed themſelues downe by vs. And it was my ill hap, that one of them ſat next vnto me, to make me infortunate as long as her memorie did importune me. The Shepherdeſſes came in

muffled, for their faces were couered with white vailes tied vp aboue their hats, which were artificially made of fine ſtrawe, and ſo curiouſly wrought with many workes of the ſame, that it excelled the glittering golde in ſhew. But as I was eying her, that ſat next vnto me, I perceiued how ſhe did ſeldome caſt off her eies from beholding me againe; and when I looked on her, I might ſee her caſt them downe, fayning as though ſhe would ſee me, but in ſuch ſort, that I might not perceiue it. I did not meanely deſire to knowe what ſhe was, bicauſe, if ſhe had ſpoken to me, I might not vpon ignorance haue made a fault by not knowing her againe, who all the while that I ſat thinking of ſome other matter, did neuer caſt her eies off me, but viewed me ſo much, that a thouſand times I was about to ſpeake vnto her, being ſuddenly enamoured of thoſe faire eies, which of all her face were onely diſcouered and open. But ſhe ſeeing me ſitting in this perplexitie, pulled out the faireſt, and moſt dainty hand, that euer I did ſee, and taking mine into it, did with a ſweete and amorous eie a little while behold me: whereupon being now ſo ſtriken in loue, as toong cannot expreſſe, I ſaide vnto her. It is not onely this hand, moſt faire and gracious Shepherdeſſe, that is alwaies ready to ſerue thee, but alſo her hart and thoughts, to whom it appertaineth. *Iſmenia* (for ſo ſhe was called, that was the cauſe of my diſquiet and moleſted thoughts) hauing now complotted in her minde to mocke me (as you ſhall heare) anſwered me ſoftly, that none might heare her, in this manner, ſaying. I am ſo much thine, ſweete Shepherdeſſe, that, as ſuch an one, I boldly preſumed to doe that which I did, praying thee not to be offended with me, for no ſooner I viewed thy faire and amiable face, but preſently I loſt the power of my conquered ſoule: I was ſo glad to heare theſe wordes, that comming neerer vnto her, with a ſmile I anſwered her thus. How can it be, gentle Shepherdeſſe, that thy ſelfe being ſo paſſing faire, ſhouldeſt fal in loue with her, who wants it ſo much, to make her haue the name of ſuch an one, and more, with a woman as I am. It is that loue (faire Shepherdeſſe) ſaide ſhe againe, that ſeldome endes, ſuruiuing all deſtinies, and which is neither ſubiect to change of time, nor fortune. If the condition of my eſtate (ſaide I againe) could prompt me ſo fit an anſwere, as thy wiſe and diſcreete wordes doe inforce, the deſire which I haue to ſerue thee, ſhould not let me from manifeſting the ſame by moſt louing termes, but in theſe few ones beleeue me (faire Shepherdeſſe) that the reſolution which I haue to be thine, not death it ſelfe can determine, nor take away. After theſe wordes, our mutuall imbracings were ſo many, and our louing ſpeeches to one another ſo often redoubled, and of my part ſo true, and vnfained, that we regarded not the Shepherdeſſes ſongs, nor beheld the daunces, nor other ſportes that were made in the temple. And now by this time was I earneſt with *Iſmenia* to tell me her name, and to put off her muffler, both which not onely ſhe cunningly excuſed, but very ſuttly turned her talke to another matter. But midnight being now paſt, and I hauing the greateſt deſire in the worlde to ſee her face, and to knowe her name, and of what village ſhe was, began to complaine of her, and to tell her, that it was not poſſible that the loue, which by her wordes ſhe proteſted to beare me, was ſo great, ſince hauing tolde her my name, ſhe concealed hers from me: and that louing her as I did, it was impoſſible for me to liue, vnleſſe I knewe whom I loued, or from whence I might heare newes from my loue againe, and many other things I tolde her in ſo good earneſt, that the ſame, and my teares helped to mooue falſe *Iſmenias* hart: who riſing vp and taking me by the hand, to carry me aſide into ſome ſecret place, where none might heare her, began to ſay theſe wordes vnto me, making as though

they

they came out from the bottome of her hart. Faire Shepherdeſſe, borne onely for the vnreſt and torment of a ſoule, that hitherto hath liued as exempt and free as poſſible might be, who can chooſe, but tell thee that thou requireſt at my handes, hauing now made thee the ſole Miſtreſſe of my libertie? Vnhappie me, that the chaunge of my habit hath deceiued thee, although the deceit redoundes to mine owne harme: The muffler, which thou intreateſt me to pull off, behold, to pleaſe thee, I take away, but to tell thee my name makes not much to thy purpoſe, when as heereafter (though I would not) thou ſhalt ſee me oftener then thou maieſt well ſuffer. And ſpeaking theſe wordes, and pulling off her muffler, mine eies behelde a face, whoſe countenance, though it was ſomewhat manlike, yet was the fauour and beautie of it ſo ſingular, that it made me to woonder. But *Iſmenia* proſecuting her ſpeech, ſaide. And bicauſe thou maiſt knowe (faire Shepherdeſſe) the ſumme of this paine which thy beautie hath made me feele, and that the wordes which haue paſſed betweene vs but in ſport, are true, knowe, that I am a man, and not a woman, as thou takeſt me to be: Theſe Shepherdeſſes, which thou ſeeſt heere in my companie (my kinſwomen and familiar acquaintance) to make ſome ſport and to laugh, apparelled me in this ſort; for otherwiſe I could not haue ſtaied in the temple, by reaſon of the olde cuſtome ſo ſtrictly obſerued heere. When I heard theſe wordes, and perceiued as I ſaid before, not thoſe effeminate lookes in her face, nor that demure modeſtie in her eies, which maidens for the moſt part are woont to haue, I verily beleeued that all was true that ſhe tolde me, and then was ſo far beſides my ſelfe, that I knew not what to anſwere her. Yet mine eies did ſtill contemplate that moſt perfect beautie, and marked thoſe words, which with ſo great diſſimulation ſhe had tolde me: for neuer could any make a falſe and fained tale ſeeme more apparant and true as that craftie and cruell Shepherdeſſe did. Then I felt my ſelfe ſo intangled in her loue, and ſo well content to heare that ſhe was enamoured of me againe, as (gentle Shepherdes) I am not able to declare. And though I had not till then any experience of loue paſſions (a cauſe ſufficient not to make me expreſſe them) yet forcing my ſelfe the beſt I could, in this ſort I ſaide vnto her. Faire Shepherdeſſe, that haſt (to make me liue without libertie, or for ſome other reſpect, which fortune beſt knowes) taken vpon thee the habit of her, who for thy loue hath entirely vowed her affections to thee, thine owne had ſufficed to ouercome me, without making me yeelde with mine owne weapons. But who can flie from that, which fortune hath allotted her? Thriſe happy might I haue thought my ſelfe, if on purpoſe thou hadſt done that, which by chaunce, and onely for merriment thou haſt deuiſed. For, if by changing thy naturall habit, it had bene onely to haue ſeene me, and to vnfolde to me thy amorous deſires, I would then haue attributed it to mine owne deſertes, and (no doubt) to thy great affection, but ſeeing that the intent was of an other conſequence, although the effect hath reſulted to this thou ſeeſt, it contents me not ſo greatly (I muſt needes confeſſe) being done in ſuch ſort as I haue ſaide. And let not this deſire amaze nor greeue thee; for there is no greater ſigne of a perfect louer, then to deſire to be beloued of him, to whom ſhe hath wholy offered vp her libertie. Whereupon by that thou haſt heard me vtter, thou maieſt gather, how thy ſight hath blinded my vnderſtanding, and made me become ſuch an one as I am, beſeeching thee to vſe the power thou haſt ouer me, in ſuch ſort, that I may entertaine this opinion, to thinke my ſelfe happie and fortunate to the end of our loue, the which for my part (while life doth laſt) ſhall not die in my faithfull and louing breſt. Deceitfull *Iſmenia* was ſo skilfull to frame a ſuttle anſwere to my ſimple wordes,

and

and to faine ſpeeches ſo fit for the ſubiect of our talke, that none coulde eſcape the cunning deceit, whereinto I fell, vnleſſe fortune by the threed of wiſedome had vnwound her out of ſo intricate a laberinth. And in this ſort we were together vntill morning came on, talking of that, which ſhe may imagine, that hath paſſed the like diſordered occurrents in loue. She tolde me her name was *Alanius*, her countrie village *Gallia*, three miles from our towne, where we appointed to meete, and ſee one another many times together. But now gan the duskie welkin to waxe cleere, and haſtie morning was come, when both of vs with many imbracings, teares, and ſighes were conſtrained to depart from one another. She went from me, and I, turning my head backe to beholde her, and to ſee if ſhe looked backe at me againe, perceiued how ſhe went away ſmiling to her ſelfe, whereof (thinking that mine eies did but deceiue me) I made no regarde at all. Away ſhe went with the companie that came with her, and I with more then I brought, ſince in my troubled minde I carried backe with me the eies and Idea of fained *Alanius*, the wordes, by the which ſhe had opened to me her malicious and ridiculous loue, the imbracings, that I receiued of her, and the cruell greefe, which vntill that time I had neuer prooued before. And now you muſt knowe (good Shepherdes) that this falſe and ſuttle *Iſmenia* had a coſin called *Alanius*, whom ſhe loued more then her ſelfe, for in countenance and eies, and in euery other part and lineaments, ſhe reſembled him ſo much, that if they had not bene of different ſexe, none could haue iudged the one from the other. And the loue which ſhe did beare him, was ſo great, that when I asked her her name in the temple, and ſeeing that ſhe muſt needes tell me ſome Shepherdes name or other, the firſt that came to her minde and mouth, was that of *Alanius*. *For there is no greater certaintie, then that the toong in a ſudden matter doth euer concurre with the hart.* And her the Shepherd loued well, but yet not ſo much as ſhe did him. But now when the Shepherdeſſes were come out of the temple, to goe home to their villages, *Iſmenia* went to her kinſman *Alanius*, who, to ſhew her all the curteſie, that in ſo great and mutual loue was requiſite, leauing the yongſters companie of his towne, accompanied her all alone: whereat *Iſmenia* was not a little proude and ioyfull: who to entertaine the time with ſome talke by the way, tolde him all that had paſſed betweene vs, not omitting any thing, and not without great ſport and laughter of them both, telling him alſo, that I went away with firme beleefe, that ſhe was a man, and greatly enamoured of her. When *Alanius* heard theſe nouelties, he diſſembled the matter the beſt he coulde, ſaying, that it was a pleaſant and pretie ieſt. And picking all out of her, that had paſſed betweene vs, ſo that (he thought) there was nothing left vntold, they came to their towne. But eight daies after (which I thought were eight thouſand yeeres) the traitour *Alanius* (for ſo I may with greater reaſon call him, then he had afterward to caſt me off) came to our towne, and ſtood attending me in ſuch a place, where I could not chooſe but ſee him, as I was going with other maides to the fountaine not far from the towne: whom when I eſpied, I was rapt out of minde for extreme and ſudden ioy, thinking he was the very ſame, that in the habit of a Shepherdeſſe had ſpoken to me in the temple; whereupon I made him ſome ſecret ſignes to come to the fountaine, whither I was going, who knowing my meaning, performed foorthwith my minde. Thither he came, and there we were talking together as long as time woulde giue vs leaue, and the loue (of my ſide at the leſt) was ſo ſtrongly confirmed betweene vs, that though the deceit had bene diſcouered (as not many daies after it was knowne) it was yet of ſo great force and vertue, that it coulde neuer make me alienate my

minde

minde and affection from him. And I alſo beleeued, that *Alanius* loued me well, and that eſpecially from that time he was greatly enamoured of me, though afterwardes in effect he did not ſo well declare it: ſo that for certaine daies together our loue happily continued, and was handled with the greateſt ſecrecie that might be, which was not yet ſo great, but that ſubtile *Iſmenia* in the end perceiued it: who (ſeeing her ſelfe to be the onely cauſe thereof, and moſt in fault) not onely by deceiuing me, but by miniſtring occaſion to *Alanius* of diſcouering himſelfe, and by that which paſſed, to fall in loue with me, and to forget her (as indeede he did) for very greefe was almoſt out of her wits, but that with this poore hope ſhe comforted her ſelfe againe, that, if I knew the trueth, I would immediately forget and caſt him off, wherein ſhe was not a little deceiued: for as he afterwardes loued me more and more, ſo by his ſeuerall beauties and ſingular deſerts, I was more obliged to loue and honour him. But *Iſmenia* purpoſing to open the deceite, which by her owne follie and ſuttletie ſhe had framed, wrote me this letter following.

Iſmenias letter to Seluagia.

IF we are bound to loue thoſe well *(Seluagia)* that loue vs, there is nothing in the world, which I ought to eſteeme deerer then thy ſelfe; but if to hate them that are the cauſe, why we are forgotten and deſpiſed, I leaue it to thine owne diſcretion. I would put thee in ſome fault, for caſting thine eies vpon my *Alanius*, but (wretched woman) what ſhall I doe, that am the organ of mine owne miſhap. O *Seluagia*, to my greefe I ſawe thee, and well could I excuſe that which I paſſed with thee, but in the end ſuch fonde prankes haue ſeldome good ſucceſſe. For laughing but one little hower with my *Alanius*, and telling him what had paſſed betweene vs, I muſt now weepe and lament all my life time, if my greefe (at the leſt) may not moue thee to ſome remorſe of pitie. I beſeech thee (by all I may) that the diſcouerie of this deceite may ſuffice, and ſo worke with thee, to make thee forget my *Alanius*, and reſtore this hapleſſe Shepherdeſſe to that, which (being not a little) thou art able to doe, if loue will permit thee to graunt me this fauour, which I requeſt at thy hands.

When I had read this letter, and imparted it to *Alanius*, he then at large vnfolded vnto me the maner of her deceit, but not one word of the loue, that was betweene them both, whereof I made no great reckoning; for I was ſo aſſured of that which he ſeemed to beare me, that I woulde neuer beleeue that any paſſed or future thoughts might haue bene an occaſion to haue made him afterwardes forget me. But bicauſe *Iſmenia* might not by my ſilence thinke me diſcurteous, I anſwered her letter thus.

Seluagias letter to Iſmenia.

I Knowe not faire *Iſmenia*, whether I may iuſtly accuſe thee, or giue thee thankes for diſpoſing my minde and affection in this ſort, nor can reſolue with my ſelfe whether of theſe two I ſhould doe, vntill the ſucceſſe of my loue doe counſell me heerein. On the one ſide I am ſorie for thy ill hap; on the other, I ſee that thou wentſt foorth (as it were) to meete and imbrace it. *Seluagia* was free when thou didſt delude her in the temple, and is now ſubiect to his will, into whoſe handes thou wouldſt needes deliuer her. Thou praieſt me to leaue off the loue, that I beare *Alanius*, with that which thou thy ſelfe wouldſt doe in this behalfe, I may eaſily anſwere thee. Yet one thing makes me very ſad, that thou art greeued for that, for which

thou

thou haſt no iuſt cauſe of complaint, which to the patient therof giueth the greateſt paine in the world. I do often conſider & thinke of thoſe faire eies, with which thou didſt behold me, and of that ſweete face, which (after many importunate requeſtes) thou didſt ſhew me, and it greeues me *Iſmenia*, that ſuch faire things, and ſo like to my *Alanius*, ſhould ſuffer any ſorrow and diſcontentment at all. Behold then what remedie is left for thy greefe: that for the bountie, which thou haſt vſed towardes me, by giuing me the moſt precious gemme thou hadſt, I kiſſe thy faire and daintie hands; which curteſie of thine being ſo great, God graunt that by ſome meanes or other I may be able to requite. If thou ſeeſt my *Alanius* there, tell him (I pray thee) what reaſon he hath to loue me, for he knoweth already, how much he hath to forget thee. And God giue thee the content thou deſireſt, which may not be to the coſt of that which I haue, by ſeeing my affection ſo happily and well imploied.

Iſmenia could not reade this letter to the end, for in the middeſt of it her ſighes and teares, which ſhe powred out, were ſo many, that ſhe thought at that very time to haue loſt her life. She laboured (as much as ſhe could) to make *Alanius* forſake me, and deuiſed ſo many meanes for the ſame purpoſe, as he, to ſhun thoſe places and occaſions, whereby he thought he might ſee her. Not that he meant her any harme thereby, but bicauſe he thought (by doing ſo) in ſome part he requited the great loue that I bare him. All the daies that he liued in this minde, there eſcaped not any, wherein I ſawe him not; for he paſſed euermore that way, feeding his flockes, which from our towne did leade to his. He accounted no trauels nor troubles too great, which he did for my ſake, and eſpecially, if he thought I regarded them. Day by day *Iſmenia* inquired after him, and neuer ceaſed to ſeeke him out, who being ſometimes tolde by others, and ſometimes knowing her ſelfe, that he was in our towne, had no patience at all to ſuffer ſuch a corſiue at her hart. And yet for all this, there was not anything, that contented and pacified her troubled minde more, then when ſhe could get ſome little time to ſpeake with him. *But as neceſſitie is ſo ingenious and politike, that it ſeekes out remedies, where mans wit can ſcarce imagine any,* deſpiſed *Iſmenia* aduentured to helpe her ſelfe by one, which I woulde to God had neuer entred into her thought, by faining that ſhe extremely loued another Shepherd called *Montanus*, who a long time had loued and ſerued her before. And as ſhe purpoſed, ſo ſhe put it in practiſe, to trie if by this ſudden change ſhe might draw *Alanius* to that which ſo much ſhe deſired. *For there is not any thing, which a man thinks he hath moſt ſure, though making but a ſmall account thereof, but that the loſſe of it (if on a ſudden he looſe it) doth not a little greeue him.* But now when *Montanus* perceiued that faire *Iſmenia* his loue and Miſtreſſe had at laſt mollified her long obdurate hart, and now thought good to requite the great loue that he had ſo long time borne her, Shepherdes, you may well imagine, what content he felt. For ſo great was his ioy, ſo obſequious his ſeruices to her, and ſo many troubles that he paſſed for her ſake, that they were an occaſion (with the diſfauours and contempt that *Alanius* had ſhewen her) to make that fained loue prooue true, which but in ieſt ſhe began tō beare him. So that *Iſmenia* yeelded her hart wholy to *Montanus* with ſuch firmneſſe, that there was not any in the world, whom ſhe loued more then him, nor whom ſhe deſired leſſe to ſee then my *Alanius*: the which (as ſoone as ſhe could) ſhe gaue him to vnderſtand, thinking that as by theſe meanes ſhe was ſufficiently reuenged of his forgetfulneſſe, ſhe had likewiſe buſied my head with the cruell thought therof. The loue that *Alanius* did beare me (although it greeued him to the hart to ſee *Iſmenia* loue that Shepherd, whō in all his life time he could neuer abide)

was

was yet ſo great, that he neuer ſeemed to make any ſhew of his ſecret greeſe. But certaine daies paſſing on, and thinking with himſelfe, that he onely was the cauſe of his enemies good hap, and of thoſe ſingular fauours, that *Iſmenia* ſhewed him, and that the Shepherdeſſe did now ſhun his ſight (who not long ſince before died for the want thereof) deſpite, wroth, and iealouſie at once ſo fiercely aſſailed him, that his impatience had almoſt bereft him of his wits, if preſently he had not determined to hinder *Montanus* his good fortune, or in the purſuite thereof to haue loſt his deereſt life. For performance whereof, he began to looke on *Iſmenia* againe, and not to come ſo openly in my ſight, as he was wont to doe, nor to be ſo often out of his towne, leaſt *Iſmenia* might haue knowen it. The loue betweene her and *Montanus* went not on ſo forwardes, as that betweene me and my *Alanius* backwardes, though not of my part (when nothing, but death, was able to diuorce my minde from him) but of his, in whom I neuer thought to ſee ſuch a ſudden change: For ſo extremely he burned with choler and rancour againſt *Montanus*, and ſo deepely enuied his good fortune, that (he thought) he could not execute nor aſſwage that anger, but by renewing the olde loue, that he bare to *Iſmenia*; for furtherance whereof, his comming to our towne was a great impediment, whoſe abſence from me as it engendred forgetfulneſſe in him, ſo the preſence of his *Iſmenia*, rekindled his hart with a ſtraunger kinde of loue then before: whereupon he returned againe to his firſt thoughts: And I (poore ſoule) remained all alone deceiued and ſcorned in mine owne affection. But all the ſeruice that he beſtowed on *Iſmenia*, the tokens and letters that he ſent her, and the pitifull complaints that he made vnto her, or any thing els that he was able to doe, could neuer mooue her ſetled minde, nor make her forget the leſt part of that loue, which ſhe bare *Montanus*. I being therefore loſt for the loue of *Alanius*, *Alanius* dying for *Iſmenia*, and *Iſmenia* for *Montanus*, it fell out, that my father had a certaine occaſion of buſines about the buttals of certaine paſtures with *Phylenus* father to *Montanus*, by reaſon whereof both of them came often to our towne, and in ſuch a time, that *Montanus* (whether it was for the ſuperfluous fauours, that *Iſmenia* beſtowed on him (which to men of a baſe minde is a cloying) or whether he was too iealous of the renewed and earneſt ſuites of *Alanius*) waxed very colde in his loue to *Iſmenia*. In the end when he eſpied me driuing my ſheepe to the folde, and with a curious eie looking on me, he began preſently to be enamoured of me, ſo that (by the effects which he daily ſhewed) it was not poſſible for me to beare greater affection to *Alanius*, nor *Alanius* to *Iſmenia*, nor *Iſmenia* to *Montanus*, nor *Montanus* to loue me more, then in very trueth he did. Beholde what a ſtrange couſinage of loue: If *Iſmenia* went by chaunce to the fielde, *Alanius* went after her; if *Montanus* went to his flockes, *Iſmenia* after him; if I went to the hils with my ſheepe, *Montanus* after me; if I knew that *Alanius* was in the wood, where he was wont to feede his flocks, thither I hied me after him. And it was the ſtrangeſt thing in the world to heare how *Alanius* ſighing ſaide, Ah my *Iſmenia*; and how *Iſmenia* ſaide, Ah my *Montanus*; and how *Montanus* ſaid, Ah my *Seluagia*; and how *Seluagia* ſaide, Ah my *Alanius*. It fell out afterwardes on a day, that we fower met together in a forreſt that lay betweene all our townes, and the reaſon was, bicauſe *Iſmenia* went to viſite certaine Shepherdeſſes of her acquaintance, which dwelt thereabouts, which when *Alanius* knew, being forced, and driuen on by his fleeting thoughts, he went after to ſeeke her out, and found her neere to a fine ſpring kembing her golden haire. I being tolde by a certaine Shepherd (my neighbour) that *Alanius* was gone to the forreſt of the valley (for ſo it was called) tooke

out before me a few goates, that were shut vp in a little yarde neere to our house, (bicause I would not goe without some errant) and went after him, where my desire guided me; whom by chaunce I found weeping and complaining of his ill fortune, and the Shepherdesse laughing and iesting at his bootlesse teares, and sighes. When *Ismenia* espied me, she was not a little glad of my companie, and began to be merry with me, although I had no cause to be so with her, to whom I rather obiected the small reason, and lesse regarde of modestie and discretion she had, to greeue my hart with that vnciuill part and bad deceit; whereof she so wisely excused her selfe, that whereas I thought she would haue made me some amendes for all my greefe and sorrow, by her wise and well ordered reasons, she gaue me to vnderstand, that I was rather bound to her, in that if she had mocked me, I had (saide she) satisfied my selfe as well, and requited her againe, not onely by taking *Alanius* her cosin from her, whom she loued more then her selfe, but also by enticing *Montanus* to my loue, from that he was wont to shew her. By this time came *Montanus*, who was tolde by a Shepherdesse (a friend of mine) called *Solisa*, that I was gone to the forrest of the valley with my goates. And when all the fower discontented and discordant louers met there together, it cannot be imagined what we all felt: for euery one looked vpon another that would not haue bene viewed of those eies againe. I asked my *Alanius* the cause of his forgetfulnes, he sued for mercie at craftie *Ismenias* handes; she accused and complained of the colde loue of *Montanus*; he of *Seluagias* cruelty. Being therefore in this sort (as you haue heard) euery one tormented for them, who loued them not againe, *Alanius* to the tune of his Fiddle by this dolefull song began to complaine of *Ismenias* crueltie.

NO more (O cruell Nymph) now hast thou prayed
Ynough in thy reuenge, prooue not thine ire
On him that yeeldes, the fault is now apayed
Vnto my cost: now mollifie thy dire,
Hardnes and brest of thine so much obdured:
And now raise vp (though lately it hath erred)
A poore repenting soule, that in the obscured
Darknes of thy oblision lies enterred.
For it fals not in that, that doth commend thee,
That such a Swaine as I may once offend thee.

If that the little sheepe with speede is flying
From angrie Shepherd (with his wordes affraied)
And runneth here and there with fearfull crying,
And with great greefe is from the flocke estraied:
But when it now perceiues that none doth follow,
And all alone, so far estraying, mourneth,
Knowing what danger it is in, with hollow
And fainting bleates, then fearefull it returneth
Vnto the flocke, meaning no more to leaue it,
Should it not be a iust thing to receiue it?

Lift vp these eies (Ismenia) *which so stately*
To view me, thou hast lifted vp before me

That

That libertie, which was mine owne but lately,
Giue me againe, and to the same restore me:
And that milde hart, so full of loue and pittie,
Which thou didst yeeld to me, and euer owe me.
Behold (my Nymph) I was not then so witty
To knowe that sincere loue, that thou didst shew me:
Now wofull man full well I knowe and rue it,
Although it was too late before I knew it.

How could it be (my enemie) say, tell me,
How thou (in greater fault and errour being
Then euer I was thought) should'st thus repell me?
And with new league and cruell title seeing
Thy faith so pure and woorthy to be changed.
And what is that Ismenia, *that doth binde it*
To loue, whereas the same is most estranged,
And where it is impossible to finde it?
But pardon me, if herein I abuse thee,
Since that the cause thou gau'st me doth excuse me.

But tell me now what honour hast thou gained,
Auenging such a fault by thee committed;
And thereunto by thy occasion trained:
What haue I done, that I haue not acquitted?
Or what excesse, that is not amply pated,
Or suffer more, that I haue not endured?
What cruell minde, what angry brest displaied,
With sauage hart, to fiercenes so adiured,
Would not such mortall greefe make milde and tender,
But that, which my fell Shepherdesse doth render?

Now as I haue perceiued well thy reasons,
Which thou hast had, or hast yet to forget me,
The paines, the greefes, the guiltes of forced treasons,
That I haue done, wherein thou first didst set me:
The passions, and thine eares, and eies refusing
To heare, and see me, meaning to vndoe me:
Cam'st thou to know, or be but onte perusing
Th'vnsought occasions, which thou gau'st vnto me,
Thou should'st not haue wherewith to more torment me,
Nor I to pay the fault my rashnes lent me.

Thus did my *Alanius* end his sweet song, wherewith I would my life had also ended, & not without great cause, since my mishap could not be more extreme, then to see him (whom I loued more then my selfe) before mine eies to pine so much for the loue of another, and so strangely to forsake me. But as I was not alone in these misfortunes, I did dissemble them for that time (as well as I could) as also bicause faire *Ismenia*, casting her eies vpon her *Montanus*, began to sing that which followeth.

How fond am I to hope for any rest
In endlesse plaints, vaine sighes, and bootelesse teares?
The present now at hand to be exprest,
Yet few to these, that, with ten thousand feares,
I haue powr'd out vnto thy cruell eares.
And if at any time my life did tend
To other loues in earnest or in iest,
This loue by that I neuer could offend,
Bicause I did but then begin to prooue,
And learne, how well Montanus *I could loue.*

Then did I learne to loue, my selfe I taught
To loue, by him, who lou'd me not againe:
For I suspected that I should be brought
Vnto thy loue (Montanus) *when in vaine*
I loued him, that did my loue disdaine:
I try'de (I say) my free and careleſse hart
Of loue to taste some sorrow, that it sought:
And let that Shepherd with his loue depart,
That loues with thee, for all his paine and greefe
Is but in vaine, when vaine is his releefe.

Let none accuse me then if I disdaine
Alanius *loues, whose loues are but a showe,*
For I could neuer loue nor entertaine
Any but thee, for whom I will bestowe
My deereſt life, since heauens will haue it soe.
And if at any time I fein'd to like,
I lik'd (I say) but how I did I knowe,
For neuer any Shepherd els could strike
My hart indeede, but thou, to whom I giue
My faith kept for thee since I first did liue.

Let burning sighes go forth and still increase,
Let both mine eies become two strings of teares,
Let accidents, repugnant to mine ease
Arise, for thoughts, which now my minde forsweares,
Shall neuer hurt that loue which now it beares:
Let sorrow goe, and ill which way they will,
And now let ioies returne which way they please,
For where they are, there will I houer still,
Since that no harme my purpose may reclame,
Nor cruell death it selfe, although it came.

Ismenia by this song had reuenged me of cruell and disloyall *Alanius*, (if in the loue (at the leſt which I did beare him, any desire of reuenge could befall,) but *Montanus* staied not long from requiting *Ismenia* againe, who casting his eie vpon me, sung this song as followeth.

Fooliſh

Foolish loue, ah foolish louer,
I for thee, thou for another.

I am a foole, and seeme no lesse,
For thee who will not be?
For he's a foole I doe confesse,
That is not one for thee:
And yet this doth not well agree,
To be a foolish louer,
Or foole for her, that is a foole for louing of another.

Now seeing thee, thou seest not mee,
And diest for my foe,
Eate me with sauce (that loueth thee)
Of him thou loues't soe:
So shalt thou make me (to my woe)
To be a foolish louer,
And such a foole for louing thee as thou art for another.

When he had made an ende of the last verses, notwithstanding the present agonie and sorrow, that we al suffered, we could not chooſe but laugh hartily to see how *Montanus* would haue me deceiue my taste by looking on him, with the sauce and appetite of *Alanius*, whom I loued, as if it might haue fallen in the compasse of my thought, to suffer it to be deceiued by the apparance of an other thing. But now with greater firmnesse then the rest, I began to tune and play on my Bagpipe, and to sing a song to it, as you shall heare; for by the same I thought to shew how more constantly then any of the rest there, I had persеuered in my loue to *Alanius*.

Although my quiet it doth let,
Rather then blame discredit me,
(For God forbid that I forget)
Let me with wrong forgotten be.

Not onely where obliuion raineth,
There is no loue, nor can be none,
Nay, where there is suspicion,
There is no loue, but such as faineth;
Great harme it is to loue, where set
In booteleſſe hopes, the minde they free,
But God defend that I forget,
Forgotten though a iest it bee.

If that I loue, why then loue I,
To sport or leaue to loue at all?
For what more honor can befall,
Then die for that, for which I die:
To liue therefore and to forget,
Is such a shamefull life I see,
That I had rather loue one yet,
Forgotten though to death I bee.

When I had made an ende of my song, the Shepherdes teares (but those especially of faire *Ismenia*) were so many, that of force they made me participate some of her greefe, which thing I might well haue left vndone, for no fault could iustly haue bene attributed to my great mishap, as to all those that were there, it was sufficiently knowen. After this euery one of vs went to their owne towne, bicause it was not meete for vs to be out of them at such inconuenient and late howers. And the next day, my father (without telling me the cause why) caried me out of our towne, and brought me to yours, placing me there in the house of *Albania* mine aunt, and his sister, whom you knowe well, where I haue remained a few daies since my comming hither, not knowing the cause of my sudden exile, but haue heard of late, that *Montanus* hath married *Ismenia*, and that *Alanius* was about to marrie a sister of hers called *Syluia*: whereupon to conclude, I wish that he may liue (since it was not my good fortune to haue him) as ioyfull a life with his new spouse, that nothing may want to the full accomplishment of their content and happinesse: For, the loue, which I beare him will suffer me no lesse, then to wish him all the felicitie of this life.

When *Seluagia* had made an end of her sorrowfull tale, she began to weepe so bitterly, that both the Shepherdes (being a kinde of friendly dutie, wherein they had no small experience) began also to helpe her with their teares, and after hauing spent a little time in this sort, *Syrenus* saide vnto her. Great is thy greefe (faire *Seluagia*) and yet I iudge thy patience and discretion greater. Take example by other mens harmes, looke into their paines, consider their woes, if thou wilt the better support thine owne: And bicause it growes now towardes night, let vs be iogging towardes our towne, and to morrow passe away the heate of the day neere to this cleere fountaine, where we will all three meete. Let it be as thou saiest (said *Seluagia*) but bicause betweene this and the towne there is a pretie way, let euery one of vs (to passe it away with some thing) sing a song befitting the condition and qualitie of his loue. The Shepherdes answered, if she would begin, they would follow, which *Seluagia* did, all three going on softly towardes the towne.

SHepherd who can passe such wrong
And a life in woes so deepe?
Which to liue is to too long,
As it is too short to weepe.

Greeuous sighes in vaine I waste,
Leesing my affiance, and
I perceiue my hope at last
With a candle in the hand.

What time then to hope among
Bitter hopes, that euer sleepe?
When this life is to too long,
As it is too short to weepe.

This greefe which I feele so rife,
(Wretch) I doe deserue as hire,
Since I came to put my life
In the handes of my desire.

Then

Then ceaſe not my plaints ſo ſtrong,
For (though life her courſe doth keepe)
It is not to liue ſo long,
As it is too ſhort to weepe.

With a burning ſigh that came from her afflicted ſoule, *Selnagia* ended her ſong, ſaying, How vnfortunate (alas) am I that ſee my ſelfe buried in iealouſie & deſpaire, which cannot in the end but bring my life to no other paſſe, then to that which is infallibly expected of them. After this, forgotten *Syrenus* to the tune of his Rebecke began to ſing this ſong following.

WEepe not my dolefull eies,
But if you weepe, thinke (at the leſt)
They tolde no trueth but lies,
And then it may be you may reſt.

Since that imagination
Doth cauſe ſo much in euery ſtate,
Thinke that ſhe loues thee as of late,
And thou ſhalt haue leſſe paſſion.

And if you will (mine eies)
Haue eaſe, imagine then the beſt,
And that they told you lies:
And ſo perhaps you may haue reſt.

Thinke that ſhe loues as well,
As euer ſhe did heretofore:
But this ſad men cannot reſtore,
To thinke what once befell:

Then mournfull eies, where lies
Your helpe? Yet thinke of ſome at leſt,
If not, weepe ſtill mine eies,
Or make an end, and you ſhall reſt.

After that ſorrowfull *Syrenus* with many teares had made an end of his ſong, deſpiſed *Sylvanus* began his thus.

MY life (yoong Shepherdeſſe) for thee
Of needes to death muſt poſt;
But yet my greefe muſt ſtay with mee
After my life is loſt.

The greeuous ill, by death that cured is
Continually hath remedie at hand:
But not that torment, that is like to this,
That in ſlowe time, and fortunes meanes doth ſtand.

And if this ſorrow cannot be
Ended with life (as moſt)
What then doth this thing profit me,
A ſorrow wonne or loſt?

Yet all is one to me, as now I trie
A flattring hope, or that that had not bene yet.
For if to day for want of it I die,
Next day I doe no leſſe for hauing ſeene it.

Faine would I die, to end and free
This greefe, that kils me moſt
If that it might be loſt with me,
Or die when life is loſt.

And in this ſort the two Shepherdes went homewardes in companie of *Seluagia*, departing from one another with accorde to meete the next day following at the ſame place.

The end of the firſt booke of Diana.

The ſecond Booke of Diana of George of Montemayor.

NOw did the Shepherdes, which fed their ſheepe in the fieldes of *Ezla*, begin to ſhew themſelues, euery one with his flockes along the bankes of thoſe criſtalline waters (each Shepherde knowing, & chooſing out the beſt place before the Sun did riſe, the better to paſſe away the burning heate of the day) when the faire Shepherdeſſe *Seluagia* came down from the hil, which frõ her towne did leade to a thick wood, driuing her gentle ſheepe and lambes before her: who, after ſhe had put them amongſt the lowe ſhrubs, which grew very thicke thereabouts, and ſeeing them buſie in knobbing the yoong and tender boughes, to ſtanch their hunger, went directly to the fountaine of the Sicamours, where the day before, in companie of the two Shepherds, ſhe had paſſed away the noone-tide heate: and ſeeing the place ſo agreeable to melancholie, and contemplation of her ſorrowes, ſhe thought it not amiſſe to take the opportunitie of the time, and place, and to ſit downe by the fountaine, whoſe waters ſeemed with her ſwelling teares to increaſe: where, after ſhe had a great while buſied her ſelfe in diuers and ſundrie thoughts, ſhe began thus to ſay. May it be poſſible *Alanius*, that thou art the man, whoſe eies I neuer ſaw dried vp from teares in preſence of mine? And he, who, falling downe ſo many times at my feete, with louing and pitifull wordes, craued mercie and clemencie at my handes, the which (to my great harme and greefe) I ſo gently beſtowed on thee? Tell me Shepherd (the falſeſt that liues on earth) is it true that thou louedſt me, to cloy thy minde

minde, with my fauours, and ſo ſoone to be wearie of the loue that thou didſt beare me? Thou mighteſt imagine, that it was no leſſe in my power, to forget and deſpiſe thee, as thou haſt forgotten me. For it is the part of thoſe, that handle not their matters of loue ſo well as they ſhoulde, to thinke that their Miſtreſſes may play the like partes with them, as they haue done before; though ſome vſe it for a remedie and policie to make their loue encreaſe the more. And others, that iealouſie (the occaſion whereof moſt commonly they faine) may ſo captiuate their Miſtreſſes mindes, that (as they make them beleeue) they are not able to ſettle their affection in any other place: whereupon moſt of them come by little and little to manifeſt all that they fained before, whereby more cleerely they diſcouer their diſloyaltie. All which extremes at laſt reſult to the greeſe and preiudice of vs poore ſoules, who (not conſidering how the endes of ſuch things commonly fall out) doe ſo deepely ſinke into that kinde of aſſured affection, that we neuer leaue of to loue you, nor you to requite vs with ingratitude and inconſtancie, as thou doſt that loue (diſloyall *Alanius*) which I haue borne, and doe ſtill beare thee. So that which of theſe thou haſt bene, I cannot coniecture. But wonder not *Seluagia*, that thou vnderſtandeſt ſo little in matters of diſdaine, that art ſo well practiſed in loues affaires. Thou didſt euer beare an honeſt and vertuous pretence by thy wordes, whereby I neuer looked for leſſe by thy deedes, which made me thinke, that that loue, (whereby thou mad'ſt me beleeue, that thy deſire extended to wiſh no more of me, then pure loue againe) ſhould neuer haue an end: for if any further drift had bene in thy deſires, I woulde neuer haue ſuſpected firmneſſe in thy loue. O wretched woman, how ſoone haue I begun to know thy intentions, and yet how late to preuent my harmes? Come thou to me my pretie Bagpipe, and with thee will I paſſe the time away: for had I ſpent it onely in thy exerciſe and delight, it had bene better for me: and after ſhe had plaied a while on it, ſhe began to ſing this *Sextine* following.

Waters that fall from top of theſe ſteepe Hils,
With ſuch a noyſe into theſe lowe deepe Vales,
Why thinke you not of thoſe, which from my Soule
Continually diſtill my wearied Eies?
And what's the cauſe of them? Vnluckie Time,
In which hard fortune robbed all my Ioy.
Loue gaue me hope of ſuch a golden Ioy,
That ther's no Shepherdeſſe in all theſe Hils,
That had ſuch cauſe to praiſe a happy Time:
But after he did put me in theſe Vales
Of ſwelling teares, that fall from both mine Eies:
Not to behold ſuch greeſe as kils my Soule.
Such is the paine, that wounds a louing Soule,
That in the end I know what thing is Ioy:
O where ſhall I then turne my wearied Eies?
If that the medowes, woods, the plaines, and Hils,
The pleaſant groues, and fountaines of the Vales,
Still to my thoughts preſent ſo ſweete a Time?
Who would haue thought that ſuch a happy Time
Should be ſo fierce a torment to my Soule?
Or cruell fortune baniſh me the Vale,

Wherein

Wherin all things were obiects of my Ioy?
Vntill the hungrie woolfe, which to the Hill
Aſcending vp, was pleaſant to mine Eies.
But fortune now, what may my drenched Eies
Behold, which ſaw their Shepherd many a Time
Driuing his lambes before him downe this Hill?
Whoſe name for ay ſhall reſt within my Soule.
O fortune foe vnto my former Ioy,
How doe I languiſh in this irkeſome Vale?
But when ſo pleaſant and ſo freſh a Vale
Is not delightfull to my wearied Eies,
And where I cannot finde content and Ioy:
And hope not now to haue it any Time,
See what extremes enuiron then my Soule:
O that he came againe. O that ſweete Hill:
O higheſt Hils, *and freſh and pleaſant* Vale,
Where once my Soule *did reſt and both theſe* Eies,
Tell me ſhall I in Time *haue ſo much* Ioy?

About this time *Syluanus* was with his flockes in a thicket of Mirtle trees neere to the fountaine, muſing and imagining diuers things in his minde: but when he heard *Seluagias* voice, awaked as it were out of a ſlumber, he gaue attentiue eare to the verſes, that ſhe did ſing. But as this Shepherd was cruelly intreated of loue, and contemned of *Diana*, ſo his paſſions made him wander a thouſand times out of his wits, as that he now ſpake ill of loue, and by and by praiſed it, ſometimes merrie, and other times more penſiue and ſad, then the moſt ſorrowfull man in the world, to day ſpeaking ill of women, to morrow extolling them aboue all mortall creatures. And thus did this ſorrowfull Shepherd leade a life, which as to all, ſo eſpecially to thoſe that are free from loue would be tedious and difficult to deſcribe. But hauing heard *Seluagias* ſweete verſes, and obtained leaue of his ſad thoughts, he tooke his Kit, and to the tune thereof began to ſing that which followeth.

TO heare me wearied is the cleereſt riuer,
Tedious I am to euery vale and mountaine:
And now to heare (O loue, my ſorrowes giuer)
My plaining, wearied is each criſtall fountaine.
The Sicamour, the Oke, and Elme are wearie,
Spring, Sommer, Autumne, and the winter ſeaſon
Hearing my cries, are ſworne not to be merry.
With teares I melt theſe rocks: and yet all reaſon
Of pitie (Tigreſſe) thou doſt ſtill deny me,
When trees, and ſtones for greefe are dying by me.

A bondſlaue of a freeman thou haſt made me,
And of a man of reaſon, cleane contrarie:
With life, and death, by turnes thou doſt inuade me,
And to tormenting greefe my ſoule doſt carrie.
Of affable, and one that liu'd ſo gayly,

Made

Made me thou haſt to frowards diſdaining:
Of one, that did conuerſe with all men daily,
Made me thou haſt their company refraining.
Eies had I once, now blinded with deſire:
I was a man of fleſh, but now of fire.

What's this my hart, thy torments doſt thou double?
Tell me mine eies, and are you ſtill a weeping?
My ſoule, ſufficeth not my paſſed trouble?
My teares, and are ye yet in riuers ſteeping?
My wandring wits, and are you not moleſted
More then ynough with ſuch inceſſant ſorrow?
And are ye not my ſenſes alſo wreſted
From your right courſe, reſting not euen nor morrow?
How know I then, weepe, ſee, or feele this hower,
When torments waſte their force and ſeuerall power?

Who made my Shepherdeſſes treſſes twiſt all
Of fine Arabian gold, not gilt-like ſhining:
Her face of cleereſt and of choſen chriſtall,
Her rubie lips, two rowes of pearle combining:
Her dymond eies, like to thoſe ſtars aboue all,
Her necke, that whiteſt Allablaſter ſtayneth,
Her paſſing wit, inforcing vs to loue all:
Her ſtately minde, that all our loues diſdaineth.
Why made ſhee not her hart of melting matter,
Then of ſuch marble ſtone ſo hard to batter?

One day I do conforme me to my fortune,
And to my griefe, that faire Diana *cauſeth:*
Next day mine yll doth vex me, and importune
My ſoule with thoughts of griefe that ſeldome pauſeth:
Cruell and fierce and inhumane I call her,
And ſo there is no order in my ſorrow:
For afterwards in phraſes I inſtall her,
What now I ſay, I do deny to morrow.
And all is thus leading a life in anguiſh,
Which ſoone mine eies may ſee by death to languiſh.

When faire *Seluagia* knew the Shepherd *Syluanus* by his voice, ſhe went to him, and ſaluting one another with curteous and louing words, they ſat them downe vnder the ſhadow of a thicke and leafie mirtle, in the mids of a little medow, which for the diuerſitie of fine golden flowers wherewith it was ſpotted, more then their ſorrowfull thoughts could deſire, was moſt pleaſant to the wandring eie. And *Syluanus* began to ſpeake in this ſort. The diuerſitie of ſo many vnaccuſtomed miſhaps, that daily harme vs woefull & true louers cannot be (faire *Seluagia*) without griefe and compaſſion of minde conſidered. But amongſt them all, there is none (me thinks) that ought to be ſo much feared as that, which he ſuffers, who hath once

ſeene himſelfe in a good and ioyfull eſtate: the which by experience (as yeſterday thou didſt tell me) I neuer came yet to know: for the life (which I paſſe) is ſo far from reſt, and deliuered vp to ſorrowfull imaginations, that a thouſand times in vaine I ſeeke out new inuentions and means to deceiue and alter my taſt. For remedy wherof, I do ſometimes think, That I am deerely beloued of my miſtreſſe, which thought (without opening any further paſſage to this fiction) I retaine as long as I can in my mind: but when I conſider afterwards the truth of my eſtate, I am ſo confounded with my ſelfe, as I am not able to expreſſe it, and then (againſt my will) am voide of all patience: ſince then a bare imagination is not ſuch a thing, that may be ſuffered, behold what the truth is able to do? I would to God (*Syluanus*) I were free (ſaid *Seluagia*) from this franticke paſſion that I might ſpeake the better in it, as in ſuch a caſe it were moſt needfull. For thou canſt not know any greater ſigne of loue, whether it be little or much, or of paſſion, whether it be ſmall or great, then by hearing her tell it, that feeles it: for a paſſion extremely felt can neuer be well manifeſted by her toong that ſuffers it. So that I (being ſubiect to my miſhap, and ſorrowfull for that diſgrace, which *Alanius* doth me) am not with words able to expreſſe the *Chaos* of griefe wherin I am ouerwhelmed. Wherefore I leaue it to thy conſideration and iudgement, as to things wherin I may put an aſſured confidence and truſt. I know not *Seluagia*, what to ſay (replied *Syluanus* ſighing) nor what remedies we may hope for of our harms, doſt thou (perhaps) know any? How ſhould I not know (ſaid *Seluagia*) And wotteſt thou what it is? To leaue of to loue. And this maieſt thou do thy ſelfe (ſaid *Syluanus*.) As fortune and time ſhall ordaine (ſaide *Seluagia*.) Then I tell thee (ſaid *Syluanus* maruelling much) that thou needeſt not trouble thy ſelfe ſo much by complayning of thy griefe, bicauſe that loue, which is ſubiect to time and fortune, cannot be ſo extreme, to giue one any trouble or paine that ſuffers it. And canſt thou deny (ſaid *Seluagia* againe) that it is not poſſible to haue an end in thy loue, either by death or abſence, or by being fauoured in ſome other place, where thy ſutes & ſeruices may be more eſteemed, and better recompenced? I will not make my ſelfe (ſaide *Syluanus*) ſuch an hypocrite in loue, that I will not graunt, what thou ſaieſt may be poſſible, but not in me. For woe betide that louer, that (though he ſee ſuch fortune fall to others) would haue ſo little conſtancie in his loue, to thinke that any thing (contrary to his faith) may befall vnto him. I am a woman (ſaid *Seluagia*) and thou ſhalt ſee by me if I loue not as much as any may. And yet this offendes not my loue to thinke, that there may be an end of euery thing, be they neuer ſo firme and ſtrong, ſince it is the propertie of time and fortune with their vſuall changes to alter all things, as they haue euer done. And thinke not Shepherd, that any obliuious thought of his loue, that hath ſo iniuriouſly forgotten me, makes me ſpeake this, but that, which I haue ſeene by experience in theſe paſſions. And talking thus together they heard a Shepherd ſinging, as he came along the medow before them, whom they knew by and by to be the forgotten *Syrenus*, who, to the tune of his Rebecke came ſinging this Sonnet.

GOe now my thoughts, where one day you were going,
When neither fortune, nor my loue did lower:
Now ſhall you ſee that changed day and hower,
Your ioies decaied, and vncouth ſorrowes growing?
And in the glaſſe, where I was oft beſtowing
Mine eies, and in that ſweete and pleaſant flower,

A ſluggiſh drone vnworthely deuower
That honie, which for me ſometimes was flowing.
And you ſhall ſee to whom I did ſurrender
My ſubiect life, that cauſeleſſe did deſpiſe it:
And though this ill no remedy can borrow,
Yet tell her, that my minde did once ingender
A feare of that, vvhich after to mine eyes yet
She makes more plaine, to end my life in ſorrow.

After *Syrenus* had made an end of his Sonnet, he ſawe faire *Seluagia*, and *Syluanus* comming towards him, whereof he was not a little glad, and after ſome curteous ſalutations between them, they determined to go to the fountaine of the Sicamours, where they had beene the day before, but before they were come thither, *Syluanus* ſaid, Hearke, do you not heare certaine voices ſinging? Yes (ſaid *Seluagia*) and me thinks of more then one. Where might it be (ſaid *Syrenus.*) In the meadowe of the Laurell trees, ſaid *Syluanus*, in the mids whereof the ſpring, that comes out of this cleere fountaine ſo pleaſantly runneth: It ſhall not be amiſſe for vs to go thither, but ſo ſoftly, that they that are ſinging, may not perceiue or heare vs, leſt we breake off their ſweete muſicke. Let vs go, ſaid *Seluagia*: and ſo ſtep by ſtep, they went towards the place, where they heard that ſinging, & hiding themſelues behind certaine trees neere vnto the brook, they ſaw three Nymphes ſitting vpon the golden flowers, of ſuch excellent beauty that (it ſeemed) nature had made a manifeſt proofe of that, ſhe was able to do. They were apparelled with vpper garmẽts of white ſilk, wrought all aboue with fringe of gold, their haire, (which in brightnes obſcured the ſunnie beames) was tied about their heads with fillets of orientall pearle, whoſe curled lockes vpon their chriſtalline foreheads made a fine periwig; iuſt in the mids whereof hung downe an Eagle of gold, holding betweene her talants a rich and pretious Diamond. All three with maruellous good conſent ſo ſweetly plaied on their inſtruments, whereunto they ioyned their Angelicall voices, that it ſeemed no leſſe then celeſtiall muſicke, and the firſt thing they ſung, was this fancie.

Contents of loue,
That come with ſo great paine,
If that you come, why go you hence againe?

Not fully come,
But you begin to ſtarte:
Neuer with perfect ſome
To neſtle in a woefull heart.
And will you now ſo ſoone depart,
And leaue me in ſuch paine?
Then hence delights, and ſee me not againe.

From you I flye,
(Since you denie my ſight)
To make me know thereby
The loſſe, if that I looſe you quite.
Then (ſince you do me ſuch deſpite)

Depart

Depart not griefe and paine,
For when you goe, you ſoone returne againe.

After they had ended their ſong, one of them called *Doria* ſaid. Are theſe (*Cynthia*) the riuer bankes, where the Shepherd *Syrenus* went vp and downe, tormented and loſt for the loue of the faire Shepherdeſſe *Diana*? I without doubt (ſaid the other) they muſt be theſe, for neere vnto a fountaine not far from this medow, it was told me, they tooke of each other their laſt farewell, which is (I aſſure thee) worthie to be celebrated with eternall memorie, for the amorous and louing ſpeeches, that paſſed betweene them. When *Syrenus* heard this, he was almoſt out of his wits, to ſee how the three Nymphes had knowledge of his miſhaps. But *Cynthia*, proceeding, ſaid. And among theſe riuer banks are many other faire Shepherdeſſes, and enamoured Shepherds, where loue hath ſhewed his mightie power and effects, and ſome cleane contrary to that they hoped for. This is a thing (ſaid *Polydora*, for ſo was the third called) not greatly to be maruelled at, bicauſe there is no ſucceſſe in loue, (be it neuer ſo prepoſterous) which may cauſe wonder in thoſe that haue paſſed his diſordinate effects. But tell me *Cynthia*, how kneweſt thou of this farewell? I knew it thus (ſaid *Cynthia*) for at that time when they tooke it, neere to the foreſaid fountaine, *Celius*, who behind an Oke was liſtening to them, heard it, and committing it to memorie, did truly put it in verſe, as it paſſed betweene them. Therfore if thou wilt heare it, I thinke, I can ſing it to the tune of my lute. Faire *Cynthia* (anſwered *Polydora*) ſo may thy deſtinies and fortune fauour thee, as thy beauty and good graces are no leſſe delightfull vnto vs, then the hearing of ſo ſweete a ſong ſhall be (wherein is matter ſo woorthie to be knowen) if thou wilt deyne to pleaſure vs with the recitall of it. *Cynthia* then taking her harpe, began to ſing as followeth.

The ſong of the Nymph.

NEere to the riuer bankes, with greene
And pleaſant trees on euery ſide,
Where freeſt mindes would moſt haue beene,
That neuer felt braue Cupids pride,
To paſſe the day and tedious how'rs
Amongſt thoſe painted meades and flow'rs.

A certaine Shepheard full of woe
(Syrenus *call'd*) *his flockes did feede,*
Not ſorowfull in outward ſhowe,
But troubled with ſuch greefe indeede,
As cruell loue is wont t'impart
Vnto a painfull louing hart.

This Shepherd euery day did die
For loue he to Diana *bare,*
A Shepherdeſſe ſo fine perdie,
So liuely yoong and paſſing faire,
Excelling more in beautious feature,
Then any other humane creature.

Who

Who had not any thing, of all
She had, but was extreme in her,
For meanely wise none might her call,
Nor meanely faire, for he did erre,
If so he did: but should deuise
Her name of passing faire and wise.

Fauours on him she did bestowe,
Which if she had not, then (be sure)
He might haue suffred all that woe,
Which afterwards he did endure
When he was gone, with lesser paine,
And at his comming home againe.

For when in deede the hart is free
From suffring paine or torments smart,
If wisedome doth not ouersee,
And beareth not the greater part,
The smallest greefe and care of minde
Doth make it captiue to their kinde.

Neere to a riuer swift and great
(That famous Ezla *had to name)*
The carefull Shepherd did repeate
The feares he had by absente blame,
Which he suspect, where he did keepe
And feede his gentle lambes and sheepe.

And now sometimes he did behold
His Shepherdesse, that thereabout
Was on the mountaines of that old
And ancient Leon, *seeking out*
From place to place the pastures best,
Her lambes to feede, her selfe to rest.

And sometimes musing, as he lay,
(When on those hils she was not seene)
Was thinking of that happy day,
When Cupid *gaue him such a Queene*
Of beautie, and such cause of ioy,
Wherein his minde he did imploy.

Yet saide (poore man) when he did see
Himselfe so sunke in sorrowes pit,
The good that loue hath giuen mee
I onely doe imagine it:
Bicause this neerest harme and trouble
Hereafter I should suffer double.

The Sunne, for that it did decline,
The careleſſe man did not offend
With firie beames, which ſcarce did ſhine,
But that which did of loue depend,
And in his hart did kindle fire
Of greater flames and hot deſire.

Him did his paſſions all inuite,
The greene leaues blowne with gentle winde,
Criſtalline ſtreames with their delite,
And Nightingales were not behinde,
To helpe him in this louing verſe,
Which to himſelfe he did rehearſe.

Syrenus *his ſong.*

A Farewell they departure call,
That loues delight did neuer knowe,
But that that endes with life and all,
I terme a greeſe and endleſſe woe.

God graunt therefore that all that ſpace
My lingring life I might ſuſtaine,
Vntill I ſee againe the place
Where my true hart doth ſtill remaine.

For onely thinking to depart,
The thought doth make me ſo afraid,
That it muſt kill my trembling hart
With force of ſuch great greeſe apaid.

Syrenus did theſe verſes ſing,
And on his Rebecke ſweetely play,
So far from ioy or ioyfull thing,
And from contentment any way:
That he could not pronounce his minde
For weeping, which was left behinde.

And now bicauſe he would not be
In fault, (if that his greeſe and paine
The accents and the verſe, which he
Pronounc't, did hinder or reſtraine)
That which his willing minde did let,
His hart to end did not forget.

But after that the Shepherd had
With moorneſull voice theſe verſes ſoong,

He ſawe Diana come ſo ſad,
And yet ſo faire, ſo freſh and yong,
That where ſhe caſt her ſtarlike eies,
With colours braue the meades ſhe dies.

Her face as faire and freſh as flower,
And yet ſo ſorrowfull againe,
That none could iudge at that ſame hower,
Whether her greefe and inward paine,
Or her braue beautie did ſurpaſſe?
In her ſo faire, and ſad (alas.)

Thus comming many a time ſhe ſtaide,
Caſting vnto the ground her eies,
So comfortleſſe and ſo diſmade,
And ſometimes vp into the skies,
That there they hung with greefe in ſteede
Of two bright ſtars, like ſtars in deede.

Saying with greater greefe of minde
(Then humane thought can once conceaue)
Since ſuch annoy in ioy I finde:
From this day (loue) well maiſt thou leaue
Thy ioies vnto thy ſelfe to keepe,
And me, to feede no more but ſheepe.

The cauſe of all her greefe and woe,
Which ſhe by abſence wrong did feare,
There did ſhe very cleerely ſhowe,
And if ſhe waſted many a teare,
Aske but thoſe blaſing eies, which ſtill
With paſſions did Syrenus kill.

If that her loue had euer peere,
Her goodnes there hid not the ſame:
And if that abſence coſt her deere,
Or feared her before it came,
This ſong aboue each other thing
Can tell, which ſhe with teares did ſing.

Dianas ſong.

O Loue thou gau'ſt me not the ioy,
That in ſweete preſence I did finde,
But that in abſence the annoy
Should ſeeme more greeuous to my minde.

Thou giueſt eaſe, thou giueſt reſt,
But not to giue content but guile,

And that the ſuffrance in my breſt,
Might be but idle for a while.

She loues inuentions, neuer ſcant
In preſence to affoord releefe,
Bicauſe in abſence I ſhould want
Defence againſt my mortall greefe.

Now faire Diana *being come*
Vnto the place, where ſhe did ſpie
Her loue, ſhe would haue ſpoken ſome
Few wordes, but greefe did them denie:
And wofull man, he nothing ſpake,
Though he did oft a ſemblant make.

How much they had betweene them both
To talke, their eies made manifeſt,
Declaring that, which very loth
Lay in their ſecret harts and breſt,
With that milde countenance and ſhow,
With which they ſpake not long agoe.

They both together downe did ſit
Vnder a flowrie Myrtle tree,
One by the hand the other yet
Did take, for ouercome was he,
By her, and ſhe by him againe,
Both in their mutuall paſſions ſlaine.

For that great pleaſure and delight
Of ſeeing one an other there,
And greefe, to leeſe that happie ſight,
So wrought their harts with ioy and feare,
That to each other neither could
Vtter a word, though faine they would.

Some other times they met againe
Vpon this banke with other paſſions,
Which meetings they did entertaine
And celebrate with other faſhions:
Not, as in times then gone and paſt,
For of this ſort, this was the laſt.

A ſtrange effect of mighty loue,
To ſee two loue in ſuch degree,
That greater torments they did proue,
When either did each other ſee,
Then when they were remooued quite
From ioying in each others ſight.

Syrenus *seeing now the howre,*
When greefe of parting was to come,
He had no patience nor no powre
To speake, but straight was striken dumbe:
Nor of his teares he could get leaue
To vtter what he did conceaue.

His Shepherdesse he did behold,
His Shepherdesse beheld againe
The man, whose hart with feare was cold,
Speaking to her with cruell paine:
Indeede his Greefe for him did speake,
For he could not whose hart did breake.

Alas Diana, *who would haue said,*
When I was in most heauie case,
Or who would haue imagined,
But that, when I did view thy face,
My very soule then most oppresst,
Should by that sight haue found some rest.

In any time who would haue thought,
That any thing (sweete Mistresse*) might*
A greater greefe or paine haue brought
Vnto my soule with more despight,
Then thy sweete presence and thy sight,
(My soueraine ioy and chiefe delight)

Who would haue thought, but that againe
Those eies, when that they viewed me,
Should haue dissolu'd, and burst in twaine
The knot of all my miserie:
Which my mishaps (so long assured)
By any way might haue procured.

Faire Mistresse *then behold my state,*
And how mishap my soule doth chace,
For if I died but of late
With great desire to see thy face,
Now doe I die by seeing thee
Present and not thou killest me.

And thinke not that this passion drawes
To want of louing thee, for none
Hath bene so firme, but now because
I come vnto this meade with mone
To take my leaue, where I before
To see thee came, but now no more.

My ſoule I would haue giuen faine
This day, which thou haſt conquer'd ſoe,
Not to haue ſeene thee in this plaine
(Although no other life I knowe)
Onely to miſſe (I care not how)
The greefe of this departure now.

And giue me leaue (faire Shepherdeſſe)
To thinke, that thou canſt not deny it,
But thou doſt feele my heauineſſe
In that degree, as I doe trie it:
For in thy preſence t'is not ſuch
A matter to preſume ſo much.

If then, Diana, it be ſo,
Tell me, how can I now depart?
How doſt thou ſuffer me to go
When each doth carry others hart?
Or how doe I come hither yet,
To take my farewell without let?

O my faire Shepherdeſſe againe
No reaſon can I yeeld thee why,
Nor how of thee I ſhould complaine,
As thou ſhalt haue continually
Abſent, when I am gone from thee
O, neuer to remember me.

I knowe right well it is not thow,
That mak'ſt me to depart, and leſſe,
My pureſt faith conſtraines me now,
(For needes I muſt the ſame confeſſe)
And if I ſhould but tell and ſhow it,
Who doth the ſame, I doe not know it.

Thus full of paine and bitter teares,
And ſighing, which he neuer ſpar'd,
The Shepherd to her louing eares
Did ſpeake theſe words which you haue heard.
And hearing them, in minde ſhe kept
Them, and full bitterly ſhe wept.

To anſwere him ſhe went about
A thouſand times, but could not doe it,
For ſtill her greefe did put her out,
And ſo ſhe could not frame her to it.
But then for her, her loue ſo ſtable
An anſwere ſhapt (her tong vnable.)

My friend in ſuch a time I am,
Where I ſhall ſpeake more then I would,
That though mine ill, which lately came,
Cannot be vttered (as it ſhould:)
Yet (Shepherd) would I thinke it good,
To hold my peace if that I could.

But woe is me, that this great ill
I come to tell, and publiſh it
In ſuch a time againſt my will,
That it auailes not any whit
Thy iourney to delay a while,
Nor theſe my torments to beguile.

Why goeſt thou hence (O Shepherd) tell:
Why wilt thou now forſake me heere?
So full of greefe alone to dwell,
Where time, and place, and all the deere,
And ſweeteſt toyes of this our loue
Shall neuer from my minde remooue.

What ſhall I feele (vnhappy wight)
Comming vnto this pleaſant greene,
When I ſhall ſay (Farewell ſweete ſight)
Heere haue I my Syrenus ſeene;
Heere did we ſit, heere did we play,
Diſcourſing with him day by day.

Behold if that it will not bee
A daily ſorrow, when theſe bankes
I doe beholde, and cannot ſee
Thy ſelfe, where goodly trees in rankes
And in their barke my name to ſtand
Carued ſo finely by thy hand.

And ſee if any greefe or dole
Is like to this, when I behold
The place ſo ſorrowfull and ſole,
Where deere Syrenus with a cold
And trembling feare thou didſt proteſt
Thy greefe to me within thy breſt.

If then thy hart (ſo cruell now)
Is mollified by falling teares,
How melts it not for greefe, and how
Conſumes it not with many feares,
At this occaſion (ſo vniuſt)
To leaue my comfort in the duſt?

Then

Then Shepherd weepe not, for in vaine
Thy plentious teares and sighes are spent,
For he that doth lament the paine,
In whom it lieth to preuent,
I thinke he is not sound of wit,
If such a folly he commit.

But my Syrenus pardon me,
If my sharpe wordes thine eares offend,
And giue me leaue to speake with thee
In this faire meade, where (cruell frend)
Thou leau'st me not one little how'r
With my poore self, nor in my pow'r.

For I will not, (nor yet in ieſt)
Shepherd from thee my ſelfe abſent,
Then goe not, wilt thou? ſay at leſt,
And to theſe eies, that euer lent
Such helpe to thee, ſome pitie keepe,
And ſorrow now to ſee them weepe.

Syrenus anſwered her againe,
Alas thou canſt not chooſe but knowe
By all theſe teares I ſpend in vaine,
If that I doe deſire to goe;
But thou commaundeſt me to ſtay,
And my hard hap to goe away.

Thy matchleſſe beautie when I ſee,
(Miſtreſſe) then am I euer bound
Willing at thy commaund to be:
But wofull Shepherd when I found
My hap to beare ſo great a ſway,
Of force I muſt the ſame obay.

Then my departure forced is,
But by no fault that I did make,
And credit me (ſweete Nymph) in this,
That all the world I would forſake,
In theſe faire meades with thee to wende,
Where now I ſee my ioyes doe ende.

My Maſter that great Shepherd is
He, that doth make me to depart,
Whom I may ſee, and wiſh that his
Exempted thoughtes and freeſt hart
Braue loue may puniſh with ſuch paine,
As at this parting I ſuſtaine.

I would to God, my going hence
(Onely to pleasure thee this day)
By shewing of my iust pretence,
Lay in my power any way:
As Mistresse in thy faire st handes
My life and death at mercie standes.

But credit me, it is in vaine,
(To that which euer I doe trie,
And that thou think'st as much againe)
That neuer in my handes did lie
Ought in the world, that might but giue
Any content to make me liue.

Another course well might I take,
And leaue my flocke to stray about,
I might my Shepherd to forsake
And seeke some other Master out:
But if the end I marke and see,
This with our loue doth not agree.

For if I doe forsake my flocke,
Which vnto me he did commend,
And take in hand some other flocke
Of cattell or of sheepe to tend,
Tell me, how can I come vnseene
Without thy harme vpon this greene?

And if the force of this great flame
My willing presence heere detaines,
It is a signe, that I doe frame
My thoughts on thee, and so it staines
Thy honour, which to saile is sent,
Onely (sweete life) for my content.

And if (they say) I doe imploy
(Faire Shepherdesse) my loue on thee,
And that againe I doe enioy
Thy loue so frankly giuen me.
Thee they condemne, thou dost sustaine
The onely losse, and I no gaine.

The Shepherdesse at this same season
This answer with great greefe did make,
O Shepherd tell me now, what reason
Thou hast my presence to forsake?
Since that in loue there is no sound
Of any reason to be found.

A

A ſigne it is (not good to vſe)
By daily proofe we ſee the ſame,
That he that can ſo well excuſe
His abſence from his louing dame,
If he were gone out of her ſight,
He would account the ſame but light.

Ah greefe, ſince going now away,
I knowe not what will chaunce to thee,
And forced if I am to ſtay
Nor then what ſhall become of me?
Nor there if thou wilt thinke (my deere)
That one did ſee another heere.

I knowe not if I am deceau'd,
By hauing laide before thine eies
This painfull greefe that hath bereau'd
Me of my ioy, where now it dies,
But that which to my harme muſt be,
I knowe ſhall be moſt ſure in me.

Thou greeu'ſt not at my little eaſe,
Go Shepherd then, take ſhipping now,
With brittle barke the Ocean ſeas,
In ſteede of theſe greene fieldes goe plow:
Since of my teares theſe ſeas (alas)
So quickly thou doſt ouerpaſſe.

The heauens from ſtormes thy barke defend,
From rockes, from wrecke, and ſwallowing ſand,
And that thou maiſt (my ſweeteſt friend)
Safely arriue in wiſhed land:
And fortune better deale with thee,
Then at this time thou doſt with me.

Alas for very greefe I die,
Seeing mine eies to take their leaue
Of all their ſweete contents, whereby
This greefe, and teares doe ſo bereaue
My toong of ſpeech, that faine I would
Speake more vnto thee if I could.

And Shepherd I doe wiſh beſides,
That theſe two eies (which weepe in vaine)
Before that death my life deuides,
May ſee thee heere yet onee againe:
And though their harme thou doſt procure,
They wiſh thee yet all good be ſure.

He answered her, my Mistresse deere,
A mischeese neuer comes alone:
A mortall greefe doth not appeere
Without more companie, and one
That is more mightie then the rest,
And this it is that wounds my brest.

For though I see I must depart
From my sweete life, (since from thy sight)
Not halfe so much it greeues my hart,
As seeing thee in such a plight
For my departure, and sustaine
Such greefe indeede and cruell paine.

But if those eies I doe forget,
(The mirrours of my happinesse)
I wish that God aboue may let
Me not this wished life possesse,
Or if my thoughtes imploied be
(Sweete life) on any but on thee.

And if that any beautie else
Shall make new motions in my minde,
(Though it be neuer so excelse)
Or in the same content I finde,
For one small howre of such content,
I wish eternall punishment.

And if my firmest faith for strange
And forren loue, that may befall,
Or my sincerest loue I change,
I wish that fortune may recall
Me to a life most desperate,
Throwing me downe from this estate.

O sweetest Mistresse of my hart,
Prescribe no time for my retourne:
For it doth kill me to depart,
And I shall neuer cease to mourne,
And passe the greatest greefe and paine,
Vntill these eies see thee againe.

She answered him, (my deere Syrenus)
If that I shall in any day
(Though now our destinies doe weane vs)
Forget thee, then I wish the May
And freshest flowers in this meade
May die, when on them I doe treade.

And if on any man aliue,
But onely thee (my loue) I thinke,
I wish, that, (when my sheepe I driue
Vnto the riuer streames to drinke)
Comming vnto them, at my sight,
The waters may be dry'd vp quite.

Shepherd, receiue this little string
Made of my haire for thy sweete sake,
Bicause by seeing of the thing,
Thou maist remember thou did'st take
Possession of my louing hart,
And them, with which thou doest depart.

And this ring with thee thou shalt beare,
With hand in hand, as thou dost see,
Which for my sake I pray thee weare,
That though our bodies parted bee,
Nothing shall part, not death alone,
Two soules vnited both in one.

He saide with thee what shall I leaue,
Naught haue I but this Sheepehooke heere:
The which I pray thee to receiue,
And Rebecke, to the which (my deere)
Thou saw'st me sing in this greene meade,
And play and many a daunce to leade.

To sound of which (my Shepherdesse)
A thousand songs to thee I soong,
Singing of thy great worthinesse
(Too high for my base song and toong)
And of our loues and of my passions,
And of my sweetest lamentations.

Each one imbrac't the other fast,
And this (I thinke) the first time was,
And (as I gesse) it was the last,
Bicause those times did change and passe:
And loue with time did change and varie
From that, which once they both did carie.

For though Diana *felt great paine*
For absence of her louer deere,
Yet in the same she found againe
A remedie, as did appeere,
For after he the seas did passe,
She to another married was.

Faire *Cynthia* hauing made an end of her ſweete ſong, *Doria* and *Polydora* wondred that a Shepherdeſſe could be the cauſe, that loue kindled ſuch burning flames, and marueiled no leſſe how time had cured her greefe, which ſeemed at their farewell to be remedileſſe. But vnfortunate *Syrenus* all the while the Nymph with her ſweete ſong did manifeſt his old cares and ſighes, forgot not to breath them out ſo thicke, that *Syluanus*, and *Seluagia* could not by any meanes comfort him: for he was now no leſſe penſiue then at the very time, when he paſſed them, marueiling much how ſhe knew of theſe particulars which paſſed betweene him and *Diana*. And *Syluanus* and *Seluagia* were no leſſe aſtoniſhed at the paſſing ſweete grace, wherewith *Cynthia* both ſong and plaied the ſame.

But now the faire Nymphes, tooke vp their inſtruments, and went walking vp and downe the greene meadow, leſt of all ſuſpecting that, which happened vnto them: for hauing gone but a little way from the place, where the Shepherdes were ſecretly abiding, three monſtrous and foule Sauages came out of a thicket of high broome and buſhes on the right hande of the woode, armed with corſelets and morions of tygres skins, and ſo vgly to behold, that to the fearefull Nymphes it was a ſtrange and terrible ſight. The braces of their corſelets were at the endes armed with gaſping mouthes of ſerpents, out of the which their armes ſhewed monſtrouſly great, and full of haire, and their morions that encompaſſed their griſely foreheads, with dreadfull heads of lyons, being naked in euery other part of their body, but that it was couered all ouer with long and thicke haire, and bearing in their rude hands clubs, armed with iron and ſharpe ſteeled points. At their neckes their bowes and arrowes, and likewiſe their ſhields, which were broad ſhels of monſtrous Tortuſes were hanging downe behinde them: who with an incredible ſwiftnes ranne vpon the fearefull Nymphes, ſaying. Now is the time come (ingrate and ſcornefull Nymphes) that by our ſtrength and wils you ſhall be forced to do that, which our milde loue and longe ſuites could neuer bring to paſſe, for it is not reaſon that fortune ſhould doe ſuch iniurie to our captiue harts, with ſo long and great paine to defer our remedies. In fine, we haue now in our hands the guerdon of our ſighes and lamentations, which wearied the birds and beaſts of the darke and enchaunted woode, where we dwell: and the recompence of our burning teares, wherewith we made the raging and lothſome riuer, that watreth the dreadfull fieldes and plaines of our territories to ſwell, and ouerflowe his banks: Since then you haue no other meanes to ſaue your liues, but by eaſing & helping our harmes, be not ſo wilfull by reſiſtance, to make our cruell hands take vengeance of that paine, which ſo long you haue made our afflicted harts to feele. The Nymphes at the ſudden ſurſault of theſe monſters were ſo amazed, that they were not able to anſwer to theſe proude and cruell wordes, but onely with ſilence and teares. Albeit faire *Doria*, who had more courage then the reſt, at laſt did ſtoutly anſwer them thus againe. I neuer thought that loue could bring a louer to ſo foule an extreme, as with violent hands, and ſuch vnſeemly force to ſeaſe vpon his beloued. It is the manner of cowards to carie weapons, and fight with ſilly women, in an open and deſart fielde, where none is able to defend them, but their vertue, and honeſt reaſons. But of one thing (cruell & vile beaſts) you may be aſcertained, that your menaces ſhal not make vs leeſe one iot of that, which our honours require, and that we will ſooner leaue our liues in your barbarous hands, then ſuffer our deer chaſtities by your beaſtly forces to be violated. It is needleſſe (*Doria*) (ſaide one of them againe) to harken to their reaſons, who had none at all to handle vs with ſo great ſcorne and crueltie: where-

vpon vnlooſing the ſtring from his bowe, that hung at his necke, he tooke her by both her faire hands, and rudely tied them togither, and ſo did his companions, *Cynthias* and *Polydoras*. The two Shepherds and the Shepherdeſſe *Seluagia*, aſtoniſhed at the monſtrous violence of the Sauages, and ſeeing what beaſtialitie they beganne to vſe to the faire and tender Nymphes, not able to endure it, reſolued to die, or to defende them from their cruell handes. Wherefore all three taking out their ſlings, and filling their ſcrips with ſtones, came out of the woode, into the greene medowe, and beganne to throwe them at the Sauages with ſuch courage and dexteritie, as though their liues had lien in their handes; And thinking to plie them ſo faſt with ſtones, that the Nymphes (while the Sauages were buſie about their owne defence) might eſcape, and ſaue their perſons from their vile immanitie, they redoubled their force, with the greateſt ſpeede and valour they coulde: Whoſe driftes the ſuttle Sauages ſuſpecting, one of them had an eie to the faire priſoners for running away, while the other two, by winning ground on their enemies, thought to make a quicke diſpatch of them. But the ſtones came ſo dangerouſly and ſo many, that they had ynough to defende themſelues, ſo that, as long as they laſted, the Sauages fared very ill. But as the Shepherdes were afterwardes occupied in ſtowping downe to take vppe more ſtones, the Sauages came running in to them ſo ſpeedily with their maſſie clubs, that nowe they were without any hope of life, if preſently a certaine ſtrange Shepherdeſſe (of ſuch ſingular beautie and comely feature, as made both the Sauages and the reſt amazed at her goodly perſonage) had not come out of the thicke wood neere vnto the fountaine, where they before were ſinging. She had her bowe hanging on her left arme, and a quiuer of arrowes at her ſhoulder, in her hand a fine ſtaffe of wilde oke, armed at the end with a long and well ſteeled pike. But when ſhe ſaw the three Nymphes in ſo great diſtreſſe, and the effray betweene the two Sauages and the Shepherdes, who now looked for nothing more then preſent death, by putting quickly a ſharpe headed arrow into her bowe, with no meane force and skill ſhe ſhot it at one of the Sauages, leauing it halfe hidden in his hard breſt, whereby the arrow of loue, that pearced his hart loſt the force, and the Sauage his life. Neither was ſhe ſlowe in putting another in her bowe, nor leſſe skilfull in ſhooting it, for with the ſame ſhe as well ended the enamoured paſſions of the ſecond Sauage, as of the firſt. But ſetling her ſelfe to ſhoote at the third, that was keeping the three Nymphes, ſhe could not ſo ſoone effect it, but that he came running in to her, within the length of his club, and had ſurely diſpatched her with one blowe, if the faire Shepherdeſſe, by lifting vp her knottie ſtaffe (as he was diſcharging vpõ her) had not taken it vpon the iron point (whereby his club brake in two peeces) and immediately requited him with another vpon the top of his crowne, wherewith ſhe made him ſtagger on his knees, and then running a thruſt at his facé (and with ſuch force and aime it was) that pearcing his eies, her ſtaffe made ſpeedie paſſage thorow his braines, ſo that the fierce Sauage, yelling out a horrible and lowde grone, fell downe dead to the ground. The Nymphes ſeeing themſelues deliuered from ſo great violence, and the Shepherdes and Shepherdeſſes from expected death, whereunto they were ſo neere, and how by the admirable valour and ſtrength of that Shepherdeſſe, not onely they, but the Shepherdes had eſcaped, they were in a traunce for a while, and could not afterwardes imagine her to be any humane wight. But the Shepherdeſſe comming now vnto them, began to vntie their handes, ſaying. They deſerued no leſſe puniſhment, then that they haue (faire Nymphes) that with theſe rude and

rough

rough bonds durſt preſume to binde ſuch white and delicate hands, whoſe beauties are fitter to binde tender and relenting harts. Accurſed be ſuch proude monſters, and ill befall to ſuch ſenſeleſſe and beaſtly men: but Ladies, they haue their hire, and I my deſire, by hauing done you this ſmall ſeruice, and comming in ſo good a time with ſpeedie remedie for ſuch an outrage, although theſe hardie Shepherdes, and faire Shepherdeſſe deſerue no leſſe thankes for hazarding their liues in your defence, who woulde (no doubt) like my ſelfe haue thought them well emploied, and themſelues well appaied, if in ſo good a quarrell, and for ſuch woorthy perſonages they had ioyntly loſt them. The Nymphes were no leſſe amazed at her rare beautie and wiſedome, then at the courage and force, that ſhe had ſhewed in their defence, whereupon *Doria* with a gratious ſemblant anſwered her thus againe. Faire Shepherdeſſe, if thou art not (as by thy approoued valour and braue minde, thou ſeemeſt to be) the daughter of inuincible *Mars*, yet for thy beautie (which is celeſtiall) thou muſt needes be the daughter of louely *Venus* and faire *Adonis*; and if of neither of them, it cannot then otherwiſe be, but that *Minerua* muſt be thy mother, ſince ſuch great wiſedome cannot proceed from any other part, although it is moſt true that nature hath endowed thee with the principall of them all. And ſince for ſo ſtrange a curteſie, and good turne that thou haſt done vs, extraordinarie and great muſt the ſeruices be, wherewith they muſt be requited, we hope, that at ſomtime or other, occaſion may be offered, wherein thou maieſt knowe, what earneſt deſire and entyre good wils we haue, to repaie ſo ſingular & woorthie a fauor. But bicauſe (it ſeemes) thou art wearie, let vs go to the fountaine of the Sicamours, neere to yonder wood, where thou maiſt reſt and refreſh thy ſelfe. Let vs goe ladie (ſaid the Shepherdeſſe) not ſo much to eaſe my wearied body, as to talke of other matters, wherin my ſoules health and the ſumme of my content doth chiefely conſiſt. That will we do with all poſſible diligence (ſaid *Polydora*) ſince there is not any, whom we ſhould with greater reaſon endeuor to content then thy ſelfe. But faire *Cynthia* turning to the Shepherdes, ſaid. The debt (faire Shepherdeſſe, and ſtout Shepherds) wherein you haue perpetually bound vs to you, your ſelues know well ynough, which though we are neuer able to acquite, yet we will not ceaſe to wiſh, that ſome occaſion may heereafter fall out, wherein we may ſhewe the earneſt will and affection we haue to diſcharge it, according to our great deſire. Theſe thankes (faire Nymphes) anſwered *Seluagia*, and your gentle offers, are more due to theſe two Shepherds then to me, that could do no more then praie for your ſafe deliuerie. But is this the Shepherd *Syrenus* (ſaid *Polydora*) ſo much beloued in times paſt, as now forgotten of the faire *Diana*? And is this other, his corriuall *Syluanus*? They are the ſame (ſaide *Seluagia*.) Then am I glad (ſaid *Polydora*) that you are ſuch kind of men, whom we may in ſome part recompence, the great good will you ſhewed, and the perill you paſſed to ſet vs free. *Doria* woondring at that ſhe had heard, ſaid. And is it true that this is *Syrenus*? I am very glad that I haue founde thee, and that there is an occaſion miniſtred me to ſeeke out ſome remedie (which (I hope) ſhall not be ſmall) for thy great cares and ſorrow. Nor ſufficient ynough for ſo great griefe, if it be ſmall (ſaide *Syrenus*.) Let vs go to the fountaine (ſaide *Polydora*) where we will at large diſcourſe of theſe and other matters. To the which when they were come, the Nymphes, placing the Shepherdeſſe in the middes of them, ſat them downe, and the Shepherds at the Nymphes requeſts, went to the next towne to prouide ſome victuals, bicauſe it was now ſomewhat late, and that they all had an appetite to eate. But the three Nymphes remaining all alone with the vnknowne Shepherdeſſe, faire *Doria* thus

began to ſay vnto her. It is no leſſe ſtrange to vs, to ſee ſuch an one as thou art (moſt valiant and faire Shepherdeſſe) of ſuch valour and ſtrength in theſe plaines and woods, ſequeſtred from all popular concourſe, then to thee (I thinke) to ſee three Nymphes heere all alone, and without companie to defend them from the like aſſaults. But bicauſe we may knowe what thou art (which is our chiefe deſire) we will inforce that fauour with this ſmall deſert, by telling thee firſt what we are, for the better knowledge wherof, thou ſhalt vnderſtand (couragious Shepherdeſſe) that this Nymph is called *Polydora*, that *Cynthia*, and my ſelfe *Doria*, we hauing our manſion place in *Dianas* wood, where ſage *Felicia* keepes her ſtately court, whoſe courſe of life, and onely exerciſe, is to cure and remedie the paſſions of loue. We, going to viſit a certaine Nymph her couſin, that liueth on this ſide of the *Gallician* hils, came by chance to this pleaſant and ſhadowed dale, where, ſeeing the place fit to paſſe away the heate of the noone day, vnder the ſhadowe of theſe greene Sicamours and Laurell trees, and emulating the harmonie of this running ſpring, which paſſeth thorow this greene medow, we tooke our inſtruments, to ſee if we could imitate the ſame. And our hap (or rather miſhap) it was that theſe Sauages long ſince captiuated (as they ſay) in our loues, by chaunce came hither, who importuning vs many times with their brutiſh requeſtes, to graunt them our loue, and ſeeing that by no meanes we gaue them any hope thereof, with violent hands determined to put their beaſtly intents in practiſe; and finding vs heere all alone, did that, which (faire Shepherdeſſe) thou ſaweſt, whē ſo fortunately thou cameſt to our reſcue. The Shepherdeſſe hearing what faire *Doria* had told her, with plentious teares gaue an euident teſtimonie of the inward greefe, which her afflicted hart felt, and looking vpon the Nymphes, ſhe began thus to ſay.

Loue is not ſuch a qualitie (faire Nymphes of the chaſte Goddeſſe) that the perſon, whom it holdeth in captiuitie, can haue any regarde of reaſon, neither is reaſon a meanes to make an enamoured hart forſake that way, wherein the cruell deſtinies will conduct it. For proofe whereof, experience is at hand: for though you were loued of theſe cruell Sauages, and that the lawes of honeſt and pure loue doth prohibite all iniuries, and whatſoeuer might offend you, yet on the other ſide, that headlong diſorder comes, wherewith it workes ſuch ſtrange and ſundrie effectes, that the ſame men, that ſhould ſerue and honour you, ſeeke to ſpoile and hurt you. And bicauſe you may knowe, that I am not vrged to ſay this, as onely induced by that, which now at my comming I haue ſeene in this vallie, I will tell you that, which I thought to conceale from all the world, but onely from him, to whom I yeelded vp long ſince the freedome of my hart, (if euer time and fortune grant mine eies ſuch fauour, that they may ſee him once againe) whereby you ſhal ſee how in the ſchoole of miſhaps I haue learned to talke of loues conſequences, and of the effectes, which the traitor works in their ſorrowfull harts, that are ſubiect vnto him.

You ſhall therefore knowe (faire Nymphes) that great *Vandalia* is my natiue countrie, a prouince not far hence, where I was borne, in a citie called *Soldina*, my mother called *Delia*, my father *Andronius*, for linage and poſſeſſions the chiefeſt of all that prouince. It fell out that as my mother was married many yeeres, and had no children, (by reaſon whereof ſhe liued ſo ſad and malecontent, that ſhe enioyed not one merry day) with teares and ſighes ſhe daily importuned the heauens, and with a thouſand vowes and deuout offerings beſought God to grant her the ſumme of her deſire: whoſe omnipotencie it pleaſed, beholding from his imperiall throne her continuall oriſons, to make her barren bodie (the greater part of her age being

now

now ſpent and gone) to become fruitfull. What infinite ioy ſhe conceiued thereof, let her iudge, that after a long deſire of any thing, fortune at laſt doth put it into her handes. Of which content my father *Andronius* being no leſſe partaker, ſhewed ſuch tokens of inward ioy, as are impoſſible to be expreſſed. My mother *Delia* was ſo much giuen to reading of ancient hiſtories, that, if by reaſon of ſickneſs, or any important buſineſſe, ſhe had not bene hindred, ſhe would neuer (by her will) haue paſſed the time away in any other delight: who (as I ſaid) being now with childe, and finding her ſelfe on a night ill at eaſe, intreated my father to reade ſomething vnto her, that, her minde being occupied in contemplation thereof, ſhe might the better paſſe her greefe away. My father, who ſtudied for nothing els but to pleaſe her in all he might, began to reade vnto her the hiſtorie of *Paris*, when the three Ladies referred their proude contention for the golden Apple, to his concluſion and iudgement. But as my mother held it for an infallible opinion, that *Paris* had partially giuen that ſentence, (perſwaded thereunto by a blinde paſſion of beautie) ſo ſhe ſaid, that without all doubt he did not with due reaſon and wiſedome conſider the Goddeſſe of battels; for as martiall and heroicall feates (ſaide ſhe) excelled all other qualities, ſo with equitie and iuſtice the Apple ſhould haue bene giuen to her. My father anſwered, that ſince the Apple was to be giuen to the faireſt, and that *Venus* was fairer then any of the reſt, *Paris* had rightly giuen his iudgement, if that harme had not enſued thereof, which afterwardes did. To this my mother replied, that, though it was written in the Apple, (*That it ſhould be giuen to the faireſt*) it was not to be vnderſtood of corporall beautie, but of the intellectuall beautie of the mind. And therfore, ſince fortitude was a thing that made one moſt beautiful, & the exerciſe of arms an exterior act of this vertue, ſhe affirmed, that to the Goddeſſe of battels this Apple ſhould be giuen, if *Paris* had iudged like a prudent & vnpaſſionate iudge. So that (faire Nymphes) they ſpent a great part of the night in this controuerſie, both of them alledging the moſt reaſons they could, to confirme their owne purpoſe. They perſiſting in this point, ſleepe began to ouercome her, whom the reaſons and arguments of her husband coulde not once mooue, ſo that being very deepe in her diſputations, ſhe fell into as deepe a ſleepe, to whom (my father being now gone to his chamber) appeered the Goddeſſe *Venus* with as frowning a countenance, as faire, and ſaide. I maruell *Delia*, who hath mooued thee to be ſo contrarie to her, that was neuer oppoſite to thee? If thou hadſt but called to minde the time, when thou wert ſo ouercome in loue for *Andronius*, thou wouldeſt not haue paide me the debt (thou oweſt me) with ſo ill coine. But thou ſhalt not eſcape free from my due anger; for thou ſhalt bring forth a ſonne and a daughter, whoſe birth ſhall coſt thee no leſſe then thy life, and them their contentment, for vttering ſo much in diſgrace of my honour and beautie: both which ſhall be as infortunate in their loue, as any were euer in all their liues, or to the age wherein with remedyleſſe ſighes they ſhall breath forth the ſumme of their ceaſeleſſe ſorrowes. And hauing ſaide thus, ſhe vaniſhed away: when likewiſe it ſeemed to my mother that the Goddeſſe *Pallas* came to her in a viſion, and with a merry countenance, ſaide thus vnto her. With what ſufficient rewardes may I be able to requite the due regarde (moſt happie and diſcreete *Delia*) which thou haſt alleaged in my fauour againſt thy husbands obſtinate opinion, except it be by making thee vnderſtand, that thou ſhalt bring foorth a ſonne and a daughter the moſt fortunate in armes that haue bene to their times. Hauing thus ſaid, ſhe vaniſhed out of her ſight, and my mother thorow exceeding feare, awaked immediately. Who within a moneth after, at one

birth was deliuered of me, and of a brother of mine, and died in childebed, leauing my father the moſt ſorrowfull man in the world for her ſudden death, for greeſe whereof within a little while after, he alſo died. And bicauſe you may knowe (faire Nymphes) in what great extremities loue hath put me, you muſt vnderſtand, that (being a woman of that qualitie and diſpoſition (as you haue heard) I haue bene forced by my cruell deſtinie to leaue my naturall habit, and libertie, and the due reſpect of mine honour, to follow him, who thinkes (perhaps) that I doe but leeſe it by louing him ſo extremely. Behold how booteleſſe and vnſeemely it is for a woman to be ſo dextrous in armes, as if it were her proper nature and kinde, wherewith (faire Nymphes) I had neuer bene indued, but that by meanes thereof, I ſhould come to doe you this little ſeruice againſt theſe villaines, which I account no leſſe then if fortune had begun to ſatisfie in part ſome of thoſe infinite wrongs, that ſhe hath continually done me. The Nymphes were ſo amazed at her words, that they coulde neither aske nor anſwere any thing, to that the faire Shepherdeſſe tolde them: who proſecuting her hiſtorie, ſaide. My brother and I were brought vp in a Nunnerie, where an aunt of ours was Abbeſſe, vntill we had accompliſhed twelue yeeres of age, at what time we were taken from thence againe, and my brother was caried to the mightie and inuincible *King of Portugall* his Court (whoſe noble fame and princely liberalitie was bruted ouer all the world) where, being growen to yeeres able to manage armes, he atchieued as valiant, and almoſt incredible enterpriſes by them, as he ſuffered vnfortunate diſgraces and foiles by loue. And with all this, he was ſo highly fauoured of that magnificent King, that he would neuer ſuffer him to depart from his Court. Vnfortunate I, reſerued by my ſiniſter deſtinies to greater miſhaps, was caried to a grandmother of mine, which place I would I had neuer ſeene, ſince it was an occaſion of ſuch a ſorrowfull life, as neuer any woman ſuffered the like. And bicauſe there is not any thing (faire Nymphes) which I am not forced to tell you, as well for the great vertue and deſertes, which your excellent beauties doe teſtifie, as alſo for that my minde doth giue me, that you ſhall be no ſmall part and meanes of my comfort; knowe that as I was in my grandmothers houſe, and almoſt ſeuenteene yeeres olde, a certaine yoong Gentleman fell in loue with me, who dwelt no further from our houſe, then the length of a garden Terraſſe, ſo that he might ſee me euery ſommers night, when I walked in the garden. When as therefore ingratefull *Felix* had beheld in that place the vnfortunate *Feliſmena* (for this is the name of the wofull woman that tels you her miſhaps) he was extremely enamoured of me, or elſe did cunningly diſſemble it, I not knowing then whether of theſe two I might beleeue, but am now aſſured, that whoſoeuer beleeues leſt, or nothing at all in theſe affaires, ſhall be moſt at eaſe. Many daies *Don Felix* ſpent in endeuouring to make me know the paines, which he ſuffered for me, and many more did I ſpende in making the matter ſtrange, and that he did not ſuffer them for my ſake. And I know not why loue delaied the time ſo long by forcing me to loue him, but onely that (when he came indeed) he might enter into my hart at once, and with greater force and violence. When he had therefore by ſundrie ſignes, as by Tylt and Tourneyes, and by prauncing vp and downe vpon his proude Iennet before my windowes, made it manifeſt, that he was in loue with me (for at the firſt I did not ſo well perceiue it) he determined in the end to write a letter vnto me, and hauing practiſed diuers times before with a maide of mine, and at length with many gifts and faire promiſes, gotten her good will and furtherance, he gaue her the letter to deliuer to me: But to ſee the meanes that *Roſina* made vnto me (for ſo was

ſhe

ſhe called) the dutifull ſeruices and vnwoonted circumſtances, before ſhe did deliuer it, the othes that ſhe ſware vnto me, and the ſubtle words and ſerious proteſtations ſhe vſed, it was a pleaſant thing, and woorthie the noting. To whom (neuertheleſſe) with an angrie countenance I turned againe, ſaying. If I had not regard of mine owne eſtate, and what heereafter might be ſaid, I would make this ſhameleſſe face of thine be knowne euer after for a marke of an impudent and bolde minion. But bicauſe it is the firſt time, let this ſuffice that I haue ſaide, and giue thee warning to take heede of the ſecond. Me thinkes I ſee now the craftie wench, how ſhe helde her peace, diſſembling very cunningly the ſorrow, that ſhe conceiued by my angrie anſwer: for ſhe fained a counterfaite ſmiling, ſaying. Ieſus Miſtreſſe, I gaue it you, bicauſe you might laugh at it, and not to mooue your pacience with it in this ſort: for if I had any thought that it woulde haue prouoked you to anger, I praie God he may ſhew his wrath, as great towards me, as euer he did to the daughter of any mother. And with this ſhe added many wordes more (as ſhe could do well enough) to pacifie the fained anger, and ill opinion that I conceiued of her, and taking her letter with her, ſhe departed from me. This hauing paſſed thus, I began to imagine what might enſue thereof, and loue (me thought) did put a certaine deſire into my minde to ſee the letter, though modeſtie & ſhame forbad me to aske it of my maide, eſpecially for the wordes, that had paſſed betweene vs, as you haue heard. And ſo I continued all that day vntill night, in varietie of many thoughts. But when *Roſina* came to helpe me to bedde, God knowes how deſirous I was to haue her entreat me againe to take the letter, but ſhe woulde neuer ſpeake vnto me about it, nor (as it ſeemed) did ſo much as once thinke thereof. Yet to trie, if by giuing her ſome occaſion, I might preuaile, I ſaide vnto her. And is it ſo *Roſina*, that *Don Felix* without any regard to mine honour dares write vnto me? Theſe are things Miſtreſſe (ſaide ſhe demurely to me againe) that are commonly incident to loue, wherfore I beſeech you pardon me, for if I had thought to haue angred you with it, I woulde haue firſt pulled out the bals of mine eies. How cold my hart was at that blow, God knowes, yet did I diſſemble the matter, and ſuffer my ſelfe to remaine that night onely with my deſire, and with occaſion of little ſleepe. And ſo it was indeede, for that (me thought) was the longeſt and moſt painfull night, that euer I paſſed. But when with a flower pace (then I deſired) the wiſhed day was come, the diſcreet & ſubtle *Roſina* came into my chamber to helpe me to make me readie, in dooing whereof, of purpoſe, ſhe let the letter cloſely fall, which when I perceiued, what is that that fell downe (ſaid I,) let me ſee it. It is nothing Miſtreſſe, ſaide ſhe. Come, come, let me ſee, it (ſaide I) what, mooue me not, or elſe tell me what it is. Good lord Miſtreſſe (ſaide ſhe) why will you ſee it: it is the letter I would haue giuen you yeſterday. Nay that it is not (ſaide I) wherefore ſhew it me, that I may ſee if you lie or no. I had no ſooner ſaid ſo, but ſhe put it into my handes, ſaying: God neuer giue me good, if it be anie other thing; and although I knewe it well indeede, yet I ſaide, what, this is not the ſame, for I know that well enough, but it is one of thy louers letters, I will read it, to ſee in what neede he ſtandeth of thy fauour. And opening it, I founde it conteined this that followeth.

I euer imagined (deere Miſtreſſe) that your diſcretion and wiſedome woulde haue taken away the feare I had to write vnto you, the ſame knowing well enough (without any letter at all) how much I loue you, but the very ſame hath ſo cunningly diſſembled, that wherein I hoped the onely remedie of my griefes had been, therein conſiſted my greateſt harme. If according to your wiſedome you cenſure my

boldnes,

boldnes, I ſhall not then (I know) enioy one hower of life: but if you do conſider of it according to loues accuſtomed effects, then will I not exchange my hope for it. Be not offended I beſeech you (good Ladie) with my letter, and blame me not for writing vnto you, vntill you ſee by experience, whether I can leaue of to write: And take me beſides into the poſſeſſion of that which is yours, ſince all is mine doth wholly conſiſt in your hands, the which with all reuerence and dutifull affection a thouſand times I kiſſe.

When I had now ſeene my *Don Felix* his letter, whether it was for reading it at ſuch a time, when by the ſame he ſhewed, that he loued me more then himſelfe, or whether he had diſpoſition and regiment ouer part of this wearied ſoule, to imprint that loue in it, whereof he wrote vnto me, I began to loue him too well (and alas for my harme) ſince he was the cauſe of ſo much ſorrow, as I haue paſſed for his ſake. Whereupon asking *Roſina* forgiuenes of what was paſt (as a thing needfull for that which was to come) and committing the ſecrecie of my loue to her fidelitie, I read the letter once againe, pauſing a little at euery worde, (and a very little indeede it was) bicauſe I concluded ſo ſoone with my ſelfe, to do that I did, although in verie truth it lay not otherwiſe in my power to do. Wherefore calling for paper and inke, I anſwered his letter thus.

Eſteeme not ſo ſlightly of mine honour, *Don Felix*, as with fained words to thinke to enueagle it, or with thy vaine pretenſes to offend it any waies. I know wel enough what manner of man thou art, and how great thy deſert and preſumption is, from whence thy boldnes doth ariſe (I geſſe,) and not from the force (which thing thou wouldſt faine perſwade me) of thy feruent loue. And if it be ſo, (as my ſuſpicion ſuggeſteth) thy labor is as vaine, as thy imagination preſumptuous, by thinking to make me do any thing contrarie to that, which I owe vnto mine honour. Conſider (I beſeech thee) how ſeldome, things, commenced vnder ſuttletie and diſſimulation, haue good ſucceſſe; and that it is not the part of a Gentleman, to meane them one way, and ſpeak them another. Thou praieſt me (amongſt other things) to admit thee into poſſeſſion of that, that is mine: but I am of ſo ill an humour in matters of this qualitie, that I truſt not things experienced, how much leſſe then thy bare wordes, yet neuertheleſſe, I make no ſmall account of that, which thou haſt manifeſted to me in thy letter; for it is ynough that I am incredulous, though not vnthankfull.

This letter did I ſend, contrarie to that I ſhould haue done, bicauſe it was the occaſion of all my harmes and greeſes: for after this, he began to waxe more bolde by vnfolding his thoughts, and ſeeking out the meanes to haue a parly with me. In the ende (faire Nymphes) a few daies being ſpent in his demaunds and my anſwers, falſe loue did worke in me after his wonted faſhions, euery hower ſeaſing more ſtrongly vpon my vnfortunate ſoule. The Tourneies were now renewed, the muſicke by night did neuer ceaſe, amorous letters and verſes were recontinued on both ſides: and thus paſſed I away almoſt a whole yeere, at the end whereof, I felt my ſelfe ſo far in his loue, that I had no power to retire, nor ſtay my ſelfe from diſcloſing my thoughts vnto him, (the thing which he deſired more then his owne life.) But my aduerſe fortune afterwardes would, that of theſe our mutuall loues (when as now they were moſt aſſured) his father had ſome intelligence, and whoſoeuer reuealed them firſt, perſwaded him ſo cunningly, that his father (fearing leaſt he would haue married me out of hand) ſent him to the great Princeſſe *Auguſta Cæſarinas* court, telling him, it was not meete that a yoong Gentleman, and of ſo noble a houſe as he was, ſhould ſpende his youth idly at home, where nothing could be learned, but

examples

examples of vice, whereof the very ſame idlenes (he ſaid) was the onely Miſtreſſe. He went away ſo penſiue, that his great greefe would not ſuffer him to acquaint me with his departure, which when I knew, how ſorrowfull I remained, ſhe may imagine, that hath bene at any time tormented with like paſſion. To tell you now the life, that I led in his abſence, my ſadnes, ſighes, and teares, which euery day I powred out of theſe wearied eies, my toong is far vnable: if then my paines were ſuch, that I cannot now expreſſe them, how could I then ſuffer them? But being in the mids of my miſhaps, and in the depth of thoſe woes which the abſence of *Don Felix* cauſed me to feele, and it ſeeming to me that my greefe was without remedie, if he were once ſeene or knowen of the Ladies in that Court (more beautifull and gracious then my ſelfe.) By occaſion whereof, as alſo by abſence (a capitall enemie to loue) I might eaſily be forgotten, I determined to aduenture that, which I thinke neuer any woman imagined: which was, to apparell my ſelfe in the habit of a man, and to hye me to the Court to ſee him, in whoſe ſight al my hope and content remained: which determination, I no ſooner thought of, then I put in practiſe, loue blinding my eies and minde with an inconſiderate regarde of mine owne eſtate and condition. To the execution of which attempt, I wanted no induſtrie, for, being furniſhed with the helpe of one of my approoued friends, and treaſoureſſe of my ſecrets, who bought me ſuch apparell, as I willed her, and a good horſe for my iourney, I went not onely out of my countrie, but out of my deere reputation (which (I thinke) I ſhall neuer recouer againe) and ſo trotted directly to the Court, paſſing by the way many accidents, which (if time would giue me leaue to tell them) woulde not make you laugh a little to heare them. Twenty daies I was in going thither, at the ende of which, being come to the deſired place, I tooke vp mine Inne in a ſtreete leſt frequented with concurſe of people. And the great deſire I had to ſee the deſtroier of my ioy, did not ſuffer me to thinke of any other thing, but how or where I might ſee him. To inquire of him of mine hoſt, I durſt not, leſt my comming might (perhaps) haue bene diſcouered: and to ſeeke him foorth, I thought it not beſt, leſt ſome inopinate miſhap might haue fallen out, whereby I might haue bene knowen. Wherefore I paſſed all that day in theſe perplexities, while night came on, each hower whereof (me thought) was a whole yeere vnto me. But midnight being a little paſt, mine hoſt called at my chamber doore, and tolde me if I was deſirous to heare ſome braue muſicke, I ſhould ariſe quickly, and open a window towards the ſtreet. The which I did by and by, and making no noiſe at all, I heard how *Don Felix* his Page, called *Fabius* (whom I knew by his voice) ſaide to others that came with him. Now it is time my Maſters, bicauſe the Lady is in the gallerie ouer her garden, taking the freſh aire of the coole night. He had no ſooner ſaide ſo, but they began to winde three Cornets and a Sackbot, with ſuch skill and ſweeteneſſe, that it ſeemed celeſtiall muſicke. And then began a voice to ſing, the ſweeteſt (in my opinion) that euer I heard. And though I was in ſuſpence, by hearing *Fabius* ſpeake, whereby a thouſand doubtes and imaginations (repugnant to my reſt) occurred in my minde, yet I neglected not to heare what was ſung, bicauſe their operations were not of ſuch force, that they were able to hinder the deſire, nor diſtemper the delight that I conceiued by hearing it. That therefore which was ſung, were theſe verſes.

SWeete Miſtreſſe harken vnto me
(If it greeues thee to ſee me die)
And hearing though it greeueth thee,
To heare me yet, do not denie.

O grant me then this short content,
For forc'd I am to thee to flie:
My sighes do not make thee relent,
Nor teares thy hart do mollifie.

Nothing of mine doth giue thee payne,
Nor thou think'st of no remedie:
Mistresse how long shall I sustaine
such ill, as still thou dost applie?

In death there is no helpe, be sure,
But in thy will, where it doth lie:
For all those illes which death doth cure,
Alas, they are but light to trie:

My troubles do not trouble thee,
Nor hope to touch thy soule so nie:
O from a will that is so free,
What should I hope, when I do crie?

How can I mollifie that braue
And stonie hart, of pittie drie?
Yet Mistresse turne those eies (that haue
No peeres) shining like stars in skie:

But turne them not in angrie sort,
If thou wilt not kill me thereby:
Though yet in anger, or in sport,
Thou killest onely with thine eie.

After they had first with a concent of musicke sung this song, two plaied, the one vpon a Lute, the other vpon a siluer sounding Harpe, being accompanied with the sweete voice of my *Don Felix*: the great ioy that I felt in hearing him, cannot be imagined, for (me thought) I heard him nowe, as in that happie and passed time of our loues. But after the deceit of this imagination was discouered, seeing with mine eies, and hearing with mine eares, that this musicke was bestowed vpon another and not on me, God knowes what a bitter death it was vnto my soule: And with a greeuous sigh, that caried almost my life away with it, I asked mine host, if he knew what the Ladie was, for whose sake the musick was made? He answered me; that he could not imagine on whom it was bestowed, bicause in that streete dwelled manie noble and faire Ladies. And when I saw he could not satisfie my request, I bent mine eares againe to heare my *Don Felix*, who now to the tune of a delicate harpe whereon he sweetely plaied, began to sing this Sonnet following.

A Sonnet.

My painefull yeeres impartiall Loue *was spending*
In vaine and booteles hopes my life appaying,
And cruell Fortune *to the world bewraying*
Strange samples of my teares that haue no ending.
Time *euerie thing to truth at last commending,*
Leaues of my steps such markes, that now betraying
And all deceitfull trusts shall be decaying,
And none haue cause to plaine of his offending.
Shee, *whom I lou'd to my obliged power,*
That in her sweetest loue to me discouers
Which neuer yet I knew (those heauenly pleasures,)
And I do saie, exclaiming euery hower,
Do not you see, what makes you wise, O Louers?
Loue, Fortune, Time, *and my faire* Mystresse *treasures.*

The Sonnet being ended, they pausd a while, playing on fower Lutes togither, and on a paire of Virginals, with such heauenly melodie, that the whole worlde

(I

(I thinke) could not affoord ſweeter muſick to the eare, nor delight to any minde, not ſubiect to the panges of ſuch predominant greefe and ſorrow as mine was. But then fower voices paſſing well tuned and ſet togither, began to ſing this ſong following.

A Song.

THat ſweeteſt harme I doe not blame,
Firſt cauſed by thy faireſt eies,
But greeue, bicauſe too late I came,
To know my fault, and to be wiſe.

I neuer knew a worſer kinde of life,
To liue in feare, from boldneſſe ſtill to ceaſe:
Nor woorſe then this, to liue in ſuch a ſtrife,
Whether of both, to ſpeake, or holde my peace?

And ſo the harme I doe not blame,
Cauſed by thee, or thy faire eies:
But that to ſee how late I came,
To knowe my fault, and to be wiſe.

I euer more did feare, that I ſhould knowe
Some ſecret things, and doubtfull in their kinde,
Bicauſe the ſureſt things doe euer goe
Moſt contrarie vnto my wiſh and minde.

And yet by knowing of the ſame,
There is no hurt, But it denies
My remedie, Since late I came,
To knowe my fault, and to be wiſe.

When this ſong was ended, they began to ſound diuers ſorts of inſtruments, and voices moſt excellently agreeing togither, and with ſuch ſweetnes, that they could not chuſe but delight any very much, who were not ſo farre from it as I. About dawning of the day the muſicke ended, and I did, what I could to eſpie out my *Don Felix*, but the darknes of the night was mine enimie therein. And ſeeing now that they were gone, I went to bed againe, where I bewailed my great miſhap, knowing that he, whom moſt of al I loued, had ſo vnwoorthily forgotten me, whereof his muſicke was too manifeſt a witnes. And when it was time, I aroſe, & without any other conſideration went ſtraight to the Princeſſe her pallace, where (I thought) I might ſee that, which I ſo greatly deſired, determining to call my ſelfe *Valerius*, if any (perhaps) did aske my name. Comming therefore to a faire broad court before the pallace gate, I viewed the windowes and galleries, where I ſawe ſuch ſtore of blazing beauties, and gallant Ladies, that I am not able now to recount, nor then to do any more, but woonder at their graces, their gorgeous attyre, their iewels, their braue faſhions of apparell, and ornaments, wherewith they were ſo richly ſet out. Vp and downe this place before the windowes roade many lords, and braue gentlemen in rich and ſumptuous habits, and mounted vpon proud Iennets, euery one caſting his

eie

eie to that part, where his thoughts were secretly placed. God knowes how greatly I desired to see *Don Felix* there, and that his iniurious loue had beene in that famous pallace, bicause I might then haue beene assured, that he shoulde neuer haue got any other guerdon of his sutes and seruices, but onely to see, and to be seene, and sometimes to speake to his Mistresse, whom he must serue before a thousand eies, bicause the priuilege of that place doth not giue him any further leaue. But it was my ill fortune, that he had setled his loue in that place, where I might not be assured of this poore helpe. Thus as I was standing neere to the pallace gate, I espied *Fabius*, *Don Felix* his page, comming in great haste to the pallace, where speaking a word or two with a porter that kept the second entrie, he returned the same waie he came. I gessed his errant was, to knowe whether it were fit time for *Don Felix* to come to dispatch certaine busines, that his father had in the court, and that he could not choose but come thither out of hand. And being in this supposed ioy, which his sight did promise me, I sawe him comming along with a great traine of followers attending on his person, all of them being brauely apparelled in a liuerie of watchet silke, garded with yellow veluet, and stitched on either side with threedes of twisted siluer, wearing likewise blew, yellow, and white feathers in their hats. But my Lorde *Don Felix* had on a paire of ash colour hose, embrodered and drawen foorth with watchet tissue, his dublet was of white satten, embrodered with knots of golde, and likewise an embrodered ierkin of the same coloured veluet, and his short cape cloke was of blacke veluet, edged with gold lace, and hung full of buttons of pearle and gold, and lined with razed watchet satten, by his side he ware at a paire of embrodered hangers a rapier and dagger, with engrauen hilts and pommell of beaten golde. On his head, a hat, beset full of golden stars, in the mids of euerie which a rich orient pearle was enchased, and his feather was likewise blew, yellow, and white. Mounted he came vpon a faire dapple graie Iennet, with a rich furniture of blew, embrodered with golde and seede pearle. When I sawe him in this rich equipage, I was so amazed at his sight, that how extremely my sences were rauished with sudden ioye, I am not able (faire Nymphes) to tell you. Truth it is, that I could not but shed some teares for ioy and greefe, which his sight did make me feele, but fearing to be noted by the standers by, for that time I dried them vp. But as *Don Felix* (being now come to the pallace gate) was dismounted, and gone vp a paire of staires into the chamber of presence, I went to his men, where they were attending his returne, and seeing *Fabius*, whom I had seene before amongst them, I tooke him aside, and saide vnto him. My friend, I pray you tell me what Lord this is, which did but euen now alight from his Iennet, for (me thinkes) he is very like one, whom I haue seene before in an other farre countrey. *Fabius* then answered me thus. Art thou such a nouice in the court, that thou knowest not *Don Felix*? I tell thee there is not any Lord, knight, or gentleman better knowne in it then he. No doubt of that (saide I) but I will tell thee what a nouice I am, and how small a time I haue beene in the court, for yesterday was the first, that euer I came to it. Naie then I cannot blame thee (saide *Fabius*) if thou knowest him not. Knowe then that this gentleman is called *Don Felix*, borne in Vandalia, and hath his chiefest house in the ancient cittie of Soldina, and is remaining in this court about certaine affaires of his fathers and his owne. But I pray you tell me (said I) why he giues his liueries of these colours? If the cause were not so manifest, I woulde conceale it (saide *Fabius*) but since there is not any that knowes it not, and canst not come to any in this court, who cannot tell thee the reason why, I thinke by telling thee it, I do no more then in courtesie I am bound to

do.

do. Thou muſt therefore vnderſtand, that he loues and ſerues a Ladie heere in this Citie named *Celia*, and therefore weares and giues for his liuerie an azure blew, which is the colour of the skie, and white and yellow, which are the colours of his Lady and Miſtreſſe. When I heard theſe words, imagine (faire Nymphes) in what a plight I was, but diſſembling my miſhap and griefe, I anſwered him, This Ladie certes is greatly beholding to him, bicauſe he thinkes not enough, by wearing her colours, to ſhew how willing he is to ſerue her, vnleſſe alſo he beare her name in his liuerie: whereupon I geſſe, ſhe cannot be but very faire and amiable. She is no leſſe indeede (ſaide *Fabius*) although the other, whom he loued and ſerued in our owne countrey, in beautie farre excelled this, and loued and fauoured him more then euer this did. But this miſchieuous abſence doth violate and diſſolue thoſe things, which men thinke to be moſt ſtrong and firme. At theſe wordes (faire Nymphes) was I faine to come to ſome compoſition with my teares, which if I had not ſtopped from iſſuing foorth, *Fabius* could not haue choſen, but ſuſpected by the alteration of my countenance that all was not well with me. And then the Page did aske me, what countrey-man I was, my name, and of what calling and condition I was: whom I anſwered, that my countrey, where I was borne was Vandalia, my name *Valerius*, and till that time ſerued no Maſter. Then by this reckoning (ſaide he) we are both countrey-men, and may be both fellowes in one houſe if thou wilt: for *Don Felix* my Maſter commanded me long ſince to ſeeke him out a Page. Therefore if thou wilt ſerue him ſay ſo. As for meate, drinke, and apparell, and a couple of ſhillings to play away, thou ſhalt neuer want, beſides pretie wenches, which are not daintie in our ſtreete, as faire and amorous as Queenes, of which there is not anie, that will not die for the loue of ſo proper a youth as thou art. And to tell thee in ſecret (becauſe perhaps we may be fellowes) I know where an old Cannons maide is, a gallant fine girle, whom if thou canſt but finde in thy hart to loue and ſerue, as I do, thou ſhalt neuer want at her hands, fine hand-kerchers, peeces of bacon, and now and then wine of S. *Martyn*. When I heard this, I could not chooſe but laugh, to ſee how naturally the vnhappie Page played his part, by depainting foorth their properties in their liuely colours. And becauſe I thought nothing more commodious for my reſt, and for the enioying of my deſire, then to follow *Fabius* his counſell, I anſwered him thus. In truth I determined to ſerue none, but now ſince fortune hath offered me ſo good a ſeruice, and at ſuch a time, when I am conſtrained to take this courſe of life, I ſhall not do amiſſe if I frame my ſelfe to the ſeruice of ſome Lord or Gentleman in this Court, but eſpecially of your Maſter, becauſe he ſeemes to be a woorthy Gentleman, and ſuch an one, that makes more reckoning of his ſeruants then an other. Ha thou knoweſt him not as well as I (ſaid *Fabius*) for I promiſe thee by the faith of a Gentleman (for I am one in deede, for my father comes of the *Cachopines* of *Laredo*) that my Maſter *Don Felix* is the beſt natured Gentleman that euer thou kneweſt in thy life, and one who vſeth his Pages better then any other. And were it not for thoſe troubleſome loues, which makes vs runne vp and downe more, and ſleepe leſſe, then we woulde, there were not ſuch a Maſter in the whole worlde againe. In the end (faire Nymphes) *Fabius* ſpake to his Maſter *Don Felix* as ſoone as he was come foorth in my behalfe, who commanded me the ſame night to come to him at his lodging. Thither I went, and he entertained me for his Page, making the moſt of me in the worlde, where, being but a fewe daies with him, I ſawe the meſſages, letters, and gifts that were brought and caried on both ſides, greeuous wounds (alas & corſiues to my dying hart) which made my ſoule to flie ſometimes

out of my body, & euery hower in hazard to leeſe my forced patience before euery one. But after one moneth was paſt, *Don Felix* began to like ſo well of me, that he diſcloſed his whole loue vnto me from the beginning vnto the preſent eſtate and forwardnes, that it was then in, committing the charge thereof to my ſecrecie and helpe, telling me, that he was fauoured of her at the beginning, and that afterwards ſhe waxed wearie of her louing and accuſtomed entertainment, the cauſe whereof was a ſecret report (whoſoeuer it was that buzzed it into her eares) of the loue, that he did beare to a Lady in his owne countrey, and that his preſent loue vnto her was but to entertaine the time, while his buſines in the Court were diſpatched. And there is no doubt (ſaide *Don Felix* vnto me) but that indeede I did once commence that loue that ſhe laies to my charge, but God knowes if now there be any thing in the world, that I loue and eſteeme more deere and precious then her. When I heard him ſay ſo, you may imagine (faire Nymphes) what a mortall dagger pierced my wounded heart. But with diſſembling the matter the beſt I coulde, I anſwered him thus. It were better ſir (me thinkes) that the Gentlewoman ſhould complaine with cauſe, and that it were ſo indeed, for if the other Ladie, whom you ſerued before, did not deſerue to be forgotten of you, you do her (vnder correction my Lord) the greateſt wrong in the world. The loue (ſaid *Don Felix* againe) which I beare to my *Celia* will not let me vnderſtand it ſo, but I haue done her (me thinkes) the greater iniurie, hauing placed my loue firſt in an other, and not in her. Of theſe wrongs (ſaide I to my ſelfe) I know who beares the wooſt away. And (diſloyall) he pulling a letter out of his boſome, which he had receiued the ſame hower from his Miſtreſſe, reade it vnto me, thinking that he did me a great fauour thereby, the contents whereof were theſe.

Celias letter to Don Felix.

NEuer any thing, that I ſuſpected touching thy loue, hath beene ſo farre from the truth, that hath not giuen me occaſion to beleeue more often mine owne imagination, then thy innocencie, wherein, if I do thee any wrong, referre it but to the cenſure of thine owne follie: For well thou mighteſt haue denied, or not declared thy paſſed loue, without giuing me occaſion to condemne thee by thine owne confeſſion. Thou ſaieſt I was the cauſe that made thee forget thy former loue: Comfort thy ſelfe, for there ſhall not want another to make thee forget thy ſecond. And aſſure thy ſelfe of this (Lord *Don Felix*) that there is not any thing more vnbeſeeming a Gentleman, then to finde an occaſion in a Gentlewoman to leeſe himſelfe for her loue. I will ſaie no more, but that in an ill, where there is no remedie, the beſt is not to ſeeke out any.

After he had made an end of reading the letter, he ſaid vnto me. What thinkeſt thou *Valerius* of theſe words? With pardon be it ſpoken my Lord; That your deedes are ſhewed by them. Go to, ſaid *Don Felix*, and ſpeake no more of that. Sir, ſaide I, they muſt like me wel, if they like you, becauſe none can iudge better of their words, that loue well, then they themſelues. But that which I thinke of the letter is, that this Gentlewoman would haue beene the firſt, and that Fortune had entreated her in ſuch ſort, that all others might haue enuied her eſtate. But what wouldeſt thou counſell me ſaide *Don Felix*? If thy griefe doth ſuffer any counſell, ſaide I, that thy thoughts be diuided into this ſecond paſſion, ſince there is ſo much due to the firſt. *Don Felix* anſwered me againe ſighing, and knocking me gently on the ſhoulder, ſaying. How wiſe art thou *Valerius*, and what good counſell doſt thou giue me, if I could

could follow it. Let vs now go in to dinner, for when I haue dined, I will haue thee carie me a letter to my Lady *Celia*, and then thou shalt see, if any other loue is not woorthy to be forgotten in lieu of thinking onely of her. These were wordes, that greeued *Felismena* to the hart, but bicause she had him before her eies, whom she loued more then her-selfe, the content, that she had by onely seeing him, was a sufficient remedie of the paine, that the greatest of these stings did make her feele. After *Don Felix* had dined, he called me vnto him, and giuing me a speciall charge what I should do (because he had imparted his griefe vnto me, and put his hope and remedie in my hands) he willed me to carie a letter to *Celia*, which he had alreadie written, and reading it first vnto me, it said thus.

Don Felix *his letter to* Celia.

THe thought, that seekes an occasion to forget the thing, which it doth loue and desire, suffers it selfe so easily to be knowne, that (without troubling the minde much) it may be quickly discerned. And thinke not (faire Ladie) that I seeke a remedie to excuse you of that, wherewith it pleased you to vse me, since I neuer came to be so much in credit with you, that in lesser things I woulde do it. I haue confessed vnto you, that indeede I once loued well, because that true loue, without dissimulation, doth not suffer any thing to be hid, and you (deere Ladie) make that an occasion to forget me, which should be rather a motiue to loue me better. I cannot perswade me, that you make so small an account of your selfe, to thinke that I can forget you for any thing that is, or hath euer been, but rather imagine, that you write cleane contrarie to that, which you haue tried by my zealous loue, and faith towards you. Touching all those things, that in preiudice of my good will towards you, it pleaseth you to imagine, my innocent thoughts assure me to the contrarie, which shall suffice, to be ill recompenced, besides, being so ill thought of, as they are.

After *Don Felix* had read this letter vnto me, he asked me if the answer was correspondent to those words that his Ladie *Celia* had sent him in hers, and if there was any thing therein, that might be amended. Whereunto I answered thus. I thinke Sir, it is needlesse to amende this letter, or to make the Gentlewoman amendes, to whom it is sent, but her, whom you do iniurie so much with it. Which vnder your Lordships pardon I speake, bicause I am so much affected to the first loue in all my life, that there is not any thing that can make me alter my minde. Thou hast the greatest reason in the world (said *Don Felix*) if I coulde perswade my selfe to leaue of that, which I haue begun: But what wilt thou haue me do, since absence hath frozen the former loue, and the continuall presence of a peereles beautie rekindled another more hot and feruent in me. Thus may she thinke her-selfe (saide I againe) vniustly deceiued, whom first you loued, because that loue, which is subiect to the power of absence, cannot be termed loue, and none can perswade me that it hath beene loue. These words did I dissemble the best I could, because I felt so sensible griefe, to see my selfe forgotten of him, who had so great reason to loue me, and whom I did loue so much, that I did more, thē any would haue thought, to make my selfe still vnknowen. But taking the letter and mine errant with me, I went to *Celias* house, imagining by the way the wofull estate, whereunto my hapless loue had brought me; since I was forced to make warre against mine owne selfe, and to be the intercessour of a thing so contrarie to mine owne content. But comming to *Celias*

houſe, and finding a Page ſtanding at the dore, I asked him if I might ſpeake with his Ladie: who being informed of me from whence I came, tolde *Celia* how I would ſpeake with her, commending therewithall my beautie and perſon vnto her, and telling her beſides, that *Don Felix* had but lately entertained me into his ſeruice, which made *Celia* ſaie vnto him. What, doth *Don Felix* ſo ſoone diſcloſe his ſecret loues to a Page, but newly entertained? he hath (belike) ſome great occaſion that mooues him to do it. Bid him com in, & let vs know what he would haue. In I came, & to the place, where the enimie of my life was, & with great reuerence, kiſſing her hands, I deliuered *Don Felix* his letter vnto her. *Celia* tooke it, and caſting her eies vpon me, I might perceiue how my ſight had made a ſudden alteration in her countenance, for ſhe was ſo farre beſides her-ſelfe, that for a good while ſhe was not able to ſpeake a worde, but remembring her-ſelfe at laſt, ſhe ſaide vnto me. What good fortune hath beene ſo fauourable to *Don Felix* to bring thee to this Court, to make thee his Page? Euen that, faire Ladie, ſaide I, which is better then euer I imagined, bicauſe it hath beene an occaſion to make me behold ſuch ſingular beautie and perfections, as now I ſee cleerely before mine eies: And if the paines, the teares, the ſighes, and the continuall diſquiets, that my Lord *Don Felix* hath ſuffred, haue greeued me heeretofore, now that I haue ſeene the ſource, from whence they flow, and the cauſe of all his ill, the pittie, that I had on him, is now wholly conuerted into a certaine kinde of enuie. But if it be true (faire Lady) that my comming is welcome vnto you, I beſeech you by that, which you owe to the great loue, which he beares you, that your anſwer may import no leſſe vnto him. There is not anie thing (ſaide *Celia*) that I would not do for thee, though I were determined not to loue him at all, who for my ſake hath forſaken another. For it is no ſmall point of wiſedome for me, to learne by other womens harmes to be more wiſe, and warie in mine owne. Beleeue not good Lady (ſaide I) that there is any thing in the worlde, that can make *Don Felix* forget you. And if he hath caſt off another for your ſake, woonder not thereat, when your beautie and wiſedome is ſo great, and the others ſo ſmall, that there is no reaſon to thinke, that he will (though he hath woorthelie forſaken her for your ſake) or euer can forget you for any woman elſe in the worlde. Doeſt thou then know *Feliſmena* (ſaid *Celia*) the Lady whom thy Maſter did once loue and ſerue in his owne countrey? I know her (ſaide I) although not ſo well as it was needfull for me, to haue preuented ſo many miſhaps, (and this I ſpake ſoftly to my ſelfe). For my fathers houſe was neere to hers, but ſeeing your great beautie adorned with ſuch perfections and wiſedome, *Don Felix* can not be blamed, if he hath forgotten his firſt loue, onely to embrace and honour yours. To this did *Celia* anſwer merily, and ſmiling. Thou haſt learned quickly of thy Maſter to ſooth. Not ſo faire Ladie, ſaide I, but to ſerue you woulde I faine learne: for flatterie cannot be, where (in the iudgement of all) there are ſo manifeſt ſignes and prooſes of this due commendation. *Celia* began in good earneſt to aske me what manner of woman *Feliſmena* was; whom I anſwered, that touching her beautie, Some thought her to be very faire, but I was neuer of that opinion, bicauſe ſhe hath many daies ſince wanted the chiefeſt thing, that is requiſite for it. What is that ſaid *Celia*? Content of minde, ſaide I, bicauſe perfect beautie can neuer be, where the ſame is not adioyned to it. Thou haſt the greateſt reaſon in the world, ſaid ſhe, but I haue ſeene ſome Ladies, whoſe liuely hewe ſadnes hath not one whit abated, and others, whoſe beautie anger hath encreaſed, which is a ſtrange thing, me thinkes. Hapleſſe is that beauty ſaid I, that hath ſorrow & anger the preſeruers & miſtreſſes of it, but I cānot

skill

skill of these impertinent things: And yet that woman, that must needes be molested with continuall paine and trouble, with greefe and care of minde, and with other passions to make her looke well, cannot be reckoned among the number of faire women, and for mine owne part, I do not account her so. Wherein thou hast great reason saide she, as in all things else that thou hast saide, thou hast shewed thy selfe wise and discreete. Which I haue deerely bought, said I againe: But I beseech you (gracious Lady) to answer this letter, because my Lord *Don Felix* may also haue some contentment, by receiuing this first well emploied seruice at my hands. I am content, saide *Celia*, but first thou must tell me if *Felismena* in matters of discretion be wise and well aduised? There was neuer any woman (saide I againe) more wise then she, bicause she hath beene long since beaten to it by her great mishaps; but she did neuer aduise her selfe well, for if she had (as she was accounted wise) she had neuer come to haue bene so contrarie to her selfe. Thou speakest so wisely in all thy answeres, saide *Celia*, that there is not any, that would not take great delight to heare them: which are not viands (said I) for such a daintie taste, nor reasons for so ingenious and fine a conceit (faire Lady) as you haue, but boldly affirming, that by the same I meane no harme at all. There is not any thing, saide *Celia*, whereunto thy wit cannot attaine, but becausse thou shalt not spende thy time so ill in praising me, as thy Master doth in praying me, I will reade thy letter, and tell thee what thou shalt say vnto him from me. Whereupon vnfolding it, she began to read it to herselfe, to whose countenance and gestures in reading of the same, which are oftentimes outwarde signes of the inwarde disposition and meaning of the hart, I gaue a watchfull eie. And when she had read it, she said vnto me. Tell thy Master that he that can so well by wordes expresse what he meanes, cannot choose but meane as well as he saith: And comming neerer vnto me, she saide softly in mine eare. And this for the loue of thee *Valerius*, and not so much for *Don Felix* thy Master his sake, for I see how much thou loueſt and tendereſt his estate: And from thence alas (saide I to my selfe) did all my woes arise. Whereupon kissing her hands for the great curtesie and fauour she shewed me, I hied me to *Don Felix* with this answer, which was no small ioy to him to heare it, and another death to me to report it, saying manie times to my selfe (when I did either bring him home some ioyfull tydings, or carrie letters or tokens to her) O thrise vnfortunate *Felismena*, that with thine owne weapons art constrained to wounde thy euer-dying hart, and to heape vp fauours for him, who made so small account of thine. And so did I passe away my life with so many torments of minde, that if by the sight of my *Don Felix* they had not beene tempered, it coulde not haue otherwise beene, but that I must needes haue lost it. More then two monethes togither did *Celia* hide from me the feruent loue she bare me, although not in such sort, but that by certaine apparant signes, I came to the knowledge thereof, which was no small lighting and ease of that griefe, which incessantly haunted my wearied spirites; For as I thought it a strong occasion, and the onely meane to make her vtterly forget *Don Felix*, so likewise I imagined, that, perhaps, it might befall to him, as it hath done to many, that the force of ingratitude, and contempt of his loue, might haue vtterly abolished such thoughtes out of his hart. But alas it happened not so to my *Don Felix*, for the more he perceiued that his Ladie forgot him, the more was his minde troubled with greater cares and greefe, which made him leade the most sorowfull life that might be, whereof the least part did not fall to my lot. For remedie of whose sighes and pitious lamentations, poore *Felismena* (euen by maine

force) did get fauours from *Celia*, scoring them vp (whensoeuer she sent them by me) in the catalogue of my infinite mishaps. For if by chaunce he sent her anie thing by any of his other seruants, it was so slenderly accepted, that he thought it best to send none vnto her but my selfe, perceiuing what inconuenience did ensue thereof. But God knowes how many teares my messages cost me, and so many they were, that in *Celias* presence I ceased not to powre them foorth, earnestly beseeching her with praiers and petitions, not to entreat him so ill, who loued her so much, bicause I woulde binde *Don Felix* to me by the greatest bonde, as neuer man in like was bounde to any woman. My teares greeued *Celia* to the hart, as well for that I shed them in her presence, as also for that she sawe, if I meant to loue her, I woulde not (for requitall of hers to me) haue sollicited her with such diligence, nor pleaded with such pittie, to get fauours for another. And thus I liued in the greatest confusion that might be, amids a thousand anxieties of minde, for I imagined with my selfe, that if I made not a shew that I loued her, as she did me, I did put it in hazard, lest *Celia*, for despite of my simplicitie or contempt, woulde haue loued *Don Felix* more then before, and by louing him, that mine coulde not haue any good succesſe; And if I fained my selfe on the other side, to be in loue with her, it might haue beene an occasion, to haue made her reiect my Lord *Don Felix*, so that with the thought of his loue neglected, and with the force of her contempt, he might haue lost his content, and after that, his life, the least of which two mischiefes to preuent, I woulde haue giuen a thousand liues, if I had them. Manie daies passed away in this sort, wherein I serued him as a thirde betweene both, to the great cost of my contentment, at the end whereof, the succesſe of his loue went on woorse and woorse, bicause the Loue, that *Celia* did beare me was so great, that the extreme force of her passion made her leese some part of that compassion, she should haue had of her selfe. And on a day after that I had caried, and recaried many messages and tokens betweene them, somtimes fayning some my selfe from her vnto him, because I could not see him (whom I loued so deerly) so sad and pensiue, with many supplications and earnest praiers I besought Lady *Celia* with pittie to regard the painfull life, that *Don Felix* passed for her sake, and to consider, that, by not fauouring him, she was repugnant to that, which she owed to her selfe: which thing I entreated, bicause I sawe him in such a case, that there was no other thing to be expected of him but death, by reason of the continuall and great paine, which his greeuous thoughts made him feele. But she with swelling teares in her eies, and with many sighes answered me thus. Vnfortunate and accursed *Celia*, that nowe in the end dost know, how thou liuest deceiued with a false opiniõ of thy great simplicitie (vngratefull *Valerius*) and of thy small discretion. I did not beleeue till now, that thou didst craue fauours of me for thy Master, but onely for thy selfe, and to enioy my sight all that time, that thou diddest spende in suing to me for them. But now I see thou dost aske them in earnest, and that thou art so content to see me vse him well, that thou canst not (without doubt) loue me at all. O how ill dost thou acquite the loue I beare thee, and that, which for thy sake I do nowe forsake? O that time might reuenge me of thy proude and foolish minde, since loue hath not beene the meanes to do it. For I cannot thinke, that Fortune will be so contrarie vnto me, but that she will punish thee for cõtemning that great good which she meant to bestow on thee. And tell thy Lord *Don Felix* that if he will see me aliue, that he see me not at all: And thou vile traitour, cruell enemie to my rest, com no more (I charge thee) before these wearied eies, since their teares were neuer of force to make thee knowe

how

how much thou art bound vnto them. And with this, ſhe ſuddenly flang out of my ſight with ſo many teares, that mine were not of force to ſtaie her. For in the greateſt haſte in the worlde ſhe got her into her chamber, where locking the dore after her, it auailed me not to call and crie vnto her, requeſting her with amorous and ſweete words to open me the dore, and to take ſuch ſatisfaction on me, as it pleaſed her: Nor to tell her many other things, whereby I declared vnto her the ſmall reaſon ſhe had to be ſo angrie with me, and to ſhut me out. But with a ſtrange kinde of furie ſhe ſaide vnto me. Come no more, vngratefull and proud *Valerius* in my ſight, and ſpeake no more vnto me, for thou art not able to make ſatisfaction for ſuch great diſdaine, and I will haue no other remedie for the harme, which thou haſt done me, but death it ſelfe, the which with mine owne hands I will take in ſatisfaction of that, which thou deſerueſt: which words when I heard, I ſtaied no longer, but with a heauie cheere came to my *Don Felix* his lodging, and with more ſadnes, then I was able to diſſemble, tolde him, that I could not ſpeake with *Celia*, becauſe ſhe was viſited of certaine Gentlewomen her kinſewomen. But the next day in the morning, it was bruted ouer all the citie, that a certaine trance had taken her that night, wherein ſhe gaue vp the ghoſt, which ſtroke all the court with no ſmal woonder. But that, which *Don Felix* felt by her ſudden death, and how neere it greeued his very ſoule, as I am not able to tell, ſo can not humane intendement conceiue it, for the complaints he made, the teares, the burning ſighes, and hart-breake ſobbes, were without all meaſure and number. But I ſaie nothing of my ſelfe, when on the one ſide, the vnluckie death of *Celia* touched my ſoule very neere, the teares of *Don Felix* on the other, did cut my hart in two with greefe: And yet this was nothing to that intollerable paine, which afterwardes I felt. For *Don Felix* heard no ſooner of her death, but the ſame night he was miſſing in his houſe, that none of his ſeruants, nor any bodie elſe could tell any newes of him.

Whereupon you may perceiue (faire Nymphes) what cruell torments I did then feele, then did I wiſh a thouſand times for death to preuent all thoſe woes and myſeries, which afterwards befell vnto me: For Fortune (it ſeemed) was but wearie of thoſe which ſhe had but till then giuen me. But as all the care and diligence which I emploied in ſeeking out my *Don Felix*, was but in vaine, ſo I reſolued with my ſelfe to take this habite vpon me as you ſee, wherein it is more then two yeeres, ſince I haue wandred vp and downe, ſeeking him in manie countryes: but my fortune hath denied me to finde him out, although I am not a little now bounde vnto her by conducting me hither at this time, wherein I did you this ſmall peece of ſeruice. Which (faire Nymphes) beleeue me, I account (next after his life in whom I haue put all my hope) the greateſt content, that might haue fallen vnto me.

When the Nymphes had heard faire *Feliſmenas* tale, and vnderſtoode what a great Lady ſhe was, and how loue had made her forſake her naturall habite, and taken vpon her the weedes and life of a ſhepherdeſſe, they were no leſſe amazed at her conſtancie and zeale, then at the great power of that cruell tyrant, who abſolutely commands ſo many liberties to his ſeruice. And they were mooued beſides to no ſmall pittie, to ſee the teares and burning ſighes wherewith the Ladie did ſolemnize the hiſtorie of her loue. *Doria* therefore, whoſe tender ſoule *Feliſmenas* greefe did moſt tranſpierce, and who was more affected to her, then to any woman, with whom ſhe had euer conuerſed before, tooke her by the hand, and began to ſay to her in manner following. What can we do (faire Lady) againſt the blowes of Fortune, what place is there ſo ſtrong, where one may be ſafe from the mutabilities of time?

time ? What harneys ſo impenetrable, and ſteele ſo well tempered, that may ſerue for a defence againſt the violence of this tyrant, whom ſo vniuſtly they call *Loue*? And what hart (though it be harder then diamond) which an amorous thought can not mollifie and make tender? Certes this beautie, this valour, and this wiſedome, deſerue not to be forgotten of him, who had but once ſeene and knowne them: But we liue now in ſuch an age, that the deſerts of any thing, are the meanes and occaſions of not obtaining it. And cruell loue is of ſo ſtrange a condition, that he beſtoweth his contents without any good order and rule, and giueth there greateſt fauours, where they are leſt eſteemed; but the medicine of ſo many ils, (whereof this tyrant is the cauſe) is her diſcretion & courage that ſuffers them. But whom doth he leaue ſo free, that theſe may ſerue her for a remedie? Or who can command her ſelfe ſo much in this paſſion, that in other womens affaires ſhe is able to giue counſell, how much leſſe to take it in her owne. Yet for all this, I beſeech thee (faire Ladie) to put before thine eies, and conſider what thou art, bicauſe if women of ſuch high renowne and vertue as thou art, are not able to tolerate his aduerſe effects, how can they ſuffer them, that are not ſuch. And in the behalfe of theſe Nymphes and mine owne, I requeſt thee, to go with vs to the ſage *Felicias* pallace, which is not farre from this place, for that to morrow about this time we may be well there: where (I am aſſured) thou ſhalt finde great remedies for thy greefes, as many others haue done heeretofore, that haue not deſerued them as much as thou haſt: whoſe profounde skill and rare experiments (beſides many other notable things in her, wherein no man or woman in our times came euer neere her) and her princely bountie doth make her ſo famous and renowned, that the greateſt kings and eſtates in the worlde are deſirous of her companie. I know not faire Nymphes (ſaid *Feliſmena* againe) who is able to applie a remedie to ſuch an ill, but he that firſt cauſed it. But neuertheleſſe I will fulfill your wils heerein, and ſince your companie is ſuch an eaſe and lighting to my paine, it were a fond part to reiect that comfort, whereof at this time I ſtande in ſo great neede. I woonder ſaid *Cynthia*, that *Don Felix* (al the while thou didſt ſerue him) did not know thee by thy faire face, thy ſweete grace, and looking daily on ſuch faire eies. He did ſo little remember thoſe beauties, ſaide *Feliſmena*, which he had once ſeene in me, (his thoughts being ſo deepely imprinted on *Celias* which he daily viewed) that he had no power, nor knowledge left to thinke once of mine. And talking thus togither, they heard the Shepherds ſinging, (that in companie of diſcreet *Seluagia* were comming down the hill) the oldeſt ſongs they knew, or that their ſeuerall greefes did put into their heads, euerie one taking that, which made moſt for his purpoſe. And the firſt that began to ſing, was *Syluanus*, who did ſing this ſong following.

My paſſion (Loue) *thou doſt diſdaine,*
But God keepe thee from ſuch a paine.
I am of Loue *diſdained,*
And Fortunes *wheele doth brooſe me,*
I care not now to looſe me,
And hope not to be gained.
So care to care is chained
By Fortune *and by* Loue *againe:*
But God keepe thee from ſuch a paine.

In

In playntes Loue *entertained*
My hart (such sport to choose me)
And fortune thus vndooes me,
To make me thinke vnfained,
That Time a change maintained,
But Both do still my greefes ordaine,
But God keepe thee from such a paine.

Seluagia, who bare no lesse loue, or at lest no lesse presumption thereof to her *Alanius*, then *Syluanus* to faire *Diana*, and who thought her selfe no lesse greeued for the change, that he had made in his loue, then *Syluanus* for the long perseuerãce in his harme, changing the first verse of this old pastorall round that followeth, she began to sing it, applying it to her purpose in this sort.

SAie Shepherdesse, what hath depriued thee
Of curtesie and ioy,
Since that so merrie thou were woont to be?

The deere remembrance of my passed gladnes
In middes of all my present greefe and paine,
Woe to my soule, that feeles it with such sadnes,
If long in such a state it doth remaine:
And since that time hath changed (to be plaine)
A Shepherd to offend and trouble me,
Merrie and pleasant I could neuer be.

Syrenus thought *Seluagias* song sufficient enough to manifest his greefe, if *Syluanus* and she had agreed thereunto; who also perswading him to choose out some song, that he had sometimes heard most fit for his purpose, he began to sing this which followeth.

MIstresse thou hast forgotten me,
But more I loue and honor thee.

Haples, I see I am forgot,
And yet I know no reason why,
To whom thy faith thou dost apply.
And tak'st from whom thou dost not wot:
Being belou'd, he loues thee not,
And Mistresse thou dost not loue me,
But more I loue and honor thee.

Me thinkes I do behold with pride
Those eies (my ioyes not long ago)
And for thou wilt not see me so,
Thy fairest face from me dost hide:
And that I saie to thee, beside,
Mistresse lift vp those eies to me,
For more I loue and honor thee.

The

The Nymphes with no ſmall delight and content, were harkening to the Shepherds ſongs, but the infinite ſighes and teares which the noble Shepherdeſſe powred foorth, did not ſuffer her to be idle, while the Shepherds were a ſinging. When they were come to the fountaine, and had done their due reuerence, they ſpred a faire white cloth vpon the greene graſſe, and ſetting that meate on it, which they had brought with them from the towne, they ſat them downe to eate, whom their thoughts (at leſt) would giue leaue, and they, (who had not ſuch a priuiledge) importuned by them, that were moſt free, muſt needes do the like. And after they had refreſhed themſelues, *Polydora* ſaide thus. The remedie of your paines diſdained Shepherds, (if it be lawfull to call you by that name,) which (to your greeſe) fortune hath caſt vpon you, conſiſteth in the hands of the graue Lady *Felicia*, to whom nature hath giuen that diuine knowledge, which ſhe hath denied vs: And therefore ſince you ſee, how greatly it importeth you to go viſit her, in the name of theſe two Nymphes (to whom you haue done this day ſo great ſeruice) I requeſt you, not to refuſe our companie, bicauſe by no other meanes you may receiue the rewarde of your trauell and paine, the which this woorthie Shepherdeſſe intends to take, who needes it no leſſe then your ſelues. And thou *Syrenus*, whom Fortune hath toſſed from a happie and ioyfull time, to a life as hapleſſe and full of ſorrowe, deſpaire not, but cheere vp thy ſelfe, for if thy Miſtreſſe had the remedie of the miſerable life, which ſhe leades with *Delius* ſo neere her, as thou of that, which ſhe makes thee ſuffer, it would be no ſmall lighting to thoſe churliſh wordes, and iealous iarres, which I know ſhe paſſeth euery day with him. There is nothing faire *Polydora* (ſaide *Syrenus*) that giues me now any greater diſcontent, then that *Diana* hath reuenged herſelfe on me ſo much to her owne coſt, for louing one, who hath not any thing in him that deſerues ſuch loue, and being perforce in his companie, thou ſeeſt how much it muſt greeue her; and as for me, to ſeeke a remedie for my greeſe, I woulde do it, if time and fortune would permit me. But I plainly ſee, that all the waies of it are ſtopped vp, and know not whither thy ſelfe and theſe faire Nymphes will carrie me to ſeeke it out. But let it be as it will, I will followe you, as *Syluanus* (I thinke) and *Seluagia* will do no leſſe, if they be not of ſo ſmall vnderſtanding, that they conceiue not the great fauour, that you do to vs all. And ſo they two referring themſelues to that, which *Syrenus* had anſwered, and committing their flockes to their friends (which were not feeding farre from that place) while they came backe again, they went altogither, which way the Nymphes did lead them.

The end of the ſecond booke of Diana.

The third Booke of Diana of George of Montemayor.

With great content the faire Nymphes with their companie were going on their way thorow the middes of a thicke wood, and now the ſunne being readie to ſet, they entred into a faire valley, in the mids of which ran a ſwift brooke, beſet on either ſide with thicke Sallows and Sicamours, amongſt the which were many other kindes of leſſe trees, which twyning about the greater, and the golden and coloured flowers of the one,

wouen

wouen (as it were) with the greene bowes of the other, represented a goodly sight and delight to the eie. The Nymphes and Shepherds tooke a pathway betweene the brooke and the faire arbours, who had not gone farre, when they came to a large greene meadow, wherein was a very faire great moate of cleere water, from whence the brooke did spring, that with great force ranne thorow the valley. In the middes of that moate was an Iland, wherein grew some greene trees, amongst the which stoode a Sherpe-cote, and about the same a flocke of sheepe went seeding of the greene and tender grasse. The Nymphes thinking this a fit place to passe away the night, which was neere at hand, vpon a fine causey of stones most artificiallie (as it seemed) laide in order, they passed all ouer into the iland, and went directly to the cote which they sawe before them. But *Polydora* going in first (for she was a little before the rest) was scarce entred in when she came foorth as fast againe, and looking towards her companie, did put her finger vpon her mouth, in token that they should come softly on & without any noise, which the Nymphes & the Shepherdes perceiuing, with the least they could, came into the cote, and looking into it, espied a bed in a corner, not made of any other thing, then of the greene bowes of those Sicamours, that were growing about it, and of the greene grasse that did growe about the water brinkes. Vpon the which they sawe a Shepherdesse lying a sleepe, whose beautie stroke them with no lesse admiration, then if on a sudden they had seene faire *Diana* before their eies. She had on a light skie coloured petticoate, and vnder that a gorget of so passing fine net-worke, that they might at pleasure behold the delicate proportion of her snow white brest, and comely feature of her euen body, for the vpper part (being of the same colour with the rest) hung so loose about her, that they might take a perfect view of her fine and daintie waste. Her yellowe haire in brightnes surpassing the sunnie beames, were loose and hanging downe without any order. But neuer did frizeling and adorned periwigge of any Lady in stately court beautifie in such sort, as the careless disorder that these had; and her white legge, being bare by the negligence of her harmeless sleepe, laie seemely out of her petticoate, but not so much, that the lookers on might perceiue any part, but what with modestie they might well beholde. And by manie teares that (sleeping yet) went trickling downe her faire and rosie cheekes, her sleepe (it seemed) shoulde not hinder her sorrowfull imaginations. The Nymphes and Shepherds were so amazed at her beautie, and at her inward sorrow, which by outward signes they well coniectured did trouble her waking soule, that they knew not what to saie, but were forced to shed teares for pittie of those, which they sawe the Shepherdesse powre foorth: who (as with pittie and admiration they were looking on her) turned her on the other side, and with a greeuous sigh fetch't from the bottome of her hart, saide thus to her selfe. How vnfortunate art thou *Belisa*, that thy greefe consisteth in no other thing, but in that thy life is of so small value, that it is not able to pay those things with extinction thereof, which by thine owne occasion are destroyed and lost? And then with a sudden surfault she awaked in such sort, that the end of her daies (it seemed) was neere at hand: But when she sawe the three Nymphes, and two such faire Shepherdesses with two Shepherds, she was so amazed, that it was a good while before she came to her selfe againe, who at last lifting vp her eies to looke on them againe, without stopping her teares, which continually she powred out, or putting silence to her burning sighes, which her afflicted hart sent foorth, began to speake in this sort. Howe great a comfort to so comfortles a soule as mine is should it be, if I were assured, that none by worde nor deede woulde

endeuour

endeuour to giue me any at all; bicauſe the great reſon, that I haue (faire Nymphes) to liue enwrapped in ſuch ſadnes as I doe, hath put ſuch a kinde of emnitie betweene me and the conſolation of my greefe, that if I thought at any time to enioy it, I would my ſelfe be the authour of mine owne death: Whereat maruell not faire Nymphes, or that I woulde ſeeke to preuent me of this remedie, ſince there is no other, that can greeue me more, then this your ſudden ſight and comming to this vncouth cote, a place ſelected out and fit for no other thing, but to bewaile remedileſſe greefes. Wherefore let it be a warning to thoſe that are attending their torments, to go quickly out of this place, bicauſe the misfortunes of loue haue ſtopped vp the waies in ſuch ſort, that they neuer let any hope of comfort or remedie enter in. But what hap hath ledde ſuch a faire companie to this place, where nothing is that yeelds content. What is it (thinke you) that makes the greene graſſe of this iland growe, and the waters (that encompaſſe it rounde about) to encreaſe, but my ceaſles teares? What is it, that moues the trees of this faire valley, but the voice of my piteous outcries, and the violent breath of my ſorrowfull ſighes, which, filling the aire, do execute that office for it, which for it ſelfe it cannot do? Why do the pretie birdes ſing among theſe ſpringes, when golden Phœbus is in all his force, but to helpe to lament and bewaile my miſhaps? Wherefore is it that the timerous wilde beaſtes come foorth to the greene meadowe, but to heare my continuall plaints? I pray God your fortune hath not brought you (faire Nymphes) to this place to that end, that mine hath, bicauſe nature (according to the ſorrowfull life, that I doe paſſe in it) hath for no other thing (it ſeemes) framed it, but for thoſe that are troubled with the incurable malladies of loue, therein to paſſe away their ſorrowfull liues: If any of you therefore be in this extremitie, let her paſſe on no farther, if not, let her go quickly from hence againe, leaſt by ſtaying heere long, ſhe be forced by the nature and qualitie of the place. The faire Shepherdeſſe ſpake theſe words with ſo many teares, that there was not any amongſt them, that coulde ſtaie theirs. They were all amazed to ſee the ſpirit, geſture and countenance wherewith ſhe ſpake them, for they came (as it appeered) from the verie center of her painfull ſoule. And ſhe coulde do no leſſe then this, becauſe the ſorrowfull ſucceſſe of her loue did take away all manner of ſuſpicion, that that greefe, which ſo extremely ſhe ſhewed, was either counterfaite or fained. But faire *Doris* ſpake thus vnto her, What is the cauſe (faire Shepherdeſſe) that hath driuen thy beautie to theſe extremities? What greefe ſo ſtrange coulde loue make an occaſion of ſo manie teares, accompanied with ſo ſole and ſolitarie a life, as thou doſt leade in this place? But what do I aske, when ſeeing thee to complaine of loue, thou telleſt me more then I am able to aske thee. It was thy deſire, when we came hether, to be aſſured that none of vs would offer thee any comfort, wherein I cannot blame thee, ſince it is the propertie of ſorrowfull ſoules not onely to abhorre comfort, but to flie from them, by whom they thinke by any meanes to receiue it. If I ſhould tell thee (faire Shepherdeſſe) that I could helpe thy greefe, what doth it auaile, if the ſame will not giue thee leaue to beleeue me? To tell thee, that in thine owne iudgement and diſcretion thou doſt help thy ſelfe, I know thou haſt it not ſo free, that thou canſt do it: Of one thing yet (good Shepherdeſſe) thou maiſt be aſſured, that there is no meanes in the whole world to rid thee from this painfull life, which I would not giue thee, if it lay in my power. And if this good will deſerueth any thing at all, I beſeech thee for their ſakes (that are heere preſent) and for mine owne, to tell vs the cauſe of thy greefe, becauſe there are ſome in this companie, that haue as great neede of

remedie,

remedie, and whom loue hath driuen to ſo narrow a ſtreight, that, if Fortune do not ſuccour them the ſooner, I knowe not what will become of their liues. The Shepherdeſſe, hearing *Doria* ſpeake theſe wordes, came out of her melancholie cell, and taking her by the hand, carried her vnto a fountaine in a little greene meadowe not farre off. Whither the Nymphes and Shepherdes went after them, and about the ſame ſat them downe altogither, when golden *Phœbus* had made an end of his diurnall courſe, and ſiluer *Diana* began hers with ſuch brightnes, as if it had beene midday. Where being in ſuch ſort as you haue heard, the faire Shepherdeſſe began to tell this which followeth.

AT that time (faire Nymphes of the chaſte Goddeſſe) when I was free from loue, I heard once a certaine thing, the experience whereof did afterwardes beguile me, finding it cleane contrarie to that which I heard reported. For it was tolde me, that there was no kind of greefe, but (by telling it) was ſome lighting & eaſe to her that did ſuffer it. I finde, that there is not any thing, that more augments my miſhap, then to call it to memorie, and tell it her, that is free from the like. For if I thought otherwiſe, I durſt not (beleeue me) recount vnto you the hiſtorie of my annoies. But becauſe it is true, that the telling of it to you ſhall be no cauſe of comfort to my balefull ſoule (which are the two cauſes moſt abhorred of me,) giue eare, and you ſhall heare the moſt ſtrange and haples accidents, that euer fell in loue.

Not farre from this valley towards that part, where the ſunne doth ſet, there is a village in the middes of a forreſt neere to two riuers, which with their currants do water and giue life to the greene trees, whoſe ſhadowed bowes are ſo delightfull, and thicke togither, that one houſe may hardly be diſcerned from another. Euerie one of them hath their limits rounde about them, where the gardens in ſommer time are decked with fragrant flowers, beſides the aboũdance of pleaſant orchards, which are there naturally brought foorth, though helped by the induſtrie of them, which in great Spaine are called (Freemen) by reaſon of the antiquity of their houſes & linage. In this place was the vnfortunate *Beliſa* borne, for this name I tooke from the funt, where I would to God I had left and loſt my life. Heere liued alſo a certaine Shepherd, one of the chiefeſt for birth and riches, that was in all that countrey, called *Arſenius*, and married to the faireſt Shepherdeſſe in all her time, but vntimely death (becauſe her deſtinies woulde haue it ſo, or elſe for auoyding ſome other inconuenience that her beautie might haue cauſed) did within a fewe yeeres after ſhe was married, cut aſunder her vital thred. The greefe that *Arſenius* felt for the death of his beloued *Florida*, was ſo extreme, that he was almoſt in danger of looſing his life: the which yet he preſerued by the comfort of a ſonne ſhe left behinde her called *Arſileus*, whoſe beautie and comely feature ſo farre excelled others, that they matched the gifts ſo highly commended (and deſcended to him) from *Florida* his mother. And yet did *Arſenius* for the loſſe of her, leade the moſt ſorrowfull and deſolate life, that might be. But ſeeing his Sonne in ſufficient yeeres to ſet him to ſome vertuous exerciſe, knowing, *That idlenes in boyes was the curſe of vices, and an enimie to vertue*, he determined to ſende him to the famous Academie of *Salamanca*, with intent to haue him learne thoſe ſciences, which make men mount vppe to higher degrees then men, and ſo ſent him thither indeede. But fifteene yeeres being nowe paſt ſince the death of his mother, it fell out that I going on a daie with others of our neighbours daughters to the market, kept in a prettie

towne not farre from ours, vnfortunate *Arſenius* (to his owne harme, and (alas) to mine, and to the preiudice of his hapleſſe ſonne) by chance eſpied me. This ſight kindled an extreme kinde of loue in him, as it appeered afterwardes by the ſtrange effects he ſhewed: for he endeuoured to make me know it ſometimes in the fielde, as I was going to cartie the Shepherds their dinner; ſometimes againe, as I was going to the riuer to rince my clothes; and ſomtimes for water to the fountaine, where he neuer miſſed, of purpoſe to meete me. But I, (that was till then but a nouice in matters of loue, although by heare-ſaie I vnderſtoode ſome of his diſordinate effects) ſometimes diſſembled the matter, as though I vnderſtoode not his meaning, and ſometimes made but a mocke of them, and was angry to ſee him ſo importunate and earneſt. But my wordes were not able to defende my ſelfe from his continuall ſuites, nor the great loue he bare me, ſuffered him to leaue of to woe me more and more: And in this ſort I paſſed away more then fower yeeres, in which ſpace he left not of his fond attempt, nor I to reſolue with my ſelfe to giue him the leſt fauour in the worlde. About this time came his hapleſſe ſonne *Arſileus* from his ſtudie, who amongſt other ſciences, that he had ſtudied, was ſo brauely ſeene in Poetrie and Muſicke, that he excelled all others in his time. His father tooke ſuch exceeding ioy in him, that he could neuer be out of his ſight, and not without great reaſon, bicauſe *Arſileus* was ſuch an one indeed that he deſerued to be beloued, not onely of his father whom nature conſtrained to loue as his ſonne, but of euery one elſe in the worlde: And ſo in our towne he was ſo much eſteemed and regarded of the cheefeſt and vulgar ſort, that they talked amongſt themſelues of no other thing, then of the great wiſedome, graces, gentilitie, and many other good parts more, which beautified the flouriſhing prime of his youth. *Arſenius* was ſo ſecret to his ſonne, that by no meanes he would let him vnderſtand any thing touching his loue, whom although *Arſileus* had ſeene on a day very ſad, yet he durſt not aske him the cauſe of his heauines, but rather thought, thoſe paſſions to be the reliques of that ſorrow, which yet for the vntimely death of his faire mother, remained in his fathers breſt. But *Arſenius* greatly deſiring to ſende mea letter, and to get it in ſuch ſort from his ſonne, (for he knewe him to be an excellent Poet) that he might not perceiue for whom it was, he thought it moſt fit to diſcouer the matter, and the ſumme of his loue to a great friend of his called *Argaſtus*, a townſ-man and our neighbour, praying him earneſtly to requeſt his ſonne *Arſileus* (as a thing that he ſtood greatly in neede of) to pen him a letter, and to tell him, that it was to be ſent a good waie thence to a bonnie Shepherdeſſe, whom he loued and ſerued. And ſo he gaue him inſtructions of other things, making moſt for his purpoſe, that he was to requeſt him to put in the letter. *Argaſtus* was ſo carefull about his friends buſines, that *Arſileus* (vrged thereunto by his inceſſant requeſts) deliuered him the letter in as ample ſort as he requeſted it. Which *Arſenius* ſeeing ſo fit for his purpoſe, wrought the meanes, that it came to my hands: the which receiuing much againſt my will, I founde that it ſaide thus.

Arſenius *his letter.*

FAire Shepherdeſſe whoſe hap and fare,
That ſuch it be, it is Gods will:
Let not ſuch grace and beautie rare
Decay, or be imployed ill.

And whoſe milde lambes and marked ſheepe
Thou maiſt behold (with merrie cheere)
By flockes increaſe, where they doe keepe
On tops of theſe greene hillocks heere.

Harke

Harke to a Shepherdes wretched crie,
Vnto himselfe so great a foe,
As for thy sweetest sake to die,
He findes he doth it well bestowe:
Turne thy deafe eares vnto my smart,
And mollifie thy hard pretences,
And now begin to put thy hart
Into the handes of thy sweete sences.

Turne these two faire and cruell eies
Vnto this hapless Shepherd Swaine:
Thy flocke regarde not, but his cries,
And thinke a little on his paine,
Let that but moone and change thy will:
To thinke thereof, I pray thee deine yet,
And not to remedie mine ill,
But to behold how I sustcine it.

How often hast thou come and leade
Vnto the field thy flocke and dams,
How many times vnto the meade
Hast thou brought forth thy pretie lambes?
That I told not my little ease,
That I became a foole for thee,
But better had I held my peace,
So little it auailed me.

That which I feele for thy sweete sake
With what wordes shall I now declare?
Or with what knowledge shall I make
My faith but knowen and heauie care?
What humane senses shall suffice
To feele that paine, and that vnrest,
Which for thy sake Loue did deuise
To giue me (though I tell it best.)

Why dost thou hide thy selfe from me,
Since thou dost knowe it very cleere,
That present when I am with thee,
Most absent from thee I appeere:
I, in suspences to enfolde me
Being where thy faire beauties are:
And thou, when that thou dost beholde me,
From seeing me then art thou far.

To shewe me likewise thou dost knowe
(To mocke me when thou dost pretend)
Things from thy thought, which euer goe,
And so deceiue me in the end.
See then who greater loue can giue,
Or greater grounded loue in hand,
That my deceiued thought must liue
With that thou mak'st it vnderstand.

Behold th'extreme wherein I am,
Seeing my good in doubtfull state,
That sillycreatures I became,
(Lesse then my selfe) to emulate:
For, for the bird the winde doth beare,
And fish that in the waues doe liue,
For their sweete freedome euery where
My vnderstanding I would giue.

A change of thousand times I see,
And nouels euery day doe raine:
Minds change from that they wont to bee,
Obliuions doe reuiue againe.
In euery thing there is great change,
The which I neuer saw in thee,
Whereby thou maist perceiue how strange,
And vaine my hope is vnto me.

The other day thou didst passe by,
Feeding thy flocke vpon the hill:
For greefe I sighed somewhat high;
Meaning thereby to thee no ill:
A lambe the head then lift vp, that it
Did heare, and did some pitie feele,
And thou didst fling thy sheepehooke at it:
See what a hardned hart of steele.

Could'st thou not (armed with such power)
After such long time killing me
Helpe me a day, or but an hower?
If that doth seeme too much to thee,
Doe it to see how I may proue
Or how with fauours that ensue,
In better sort intreate this loue:
Then after kill my soule anew.

I doe desire to change estate
From paine to paine, and not to pleasure:
Nor yet to change from loue to hate,
And all in one degree and measure.
And though the ill in substance should
Be but all one and of one sort:

Yet in the circumſtance I would
That more or leſſe it did import.

For that may be of ſuch behooſe,
And Miſtreſſe, ſo much it may doe
That loue may giue thee greater proofe,
Then it hath giu'n thee hitherto.
And whom an ill and firmeſt loue
Can neither greeue, nor mollifie,
It may be ſuch a greefe may moue
Thee, of ſome greater qualitie.

Vnto the meade if thou doſt goe,
Vnto the riuer or the plaine,
Then am I diligent to knowe,
If thou art gone or come againe.
If angrie, when I follow thee,
Or mocke me, if behinde I ſtay:
See then how feare doth trouble me,
And what extremes I doe eſſay.

To Syluia *then thy deereſt friend*
I goe (to ſeeke a poore releefe)
To know if (haply) in the end
Thou haſt inform'd her of my greefe.
But nothing when of thee ſhe ſpeakes,
Then doe I ſay, this cruell foe
Vnto her good companion breakes
Nothing of me, nor of my woe.

Some other times I watch the place,
To heare the ſinging in the night,
With ſingular and ſweeteſt grace,
A thouſand ſongs of great delight:
For I doe heare them one by one,
And thou ſeek'ſt out the worſt of all,
And euer from thy mouth heare none
That in loue matters doe befall.

I ſawe thee yet the other day,
Talking with Maudline, *who in fine*
To thee her ſorrow did bewray:
O would to God it had bene mine.
I thought thou wouldſt not long defer
(Poore ſoule) to cheere her heauy hart,
But laughing, thou didſt anſwere her.
It is a ieſt, in loue's no ſmart.

Thou left'ſt her weeping all in vaine,
And I came thither by and by:
Of thy hard hart ſhe did complaine,
And ſighing, this I did reply:
No wonder, for this cruell one
Delights not onely, that aboue
All others ſhe loues not alone,
But that all others ſhould not loue.

Some other times I thee eſpie
Talking with other Shepherdeſſes,
All is of feaſtes and brauerie,
Who dauncet h beſt, and like digreſſes:
That this maide hath a ſeemely grace,
And he this, or that intereſt:
But if of loue they touch an ace,
Then ſtraight thou turn'ſt it to a ieſt.

Beware yet, liue not too ſecure,
For in braue loue and fortunes art,
There is not any thing leſſe ſure
Then ſuch a free exempted hart.
And it may be with after woe
That cruell loue will ſubiect thee,
To one that will intreate thee ſoe,
(Cruell) as thou intreateſt me.

But (if that fall out to thy coſt)
God graunt the ſame may neuer bee,
And firſt I wiſh my life were loſt,
Rather then ſuch a thing to ſee.
For this poore hart which in my breſt
Is burning in ſo ſtrange a fire,
Feares more thy harme and thy vnreſt,
Then it reſpects her owne deſire.

With the greateſt ſignes of dolour and of a moſt afflicted hart indeede, the Shepherdeſſe *Beliſa* rehearſed *Arſenius* his letter, or (to ſay more truely) the letter of his ſonne *Arſileus*, ſtaying betweene many verſes, and repeating ſome of them twiſe, and at other ſome lifting vp her eies to heauen with ſuch anguiſh and greefe of minde, that one woulde haue thought her hart would haue burſt in peeces.

peeces. But proſecuting the ſorrowfull hiſtorie of her loue, ſhe ſaid vnto them.

This letter (faire Nymphes) was the beginning of all the harme of the woefull man, that made it, and the end of all the reſt and content of the hapleſſe woman, to whom he wrote it. For when I had read it, by ſome curious inueſtigation that my ſurmiſe found out, I perceiued, that it ſauoured more of his ſonne his quicke wit, then of the father his blunt affection. And bicauſe the time was now at hand, wherin loue came to take an account of the ſmall care, I had till then of his inuincible power, or bicauſe in the end I ſhould haue ſome feeling of his poyſoned ſweete, I perceiued my ſelfe a little more mollified then before, and not ſo little, but that I gaue loue place to take poſſeſſion of my libertie. And that which this tyrant did by me, was the ſtrangeſt thing that euer hapned in matters of loue, for he made me not onely loue *Arſileus*, but alſo his father *Arſenius*. Truth it is, that I loued the father to requite the loue he bare me; and the ſonne, to yeeld vp my entyre libertie into his hands, as from that howre I did indeed giue it him. So that I loued the one, not to ſeeme vngratefull; and the other, becauſe it was not in my power to do any leſſe. But when *Arſenius* perceiued me to be more gentle then before (which thing he deſired ſo long ſince) there was not any thing in the world, which he woulde not haue done for my content and pleaſure: For ſo many were the preſents, the iewels, and manie other gifts he ſent me, that it greeued me a little to ſee my ſelfe ſo greatly indebted to him. With euery thing he ſent me, came ſo many amorous verſes and letters, that I was forced to anſwer them againe, whereby I ſhewed him no ſignes of loue to put him in any hope, nor my ſelfe ſo coie as I was woont to be. But the loue I bare to *Arſileus* tooke euery day deeper roote in my hart, and moleſted my ſences in ſuch ſort, that it left no quiet place in all my ſoule. It fell out afterwards, that *Arſenius* and *Arſileus* being in companie on a ſommers night with certain of their neighbours, and ſitting vnder a faire great Oke, that ſtoode in a broade place before our houſe, *Arſenius* began to commend the skill which his ſonne *Arſileus* had in muſick and muſicall inſtruments, to giue them occaſion that were preſent, to praie him to go fetch a harpe from home, and to plaie and ſing there among them, who ſat ſo neere to our houſe, that I could not chooſe, but heare the muſicke. And as he imagined it, ſo it fell out anſwerable to his deſire: For *Arſileus*, being earneſtly requeſted by the companie, ſent for a harpe, and ſweetely thereon began to plaie and ſinge. When I heard *Arſileus*, and with what daintie melodie he plaied, and enticing grace he ſung, I was gone almoſt as farre as might be in Cupids affects, ſeeing his father would needes beſtowe the muſicke on me, and vnwittingly enamour me of the excellent graces of his woorthie ſonne. Wherefore I ſaide to my ſelfe. Thou doſt no leſſe deceiue thy ſelfe *Arſenius* by procuring thy ſonne to ſing, that I might heare him, then by ſending me a letter of his owne hande. If thou didſt but knowe what will enſue thereof, thou mighteſt well from this day admoniſh all louers, not to procure their Miſtreſſes loue by other mens gifts & graces, bicauſe it commonly fals out that women do ſooner fall in loue with thoſe that are the inſtruments and meanes, then with thoſe that thinke to benefite themſelues by them. But nowe by this time did my *Arſileus*, with a ſingular ſweete grace and voice, begin to ſing this Sonnet to the tune of his ſiluer ſounding Harpe.

A Sonnet.

IN this cleere Sunne with golden beames that ſhineth,
In thus moſt high diuine and rare perfection,

In this sweete soule and figure, that refineth
Our age with ioyes, with treasures and affection.

O blinding light and face each ts subiection,
Where beauties store to pities want inclineth:
Sweete words, but hard condition of reiection;
Sweete lookes, yet sight that many sorrowes shrineth.

For these sweete Mistresse, I am thus enwrapped,
For these I feare to see mine owne desire,
And passe the time in thinking of thy treasures.
A case most strange, effects that neuer happed,
That seeing thee, I see my greatest pleasures,
And harmes, when that to see thee I require.

After he had made an end of this Sonnet, he began to sing this song with so maruellous sweete grace and delectable voice, that he helde all his hearers in a great suspence, and me (poore sorrowfull soule) that loued him more, then euer any coulde be.

TO see thee I lift vp my happie eies,
And hauing seene thee, cast them downe againe.
For further to proceede the same denies:
Nor other ioy but thy loue to containe.

What greater glory is there then to view thee,
If that he knew the sight that he did see,
For neuer was there any one that knew thee,
That could be wearie of beholding thee,
And though he could not knowe thee any wise
As well as I haue knowen thee to my paine,
Yet should he be besides himselfe, if dies
Not at the least, to see thee once againe.

If that my erring pen did others praise
It was but tri'd, I see, vpon the lest,
For they were all but papers of essaies
Of that, wherewith thou truly wert possest.
And if (before I lou'd thee) with surmise,
My pen hath for some other writ in vaine,
It was not for because I sawe her eies,
But hop't it should see such a Soueraine.

Nature in framing thee did so excell
And shew'd so braue a skill and suttle art,
That one of thy perfections serued well
Beautie to thousand others to impart.

She that to thee is like in any wise

In leaſt of all I ſawe in thee ſo plaine:
To paſſe no further ſhe may well ſuffice,
Nor he, that ſees thee but muſt loue containe.

Who ſees thee as God made thee, and hath ſeene
An other thing that's faire and of delight,
He thinkes, he ſees a thing that would haue beene
Thy ſelfe in any thing, if that it might:
But if he ſees thee with ſuch perfect eies,
And (Miſtriſſe) as I ſawe thee, then againe
There's no compare (compare for it denies)
Nor glorie, but thy ſweete loue to containe.

It was not onely this, which *Arſileus* ſung that night to the ſounde of his Harpe, but as *Orpheus*, when he demaunded his Nymph *Euridice*, made the helliſh furies gentle with his ſweete ſong, ſuſpending for a while the paines of the damned ghoſtes; ſo did vnfortunate *Arſileus* not onely amaze and mollifie their harts that were preſent, but wretched *Beliſaes* alſo, who with great boldnes from a high garret windowe was harkening vnto him: whoſe ſweete muſicke delighted moreouer the heauen, the ſtarres, and the cleere moone, which was then in her force and vigour, that in what part ſoeuer I did then caſt mine eies, it admoniſhed me (me thought) and tolde me, that I loued him more then mine owne life: whereof it was needleſſe for any to put me in minde, for if I had then beene Lady of all the worlde, I had thought my ſelfe too meane to be woorthie of him. And from thence I purpoſed to hide this affection as little from him as I could. All that night I laie imagining, by what meanes I might beſt diſcouer vnto him my griefe, but in ſuch ſort, that my vertuous name and modeſtie might not ſuffer any blemiſh, though death (when this was wanting) with her appalled feare and danger ſhould not haue hindred mine intent. And yet when that ſhould come, and when we haue the greateſt care to auoid the occaſions that might hinder it, euen then & moſt of all they preſent themſelues. The next day after needs I muſt go with other countrey maides (my kineſwomen & neighbours) to a thicke wood, in the mids whereof was a cleere fountaine, whither euery other holy day we caried our kine, as well for that there was good paſture for them, as alſo for that (the freſh & hungry euening being come) we might take the milke of the next day, whereof we made ſweete butter, & freſh cheeſe and creame. But I and my companie being ſet round about the fountaine, and our kine liyng in the coole ſhades of the thick and branchie trees of that hedge, licking their yong and tender caluelings, that lay by them, one of my friendes amongſt the reſt, (vnacquainted (it ſeemed) with that loue that warred within my ſoule) with many requeſts importuned me (vpon paine neuer to receiue any pleaſure at her handes) to entertaine the time and that companie with ſome ſong or other. My many excuſes (with telling her beſides that times and occaſions were not alwaies one, nor alike) auailed me very little from performing that, which with ſo great inſtance ſhe requeſted of me: And therefore to the ſound of a Bagpipe, whereon one of them moſt ſweetely plaied, I began to ſing theſe verſes.

Loue paſſed by me with his bowe vnarm'd,
His eies caſt downe, milde, gentle, modeſt gay,

And (careleſſe) left me then behinde vnharm'd:
How ſmall a time did I this ioye eſſaie?
For preſently enuious Fortune ſaide,
Staie loue, why paſſeſt thou ſo ſoone awaie?
Foorthwith the blinde bove turn'd to me, and ſtaide
Angry to ſee himſelfe ſo checkt with blame,
For ther's no blame, where his hot fire is laide:
Cupid was blinde, but well he ſpide his game:
So blinded b: he, that he may ſee none,
That did ſo blinde my wit, and ſence enflame:
O that I might reuenge my ſelfe of one
That wiſheth harme to all, and will not free
(With his conſent) not one poore hart alone:
Straight did the traytour arme his bowe, and he
with poyſoned ſhaft did pierce my careleſſe hart,
Which in his bowe he put, and aym'd at me:
Fortune vnarm'd did take me, for his parte
Loue neuer plaies, nor workes not any feate,
But on free ſoules, exempted from his darte:
A hardned hart his arrow brake [illegible] with heate,
And brake a neuer ſubiect freedome, ſo
That I did yeeld, and his content was great:
O ſole free quiet life that I forgo,
O meadowe ſeene ſo oft with freeſt eies,
Curſed be Loue, his arrowes, and his bowe:
Nowe follow loue, and what he doth deuiſe,
Come from ſecuritie to greateſt care,
And paſſe from reſt, to thouſand miſeries:
See now how that a carefull hart doth fare,
Which lately was without ſuſpect or thought
Subiect to be to ſuch a tyrants ſnare.
O ſoule with teares vndone and brought to nought,
Now learne to ſuffer, ſince you learn'd to ſee,
But what auailes, if this my Fortune wrought?
O wretched eies (if with this terme he be
Not angry) whom you ſaVVe vVith free conſent,
Where haue you put and plac'd my libertie?
O meadoVVes, groues, and VVoods of ſVVeete content,
Which bred ſo free a hart as I had heere,
So great an ill VVhy did you not preuent?
SVVift running brooke, and riuer pure and cleere,
Where once my flocke VVere wont to drinke their fill,
O euery ſeaſon of the paſſing yeere,
Why haue you put me in a ſtate ſo ill?
Since onely I did loue you, and theſe plaines,
And this moſt pleaſant vale, and greeneſt hill.
Heere did I mocke a thouſand Shepherd ſwaines:
Who now will laugh at me, when they ſhall knoVV,

That

That nowv I doe begin to feele their paines.
They are not ils of Loue, that vvound me ſoe,
For if they vvere, then ſhould I paſſe them all,
As thouſands, vvho haue died in Cupids *vvoe.*
Fortune it is, that turnes, and makes me fall
From euery meane occaſion, path, and way,
Wherby I might but ſhew my painfull thrall.
How can the cauſer of my paſſion (ſay)
Helpe them, if that their paine he neuer knowes,
But there's no loue, where reaſon beareth ſway,
To how much ill is fortune drawing thoſe,
Whom ſhe makes loue? ſince nothing can reſtore
(Sea, earth nor Sunne, moone, ſtars, nor any ſhowes)
Or giue delight, vnleſſe one loue before.
And all is thus, and wretched thus am I,
Whom time perſwades and hinder more and more.
Ceaſe now my verſe, ſince loue with angrie eie
Beholds, how ſoone of him I doe complaine,
And for my harmes doe craue his remedie.
Complaine not oft, for feare of his diſdaine,
Now hold your peace, ſince I ſeale vp my wordes,
And when you ſee Loues fell, and angrie vaine,
Ceaſe, for Loues wroth no remedie affoordes.

Theſe verſes of the Shepherdeſſe *Beliſa* pleaſed the Nymphes and Shepherdes, no leſſe then the ſweete and ſorrowfull note, wherewith ſhe ſung them, who (proſecuting the hiſtorie of her miſhap) ſaid: But *Arſileus* was not farre frō thence, when I ſung theſe verſes, for hauing gone forth that day a hunting, & being in the thickeſt of the woode to paſſe away the heate of the day, it ſeemed he heard vs, and as one, that loued muſicke well, came ſoftly pacing amongſt the thickeſt trees that were neere vnto the fountaine, bicauſe he might from thence the better heare vs. But our muſicke being ended, he came ſtraight to the fountaine, whoſe ſudden ſight engendred a forcible paſſion of ioy and feare in my amazed ſoule. Which was no great maruell, bicauſe an enamoured hart may be as well ſurſaulted with a ſudden ioy, as with an vnexpected ſorrow. He came to vs where we were ſet, and curteouſly ſaluting vs, in very good ſort, and with a good grace requeſted pardon of vs; That certes (faire Nymphes) when I begin to thinke of the ſweete behauiour, and ripened wiſedome of vnfortunate *Arſileus*, I do not thinke that his ſiniſter fates and fortune were the cauſe, that death tooke him away ſo quickly from my ſight, but rather that the worlde was not woorthie to enioye any longer ſo ſingular a youth, on whom nature had beſtowed ſo many perfections of beautie and enriched with ſo many gifts of the minde, as that hee left not his like behinde him. After hee had ſalured vs, and leaue obtained (which hee humblie requeſted of vs) to paſſe away the heate of the daye in our companie, hee caſt his eies vpon me (which had hee neuer done, happie had we both beene) and was (as it appeered afterwardes by diuers ſignes, whereby hee manifeſted his affection to me) extremely ouercome in my loue. Vnhappie I, (that needed not to looke on him to loue him, being ſo much enwrapped in his, by ſeeing him before, as hee was nowe in mine after hee had ſeene me) lifted vp mine eies to beholde him at the ve-

rie inſtant when he addreſſed his to looke on me, which forcible encounter both of vs would willingly had not befell, bicauſe that modeſtie and ſhame ſharpely rebuked me, and feare left not him without bitter puniſhment. But he to diſſemble his newe greefe, began to diſcourſe with me in matters cleane different from thoſe, which he woulde haue imparted to me, to ſome of which I anſwered againe, my thoughts and ſences being then more careful to ſee, if by the alteration of his countenance, or mildenes in his words he ſhewed any ſignes of loue, then fully to ſatisfie his queſtions. For then ſo greatly I deſired to heare him ſighe, (to confirme me in my doubtfull hope) that in lieu of ſuch a happines I woulde not haue cared to haue paſſed any greefe whatſoeuer. And in the end I coulde not wiſh for more apparant ſignes of loue in him, then at that preſent I behelde: for what with his toong he coulde not, with his eies he manifeſtly declared vnto me the amorous and ſecret paſſions of his hart. And being in theſe points, the two Shepherdeſſes, that were with me, roſe vp to milke their kine, whom I praied to take the paines to milke mine likewiſe, for that I felt my ſelfe not well at eaſe. And needleſſe it was for me to entreate them much, and for *Arſileus* to haue any fitter occaſion to declare vnto me his greefe, wherein I knowe not if he was deceiued, by imagining the occaſion why I would be without companie, but am aſſured, that he was not a little glad to helpe himſelfe by the opportunitie thereof. The Shepherdeſſes were buſie about milking their kine, which ſuffered themſelues to be deceiued with humane induſtry by tying their gentle caudlings to their feete. That *Arſileus* now (newly ſurpriſed in loue) had yeelded himſelfe ſo much to Cupids bonds, that nothing but ſpeedie death could giue him libertie, I perceiued apparantly, in that fower or fiue times he began to ſpeake vnto me, and euery time in vaine: for the feare he had of my diſpleaſure came euer betweene him and his ſpeech, and therefore I began to talke to him of another matter, not farre from his intent, bicauſe he might not digreſſe much from it, inducing him thereby to tell me what it was that ſo often he went about to ſpeake and could not vtter, ſaying. Doth this countrey like thee well, *Arſileus*? For the entertainment and conuerſation of that, where thou haſt lately ſpent thy time, is, I knowe, farre different from ours, which therefore cannot ſo well content thee as that. As of my ſelfe (quoth he) I haue not ſo much power, ſo hath not my vnderſtanding (faire Shepherdeſſe) ſo much libertie, to anſwer this demand. And changing this manner of talke (to ſhewe him the way with occaſion) I ſaid vnto him againe: I haue heard ſay, that in thoſe parts are many faire Shepherdeſſes, that paragonned to vs, they ſo farre excell vs, that we muſt ſeeme but meane in thy ſight that are heere. I might be thought too ſimple (ſaide *Arſileus*) if I woulde confeſſe this, for though there are as faire there (as you haue heard) yet heere are they which with mine owne eies I daily ſee, that ſo farre ſurmount them, as the ſun doth the chiefeſt ſtars in brightnes. This is the greateſt gloſe in the world (ſaid I againe) and yet for all this I am not ſorrie, that our countrey-women are ſo farre in your good opinion and liking, becauſe I am one of them my ſelfe. Which onely reaſon (ſaide he) if there were no other, were ſufficient enough to prooue what I haue ſaid. So that by word and worde he came to tell me that, which I deſired to heare, though I would not then make him knowe ſo much, but rather intreated him to ſtop vp the paſſage of his wordes. But fearing leaſt this might haue bene an occaſion to qualifie his loue (as often times it falleth out, that diſgraces and diſfauours in the beginning are the meanes to make any leaue of their true commenced loue) I began to tune againe my iarring anſwere, ſaying thus vnto him. And if thy loue be

ſuch

ſuch *Arſileus*, that it will not ſuffer thee to leaue of to loue me, be ſecret therein, ſince it is the manner of thoſe that are wiſe and iudicious (like thy ſelfe) to be no leſſe in things of meaner conſequence. Albeit by all this, which I haue ſaide vnto thee, I would not haue thee thinke to profit thy ſelfe any more, then that I muſt for euer liue bounde vnto thee, if thou wilt follow my counſell in this behalfe. This did my toong ſpeake, but an other thing did my pitifull eies affirme, with the which I ſtill looked him in the face, and caſting out a ſigh (an aſſured meſſenger of my inwarde and ſenſible paſſion) which *Arſileus* might haue perceiued well ynough (if Loue at the leaſt would haue giuen him leaue) I held my peace. In this ſort we departed from one another, and many times afterwards he talked with me of theſe matters, who ſent me beſides many letters, and fine Sonnets of his owne making. And as he ſung them night by night to the tune of his ſweete Harpe, with amorous teares I often-times harkened vnto him, ſo that in the ende both of vs was aſſured of each others loue. But now did *Arſenius* his father importune me in ſuch ſort, with his meſſages and preſents, that I knew not what way to take, to defend me from him. And it was the ſtrangeſt thing in the world to ſee, how the loue, which increaſed euery day in the ſonne, was alſo augmented in the father, though they were both of different age and powers: and yet the ſame (I muſt needes confeſſe) made me not reiect him, nor refuſe any thing, that he ſent me. But liuing now in all contentment, and ſeeing my ſelfe ſo truly beloued of *Arſileus*, whom I loued ſo deerely againe, it ſeemed that fortune would make an end of all my ioy with the moſt hapleſſe euent that was euer ſeene before. For thus it was, that *Arſileus* and I appointing to meete together on a certaine night (too darke and diſmall for me, bicauſe I neuer ſince knew perfectly what day meant) we concluded that he ſhould come into my fathers orchard, and I to my chamber windowe, which opened right vpon a Mulberie tree, whereon he might eaſily get vp to be neere vnto me, there to talke togither of our matters. Accurſed *Beliſa* that ſhalt neuer conceiue to what purpoſe I brought him to ſuch danger, when as euery day, ſometimes in the fielde, ſometimes at the riuer ſide, and ſometimes at the wood, when I carried my kine to paſture, and ſometimes when I driue my ſheepe to the folde, he might at pleaſure haue talked with me, as he did many daies before. But my hard hap was the cauſe, that fortune would be paied for the content, which ſhe had lent me till then, with making me liue all my life time without it. For now the appointed hower, (which was the ende of his daies, and the beginning of my woes) being come, *Arſileus* came iuſt at the time, and to the very place, where both of vs talking togeather of thoſe things, which they may imagine, that haue ſometimes loued well, his wretched father *Arſenius*, that accuſtomed many nights to walke vp and downe about our houſe, to ſee if he could ſee me (which if I had ſo well remembred, for it was ſo far out of my thoughtes, as if I had neuer knowen any ſuch matter, I would neuer haue conſented to put him in ſuch danger) in the ende happened to come thither that night, and iuſt at that hower when his ſonne was in the tree, and ſo priuily, that though he had quickly eſpied vs, we could neither heare, nor ſee him. And knowing it was I, that was ſpeaking out at the window, but not his ſonne, that was in the Mulberie tree, not imagining who he might be, it was the principall cauſe of our ill ſucceſſe. For thereupon he conceiued ſuch great wroth and iealouſie, that, without any noiſe at all, he hied him home, where bending a Croſſebowe, and putting a poiſoned arrow in it, came againe to the place where we were, and aimed ſo right at his ſonne, that the arrow pearcing his tender hart, he fell immediately downe dead from the tree, ſaying. How little time (my

deere

deere *Beliſa*) doth fortune lend me to ſerue thee according to my great good will & deſire. Which wordes he could ſcarce vtter, when the accurſed father, who by his ſpeech knew that he was the homicide of his owne ſonne, with a deſperate outcrie ſaide. Thriſe wretched and accurſed may I euer be, if thou art my ſonne *Arſileus*, who ſeemeſt to be no other by thy voice. Whereupon comming vntò him, and by the light of the moone, that ſhone vpon his face, knowing him well, and that he had giuen vp the ghoſt, he ſaide. Since (cruell *Beliſa*) my vnfortunate ſonne by thy means hath bene ſlaine, it is not meete that the murdering father ſuruiue to lament his vntimely death. At which wordes taking out his Woodknife, he thruſt it into his hart, and fell downe preſently dead! O vnhappie chaunce! O ſtrange caſe, neuer heard of, nor ſeene before! O greeuous ſcandale to their eares that ſhall heare the lamentable diſcourſe of my balefull tragedie? O miſerable *Beliſa*, may thy guiltie hart thinke of theſe things, and not take that way, which both father and ſonne haue taken for thy ſake? Alas it ſhall be great impietie not to mingle thy blood with theirs, who deſired ſo much to ſerue thee. But when wretched ſoule I ſawe this vnluckie accident, without any more adoe, I left my fathers houſe, and went vp and downe, wearying the heauens with importunate complaints, and burning the aire with ſmokie ſighes, vntill I came to this place, where accuſing cruell fortune and hatefull death, that had in ſo ſhort time taught me to feele the woundes of their cruell dartes. I haue liued ſixe monethes, without ſeeing or ſpeaking to any perſon, and not deſirous of any companie or conſolation whatſoeuer.

Faire *Beliſa* hauing made an end of her pitifull tale, began to weepe ſo bitterly, that euery one there was forced with their teares to helpe to bewaile her dire miſfortune. And adding further ſhe ſaide. This is faire Nymphes, the ſorrowfull hiſtorie (or rather dolefull tragedie) of my hapleſſe loues, and of their bloodie ſucceſſe: Behold then if this be ſuch an ill, that fortune or time may cure and remedie? O *Arſileus*, how often did I feare it, without thinking of that, which I iuſtly feared. But ſhe that will not beleeue her feare and preuent it, let her not maruell, when ſhe ſees that come to paſſe which ſhe feared, for well I knew, thou couldſt not be any long time without meeting me, and that my ioy could endure no longer, then when *Arſenius* thy father perceiued any thing of our loues. I woulde to God it had ſo fallen out, that the greateſt hurt that he could haue done me, had bene but to baniſh thee his ſight and our towne. For an ill which is cured with time, may with leſſe harme be ſuffered. O *Arſenius*, the death of thy ſonne is no impediment to the greeſe, that I alſo conceiue for thine, for the loue which thou didſt continually beare me, thy vertuous and pure zeale, wherewith thou didſt euer loue me, thy bountie and coſt beſtowed on me, the tempeſtuous and ill nightes, that thou haſt paſſed for my ſake, will let me doe no leſſe, then lament and bewaile thy diſaſtrous end, for by this time I had bene married vnto thee, if thy ſweete ſonne *Arſileus* had not come to our towne. If I ſhould ſay, that I did not loue thee well, I ſhould deceiue the world; for in the end there is no woman, if ſhe knowes ſhe is truly beloued, but will loue little or much againe, although otherwiſe ſhe manifeſt the ſame. But now my toong holde thy peace, ſince thou haſt told more then thou wert asked. And pardon me (faire Nymphes) if I haue bene tedious in my ſorrowfull narration, bicauſe ſo great miſhaps cannot be compriſed in fewe wordes. Whileſt the Shepherdeſſe was telling that which you haue heard, *Syrenus*, *Syluanus*, *Seluagia*, and faire *Feliſmena*, and the three Nymphes coulde not giue eare without ſome ſecrete teares, although the Nymphes, as women neuer touched with loue, felt her paine and greefe, but not

the

the circumstances of it. But faire *Doria* seeing the comfortlesse Shepherdesse did not leaue of her bitter complaint, began to comfort her in this sort. Let thy teares cease *Belisa*, since thou seest what small remedie thou hast of them, and waigh that two eies are not able to bewaile so great a greefe. But what sorrow can there be, which is not ended, or endes not her that suffers it: and yet I could shew thee the way whereby I could a little lighten thy paine. Wherefore, I pray thee goe with vs as well for this respect, as for that it is not meete thou shouldest waste thy life so fondly, for in that place where we carrie thee, thou maist choose out what manner of life thou list,& where none is that may hinder thee of it. This place (answered the Shepherdesse) I thought most fit not onely to lament my woes in, but to end my life in the same, the which (if time doth but intreate me as it hath done hitherto) shall not be very long. But now since this is thy will, I am minded not to gainsay it; and as for mine (faire Nymphes) from this time forward you may vse it according to your owne pleasures. They were all glad that she yeelded to goe with them. And bicause the night was passed on more then three howers, and the moone did shine as cleere as day, they supped there with that prouision the Shepherdes had in their scrips. And after they had supped, euery one chose out her place that did best content her, to passe the rest of the night away, the which the louers spent more in teares and sighes then in sleepe; and the rest that were free, eased themselues of their wearinesse they had the day before.

The end of the third booke

The fourth Booke of Diana of George of Montemayor.

NOw did the morning starre begin to cast foorth her woonted brightnes, and with the comfort of her light the prety birdes and nightingales were warbling vp their sweetest notes to the skies, when the three Nymphes with their companie departed from the little Iland, where *Belisa* passed away her sorrowfull life; whose greefe, though she was a little comforted by the enamoured shepherdes, and cheered vp by the rest, did neuertheless haunt her so much, that she founde no remedie, nor meanes to rid hir-selfe from it. Both the Shepherds acquainted her with their passed paines, and the Shepherdesses tolde her the sorrowfull summe of their loues, to trie if by these meanes they might mitigate her paine a little. But all comfort is in vaine where the greefe is remedilesse. The disguised Ladie tooke such delight in *Belisaes* beautie, discretion, and sweete graces, that she coulde not satisfie her-selfe by asking her still more questions, though *Belisa* was almost wearie with answering to them. And the familiaritie betweene them both was so great, that it made the Shepherds and the Shepherdesse in a manner emulate their conuersation. But they came to a thicke woode full of wilde shadowed trees, where they coulde not chuse, (had they not beene guided by the Nymphes) but haue lost themselues. They therefore led the way before thorow a narrow glade, where they could not enter in but by one and one. And hauing gone halfe a league thorow the thickest thereof, they came into a broade and faire plaine lying betweene two goodly riuers, both which

were brinked on either ſide with greene & tall trees. In the middes thereof ſuddenly appeered vnto their ſight a ſtately Pallace, with ſo high and loftie turrets, that it filled them full of woonder and delight to behold it. Before they came to this great pallace, they ſawe diuers Nymphes of incomparable beautie comming foorth to meete them: All of them apparelled with daintie white vailes, curiouſly wouen with fine threeds of golde and ſiluer, wearing garlands of redolent flowers vpon their yellow haire, which in moſt comely grace was hanging downe looſe vpon their ſhoulders. After them came a Lady, which ſeemed (by the grauitie and maieſtie of her perſon) to be a woman of ſome great ſtate and authoritie, attyred in blacke veluet, and leaning (as ſhe came) vpon one of her Nymphes ſhoulders, the faireſt in the companie. When the three Nymphes were come vnto them, with great ioy and many imbracings they were receiued of the other. But when the Lady came nigh, with great reuerence they kiſſed her handes, whom ſhe entertained and wel-commed as ioyfully as they could wiſh. And before the Nymphes ſpake one worde of that which had paſſed, ſage *Felicia* (for ſo was this honorable Ladie called) ſaide to *Feliſmena*. The great aduenture which thou haſt done for theſe three Nymphes, cannot (faire Shepherdeſſe) be requited with leſſe, then by euer hauing me bound vnto thee, and to do thee all the fauour I may, which ſhal not be ſmal, thy neede being ſo great: For ſince I knowe what thou art (without report of anie) and whether thy thoughts do leade thee, thou ſhalt in the ende perceiue if I be able to helpe thee in any thing. Wherefore be of good cheere, for if I liue, thou ſhalt ſee and enioy thy deſire, in purſuite whereof though thou haſt paſſed much paine and trauell, there is nothing (as thou knoweſt) obtained nor gotten without it. Faire *Feliſmena*, maruelling much at *Felicias* wordes, and forgetting not to giue her due thankes for ſo great curteſies and promiſes, anſwered thus. Since you deigne (ſage Ladie) not onely in the end to remedie my griefes, but to bleſſe the remnant of my life with happines and content, whereas there is no deſert of my part that may chalenge any ſuch fauour at your gracious hands, do but conſider (good Lady) what is due to your ſelfe, and then you ſhall ſee how I remaine acquited of this debt, and your ſelfe ſufficiently paied. For ſo great deſerts as thine are (ſaide *Felicia*) and for ſuch excellent beautie, as nature hath beſtowed on thee, all that may be done, is little enough. *Feliſmena* then bowed herſelfe at theſe wordes to kiſſe her hands: but *Felicia* embraced her louingly, and looking vpon the Shepherds and Shepherdeſſes, ſaide vnto them. Be not diſmaied couragious Shepherds, and diſcreete Shepherdeſſes, at the continuance of your ſeuerall greefes, for I haue alſo no leſſe care of their ſpeedie remedies. The Shepherdes and the Shepherdeſſe kiſſed her handes, and went in all together to the ſtately Palace. Before which was a faire broade court, ſet round about with high Cypres trees, and placed in good order, and interpaued all ouer with Lozanges of Allablaſter and blacke Marble in manner of checkey worke. In the mids whereof ſtood a fountaine of Iaſpar Marble, ſet vpon fower great braſen Lions. And in the mids of the fountaine a Iaſpar piller, about the which fower Nymphes (moſt liuely made out of white Marble) had their places. They reached vp their armes on high, and in their handes held ſeuerall veſſels after the Antique Roman manner, out of the which from certaine Lions mouthes, that were painted in them, they powred Criſtalline water: The portall of the Palace was of poliſhed Marble, with all the baſes and chaptres of the pillers gilded, as likewiſe the garments of the imagerie that was ſet in it. All the houſe ſeemed to be made of ſhining Iaſpar, with ſtatues and figures of many Roman Emperours and

matrones

matrones therein engrauen, and with other like antiquities. All the windowes were double leafed a peece, and the ſprings and bars belonging to them of bright ſiluer, and all the gates of ſtately Cedar. The houſe was quadrant, and at euery Canton was reared vp a high and artificiall tower. Comming to the portall, they ſtaied a little to behold the ſtrange workmanſhip and the imagerie that was ſo liuely grauen in it, that it ſeemed rather a naturall then artificiall worke, or wrought by humane induſtrie, wherein were two Nymphes of maſſie ſiluer that ſtood on the tops of two pillers, and helde vp betweene them a poliſhed table of ſmooth Ieat with golden letters grauen in it, that ſaide thus.

WEll let her life that enters heere be waighed,
And if ſhe hath not chaſtitie eſtranged,
And ſhe that loues, or Loues lawes hath eſſaied,
If for anothers loue ſhe hath not changed:
And if from former faith ſhe hath not ſtraied,
And kept her firſt true loue, and hath not ranged:
May enter heere into Dianas *temple,*
Whoſe ſoueraigne grace to ſuch appeeres moſt gentle.

When faire *Feliſmena* heard this, ſhe ſaide to the Shepherdeſſes *Beliſa* and *Seluagia*, I thinke we may ſafely enter into this ſumptuous Palace, without breach of the lawes, that this table doth depaint vnto vs. *Syrenus* anſwering to that, ſaide. But faire *Diana* coulde not doe ſo, bicauſe ſhe hath not onely gone againſt them, but againſt all, that good and honeſt loue commaunds to be obſerued. Be not angrie with her Shepherd (ſaide *Felicia,*) for before many daies hence thou ſhalt wonder that thou wert ſo much angrie, and laugh at this harde opinion thou hadſt of her. And ſo handes in handes they went into the ſage *Felicias* chamber, which was richly hanged with cloth of golde and tiſſue of ineſtimable value. And by and by (after they were come in) ſupper was made ready, where fine white clothes being ſpred on the tables, and furniſhed with daintie cates, euery one was placed in order: *Feliſmena* was ſet next to the ſage Lady *Felicia*, and the Nymphes tooke the Shepherdes and Shepherdeſſes betweene them, whoſe talke at the boord was full of modeſt mirth and delight. There were the rich tables of Cedar, and ſtooles framed out of Iuorie, with cuſhions of fine needle worke wrought with golde and ſiluer, many cups, goblets, and glaſſes of diuers formes and mettals, were common there, and all of no ſmall price, ſome of them artificially made of ſtrange glaſſe, others of fine Criſtall, with the feete and handles of pure golde; others, all of golde and ſiluer moſt richly garniſhed with precious ſtones of ineſtimate value. They were ſerued with ſuch plentie of ſundrie daintie diſhes, as is almoſt impoſſible in order to ſet downe. After that ſupper was ended, three Nymphes came into the hall, one of them playing on a Harpe, another on a Lute, and the third on a baſe Vial de gamba, but with ſuch ſweeteneſſe and melodie, that they that were preſent, were (as it were) enchaunted and rauiſhed with it. They placed themſelues in one ſide of the hall, and the Shepherdes and Shepherdeſſes (being louingly requeſted by the three Nymphes, and by ſage *Felicia*) placed themſelues right ouer againſt them on the other ſide, with their Rebeckes and a Bagpipe, whereon *Seluagia* ſweetely plaied. And then the Nymphes began to ſing this ſong, and the Shepherdes to anſwere them in manner following.

The Nymphes.

THe authours of ſubiections
Fortune and Loue, and of moſt peeuiſh faſhions,
Aboue the moone affections
Doe place, and hard reiections,
And in the ſame extremeſt paines and paſſions.

The Shepherdes.

Leſſe may he vaunt and boaſt
For ioy, whom Loue did neuer yet moleſt,
Then he, that loueth moſt,
And fauours euer loſt,
Since they that ſuffer more are euer beſt.

The Nymphes.

If Loues extremes releeue you,
And did not gainſay reaſon, as we view them,
Perhaps we would beleeue you:
But ſeeing how they greeue you,
Happy are we that can ſo well eſchew them.

The Shepherdes.

The hardeſt things the ſtoute
And valiant perſons euer take in hand:
And that of greateſt doubt
Braue courage brings about,
For t'is no honour ſmall things to withſtande.

The Nymphes.

The Louer well doth ſee,
To fight it out, it is not Loues intent
With magnanimitie:
In torments he muſt be
Of thoſe, that ſuffring them are moſt content.

The Shepherdes.

If any ioy we ſought
By any ill of Loue which we obtaine,
It cannot be the thought
Vnto the paſſion brought:
But he's more happy that endures more paine.

The

The Nymphes.

The best estate and fare,
Where he doth see himselfe that loueth best,
Brings nothing els but care:
And yet doth neuer spare
With flames to burne the dame and seruants brest:
And he that's fauour'd most,
Is changed in the twinkling of an eie:
For with disfauours tost,
And in obliuion lost,
It kils his hart and makes his ioyes to die.

The Shepherdes.

To leese a good estate
By falling from it, is a greese and paine:
Blameleſſe is Loue, but fate
It is, and Fortunes hate,
That no exception makes from his disdaine:
Vniust and far vnfit
Is death, if Loue doth say that we shall liue,
If death it promis'd yet,
No fault he doth commit:
For in the ende his promise he doth giue.

The Nymphes.

Fierce Loue they doe excuse,
That finde themselues entangled with his fetter:
And blame those that refuse
Him, but of these to chuse
The blamed mans estate is far the better.

The Shepherdes.

Faire Nymphes, it is denied
The free and bond with one toong to debate,
Liue men and those that died,
The loued, and defied,
All speake according to their owne estate.

Sage *Felicia* and the Shepherdesse *Felismena* gaue attentiue eare vnto the musicke, that the Nymphes and Shepherdes made, and to the sundry opinions, which on both sides they shewed by singing. And *Felicia* smyling on *Felismena*, saide to her in her eare. Who beleeues not (faire Shepherdesse) but that most of these words haue touched thy soule to the quicke? who with a milde and sober grace, answered

her againe. Such were the words good Lady, that whose soule they did not touch, the same should not be touched with such loue as mine is. *Felicia* then lifting vp her voice a little higher, saide vnto her. In these loue matters I note a certaine conclusion, which I finde for the most part true, That the generous minde and delicate witte by many degrees excelleth him in affection, that hath not these gifts. Because as loue is a vertue, and vertue doth euer choose her being in the best place, it is cleere, that persons of valour and dignitie, are more enamoured, and (as they are properly termed) better louers, then those of baser condition and estate. The Shepherds and Shepherdesses hearing what *Felicia* saide, seemed to be somewhat angry in their mindes, which made *Syluanus* to thinke, that her words ought not to escape without an answer, who therefore saide thus vnto her. Wherein good Ladie doth a noble minde and fine witte consist? *Felicia* (who by and by perceiued to what purpose the Shepherd demanded this question, because she woulde not giue him anie occasion of discontent) saide. In no other thing but in the proper and sole vertue of him that loues, as to haue a liuely and quicke witte, a mature and good iudgement, a thought tending to high and stately things, and in other vertues which doe arise and flow from them themselues. I am satisfied saide *Syluanus*, and so are these Shepherdesses, because we imagined (discreete Lady) that you take valour and vertue to be one'y in noble personages. I speake it to this ende, bicause he is but poore in the giftes of nature, that goes to seeke them foorth in those that are gone and past. It pleased not the other Shepherdesse a little to heare what *Syluanus* had saide; and the Nymphes did laugh, to see how the Shepherds did blush at *Felicias* proposition. Who taking *Felismena* by the hand, brought her into a faire chamber, where she lay her selfe all alone: And after she had passed the time with her in many discourses, she put her in great hope of enioying her desire, & the vertuous end of her loue, by hauing *Don Felix* to her husband, albeit she saide, that this could not be done, without passing first some fewe trauels and troubles more: which the Lady made small account of, who in countermaund of them did encourage and comfort her selfe with the guerdon that she hoped to gaine by them. *Felicia* tolde her moreouer, that during her abode in her pallace, she shoulde put off her pastorall habits, vntill the time came, when she was to weare them againe. And therefore calling vnto her the three Nymphes, in whose companie she came, she commanded them to apparell her in such garments, as to her noble and high estate were requisite. The Nymphes were not slow in executing her command, nor *Felismena* disobedient in doing that which *Felicia* thought cōuenient for her. They leading her therefore away by the hand, brought her into an inward chāber, at the one side whereof was a dore, which faire *Doria* opening, they went downe a paire of alablaster staires into a faire hall, in the middest whereof was a cesterne of most cleere water, where all the Nymphes did vse to bathe themselues. Where stripping themselues naked with *Felismena*, they did bathe themselues. And after they had adressed their golden haire, they went vp to one of *Felicias* inward chambers, where the Nymphes hauing apparelled themselues, they did also put these garments on *Felismena*: A faire petticoate of carnation printed satten, the vpper body of shining cloth of gold, of the same colour, and fringed beneath, and garded with a lace of beaten golde and small pearle. A gowne of crymosin veluet, with the sleeues, the bodies and skirts beneath embrodered with knots of seede pearle, and golde which was curiously wrought with needle by artificiall and cunning hande. A kirtle of pure white satten full of embrodered flowers and rare works of siluer, in the

middes

middes whereof did sticke out faire orientall pearles. And tying vp her haire with a carnation ribbon of silke and siluer, they did put thereon a caule of glittering golde, in euery corner whereof a precious Ruby was set, with a naturall crisped periwigge of her owne haire, matching the brightest golde in colour, which adorned either side of her cristalline forehead: wherein were put two iewels curiously enchased with tablet Diamonds and Saphires of infinite value. The border that bound vp her caule, was of chosen flowers of golde, enameled with sundrie liuely colours, and beset betweene with Emeraulds and Rubies, in the middes whereof, iust betweene the two periwigs, hung downe a rich iewell of sparkeling Diamonds vpon her snowe white browe, with three long orientall pearles in forme of acornes, hanging therea-. The attyre of her head was in forme of two little ships made of Emeraulds, with all the shrouds and tackling of cleere Saphyres. About her white necke, they put a little chaine of fine golde, made in manner of a wreathed snake, with an enameled Eagle of golde in her mouth, which helde betweene both her tallons a Rubie of infinite price. When the three Nymphes did see her adorned in this sort, they wondred at her excellent beautie, and then brought her into the hall, where the other Nymphes and Shepherds were. And whereas they did till then knowe her for none other then a Shepherdesse, they remained so astonished, that they knewe not what to saie. *Felicia* commanded her Nymphes after this to carie faire *Felismena* and her company to see the sumptuous and rich temple, which was presently done, the sage Lady betaking her selfe to her solitarie chamber. *Pollydora* therfore and *Cynthia* taking *Felismena* between them, & the other Nymphes the Shepherdes and Shepherdesses, who for their wisedome, and many other good parts were not a little made of, went out into a great court, the arches and pillers whereof were of Iaspar marble, and the bases and chaptres of Allablaster, with many borders and workes cut out after the Romaine manner, gilded in some places very curiously, and wrought all ouer with Moysaical worke: the pillers were supported with Lyons, Ounces and Tygres, so liuely cut of brasse, that they looked as though they would assaile them that came into that place. In the midst of the court was an eight square paterne or Obeliske of shining copper, ten cubits high, vpon the top whereof stoode fierce *Mars* armed at all points after the ancient manner, whom the Gentils called the God of battailes. In this Obeliske with maruellous art and skill were set foorth the proud squadrons of the Romaines on the one side, and the Carthaginian campe on the other side. Before the one ~~one~~ stoode the noble captaine *Hannibal*; and before the other, the inuincible and valiant African *Scipio*, in whom, before he had either age or experience, nature shewed great tokens of valour and magnanimitie. On the other side stoode *Marcus Furius Camillus* the wise and valiant captaine fighting in the high capitoll, to set his countrey at libertie, from whence he had himselfe beene late banished. There stoode *Horatius*, *Mutius Scæuola*, the happie Consull *Marcus Varro*, *Cæsar*, *Pompey* with great *Alexander*, and all they who by warre had atchieued great enterprises, and woone great fame, with scrolles & characters in golde, declaring their names and famous deeds, and in what especiall point euery one of them had shewed himselfe most valiant and couragious. And a little aboue these stoode an inuincible knight armed all ouer, with a naked sworde in his hande, and with manie dead mens heads vnder his feete, with these words ouer his head.

I Am Cid *th' honour of Spaine,*
If that any more could bee
In my workes thou ſhalt ſee.

On the other ſide ſtoode another braue knight armed in like maner, the ſight of his beuer lifted vp with theſe words alſo aboue his head.

Hernand Gonçales *of* Caſtile *I am*
In number the firſt Earle, and endleſſe praiſe,
The Spaniſh *Scepters honor, ſince the ſame*
With my braue deedes ſo highly I did raiſe,
My valour and my manhood golden Fame
Can tell, that ſawe it, wherefore ſhe diſplaies
My high deedes in eternall memorie,
As tels you the Caſtilian hiſtorie.

Next to him ſtoode another knight of great force and courage, as by his face they might well iudge, armed in bright ſiluer, which was ſowen full of Lyons and caſtles, who ſhewed by his countenance a kinde of fiercenes, making them (almoſt) afraide that looked on him; and that which was written aboue him was this.

Bernard *of* Carpio *I am,*
The Pagans terror, and their ſmart:
An honour to the Chriſtian name,
Since that my handes aduaunc't the ſame
By valour of my ſtouteſt hart:
Fame, iuſt it is not thou conceale
My matchleſſe deedes from tender yeeres,
But nothing if thou wilt reueale,
To Ronçes-Vales *I appeale,*
That ſometimes was of the twelue Peeres.

On the other ſide ſtoode a valiant captaine in gilded armour, with ſixe bendes gueles in the middes of his ſhielde, and on the other ſide on him many enfolded Auncients, and a captiue king in a chaine, whoſe ſuperſcription ſaid thus.

My greateſt valours they ſhall ſee,
Which knewe them not, whereby againe
I onely haue deſeru'd to bee
Surnamed (The great Capitaine)
And in ſtrange landes, and in our owne
I purchaſed ſo great a fame,
That my exploites are held and knowne
To be far greater then my name.

Next to this ſtout captaine ſtoode a knight all in ſiluer armour, ſowen full of ſtarres, and of the other ſide on him a king with three *Fleure de Lyſes Or* in his ſhielde Azure, before whom he tare certaine papers; the ſuperſcription aboue him was this.

I am

I am Fonseca *whose braue historie*
Europe doth knowe, and doth so much commend,
(Whose life though ended) yet my memorie
Enroll'd by liuing fame shall neuer end.
My soueraigne King I serued, and did beare
My countrey loue, and not in fained showe,
I neuer did leaue of for seruile feare
To keepe that holy lawe, which euery where
The seruant doth vnto his master owe.

In another quadrant of the Obeliske stoode an armed knight, his armour sowen full of little golden shieldes, who by the valour of his personage seemed to be descended from some noble and high blood: casting his eies amongst manie other Lords and knights of his ancient lynage, the subscription beneath his feete was this.

Don Luys *of* Villanoua *I am named,*
And from the great Marquesse of Tranz *descended,*
My valour and renowne (with praise proclamed
In Italie, Fraunce, Spaine) is far extended.
Bicorb, *an ancient house my state is framed,*
That fortune to a hart hath now commended
So high, sans peere, and that so much surmounteth,
As to commaund a world, it smally counteth.

After they had particularly behelde the paterne, and all the knights and valiant champions placed in it, they went into a rich hall, the seeling whereof was all of yuorie, woonderfully wrought and carued, the wals of allablaster, and many ancient histories so liuely cut out and grauen in them, that one would verily haue thought, that *Lucretia* killed her selfe indeede, and subtill *Medea* vndid her webbe in the Iland of Ithaca; and that the famous Romaine Lady yeelded to the fatall sister, bicause she would not offende her honour with the sight of the horrible monster; and that the louing wife of *Mausolus* was making great lamentation, thinking to what end the sepulcher of her husband was counted for one of the seuen wonders of the world: And many other histories and examples of chaste Ladies worthie to be eternized with immortall fame thorow out the whole world, bicause it seemed not sufficient ynough for some of them, to giue manifest examples by their vnspotted life, but for others, by their vntimely and cruell death great testimonie of their pure and vndefiled thoughts, amongst the which the Spanish *Coronella* was one, who did rather commit her body to consuming flames, then suffer her chaste minde to be ouercome with the motion and delight of a dishonest thought. After they had viewed all the figures well, and the varietie of the histories round about the wals of the hall, they went into another square court, which for the riches thereof, seemed to their iudgements so much to excell all that they had seene, as the substance doth the shadowe; for all the wals of it were couered ouer with fine golde, and the pauements of precious stones. Round about this Quadrant stood the figures of many Ladies of Spaine, and of other nations, and aboue them all, the Goddesse *Diana* curiously cut out of mettall of Corynth, with short garmentes like a hunter, adorned with much pearle and precious stones of great value, who had her bowe

in

in her hande, and her golden quiuer hanging downe by her ſide, enuironed rounde about with a troupe of Nymphes fairer then *Titan* in his cheefeſt glorie. The Shepherdes and the Shepherdeſſes were ſo amazed at the ſight of theſe things, that they knew not what to ſay, bicauſe the riches of the houſe were ſo infinite, the figures ſo liuely, the workmanſhip of the Quadrant ſo excellent, and the proportion of the Ladies that were retracted there, with ſo great art, that they thought it impoſſible to imagine a more perfect and abſolute, or a more ſumptuous building in the whole world then that was. On the one ſide of the Quadrant ſtood fower Laurell trees of gold, ſo brauely enameled with greene leaues, that in gardens there were none more freſh or liuely, and neere to them a little fountaine made all of beaten ſiluer, in the middes whereof was likewiſe a Nymph of beaten gold, which at her faire breaſtes thorow nybles of Rubies ſpouted out water cleerer then Criſtall: and neere to this fountaine did *Orpheus* the famous muſition ſit, enchaunted with the age that he was in, when his *Euridice* was requeſted of importunate *Ariſteus*: He had on a cote of cloth of ſiluer, interſeamed and imbrodered with flowers of ſeede pearle, his ſleeues broad about the ſhoulders, and falling very narrow to his elbowes, from whence his armes came out naked. He had on a paire of hoſe of cloth of ſiluer to the knee, and made after the olde faſhion of Thrace, wrought full of little golden Harpes and Citherens, his golden buſh of haire, which hung downe curled and long, was tied about with a faire Laurell wreath. But when he perceiued the Nymphes comming towardes him, he began moſt ſweetely to touch a fine Harpe, which he had in his handes, with the diuine melodie whereof the ſtrangers were ſo much rauiſhed, that they forgot all that they had ſeene, in reſpect of this new delight. *Feliſmena* ſate her downe vpon a faire lowe bed in the Quadrant, which for the moſt was couered all ouer with purple damaske, finely wrought and fringed with golde, and the Nymphes and Shepherdeſſes about her, the Shepherdes leaning vpon the ſiluer fountaine, In this ſort therefore they were harkening to worthy *Orpheus*, as if he had bin ſinging amongſt the *Cyconians* when *Cypariſſus* was turned into a Cypres tree, and *Atis* into a Pine tree. Enamoured *Orpheus* then began to ſing ſo ſweetely to the tune of his Harpe, that with the heauenly muſicke thereof he ſuſpended their amazed ſenſes. And turning his ſweete face to *Feliſmena*, he began to ſing theſe verſes following.

Orpheus his ſong.

HArke Feliſmena *to the ſweeteſt ſong*
Of Orpheus, *whoſe loue hath bene ſo high,*
Suſpend thy greefe (Seluagia) *ſomewhat long,*
Whilſt now I ſing, that once for loue did die:
Forget (Beliſa) *now thy woefull wrong,*
And to my voice ſweete Nymphes your eares apply:
That loſt his eies, to beauties blaze then turning,
And Shepherdes, ceaſe a while your amorous mourning.

I will not ſpeake (for God forbid the ſame)
Of that moſt heauie proceſſe of mine ils,
Nor when I ſo did ſing, that I did tame
Wilde beaſtes and birdes, and mooued trees and hils:

Nor

Nor when I did ſuſpend th'infernall flame,
Nor when I ſawe Pluto, *nor that, that kids*
My ſoule with greeſe, when I looke backe to ſee,
If that Euridice *did follow me.*

But I will ſing with pure and ſweeteſt voice
Of thoſe perfections, and that grace diſplay,
That wiſedome, wit and beautie of ſuch choice,
Of thoſe who doe illuſtrate Spaine this day.
Then ſee her (Nymphes) whoſe beautie doth reioice
Vs all: her great Diana, *and her gay*
And goodly traine, on whom both Gods and men
Cannot ynough imploy their toongs and pen.

Lift vp your eies this Lady to beholde,
That heere is ſitting in this higheſt chaire,
With ſcepter neere to her and crowne of golde,
And angrie fortune by her on the ſtaire:
This is the ſtar that Spaines light did enfolde,
Whoſe abſence now her glory doth impaire:
Her name is Lady Mary *that hath beene*
Of Hungarie, Boeme, *and of* Auſtrie *Queene.*

The next that ſits to her, is Lady Iane
Princeſſe of Portugall *and of* Caſtille
The Infant, *and from whom fortune had tane*
The crowne and ſcepter by her turning wheele:
And vnto whom death was ſo inhumane,
That in her ſelfe great wonder ſhe doth feele,
To ſee how ſoone ſhe did ſtretch forth her hands
On her, that was the light of Luſitans.

Behold (faire Nymphes) that Lady Mary *great*
And ſoueraigne Infant *of her* Portugall:
Whoſe grace and beautie hath this day a ſeate,
Where humane thought could neuer reach at all:
Behold, though cruell fortune there doth threat:
Her wiſedome yet doth count of her but ſmall:
For time, and death, and deſtinie cannot
Conquere her goodnes, vertues, and her lot.

Thoſe two that are by her on either ſide,
Whoſe beauties Titans *brightneſſe doe offend:*
Their ſleeues of gold, their gownes of damaſke tide
With pearle, and where faire Emerauldes depend:
Their curled golden lockes, wauing ſo wide
Vpon their ſhoulders, looſe that doe deſcend:
*Daughters they are of th'*Infant Luſitane:
Duarta *the valiant, and great* Criſtiane.

Thoſe

Thoſe two great Dutcheſſes of worthy fame,
For beauties prize in either of our Spaines
Which there you ſee to life ſet out in frame,
With grace, and features, that all others ſtaines
Of Seſſa and Najare each hath her name:
Whoſe companie Diana not diſdaines
For their exceeding beautie, and deſartes,
Diſcretion, wiſedome, and all other partes.

Behold a golden Phœnix all alone:
A rare perfection neuer ſeene before,
Wiſedome, as like was not in any one,
Beautie, and grace, where neuer could be more.
She that puls fortune from her vaunting throne,
And hath her ſubiect to her will and lore:
Great Lady Leonore Manuell hath to name,
The Luſitane light that doth the world inflame.

The Lady Luiſe Carillo, that in Spaine
Hath made Mendoças blood of ſuch renowne:
Whoſe beautie, and braue grace hath in a chaine
Cupid himſelfe, for loue of her caſt downe:
She's waiting ſtill vpon our Goddeſſe traine:
For chaſtitie worthie to weare a crowne.
Of faire and honeſt an example heere,
And of them all a mirrour bright and cleere.

Behold a ſweete perfection and a rare,
Of her, whom fame her ſelfe doth greatly feare:
Behold a paſſing beautie, ſans compare,
Founded in grace and wiſedome euery where:
That both with reaſon binde to loue and care.
For in her doth the beſt part beautie beare.
Lady Eufraſe of Guzman is her name,
Worthy to be eternized with fame.

That matchleſſe beautie ſweete and peregrine,
Not ſeene in any, but in her alone,
Which euery wit and ſoule doth ſo refine
With holy loue, as like was neuer none:
Apparelled with Crimſon, that doth ſhine
With flowres of gold, and pearle that there are ſowne.
The Lady Mary Aragon her name:
The world doth know, and heauen doth knowe the ſame.

Her doe you knowe to whome Diane her face
Doth turne, and points her to vs with her hand,
Who matcheth her in wiſedome and in grace,

And

And equall is with others in this land
In wit, and hath in beautie highest place:
Apt to conduct and leade a martiall band.
T'is Lady Isabell Mauriq *of* Padille,
Who Mars *doth conquer and with wonder fill.*

The Ladies Mary Manuell *and* Ione
Osorius, *are those two, which you doe see,*
Whose grace, and beautie, as the like not knowne,
Euen Loue himselfe with loue doth wound and slee.
And this our Goddesse doth not ioy alone,
To see two such with her, but also wee.
Since then no toong their worthinesse may praise,
Reason, and fame to heauen the same shall raise.

And those two sisters of such worthy name,
Either of them a second neuer had.
Their grace, and beautie fils the world with fame:
This day their golden beames doth each one glad:
Me thinkes I see them in their perfect frame,
To which more beautie nature could not adde.
The Lady Bettrice Sarmient *is one,*
With Castro *her faire sister so well knowne.*

That cleerest sunne, which heere you see doth shine,
And heere and there her golden beames doth cast,
She, that doth laugh at louers that doe pine
In loue, and at the teares, that they doe wast,
And at Loues powre: whose countenance diuine
Saies more then I, though praising her so fast,
T'is Lady Iane Carate, *in whom we see*
Surpassing grace and beauties praise to bee.

The Lady Anne Osorius, *that braue dame,*
And Castro *next to her possesse their place,*
For peereleslesse beautie honoured with fame,
For goodly giftes, for modestie, and grace:
But her hard hap (alas) was much to blame,
So cruelly her glory to deface:
Because her fortune equall might not bee
Vnto her wisedome, beautie, and degree.

That matchlesse beautie that's adorned so
With honestie, and grace so soueraine,
Which was with reason chosen to bestowe
Her honour in the Temple of Diana,
Not conquer'd, but still conqu'ring high and lowe:
Her name (O Nymphes) is Lady Iuliana,

Neece to that greatest Duke and Conestable,
Speake fame of her, for I am far vnable.

Behold the beautie (on the other part)
Of many faire and braue Valencian Dames,
Whom with my pen, but more yet with my hart,
I will procure to celebrate their names?
Heere Fount of Helicone, vouchsafe thy art,
And heere Minerua helpe me in these blames;
To tell what those braue Ladies be, whose sight
Onely to them all eies and harts inuite.

See heere fowre blasing stars that brightly shine,
Of whom Fame brutes their name in euery ground,
That from three famous kingdomes drawe their line,
And from Cardonas ancient house come downe,
On th'one side Dukes most excellent decline,
And from the other scepter, throne, and crowne:
Daughters vnto Sogorbe, whose golden fame
From Atlas vnto Maurus soundes their name.

The light of all the world, the flowre of Spaine,
The end of perfect beautie, and of grace,
A royall hart, that euer doth maintaine
Valour, and bountie, in a vertuous race:
That looke so modest, and so sweete againe,
Adorned with so faire and milde a face,
Giues Lady Anne of Aragon such fame,
That Loue himselfe is captiue to her name.

Her sister Lady Bettrice, that you see,
Is next (if that you can behold such light)
Whom none can praise, for this is onely shee,
Whom none can praise according to her right:
That Painter that did make her, so must bee
Her praiser, and her giftes he must recite:
For where all humane wit cannot attaine,
My poore conceite doth labour there in vaine.

The Lady Frances of great Aragon
Shew you I would, but she is alwaies hid:
Her sweetest beauties leaues not any one
With life, for so her starlike eies forbid
Our mortall sight to viewe the same alone:
In life and death, her vertues euer did
Subiect each hart to loue, and admiration:
As fame can tell in euery forrain nation.

Now Lady Magdalene you may reueale,
Sister vnto those three which I haue showne,
Behold her well, and see how she doth steale
Her gazers harts, and subiect liues to none.
Her peereleſſe beautie threats, and in a chaine
Leades little Cupid, turn'd into a stone:
None see her, but they die, and none there ar
But she doth conquer without armes or war.

Those two bright stars, that heere and there doe vaunt
Their shining beames, that dim the starrie skie,
And making th' illustrous house of Gaunt
In all the world with high renowne to flie.
This day their wisedome, and their beauties daunt
Each humane thought, and euery mortall eie.
For who sees Magdeline and Marguerite,
That doth not die (for loue) at such a sight?

But will you see the thing, that hath vndone
All wits, and made them all to wonder so?
Behold a Nymph more faire then orient sunne,
Or louely rose, or lilly hard by Po;
This Phœnix name, that through the world doth runne,
Is Lady Caterine Milane, for so
Valencia cals her, and the world doth say,
She is as faire, and wise, as liues this day.

Lift vp your eies (faire Nymphes) and now behold
The Lady Mary Pexon çannoguere,
How by the riuer banks her locks of gold
She kembes, adorning of her shining heare,
Whose beautie, wisedome, and braue giftes are told
For rarest in our Europe euery wheare.
Behold her eies, her faire and Cristalline face,
Her sweete demeanour and her heauenly grace.

Those two behold, the rest that doe excell
In perfect wisedome, and in quicke conceate:
And for braue beautie beare away the bell,
A paire sans peere, whose starlike eies doe threate
Despaire and death, to those that view them well:
For there sits Cupid in his proper seate.
Their blessed names doe with their nature fit,
Faire Bettrice Vigue and Bettrice Fenollir.

What time Diana went to sport and play,
With her most soueraine face, and more diuine,
A morning star arose in moneth of May,

Like to that Star, that neere the Moone doth ſhine:
Which when she ſawe ſo glorious euery way,
A famous place to her, ſhe did aſſigne:
Her beauties tell you, if her name you ſeeke,
That ſhe's the peereleſſe Lady Anna Vigue.

Faire Nymphes, behold the Lady Theodore
Carroz, *that is great Lady and the Queene*
Of ſuch braue beautie, neuer ſeene before,
Wiſedome, and grace, as like was neuer ſeene:
Each thing of hers enamours more and more.
The braueſt mens deſerts haue neuer beene
Such, as they durſt attempt, or euer ſought,
By them to place in her an amorous thought.

See (Shepherdes) Lady Angelas *braue grace,*
Of Borja, *looking on* Diana *bright;*
And how to her the Goddeſſe turnes her face,
To view thoſe eies, that all eies doe inuite,
And mightie Loue himſelfe weeping apace,
And how the Nymph derides his conquer'd might:
And laughes to ſee the cruell Tyrant lying,
Wrapped in chaines, to her for mercy crying.

Of that moſt famous ſtocke of çannoguere
A flowre ſprung out, ſo perfect and ſo pure,
That liuing yet but yong, ſhe neede not feare
Any that may her beauties blaze obſcure:
Her mothers heire ſhe is, for ſhe doth beare
The praiſe, which ſhe did with her giftes procure.
So hath Lady Hieronyma, *you ſee,*
In grace, and wit obtain'd the high'ſt degree.

Now in a wonder (Nimphes) will you remaine?
And ſee what fortune gaue to her alone,
How wiſedome, beautie, and the goodly traine
Of vertues, make in her the chiefeſt throne?
Lady Veronica Marrades *ſee againe,*
For onely by her figure it is knowne
That ſhe hath all, and nothing wants to ſerue her,
Vnleſſe it be, that none can well deſerue her.

The Lady Luiſe Penaroje *we ſee*
Inmore then humane beautie and in grace,
In euery thing moſt excellent is ſhee;
All beauties els ſhe ſtaines, and gaines apace.
Loue dies for her, and he will not agree,
That any ſhould behold ſo ſweete a face:

Who sees it dies, vnlesse he see it againe,
And seene it, then his sight augments his paine.

Now see I (Nymphes) that you are seeing her,
On whom my thoughts continually deuise;
And yours perforce from her can neuer stirre,
Cupid she robs, and in her loue he dies:
See how her beauties make the world to erre?
See, but beware such light blinde not your eies.
The Lady Iane Cardona, *that faire star,*
It is to whom loues powres subiected ar.

That beautie, which exceedeth humane thought,
Which you doe see, if that you can behold it,
She, whose estate was blest, esteeming nought
Of fortune, time, or chaunce, that could enfold it.
She, to the world that such rare giftes hath brought:
She that's my Muse, and Parnasus, *vntold yet,*
Lady Ione Anne *of* Catalane, *The end*
She is of all, that e're I did commend.

Neere vnto her there is a great extreme
In purest vertue, high and sublimate,
In comely grace, the fairest in this Realme,
Her golden haire, her necke most delicate;
Each gracious eie a firie pointed beame,
A noble wit, and name of heauens estate:
The Lady Angela Fernando *named:*
Whom nature to her name like gifts hath framed.

Next to her sits the Lady Marian,
Who hath not in the world her paragon,
Neere to her sister, fairer then the swan
In cristall streames, or fine Vermillion.
Proud is our age of both of them, that can
In tender yeeres haue no comparison
For wisedome; for so much they may presume,
As thousand toongs can tell, or golden plume.

The two fine sisters Borjas *which you see,*
Hyppolita *and* Isabell *so faire,*
With grace and giftes, that so adorned lee,
That Phebus *brightest beames they doe impaire.*
And see how many liues that once were free,
Their beauties conquers (Cupids *onely snare)*
Behold their haire, their countenance, and eies,
This gold, that sweete, and those like starres in skies.

Behold the Lady Mary Cannoguere,
Who now is Lady of faire Cataraſſe,
Whoſe beautie, and ſweete grace doth euery where
Conquer each hart with vnrepaired loſſe:
Fame on her wings th'row-out the world doth beare
Her vertues rare, that ſhine like gold to droſſe.
Since each one then that ſees her, muſt commend her,
Who then can praiſe her well, and not offend her?

The Lady Iſabell Borja *here doth ſtand*
Perfect and abſolute in euery thing:
Behold her face, her fine and dainty hand,
Ouer whoſe head the nightingales doe ſing.
Our age ſhe honours, and th' Hiberian *land:*
Of grace, and vertue ſhe's the onely ſpring:
And thoſe, to whom nature did beautie giue,
She ſtaines, as faireſt that did euer liue.

She, that her haire hath hanging downe, and ſtred
Abroad, and tide with golden thred behinde:
And that faire face, that hath ſo often led
So many harts to bondage of the minde:
Her Iuorie necke, her eies in beautie bred,
Faire, modeſt, gray, not looking out of kinde:
Her famous name is Lady Iuliana,
That honours beere the Temple of Diana.

She, whom you there doe ſee, whom nature made
So curiouſly, as neuer like before,
Since that her beautie neuer ſeem'd to fade,
Nor that a faire one can deſire more:
Whoſe great deſerts, and wit, doth ſtill perſwade
Fame, to the world her praiſes to reſtore:
Is called Lady Mencia Fenollit,
To whom Loue yeelds himſelfe and doth ſubmit.

The ſong of renowned *Orpheus* was ſo pleaſant in *Feliſmenas* eares, and in all theirs, that heard it, that it held them in ſuch a ſuſpence, as if they had paſſed by no other thing but that, which they had before their eies. Who now hauing particularly viewed the rich chamber of eſtate with euery thing in it that was woorth the ſeeing (as all was) the Nymphes went ſoorth by a certaine dore into the great hall, and by an other out of the hall into a faire garden, the beautie whereof ſtroke no leſſe admiration into their mindes, then the ſtrange things which they had ſeene before: for amongſt the fruitfull trees, and ſweete flowers, were many ſepulchers and tombes erected of diuers Nymphes and Ladies, which with great puritie had kept their chaſtitie (due to the Goddeſſe thereof) inuiolate and vnſtained. Some of the tombes were adorned with coronets of knottie Iuie; others with chapplets of ſweete Myrtles; and ſome with garlands of greene Laurell. There were alſo manie

Allablaſter

Allablaſter fountaines in the garden, ſome of Iaſpar marble, & ſome of other mettall ſeated vnder vines, which with artificiall arches and wreathes aloft did ſpred foorth their branches depreſſed with cluſters of coloured grapes. The Myrrhe trees grew in manner of fower walles, with embattlements and pinnacles on the tops of them, and on the ſides aboue them were certaine Terraſſes and walkes, reared vp, whereon (as ouer all the garden beſides) did growe many ſweete flowers of ſundry colours, as white Ieſmins, Woodbyne, and many more delightfull to the inſatiable eie. In the middes of the garden ſtoode a leat-ſtone vpon fower brazen pillers, and in the mids of it a tombe framed out of Iaſpar, which fower Nymphes that were wrought out of white Allablaſter did hold vp with their handes, and about it ſtoode manie Tapers of Virgine waxe burning in maſſie candleſtickes of bright ſiluer, that were made in artificiall manner. About this tombe ſtoode certaine Lordes and Knights, ſome faſhioned out of ſtone, and mettall, other ſom out of Iaſpar marble, and other matter. Which figures ſhewed ſuch great ſorrow by their countenances, that they filled *Feliſmenas* hart, and all theirs that were looking on the tombe, with no leſſe greefe, then admiration. But viewing it narrowly, they ſawe in a table of ſhining golde, which at the foote of the ſepulchre, a dead and pale matrone held betweene her hands, this Epitaphe ſubſcribed.

HEere Lady Katherine *entombed lies,*
Of Aragon and Sarmient, whoſe fame
Doth mount with praiſe vnto the loftie skies:
And ſounds from North to South, her woorthy name.
Death kil'd her, to reuenge the ſacrifice
Of thoſe ſhe killed, when ſhe was a dame:
Her body's heere, her ſoule in heauen with pleaſure:
The world vnwoorthy to poſſeſſe ſuch treaſure.

After they had read this Epitaphe, they ſawe an Eagle of blacke marble, with diſplaied wings on the top of the tombe, with a golden table betweene her tallons, with theſe verſes in it.

EVen as (O death) the Planets ſhould remaine
Without Apollo *and* Diana *bright,*
The ground without mankinde, and beaſts againe,
The Marriner without the North-ſtarre light;
The fielde without faire flowers, graſſe, or graine,
The mornings ſhowe without the dewe of night:
Vertue and beautie ſo remaine and die
Without the dame that in this tombe doth lie.

When they had read both theſe Epitaphs, and *Beliſa* had vnderſtoode by them what the Nymph was, that was buried therein, and how much Spaine loſt by leeſing her, calling therewithall to minde the vntimely death of her deere *Arſileus*, ſhe could not, but with teares breath out theſe ſorrowfull wordes. O death, how far am I from thinking, that thou maieſt comfort me with other womens harmes? The ſmall time, that the world enioyed the great beautie and wiſedome, wherewith they tell me this Nymph was endowed, doth not a little greeue me, bicauſe as ſhe was

not

not her-selfe in loue, so did not any deserue, she should be so. For had she beene, I would then account her for so happie a woman by dying, as my selfe vnfortunate, by seeing how small reckoning thou makest of me (cruell death) since taking from me all my good, and the onely ioy of my life, thou dost not leaue me heere, but onely to feele the neuer-ceasing paine of this heauie want. O my *Arsileus*, O rare wisedome in such yoong yeeres? O the most faithfull louer that euer was, and the finest wit that the heauens could euer infuse into so braue an ornament of nature. What eies may without inundations of teares behold thy sorrowfull absence? And what hard hart suffer thy vntimely and disastrous end? O *Arsenius*, *Arsenius*, how smal a time wert thou vnable to endure the violent death of thy vnfortunate sonne, hauing more occasion to suffer it, then my selfe? Why didst thou make me (cruell *Arsenius*) participate of two deathes? Of both which to preuent the least that did greeue me, I would haue giuen a thousand liues. Farewell (happie Nymphe) the light and honour of the royall house of Aragon: God giue thy soule eternall glory, and deliuer mine from so many woes and afflictions, wherinto it is so deepely sunke. After that *Belisa* had spoken these wordes, and after they had seene many tombes more, very richly erected, they went out by a backe dore in the garden, into a greene meadowe, where they found the sage Ladie *Felicia* recreating her-selfe alone, and walking vp and downe, who seeing them comming towards her, receiued them all with a ioyfull countenance. And whilest it was time to go to supper, they went to a pleasant walke in a groue of Sicamours harde by, where the Nymphes of the sumptuous temple were woont many times to go and disport themselues: where sitting downe in a little plat of greene grasse, that was encompassed round about with leauie Sicamours, they began to discourse one with another of that, which did best please their fancies. The Lady *Felicia* called the Shepheard *Syrenus*, and *Felismena* to her. The Nymph *Doria* sat her downe with *Syluanus* in one place of the greene meadowe, and the Shepherdesses *Seluagia* and *Belisa* went by themselues, with the most beautifull Nymphes *Cynthia* and *Polydora* into another, so that (though they were not farre asunder) yet they might talke togither well enough, and not trouble one another. But *Syrenus* desiring that their talke and conuersation might be conformable to the time, place, and person with whom he talked, began to saie in this manner. I thinke it not (sage Lady) much beyond the purpose, to demand a certaine question, to the perfect knowledge whereof, as I could neuer yet attaine; so do I not meanely desire by your Ladiships wisedome to be resolued therein: and this it is. They do all affirme (that would seeme to know something) *That true Loue doth spring of reason*: which if it be so, what is the reason, that there is not a more timerous and vnruly thing in the worlde then loue, and which is lest of all gouerned by it? As this Question (answered *Felicia*) is more then a simple Shepherdes conceite, so is it necessarie, that she that must answer it, ought to haue more then a sillie womans wit: But to satisfie thy minde with that little skill I haue, I am of a contrarie opinion, affirming that Loue, though it hath Reason for his mother, is not therefore limited or gouerned by it. But it is rather to be supposed, that after reason of knowledge and vnderstanding hath engendred it, it will suffer it selfe to be gouerned but fewe times by it. And it is so vnruly, that it resultes oftentimes to the hurt and preiudice of the louer: since true louers for the most part fall to hate and neglect themselues, which is not onely contrarie to reason, but also to the lawe of nature. And this is the cause why they paint him blinde, and void of all reason. And as his mother *Venus* hath most faire eies, so doth he also desire the faireſt. They

paint

paint him naked, becauſe good loue can neither be diſſembled with reaſon, nor hidden with prudence. They paint him with wings, becauſe he ſwiftly enters into the louers ſoule: and the more perfect he is, with more ſwiftnes and alienation of himſelfe, he goeth to ſeeke the perſon of the beloued, for which cauſe *Euripides* ſaide; That the louer did liue in the body of the beloued. They paint him alſo ſhooting his arrowes out of his bowe, becauſe he aymes right at the hart, as at his proper white: And alſo, becauſe the wound of loue is like that, which an arrow or dart maketh, narrow at the entrance, and deepe in his inward ſoule that loueth. This is an inſcrutable, and almoſt incurable wounde, and very ſlowe in healing: So that thou muſt not maruell *Syrenus*, that perfect loue (though it be the ſonne of reaſon) is not gouerned by it, becauſe there is nothing, after it is borne, that doth leſſe conforme it ſelfe to the originall of his birth, then this doth. Some ſaie there is no other difference betweene vertuous and vicious loue, but that the one is gouerned by reaſon, and the other not: but they are deceiued; becauſe exceſſe and force is no leſſe proper to diſhoneſt, then to honeſt loue, which is rather a qualitie incident to euerie kinde of loue, ſauing the one doth make vertue the greater by it, and the other doth the more encreaſe vice. Who can denie, but that in true and honeſt loue exceſſiue and ſtrange effects are oftentimes founde? Aske it of many, who for the onely loue of God made no account of themſelues, and cared not to leeſe their liues for it, although knowing the reward they looked for, did not worke ſo much in their minds. And how many againe (enflamed with the loue of vertue) haue gone about to caſt away themſelues, and to end their liues, to get thereby a glorious and ſuruiuing name? A thing truely, which ordinarie reaſon doth not permit, which doth rather guide euery effect in ſuch ſort, that the life may honeſtly preſerue it ſelfe. But what diuerſitie of examples could I bring thee *(Syrenus)* of many, who onely for the loue of their friendes haue loſt their liues, and euery thing that with life is loſt. But let vs leaue this loue, and come againe to that which nature hath bred betweene man and woman: wherein thou muſt know, that if the loue, which the louer beares to the miſtreſſe of his affections, (although burning in vnbridled deſire) doth ariſe of reaſon, and of true knowledge and iudgement, as by her onely vertues he doth iudge her woorthy to be beloued, That this kinde of loue (in my opinion,) (and yet I am not deceiued) is neither vnlawfull nor diſhoneſt, becauſe all loue being of this qualitie, doth tende to no other end but to loue the perſon beloued for her owne ſake, without hoping for any other guerdon or effect of his true, and ſincere loue. So that this is as much as (me thinkes) may be ſaide in anſwer of thy queſtion, which thou haſt put me. *Syrenus* then ſaide vnto her. I am reſolued (ſage Lady) of that which I deſired to vnderſtande; and alſo beleeue, that by your gracious wiſedome which is great, and bountie which is no leſſe, I ſhall be thorowly inſtructed of whatſoeuer I woulde deſire to know, although ſome finer capacitie then mine were more requiſite to conceiue theſe deepe reaſons, ſo perfectly alledged by your learned aſſertions.

Syluanus, that was talking with *Polydora*, ſaide: It is ſtrange (faire Nymph) to ſee what a ſorrowfull hart (that is ſubiect to the traunces of impatient loue) doth ſuffer, becauſe the leſt ill, that it cauſeth in vs, is the depriuation of our iudgement, the loſſe of our memorie, and the ſurcharging of our imaginations with his onelie obiects, making euery one to alienate himſelfe from himſelfe, and to impropriate himſelfe in the perſon of his beloued. What ſhall that wofull man then do, who ſees himſelfe ſo great an enimie to pleaſure, ſuch a friende to ſolitarines, ſo full of paſſi-

ons,

ons, enuironed with feares, troubled in his ſpirits, martyred in his wits, ſuſtained by hope, wearied with thoughts, afflicted with griefes, haunted with iealouſies, and continually worne with ſobs, ſighes, ſorrowes, and woes, which he neuer wanteth? And that, which makes me more to maruel, is, that the mind doth not procure, (this loue being ſo vntolerable and extreme in crueltie) nor hath any deſire at all to part from it, but doth rather account it her enimie, that giues it any counſell to that effect. All this is true (ſaide *Polydora*) but I know well that Louers for the moſt part haue more words, then paſſions. This is a ſigne (ſaide *Syluanus*) that thou canſt not conceiue them (faire Nymph) becauſe thou canſt not beleeue them, nor that thou haſt beene euer touched with this pleaſing ill. And I wiſh thou maiſt not, the which none can beleeue, nor knowe the multitude of woes proceeding from it, but onlie ſhe that doth participate of his bitter effects. Why? doſt thou thinke (faire Nymph) when the louer that findes himſelfe continually confuſed, his reaſon obſcured, his memorie gone, his fancies and ſences wearied by exceſſiue loue, that his toong can then remaine ſo free, that it may faine paſſions, and ſhew another thing by words, then that he feeles by deedes? Ah deceiue not thy ſelfe with theſe wordes, which I know are cleane contrary to thy thought. Beholde heere am I, in whom there is nothing, that can be gouerned by reaſon, neither can he haue it, that is ſo much without his libertie as I am, becauſe all corporall ſubiections do ſuffer the will (at the leaſt) to be free, but the bondage of loue is ſuch, that the firſt thing it takes in hand, is to conſtraine one, to make a profeſſion of it. And wilt thou Shepherdeſſe then beleeue, that he doth form complaints, & faine ſighes, that ſees himſelfe handled in this ſort? It ſeemes well thou art free frō loue, as I did but euen now tell thee. I know *Syluanus* (ſaide *Polydora* againe) that louers are full of troubles, and afflicted in mind all the while they do not obtaine their deſires. Thou ſpeakeſt in a thing (ſaide *Syluanus*) wherein it ſeemes thou haſt no experience, bicauſe their loue, whoſe paines ceaſe after the accompliſhment of their deſires, proceedeth not from reaſon, but from a baſe and diſhoneſt appetite.

Seluagia, *Beliſa*, and faire *Cynthia* were talking togither, what the reaſon was that in abſence, loue did for the moſt part waxe colde. *Beliſa* coulde not beleeue, that for any thing in the worlde ſhe might entertaine ſuch diſloyaltie in her hart, ſaying: That ſince ſhe did beare her *Arſileus* (being now dead, and too well aſſured neuer to ſee him againe) the ſelfe ſame loue, that ſhe did, when he was aliue, howe much more then was it impoſſible for any other to forget that loue, which one doth hope ſometimes to ſee againe. I cannot anſwer thee *Beliſa* (ſaide the Nymph *Cynthia*) ſo ſufficiently as perhaps this matter doth require, becauſe as it is a thing impertinent to our cōdition, ſo the reſolution thereof is it not expected of a Nymphes witte and profeſſion. But yet this is my opinion, that though one departs from the preſence of her louer, yet the remembrance of him afterwards remaines in her eies, by the preſent occaſions wherof ſhe ſtill ſees the Idea of the thing that ſhe deſireth. The charge and office of this remembrance is to repreſent that to the vnderſtanding, which it conteineth in it, and of thinking of the perſon whom ſhe loueth, commeth will (the thirde power of the ſoule) to engender deſire, by meanes whereof the perſon abſented ſuffereth paine, by not ſeeing that which ſhe loueth well: So that all theſe effects are deriued from the memorie, as from a fountaine, frō whence the beginning of deſire ſpringeth. But you muſt now knowe (faire Shepherdeſſes) that as the memorie is a thing, that the more it encreaſeth, the more it looſeth her ſtrength and vertue, forgetting that which the eies did deliuer and put into it; ſo

likewiſe

likewiſe do the other powers, whoſe workes had their beginning in it, in the verie ſame ſort as riuers ſhould want their ſtreames, if the fountaines from whence they ſpring, did ceaſe to flowe. And as this is vnderſtoode of him that departs, ſo is it likewiſe of her that remaines ſtill. And whereas thou doſt thinke (faire Shepherdeſſe) that time will not cure thy greefe by committing the remedie thereof into my Lady *Felicias* handes, thou art much deceiued, becauſe there is not any, whom ſhe doth not helpe, and louers more then any other kinde of people.

The ſage Lady *Felicia* (though ſhe was ſomewhat from them) heard what *Cynthia* ſaide, and anſwered. It might be thought no ſmall point of crueltie in me, to put the remedie of her greefes (who needes it ſo much) in the hands of ſo ſlowe and tedious a phiſition as time is: For though it be ſometimes a helpe, yet it fals out in the end, that the greateſt malladies (if they haue no other remedies then their own) do laſt ſo long a time, that before they haue an ende, they ende their liues that haue them. And therefore becauſe I meane to bethinke me of that, which toucheth *Feliſmenaes* eaſe, and the remedy of her greefes, and thoſe of all her companie, & that now the beames of golden *Apollo* ſeeme to make an ende of their daies iourney; I thinke it beſt to ſeale vp our diſcourſes, and to go in, becauſe ſupper (I thinke) by this time is ſtaying for vs. And ſo they went into the great Ladies Pallace, where they founde the tables ready furniſhed and ſet vnder an arbour of greene vines, in a pleaſant and freſh garden within the houſe. And ſupper being ended, the ſage Lady praied *Feliſmena* to tell them ſome diſcourſe, were it a hiſtorie, or ſome notable accident, that had befallen in the Prouince of Vandalia? Which *Feliſmena* did not denie: for with a ſober and gentle grace ſhe began to tell this hiſtory following.

IN the time of the Valiant Prince *Don Fernando*, who was afterwards King of Aragon, liued a knight in Spaine called *Rodrigo* of *Naruaez*, whoſe ſingular virtues and approoued manhood were ſo great, that as well in peace, as in war, he got the Sirname of the beſt knight of all thoſe that liued in his time; and where he did eſpecially winne it, when the ſame noble Prince ouercame the power of the *Moores* at the citie of *Antiquera*, ſhewing by his great enterpriſes and martiall feates in this warre, an abſolute minde, an inuincible hart, and a noble kinde of liberalitie, by meanes whereof a good Captaine is not onely beloued, and highly eſteemed of his owne ſouldiers, but alſo of ſtrangers and his chiefeſt enimies: In regarde of which worthie ſeruice, hee was guerdoned after the ſubduing of that countrey (although but meanely in lieu of his high deſertes and excellent deedes) with the regiment of *Antiquera* and *Allora*, where hee ſpent moſt of his time with fiftie choiſe gentlemen at the Kings paie, for defence and garriſon of both thoſe frontier townes. All which by the good gouernment of their Captaine enterpriſed many valiant deedes in defence of the Chriſtian faith, atchieuing them with great honour, and regiſtring their perpetuall fame with notable aduentures done in maintenance of the ſame. Whoſe mindes therefore being ſo great enemies to idlenes, and the exerciſe of armes ſo agreeable to the generous hart of their valiant Gouernour; it fell out that vpon a certaine ſommers night, *Cynthia* inuiting them to take part of the bright & coole aire, *Rodrigo* with nine of his gentlemen (for the reſt remained in garriſon of the towne) armed at all points, went out of *Allora*, to ſurpriſe the Moores which lay on their frontiers, careleſſe (perheps) in their charge and negligent. And emboldened by the priuiledge of the night, they paſſed by certaine waies neere vnto their townes. The valiant Captaine therefore going on with his

gentlemen

gentlemen as secret as he might, and verie carefull not to be discried, came to a way that parted into two, where consulting to diuide themselues into two companies of fiue a peece, and in such sort, that if the one company perceiued themselues to be in any danger, by sounding of a cornet they might be presently aided by the other fiue. The Gouernor and fower of them tooke one way, and the other fiue an other: who riding in seuerall companies together, and talking of diuers matters, euerie one desiring some aduenture to trie his manhood, and to shew himselfe a couragious man at armes, as almost euerie day they were wont to doe, they heard not far from them a mans voice sweetly singing, and now and then breathing out a profound sigh; wherby they coniectured that some amorous passion did trouble his thoughts. The horsmen therefore that heard this, rode into a little wood hard by the way, and because the moone did shine as cleere as day, they might perceiue a *Moore* comming that way they went, so gallant and comely a genteleman, that his personage did well testifie that he was of noble bloud, and singular valour. He came mounted vpon a daple graie horse, and the garments he had on was a horse-mans coate of crimosin damaske, and vpon that a Barberie mantell fringed about with golde, and embrodered all ouer, and edged with many workes of siluer twist. He ware by his side a faire Moresco Cymitarre, with tassels of carnation silke and golde hanging at it; on his head a Tunez Turbant or roll of silke and white cotton, which was listed with golde, and fringes of the same, which being wrapped many times about his head, did serue him for an ornament, and a defence of his person. He carried a great Target on his left arme, and in his right hande a Launce of two punches: and with so goodly grace and countenance came the enamoured *Moore*, that they coulde not wish to see a better sight. But giuing attentiue eare vnto his song, they heard that the dittie (although it was in the Arabicke toong) saide thus.

First in Granada *I was borne,*
In Cartama *brought vp and bred,*
To Allora *fronter, which I scorne,*
And in Coyn *enamoured.*

Though in Granada *I was borne,*
And brought vp in Cartama *braue;*
My faith in Coyn *I haue sworne,*
And there my libertie I gaue.
There doe I liue, where I doe die,
And where my care is thither led
To Allora *Fronter am I,*
And in Coyn *enamoured.*

The fiue horsemen, who had perhaps but small experience in amorous passions, or whether they had or no, regarding more the interest, which so braue an aduenture did promise them, then the song of the enamoured *Moore*, issued out of the woode, and ranne with great violence vpon him. But the valiant *More*, who in like assaultes was a tried champion (though loue at that time was Lorde of his thoughtes) was not a whit dismaied, but couching his launce in rest, with woonderfull courage began to skirmish with them all, whom he made immediately knowe, that he was no lesse valiant then amorous. Some say, they set vpon him by one and one, but they that haue sought out the truth of this historie, affirme, that they ranne all vpon him at once, which is most like they did so, to take him

him prisoner, but when they sawe him begin to defende himselfe, that then perhaps the other fower did stande by, whileſt one of them did fight with him alone. But howsoeuer it was, he droue them to such a narrowe streight, that casting three of thē to the ground, the other two very fiercely set vpon him, who needed not to vse their ordinarie strength against so valiant an aduersarie; for though he was wounded in one of his thighes, yet his strength and courage was not of such a temper, that mortall wounds could daunt his minde, nor make him leaue of that, which so highly touched his honour. But hauing by chance let fall his launce, he put spurs to his horse making a shewe of flight, whom the two Christians pursued at his verie heeles, which when he perceiued, he turned backe against them both, and passing thorow them like a furious and swift lightning, came to the place where one of the three laie, which he had vnhorsed, where stooping downe from his horse to take vp his launce that lay by him, he mounted nymbly into the saddle againe: which one of the two horsemen seeing, and thinking they were not able to make their partie good, he sounded his Cornet; but the *Moore* in the meane time so fiercely assailed them, that if the valiant Gouernour had not come, they had kept company with their other three companions, that lay hurt on the ground. But when the gouernour was come, and sawe how valiantly the *Moore* did fight, he made great account of him in his minde, and hauing an eagre desire in single combat to prooue his manhoode with him, he saide vnto him. Such is thy noble valour and rare strength (braue knight) that by ouercomming thee, there cannot be but great honor and glorie got; which singular fauour if gentle Fortune would but grant me, I could not (by my life) requeſt any other at her handes. Wherein though I put my person in no small danger, by offring him the combat, that can so brauely defende himselfe, yet for a worlde I will not leaue it, when by so braue an enterprise, and howsoeuer I speede, I cannot chuse but winne great honor and renowne. And saying this, he badde his men stande aside, appointing the conquered the prise of the victorie. When they were both asunder, a hot fight began betweene these valiant men at armes. The magnanimious *Naruaez* desired the victorie, because the valour of the braue *Moore* encreased the glorie, that he hoped to get by it: And the stout *Moore*, to no other ende but to attaine to the effect of his hope and desire. And so they belaied about them, passing actiue and nimble in lending blowes, and so hardie in assaylīg each others person, that had it not beene for the former wearines, and wound that the *Moore* had, (who by this time grewe somewhat faint by leesing his blood) with great difficultie had the Gouenour got the happie victorie. But these impediments, and being not able to manage his horse any longer, did promise it *Naruaez* cleerely; and not bicause he knew there wanted one iot of courage or valour in the *Moore*, who (when he sawe that in this single combat his life was in hazard, which he woulde haue willingly changed for the contentment, which Fortune did then deny him) he r'enforced himselfe with all his might, & standing vpright in his styrrops, gaue the Gouenour a dangerous thrust, which he receiued vpon his target, who was not slacke in answering him with another vpon the right arme, and trusting to his strength, if the matter came to handie gripes, at last he ranne in, and closed with him, and with such force shaked him, that casting him out of his saddle, he also fell with him to the ground, saying. Yeeld thy selfe knight, if thou makest any account of thy life, which is now in my hands. It is in thy hands (said the *Moore*) to kil me as thou saist, but fortune shal neuer do me such despite, to make me ouercommed by any, but onely by whom I haue long since suffered my self

to be conquered. And this onely content doth remaine to me of my prison, where-vnto my misfortune hath now brought me. The Gouernour did not then marke the *Moore* his words so much, nor to what end he spake them, but vsing the mercy that the valiant conquerour is woont to vse to the forlorne man of Fortune, he helped him to rise vp, and to binde vp his woundes, which were not so great, but that he might get vpon his horse, and so all of them with their prisoner tooke the next way home to *Alora*. The Gouernour as he rode, did continually cast an eie vpon the *Moore* whom he thought with himselfe, a goodly man of person, and gracious of visage, remembring therewithall, howe stoutly he had defended himselfe; but thought his sadnes too great for so braue a minde as he carried; and because he intermixed his sorrow with sighes, which were tokens of greater greefe, then could be imagined in so braue a man, and also desirous to knowe more of the matter, he said vnto him. Behold Sir knight, how the prisoner that leeseth his hart & magnanimitie for feare of imprisonment, doth hazard the law of his libertie, and that in Martiall affaires, aduersitie must be entertayned with as merrie a countenance, as by this greatnes of minde it may deserue to enioy prosperitie againe. And these sighes are not (me thinkes) beseeming that valour and courage, which thou hast shewed by tryall of thy person; neither are thy wounds so mortall, that thy life is in hazarde, whereof besides thou hast shewed not to make so much account, but that thou wouldest willingly haue left it for thine honours sake: If there be then any other occasion of thy heauines, tell it me: for by the faith of a gentleman, I sweare vnto thee, that I will vse as much curtesie and friendship towards thee, as thou shalt not haue occasion to repent thee, that thou hast tolde me it. The *Moore* hearing the Gouernours gentle speech, whereby he argued in him a braue and noble minde, and his curteous and friendly offer to helpe him, thought it no point of wisedome to conceale the cause of his greefe from him, because by his milde wordes and gracious countenance he had such great hope of helpe and fauour, that lifting vp his face, which with the waight of sorrow he went carying in his bosome, he saide vnto him. How art thou called Sir Knight, that dost thus comfort me in my sadnesse, whereof thou seemest to haue some feeling, and the which thou dost enforce me to tell thee. My name is *Rodrigo* of *Narnaez*, and Gouernour I am of *Alora*, and Antiquera, of both which townes of garrison the King of Aragon my Lord and Master, hath appointed me Chiefetaine. When the *Moore* heard this, with a merrier countenance then before, he said: I am glad that my misfortune hath beene so fortunate, to make me fall into thy handes; of whose force and manhoode I haue beene long since informed, the triall whereof though it had cost me deerer, coulde not haue greatly greeued me, since it doth so greatly content me to see my selfe his prisoner, whose vertues, valour, and dexteritie in armes doth importune euery ones eares so much. And because the subduing of my person doth oblige me to esteeme thee the more, and that thou maist not thinke it is any kinde of pusyllanimitie, or feare in me (without some other great occasion, which lies not in my power to forsake) that makes me so sad and pensiue, I praie thee gentle Knight, by that thou art, to cõmand thy gentlemen to ride on before, because thou maist know, that neither the paine of my greene woundes, nor the greefe of my present captiuitie is cause of my heauie thoughts. The Gouernour hearing these words, made greater reckoning of the *Moore*, and because he was verie desirous to be thorowly resolued what he was, he willed his gentlemen to ride on before: and they two comming on faire and softly behind, the *Moore* fetching a profound sigh from his soule, began thus to saie.

If

IF time and triall of thy great virtues (most valiant Gouernour) and that golden fame wherewith they are spread in euery place, had not penetrated my hart with desire of knowing them,& now put them manifestly before mine eies, these words, which thy will doth enforce me to relate, should be now excused, and the discourse, which I meane to tell thee of a life, continually enuironed with disquiets & suspects (the least whereof being (as thou wilt iudge no lesse) worse then a thousand deaths) remaine vntold. But as I am on the one side assured of that I speake, and that (on the other) thou art a worthie kinght, and noble gentleman, and hast either heard, or els thy selfe passed the like passion to mine, *Know, that my* name is *Abyndaraez* the yoonger in difference of an vncle of mine, my fathers brother who is also called so. Descended I am from the noble house of the *Abencerrajes* in *Granada*, by whose vnluckie destinies I did learne to be vnfortunate. And because thou maist know what theirs was, and maist by them the better coniecture, what may be expected of mine, *Thou* shalt vnderstand, that in *Granada* was a noble linage of Lords, and Knights, called *Abencerrajes*, whose valiant deeds, and graue personages, as well in martiall aduentures, as in peaceable and wise gouernment of our common-wealth, were the mirrours of that kingdome. The olde men were of the Kings counsell; the yoong gentlemen exercised their minds, and bodies in feates of armes, in the seruice of Ladies and gentlewomen, and by shewing in euery point their valour and gentilitie. And as they were honoured of the popular sort, and welbeloued among the principall, (for in all those good parts that a gentleman should haue, they farre excelled others) so were they very well thought of with the King: They did neuer any thing in war abroad, nor in counsell at home, that their experience was not correspondent to their expectation: whose valour, bountie, and humanitie was so highly commended, that for a common example it was euer alleaged, That there was neuer *Abencerraje* coward, niggard, or ill disposed person. In the citie they were the masters of braue inuentions for apparell: In the Court, of maskes, daunces, and triumphes, and in the court and citie, in the seruice and courting of Dames passing gracious: For neuer did *Abencerraje* loue and serue any Ladie, of whom he was not fauoured, nor any Ladie (were she neuer so faire and amiable) thinke her selfe worthie of the name & title of an *Abencerraje* his mistresse. They liuing therfore in as great prosperitie, honor, and reputation, that might be, came fortune (an enemie to the rest and contentment of happie men) to cast them downe from that ioyfull estate, to the most vnfortunate and greeuous condition of disgrace that might be. The beginning whereof was, that the King hauing done a certaine iniury to the *Abencerrajes*, they made an insurrection, wherein, with ten gentlemen more of their kinred, they conspired to kill the King, and to diuide the kingdome amongst themselues, & so to be reuenged of the vnworthie disgrace receiued by him. This conspiracie (whether it was true or false) was discouered before it could be put in practise, and they apprehended, and condemned to die, before the citizens had intelligence thereof; who, without all doubt for the great loue they bare them, would haue risen, not consenting that iustice should haue beene done vpon them: For, carying them to execution, it was the strangest spectacle in the world, to see the lamentations that some made; the priuie murmuring of one to another; and the bootlesse excuses, that for compassion of these gentlemen were generally made in all the citie. They ran all to the King, and offered to buie his mercie with great summes of gold and siluer; but such was his seueritie, that it expelled all motions of pitie and clemencie:

Which when the people beheld, they began to weepe, and lament againe: The Lords, Knights and gentlemen did weepe and mourne, with whom they were wont to keepe companie: The tender Ladies and Damsels of the Court wept, whom they loued and serued: And all the whole citie wept, for the great honour and auctority, that such noble citizens gaue them. The lamentations, and outcries were so many, and so loud, as if the earth had sunke, or the world beene drowned anew. But the King, who to all these teares, lamentations, and pitifull outcries did stop his eares, commaunded, that his definitiue sentence should be presently executed: So that, of all that house, and linage there remained not one man aliue, that was not beheaded that day, except my father and mine vncle, who were not found complices in that conspiracie. These ils resulted to them (besides this miserable chaunce) that their houses were ruinated; they proclaimed traitours to the King; their goodes, lands, and possessions confiscated: And that no *Abenceraje* should liue any longer in *Granada*, except my father and mine vncle; and they but with this condition, that if they had any issue, they should send the men children (as soon as they were borne) to be brought vp out of the citie, neuer to returne into it againe; and if they were women, and marriageable, to be married out of the Realme. When the Gouernor heard the strange discourse of *Abyndaraez*, and the termes wherewith he complayned of his misfortune, he could not stop his teares, but did shew by them the sensible greefe, which of such a disastrous accident could not be but felt. And therefore turning himselfe to the Moore, saide vnto him. Thou hast good cause *Abyndaraes*, to be sorrie for the fall of thy noble house and kinred, whose heads (I thinke) coulde neuer hatch so great treason: And were it for no other proofe, but that so worthie a gentleman as thy selfe came out of it, this onely were sufficient to make me beleeue, that they neuer pretended such wickednes. This gentle opinion, which thou hast of me (said the Moore) and of the goodnes of my aunceſtors, I know not (worthie Gouernour) how to requite, but onely with vnfained and humble thankes. But now, when I was borne into the world, with the inheritance of the selfe same mishap of my kinred, they sent me (because they would not infringe the Kings edict) to be nursed, and brought vp in a certaine fort, belonging sometimes to the Christians, called *Cartama*, committing the charge and care of me to the Gouernor thereof, with whom my father had ancient familiaritie & acquaintance: A man of great account in the kingdome, vpright in the maner of his life, and verie rich, but chiefly in a daughter that he hath, which is the greatest felicitie, which I account of in this life, the which I wish I may neuer enioy, if in any thing (but onely her) I euer tooke content & pleasure. With her was I brought vp from my childhood, (for she was borne but three yeeres after me) and as we were generally thought of all to be brother and sister (for like such was our education) so did we also thinke our selues to be. The loue that I did beare *Xarifa* (for thus is the Lady called that is mistresse of my libertie) were but little, if I could tell it: Let it suffice that time hath so confirmed the same, that I would giue a thousands liues (if I had them) but to enioy one momentarie sight of her faire face. Euerie day encreased our age, but euerie hower augmented our loue, and so much, that now (me thought) I was made of another kind of mettall, then of consanguinitie. I remember that *Xarifa* being on a day in the orchard of the Iesemynes, dressing her faire head, by chaunce I espied her, amazed at her singular beautie, and how (me thought) it greeued me, that she was my sister. And by the extreme passion of my loue, driuē out of my musing, I went to her, who, as soone as she saw me, with open armes came to receiue me: And sitting vpon the

fountaine

fountaine by her, ſhe ſaid vnto me. Why haſt thou (good brother) left me ſo long alone? It is (ſweete Ladie) ſaid I againe, a good while ſince I hauing ſought thee in euerie place, & found not any, that could tell me what was become of thee, my hart at laſt coniectured where thou wert: But tel me now (I pray thee) what certaintie haſt thou, that we are brother and ſiſter? No other (ſaide ſhe) then of the great loue I beare thee, and to ſee, how euerie one doth call vs ſo, and that my father doth bring vs vp like his ſonne and daughter. And if we were not brother and ſiſter (ſaide I) wouldeſt thou then loue me ſo much as thou doſt? Oh ſeeſt thou not (ſaide ſhe) that we ſhuld not be ſuffered to go ſo cõtinually together, & al alone, if we were not. But if we were depriued of this ioy, that which I feele in my ſelfe is a great deale more: At which words her faire face being tainted with a vermillion bluſh, ſhe ſaid vnto me. What couldeſt thou leeſe by it, if we were brother and ſiſter? My ſelfe and thee to, ſaid I. I vnderſtand thee not ſaid ſhe, but (me thinkes) (being brother and ſiſter) it binds vs to loue one another naturally. Thy onely beautie (ſaid I) doth oblige me to this brotherhood, which rather qualifieth my loue, and ſometimes diſtempers my thoughts: At which words bluſhing for too much boldnes, caſting downe mine eies, I ſaw her diuine figure in the criſtalline fountaine ſo liuely repreſented, as if it had beene ſhe her ſelfe, and in ſuch ſort, that whereſoeuer ſhe turned her head, I ſtill beheld her image, and goodly counterfaite truely tranſlated into verie hart. Then ſaid I ſoftly to my ſelfe. O, if I were now drowned in this fountaine, where with pride I behold my ſweete Lady, how more fortunate ſhould I die then *Narciſſus*? And if ſhe loued me as I do her, how happie ſhould I be? And if fortune would let vs liue euer together, what a happie life ſhould I then lead? Theſe words I ſpake to my ſelfe, and it would haue greeued me, that another had heard them. But hauing ſpoken this, I roſe vp, and reaching vp my hand to certaine Ieſemynes that grew round about that fountaine, I made of them, and of ſome Orenge flowers a faire and redolent garland, and putting it vpon my head, I ſat downe againe crowned, and conquered. Then did ſhe caſt her eies vpon me (to my thinking) more ſweetly then before, and taking it from my head, did put it vpon her owne, ſeeming then more faire then *Venus*. And looking vpon me, ſhe ſaid. How doſt thou like me now *Abyndaraez*? That in beautie (ſaid I) and ſweete perfections, thou ouercomeſt al the world, and that crowned Queene and Ladie of it. At which words riſing out of her place, ſhe tooke me by the hand, and ſaid vnto me. If it were ſo indeed (brother) thou ſhouldeſt leeſe nothing by it; and ſo without anſwering her againe, I followed her out of the garden. But now from that time certaine daies after, wherein cruell Loue thought he was too long from diſcouering vnto me the deceit that I had of my ſelfe, and time meaning then to lay open hidden and ſecret things, we came to perfect knowledge, that the kinred between vs was as much as nothing, whereupon our firme affections were confirmed more ſtrongly in their former and true places. All my delight was in her, and my ſoule cut out ſo iuſt to the proportion of hers, that all, that was not in her face, ſeemed to mine eies foule, friuolous, and vnprofitable in the whole world. And now were our paſtimes far different from our firſt, and I beheld her with a certaine kind of feare, and ſuſpect to be perceiued of any: And now had I alſo a certaine enuie and iealouſie of the ſunne, that did touch her. Who, though ſhe looked on me againe with the verie ſame deſire and intent, wherewith ſhe had beheld me before; yet I thought it was not ſo, bicauſe ones owne diſtruſt is the moſt aſſured and certaine thing in an enamoured hart. It fell out afterwardes, that ſhe being on a day at the cleere fountaine of the Ieſmynes, I came by chaunce thi-

ther, and beginning to talke with her, her ſpeech (me thought) and countenance was not like to her former lookes & communication. She prayed me to ſing, for ſhe was greatly delighted with ſongs & muſick: And I was then ſo truſtles & miſconceiuing of my ſelfe, that I thought ſhe bad me ſing, not for any pleaſure that ſhe took by hearing me, but to paſſe away the time, and only to entertaine my companie with ſuch a requeſt: ſo that I then wanted time to tell her the whole ſumme of my greefe. But I who employed my minde in nothing elſe, but to do whatſoeuer my Lady *Xarifa* commanded me, in the Arabicke toong began to ſing this ſong, whereby I gaue her to vnderſtand the crueltie that I ſuſpected of her.

IF *thy ſoft* Haires *be threds of ſhining gold,*
Vnder the ſhade of which are two faire Eies,
(Two ſunnes) whoſe Brow *like heauen doth them vphold,*
Rubie thy Mouth, *and lips where Corall lies?*
Could Criſtall want, to frame thy Necke *ſo white,*
And Diamond, to make thy Breſt *ſo bright?*

Thy hart is not vnlike vnto thy Breſt,
Since that the flight of mettall of thy Haire
Did neuer make thee turne thy Necke *at leſt,*
Nor with thine Eies *giue hope, but cold deſpaire.*
Yet from that ſugred Mouth *hope for an I,*
And from that ſnowe-white Brow, *that makes me die.*

Ah beautifull, and yet moſt bitter Brow,
And may there be a Breſt *ſo hard and faire,*
So ſweete a necke, and yet ſo ſtiffe to bow,
So rich, and yet ſo couetous a Haire?
Who euer ſawe ſo cleere and cruell Eies,
So ſweete a Mouth, *yet mooues not to my cries.*

Enuious Loue my Necke *doth chaine with ſpite,*
His paſſions make my Brow *looke pale and ſwart,*
He makes mine Eies *to leeſe their deereſt light,*
And in my Breſt *doth kill my trembling hart.*
He makes my Haire *to ſtand in ghaſtly wiſe,*
Yet in thy Mouth *all wordes of comfort dies.*

O ſweeteſt face, and lips more perfect faire,
Then I may tell; O ſoft and daintie Necke,
O golden Raies of yonder Sunne, not Haire,
O Criſtalline Brow, *and* Mouth *with Rubie deckt,*
O equall white and red, O Diamond Breſt,
From theſe faire Eies *when ſhall I hope for reſt?*

But if a (No) by turning of thine Eies,
Harke yet what ſaith her ſweeteſt Mouth *to me?*
See if her hardnes in her Breſt *yet lies,*

And

And if she turnes her whiteſt Necke *to thee?*
Marke vvell the beckning of her faireſt Brow,
Then from her Haire *what may I hope for now?*

If that her Lilly Breſt *and* Necke *doe once affirme their (No)*
And if her ſhining Eies *and* Haire *will not conclude an (I)*
What will her Ruby Mouth *then doe, and* Brow *as white as ſnowe,*
Nay what ſhall I my ſelfe expect but vvith denials die?

Theſe wordes were of ſuch force, that, being helped by the loue of her, in whoſe praiſe they were ſung, I ſaw her ſhed certaine teares, that I cannot tell you now (noble Gouernour) how much they moued my hart, nor whether the content, that I had by ſeeing ſo true a teſtimonie of my Miſtreſſe loue, or the greefe, (my ſelfe being the occaſion of her teares) was greater. Calling me to her, ſhe made me ſit downe by her, and thus began to ſay vnto me. If the Loue *Abyndaraez*, whereunto I am obliged (after I was fully aſſured of thy thoughtes) is but ſmall, or ſuch, that cannot but with extinction of life be ended, my wordes (I hope) before we leaue this onely place, ſhall make thee ſufficiently knowe. And blame thee I will not for thy miſtruſt, which hath made thee conceiue amiſſe; for I knowe it is ſo ſure a thing to haue it, as there is nothing more proper and incident to Loue. For remedie whereof, and of the ſorrow that I muſt needes haue, by ſeeing my ſelfe at any time ſeparated from thy ſweete companíe, from this day forth for euer thou maiſt hold and eſteeme thy ſelfe ſuch a Lord and Maſter of my libertie, as thou ſhalt be indeede, if thou art willing to combine thy ſelfe in ſacred bondes of marriage with me, the refuſall whereof is (before euery other thing) no ſmall impediment to both our contents, a preiudice to mine honour, and the ſole obſtacle of enioying the great loue which I beare thee. When I heard theſe wordes (Loue working my thoughts to things cleane contrarie) I conceiued ſuch great ioy, that had it not beene but by onely bowing downe my knees to the ground, and kiſſing her faire handes, I was not able to doe any other thing. With the hope of theſe wordes I liued certaine daies, in the greateſt ioy in the world, whileſt mutable Fortune (enuying my proſperitie and ioyfull life) bereaued vs both of this ſweete contentment: for not long after, the King of *Granada* minding to prefer the Gouernour of *Cartama* to ſome higher charge, by his letters commanded him foorthwith to yeeld vp the charge of that Fort, which lies vpon the frontires, and goe to *Coyn*, where his pleaſure was he ſhould be captaine and Gouernour, and alſo to leaue me in *Cartama* vnder the charge of him, that came to be Gouernour in his place. When I heard theſe vnluckie newes for my Miſtreſſe and my ſelfe, iudge you (noble Gentleman, if at any time you haue beene a louer) what a world of greefe we conceiued. We went both into a ſecret place to weepe, and lament our misfortunes, and the departure and loſſe of each others companie. There did I call her my ſoueraine Miſtreſſe, mine onely ioy, my hope, and other names, that Loue did put into my mouth: with weeping I ſaide vnto her. When the viewe of thy rare beautie ſhall be taken from mine eies, wilt thou then *Xarifa*, ſometimes remember me? Heere did my teares and ſighes cut off my words, and inforcing my ſelfe to ſpeake more (being troubled in minde) I vttered I know not what fooliſh wordes vnto her: for the apprehended abſence of my deere Miſtreſſe in my thoughts did vtterly carry away my wits, ſenſes, and memorie with it. But who can tell what ſorrow my deere Lady felt for this departure, and what bitter

potions

potions of greefe her orientall teares, (which for this crosse of fortune she powred forth) made me sup vp? She did then speake such wordes vnto me, the lest of which was ynough, to haue made the hardest hart thought of a sorrowfull departure for euer: which (valiant Gouernour) I will omit to tell thee, bicause thou wilt thinke them (if thy brest was neuer possessed with loue) impossible. And if it hath beene for feare, lest by hearing some of them, thou couldest not, but with hazard of life, stay out to heare the rest. Let it suffice, that the end of them, was by telling me, that, hauing any fit occasion by her fathers sicknes, or by his absence, she would sende for me, that, that might haue effect, which was betrothed and agreed vpon betweene vs both. With this promise my hart was somewhat lightned, and for this infinite curtesie, (which she did promise me when time and occasion serued) I kissed her daintie hands. The next day after, they went away, and I tarried still behinde, like one that (wandring vpon craggie and wilde mountaines, and hauing lost the comfortable light of the sunne) remained in hideous darknes: with great greefe I began to feele her absence, and sought all the false remedies (I could) against it: for sometimes I did cast mine eies vp to the windowes, where she was woont to looke out; sometimes vpon the bed where her tender body was accustomed to take rest; and went somtimes into the garden, where daily she vsed to disport herselfe, and in the heate of the day to the christalline fountaine, where she bathed and refreshed herselfe vnder the shade of Limon and Pomegranate trees: I walked and went all her stations, and in euery one of them I found a certaine representation of my sorrowfull thoughts. Truth it is, that the hope that she gaue me (to send for me) eased my paines a little, and with it I dissembled some part of my woes. But for as much as the continuall thought of my desire so long deferred, did encrease my paine the more, me thought sometimes I would haue beene glad, if I had beene left altogither without hope, for desperation doth but trouble one, vntill it be certainly knowen; but hope, vntill the desire be accomplished. But my good Fortune did so much fauour me, that this morning my Lady stoode to her worde, by sending for me by a gentlewoman of hers (a trustie secretarie of her thoughts) for the Gouernour her Father was gone to Granada, who being sent for thither by the king, was to returne home in a short time againe. Awaked out of my heauie slumber and melancholike cares with these inopinate and happie newes, I prepared my selfe to go with winged speede vnto her: yet staying for night, and because I might the better escape vnknowne, I did put on this habite, as thou seest, and the brauest I could deuise, to make the better shewe to my Lady of my proud and ioyfull hart. In which iourney (truely) I would not haue thought, that two of the best knights at armes had beene sufficient to abide me the fielde, because I carried my Mistresse with me. Wherefore *Rodrigo* if thou hast ouercomed me, it was not by pure strength, which was impossible, but it was either my harde fortune, or the determination of the heauens, that woulde preuent me of such a supreme good. Whereupon consider nowe in the end of my true tale, and of the good that I haue lost, and the ill which I possesse: I came from Cartama to go to Coyn, but a short iourney, although the desire of the proudest *Abencerraje* that euer liued, made it a great deale longer. I went, sent for by my Lady, to see my Lady, to enioy my Lady, and to marrie my sweetest Ladie. But now I see my selfe wounded, captiue, and in subiection to him, who will doe, I know not what with me. And that which greeues me most, is, that the time and enioying of my desire, endeth with this present night. O suffer me then Christian to comfort my selfe at the least with my secret lamentations: let me euacuate out of

my

my sorowfull brest my choking and smothering sighes, and water mine eies with burning teares: All which impute not to any imbecillitie or feare of minde, though it were a great deale better for me that I had a hart, that coulde beare and suffer this harde and siniſtrous chance of Fortune, then to do that which I now do.

The discourse of the enamoured *Moore* pearced deepely into the valiant *Naruaes* his soule, who was not a little amazed at the strange succesſe of his loue. And thinking with himselfe, that for the better dispatch of his affaires, nothing might hinder them more, then his long staying, he said vnto him. I am minded *Abyndaraes*, to make thee knowe how much my vertue surmounteth thy ill fortune, for if thou wilt but promise me to returne to my prison within three daies, I will set thee at libertie, bicause thou maist not leaue of thy amorous enterprise. For it woulde greeue me to cut off so good, and honest an endeuour. The *Abenceraje* hearing this, in token of thankes would haue fallen downe at his feete, and saide vnto him. If thou dost me this vnexpected fauour (noble Gouernour of *Alora*) thou shalt restore me againe to life, and shew the greatest gentilitie of minde, that euer any Conquerour did. Take what securitie thou wilt of me, for whatsoeuer thou dost demaund, I will not faile to accompliſh. Then *Rodrigo* of *Naruaes* called his gentlemen vnto him, and saide. Gentlemen, trust me for this prisoner, for whose raunsome my selfe will be a pledge. They answered him againe, that he might dispose of him at his owne pleasure, for whatsoeuer he did, they would be well content withall. Then the Gouernour taking the *Abenceraje* by his right hand, saide vnto him. Dost thou promise me as thou art a Gentleman to come to my Castell of *Alora*, there to yeelde thy selfe my prisoner within three daies? I doe (saide he) and with solemne othe binde it. Then goe (saide the Gouernour) and good fortune with thee, and if thou standest in neede of mine owne person to accompany thee, or of any other thing for thy way, speake, and thou shalt haue it. The *Moore* thanked him very much, but tooke no more but a horse, which the Gouernour gaue him, for his owne was hurt in the late encounter betweene them, and went very heauie, being also wearied and faint with much blood, which he lost by the way: and so turning the raines, he rode as fast as he coulde towardes *Coyn*. *Rodrigo* of *Naruaes* and his Gentlemen returned homewardes to *Alora*, talking by the way of the valour and goodly behauiour of the *Abenceraje*. The *Moore* was not long (according to the great speede he made) in comming to the Fort of *Coyn*, where, going directly as he was commanded, he first went about all the wals, vntill at last he found a posterne gate, and the Centrinels on the wals fast asleepe, who though he had a great desire, and made no lesse haste to enter in, yet he staied a little, looking about him on euery side, least happily he might be espied, or in danger of some thing else. But when he perceiued that all was quiet, he knocked with the punch of his launce at the wicket (for that was the watchworde, that his Mistresse had giuen him by the gentlewoman that went to call him) the which was immediately opened vnto him by the same gentlewoman, who saide vnto him: Sir your long tarying hath put my Ladie in a great feare, for she hath staide this good while for you. Alight and I will bring you vp where she is attending your presence in great perplexitie: he then dismounted from his horse, and set him vp in a secret place, that he founde there, where also leauing his Launce against a wall with his Target and Cymitarre, the gentlewoman tooke him by the hande, and very softly led him vp a paire of staires, for feare of being heard by them in the castle, and brought him into *Xarifaes* chamber. Before whom when he was come, with a sudden surfault of ioye

she

ſhe ranne to receiue him, and both of them with ſuch extreme paſſions of loue and gladnes embracing one another, were not able to ſpeake one worde, for the infinite ioy they had at each others ſight: But comming to themſelues againe, at the laſt ſhe ſaide thus vnto him. What the cauſe may be, that thou haſt ſtaied ſo long (my louing Lord) I knowe not, but what ſorrowe and anxieties of minde I haue paſſed for thy ſlowe comming, my impatient loue is able to teſtifie. I hope, thou doſt imagine faire Lady (ſaide he againe) that it is not by my fault and negligence, but mens diſſeignes doe not alwaies fall out fit to their deſires: So that if there be any trueth in me, thou maiſt well beleeue me, that it was not in my power to come ſooner then I haue done. But breaking him off in his excuſes, ſhe tooke him by the hand, & leading him into a rich chamber, they ſat them downe vpon a faire bed, where thus ſhe ſaid vnto him. I was deſirous my thriſe beloued *Abyndaraes*, to haue thee ſee, how captiues in loue can fulfill their promiſe; for, from the very day, that I gaue thee my word for pledge of my hart, I haue ſought the meanes to diſcharge me of it. I ſent for thee to come to this Caſtell, to be my priſoner, as I am thine. But now I haue brought thee in hither, to make thee Lord of me, and of my fathers treaſure, vnder the honourable name of a lawfull husband, whereunto my eſtate, nor thy loyaltie cannot otherwiſe conſent. I do knowe well, that my fathers will wilbe contrarie to our workings, who being ignorant of thy valour, and not knowing thy deſerts, as well as I doe, will perhaps beſtowe ſome richer husband on me: but I eſteeme thy noble perſonage, and thy vertuous and valiant mind more, then the greateſt riches in the world. And hauing ſaide thus vnto him, ſhe hung downe her head, bluſhing not a little, that ſhe had ſo much diſcouered her ſelfe, and in ſo plaine and open termes declared her affection vnto him. The noble *Moore* tooke her in his armes, and many times kiſſing her white hands for ſuch louing and curteous wordes, ſaide thus vnto her. I haue no new thing (ſweete Lady of my ſoule) to giue thee in requitall of ſuch great good as thou doſt offer me, bicauſe I am no leſſe (as I was before) wholy thine. Onely this pledge I giue thee in token of my vnſpeakable loue, that I receiue thee for my beloued Lady and wife: And heerewithall thou maiſt lay aſide for a while that modeſt ſhamefaſtnes, and maidenly teynt, which continually thou haſt had, ſince thou haſt taken me for thine owne. Vnwillingly ſhe did the ſame: And vpon this concluſion they went to bed, where with a new experience they rekindled the flames of their enamoured harts. In which amorous enterpriſe, paſſed on either ſide many louing wordes, and deedes fitter for imagination, then to be written. The *Moore* being in ſo great ioy and pleaſure, fetched on the ſudden a profound and painfull ſigh, and turning from her, began to lie ſo ſad and penſiue, that faire *Xarifa* perceiuing it, was much amazed and troubled in minde to ſee ſo ſudden an alteration: who lying ſtill, heard him breath foorth a deepe and dolefull ſigh with turning his body on euery ſide. The Lady vnable to ſuffer ſo great an iniurie to her beautie and loyaltie, thinking he was diſpleaſed with the one or both, riſing vp a little in the bedde, with a milde and merrie voice (though ſomewhat troubled) ſaide vnto him. What meanes this *Abyndaraes*? It ſeemes thou art offended with my mirth. I heard thee ſigh, and tumble, and toſſe thy body on euery ſide: why man, if I am wholy thy ioye, and thy delight, why doſt thou not tell me for whom thou doſt ſigh; and if I am not, why haſt thou thus deceiued me? If thou haſt found any fault in my perſon, that hath abridged the delight of thy imagination, caſt thine eies and minde vpon my will, which is ſufficient to ſupply many wants, and vpon my zealous and louing hart, that wiſheth it the faireſt and fineſt in the world for thy ſake.

ſake. If thou ſerueſt any other Lady, let me know her, that I may ſerue her to: And if thou haſt any other greefe (which ſhall not offend me) tell it me, for I will either die, or rid thee from it. And claſping him with a kinde of violent and forcible loue, ſhe turned him to her againe, who being then confounded, and aſhamed for that he had done, and thinking that it might be an occaſion (if he did not tell her the cauſe of his ſorrow) to fill her head full of iealouſie and ſuſpicion, with an appaſſionate ſigh he ſaid vnto her. If I did not (my ſweeteſt life) loue thee more then mine owne ſoule, I woulde neuer haue made ſuch ſignes of inwarde greefe, for the wounding thoughts, which I brought with me (whē I came with my ſelfe all alone) I paſſed away with a better hart; but now that I am conſtrained to go from thee, I haue no force to endure them at all. And becauſe thou ſhalt be no longer in ſuſpence of knowing the cauſe of my ſorrow, I will tell thee what lately paſſed: And then he told her all the matter, not leauing any thing out, in the end of his tale with many teares ſaying thus vnto her. So that thy captiue (faire Lady) is alſo priſoner to the Gouernour of *Alora*: And the paine of that impriſonment, which thou haſt caſt vpon me, and taught my hart to ſuffer, I feele not, but the torment and bondage by liuing without thee, I account woorſe then any death: Wherupon thou ſeeſt, that my ſighes are rather arguments of greater loyalty, then of any want thereof. And with this, he began againe to be ſo penſiue and ſad, as he was before he had tolde her his greefe. But then with a merrie countenance ſhe ſaid vnto him: Trouble not thy minde *Abyndaraes* with theſe thoughts, for I will take the care and remedie of this greefe vpon mee, as a thing that toucheth mee moſt of all; and the more, ſince it is not denied any priſoner that hath giuen his worde to returne to priſon, to ſatisfie it, by ſending the ranſome that ſhall be demaunded of him: Wherefore ſet thy ſelfe downe what ſumme thou wilt, for I haue the keyes of al my fathers treaſure, which I will put into thy hands, & leaue it all at thy diſpoſition. *Rodrigo* of *Naruaez* is a curteous gentleman, & a good knight, and one who gaue thee once thy libertie: And as thou haſt acquainted him with the truſt of theſe affaires; ſo is he now the more bound to vſe greater virtue and gentlenes towardes thee. I am ſure he will be contented with reaſon; for hauing thee in his power and priſon, he muſt perforce ſet thee at libertie, when he hath the value of thy ranſome. I ſee well faire Ladie (ſaid the *Abencerraje* againe) that the loue which thou doſt beare me, will not ſuffer thee to giue me the beſt counſell, for I will neuer commit ſo foule a fault as this. For if I was bound to fulfill my word, when I was alone, and without thee, now that I am thine, the bond is greater: I will therefore returne to *Allora*, and yeeld my ſelfe into the Gouernors hands, and when I haue done what I am bound to do, let Fortune do with me what ſhe will. Nay let me rather die, ſaide *Xarifa* (if thou goeſt to be priſoner) then once deſire to remaine here at libertie. For being thy captiue, by duetie I am bound to accompanie thee in this iourney for the extreme loue that I beare thee, whereas alſo the feare of my fathers frownes, which I haue purchaſed by offending him, will let me do no leſſe. The *Moore* weeping for ioy, to heare theſe words, embraced her ſaying. Thou neuer ceaſeſt (my deereſt ſoule) to heape fauours vpon my happie head, do therefore what thou wilt, for this is my reſolution. With this determination they roſe before it was day, and prouiding ſome neceſſarie things for their iourney, they went verie ſecretly towards *Allora*: and when the day began to waxe cleere, *Xarifa* went with her face couered with a maske, for feare of being knowen, and by reaſon of the great haſte they made, they came in good time to *Alora*, where going directly to

the

the caſtle,& knocking at the gate,it was opened to them out of hand by the Centrinels, who had notice of that was paſt,and what they ſhould do.The valiant Gouernor receiued them curteouſly: and *Abyndaraes* going to the gate and taking his wife by the hand brought her vnto him, & ſaid.Behold *Rodrigo* of *Naruaez* if I keepe not well my word and appointed time? For promiſing thee to returne thy priſoner,inſteed of one,I bring thee two,for one was enough to ouercome many. Behold here my Ladie, & iudge if I haue not iuſtly ſuffered for her ſake: accept vs now for thine, for in thy virtuous and noble minde I repoſe my whole truſt and confidence,and into thy hands commit her deere and chiefeſt honour. The Gouernor was verie glad to ſee them both, and ſaid to *Xarifa*:I know not faire Ladie which of you haue conquered each other in loue and curteſie, but truely thinke my ſelfe greatly bound vnto you both. Come in therefore, and reſt you in your owne houſe, the which from henceforth, as alſo the maſter of it, accept for none other. After this friendly entertainement,they went with him into his dining chamber,where after a little while they refreſhed themſelues, bicauſe they came ſomewhat wearie. The Gouernor aſked the *Moore* how he did for his wounds. I thinke(ſaid he) that what with the way, and what with paine , they are ſomewhat rankled: which faire *Xarifa* hearing,with an altered an appalled countenance ſaid vnto him. Alas how comes this to paſſe my Lord? Haue you any woundes about you, and I not knowe them ? Who eſcapes (ſaide he) from thine, needes little to care for any other. Truth it is,that at our late skirmiſh in the night I got two little woundes, which my troubleſome iourney and negligence in curing them hath made ſomewhat worſe, but all is but little or nothing. It is beſt (ſaide the Gouernour) that you lay you downe, and I will ſend for a Chirurgeon that is heere in the Caſtell to cure them. Following which counſell, faire *Xarifa* cauſed him to put off his apparell, and though ſhe ſet a good face on the matter (bicauſe ſhe woulde not giue him any occaſion to feele her inwarde greefe)yet was ſhe altered much and troubled in her minde.The Chirurgeon came, and ſearching his wounds ſaide, that they were not dangerous, bicauſe the ſigne was not in thoſe places when he receiued them ;and alſo,bicauſe they were ſmitten ouerthwart, would not be long in healing : For with a certaine ointment that he made out of hand, the paine of them was ſomewhat aſſwaged ; and in fower daies (by meanes of the great care the Chirurgeon had in healing them) hee was as ſound and whole as euer he was before. But one day, after dinner was done, the *Abenceraje* ſaide thus vnto the Gouernour. As you are wiſe, *Rodrigo* of *Naruaez*, ſo can you not chooſe, but by the manner of our being at *Coyn*, and of our comming hither, imagine more then you haue ſeene, which affaires of ours by our owne misfortunes (driuen to this deſperate (though happy) euent, wherein they nowe are) muſt be(I hope) by your aduiſe and helpe brought to ſome good end. This is faire *Xarifa*,of whom I tolde you: This is my Lady,and my deerely beloued wife: In *Coyn* ſhe woulde not ſtay for feare of her Father. For though he knowes not what hath paſſed betweene vs, yet ſhe feared leaſt this accident at ſome time or other might be diſcouered. Her Father is nowe with our King of *Granada*, whoſe highneſſe I know,doth beare you eſpeciall good will, and loueth you,(though you be a Chriſtian) for your valour and vertuous diſpoſition. Wherefore I beſeech you (gentle knight)to ſollicite our pardon at his gracious hands for dooing what is paſt without his leaue and priuitie, ſince Fortune hath brought it(though happily)to this doubtfull paſſe. Comfort your ſelues *Abyndaraes* and faire *Xarifa* (ſaid the noble Gouernour)for by the faith of a gentleman I promiſe you to do what I can for you in this behalfe,

behalfe, whereupon he presently called for inke and paper to write a letter to the king of *Granada*, which in a few words and true, opening their estate vnto him, said thus.

MOst mightie king of *Granada*, *Rodrigo* of *Narnaez* the Gouernour of *Alora*, by these letters kisseth your royall hands, and giues your Maiestie to vnderstande, that *Abyndaraez Abencerraje* borne in *Granada*, brought vp in *Cartama* and being vnder the charge and gouernment of the captaine of that Forte, was enamored of *Xarifa* his faire daughter: And after that it pleased your Maiestie to preferre the saide captaine to the gouernment of *Coyn*, the two louers (to binde themselues in a mutall and indissoluble bonde) betrothed their faith to each other before her departure, who sent to *Cartama* for the *Abencerraje* in her Fathers absence (being now in your Maiesties Court) to whom as he was going to *Coyn*, in the way I met him, and in a certaine skirmish betweene vs, (wherein he shewed himselfe a valiant and couragious man at armes) made him my prisoner: who telling me his pitifull case (my hart being mooued with compassion of his greefe, and with his earnest praiers) I set him free for two daies, who went his way, and got him to his wife, so that in that iourney he woone his wife, and lost his libertie. But seeing the *Abencerraje* (according to his worde) woulde needes returne to my prison, she came also with him, and so they are both now in my power. Let not the name of *Abencerraje*, I beseech your Maiestie offende it, for this Gentleman and his Father were not priuie (as I haue heard) nor consenting to the conspiracie pretended against your royall person, in testimonie whereof, they are yet both liuing. Wherefore I humblie beseech your Maiestie to impart betweene your Grace and me a remedie for these hapless louers, whose raunsome I will frankely forgiue, and freely let them go. May it onely please your Maiestie to procure the Ladies pardon with her Father, who is your subiect, and to intreat him to receiue the gentleman into his affinitie and good liking: By doing whereof (besides the singular fauour that your Highnesse shall do me) your Maiestie shall do no lesse, then is expected of the woonted vertues and bountie of your Royall and magnificent minde.

With this letter he dispatched away one of his gentlemen, who comming before the King, gaue it him into his owne handes, the which he gratefully receiued, when he knew from whom it came, for he loued this Christian, especially for his valour and goodly personage: and reading it, he turned his face, and by chaunce espied the Gouernor of *Coyn*, to whom (taking him aside) he gaue the letter, saying vnto him. Read this letter, who read it, and seeing what was past, by his countenance did manifest how much he was grieued in mind. Which thing the King perceiuing, said vnto him. Be not offended, nor sorrie, although thou hast good cause; for there is not any reasonable thing, that the noble Gouernor of *Alora* requesteth at my hands (if it lies in my power) which I will not doe for him. And therefore I commaund thee by deferring no time, presently to goe to *Alora*, and to pardon thy daughter and son in law, and carrie them with thee to thy Castle; in recompence whereof I will not forget to bestow on thee continuall fauours. It greeued the old *Moore* to the verie hart, when he vnderstood of this euent; but seeing he must not disobey the Kings commaund, by counterfeiting a merie countenance, and borrowing a little courage of his daunted spirits, as wel as he could, he said That he would do it. The Gouernor of *Coyn* departed from the Court in all haste, and came to *Alora*, where (vnderstanding by the way of the Gouernors Gentleman that went with

him,all that had paſſed in this aduenture)he was curteouſly receiued: The *Abencerraje* and his daughter teynted and appalled with ſhame and feare came before him, and kiſſed his hands, who receiuing them ioyfully, ſaid vnto them. I come not hither of mine owne accord to repeate, nor entreat of things paſt, but by the commaundement of the King,who willed me to pardon your miſdeeds,and your ſudden marriage without my cõſent. And as for the reſt daughter,thou haſt choſen a better husband for thy ſelfe, then I could haue giuen thee. *Rodrigo* of *Naruaez* was very glad to heare this gentle greeting of the olde *Moore*, for whoſe entertainment he made many feaſtes and banquets. And one day when dinner was done,he ſaid vnto them. I am not ſo glad,as proud,that I haue beene ſome part and meanes, whereby theſe occurrents are brought to ſo good a paſſe; in proofe whereof, and that nothing elſe could make me more cõtent,for the ranſome of your impriſonment,I will haue but onely the honour, that I haue enioyed by getting and keeping ſuch braue priſoners. Wherefore *Abyndaraes*, thou art free,in teſtimonie whereof I giue thee leaue to goe whither it pleaſe thee, and whenſoeuer thou wilt. He humbly thanked him, and ſo they prepared themſelues to bee gone the next day, when *Rodrigo* of *Naruaez* bearing them company, they went from *Alora*, and came to *Coyn*, where great triumphes,banquets,and feaſts were made in publicke celebration of the marriage:The which being paſt,their father taking them both one day aſide,ſpake theſe words vnto them. Now that you are (my beloued ſonne and daughter) poſſeſſours of my riches, and liue in reſt, it is not reaſon that you forget the manifolde good turnes done you by the Gouernor of *Alora*, for which you are yet indebted vnto him; and it ſtands not with our honors, for vſing you with ſuch great virtue and humanitie, that he ſhould leeſe the right of your ranſome,which ſhould be rather (if you conſider the matter well) more then ordinarie. I will giue you fower thouſand double duckats,ſend them vnto him, and behold them here, which he well deſerues (as a friend indeed) though there be different lawes betweene you and him. The *Abencerraje* thanked him verie humbly, and taking them, ſent them in a little rich coffer to *Rodrigo* of *Naruaez*. And becauſe he would not of his own part ſhew himſelfe vnthankfull,he ſent him therewithall ſixe faire Barbary horſes with rich ſaddles & furniture, and ſixe targets and launces,the bars and punches being of fine golde. Faire *Xarifa* wrote a ſweete and louing letter vnto him, wherein ſhe gaue him infinite thankes for the benefits ſhe had receiued by his meanes, and for the gentle entertainment ſhe had in his Caſtle. And willing to ſhew her ſelfe as liberall and thankefull as the reſt, ſhe ſent him a ſweete Cypreſſe cheſt,finely wrought and carued for a preſent, and within it moſt curious and coſtly white garmentes for his owne perſon. The valiant Gouernor accepting the preſents, with great thankes to them that ſent them, gaue the horſes, targets, and launces incontinently amongeſt the gentlemen that did accompanie him that night in the skirmiſh, taking the beſt of each, and alſo the Cyprſſe cheſt, with that which faire *Xarifa* had ſent him for himſelfe, and returning the fower thouſand double peeces to the meſſenger againe, he ſaide vnto him. Tell thy Lady *Xarifa*, that I receiue the Duckets for her huſbandes raunſome, and (to doe her ſeruice) ſende them backe againe, towardes the charges of her marriage, and, that for her friendſhip and ſweete ſake, I woulde change all the intereſts that I haue in the world, in lieue that ſhe would make an account of this Caſtell,as her owne,and her husbandes alſo. The meſſenger returned backe to *Coyn*,where he was well receiued, and the liberalitie of the noble Captaine of euery one highly commended, whoſe linage doth continue in flouriſhing

eſtate

eſtate to this day in *Antiquera*, equiualent in Heroicall and Martiall deedes with the firſt originall, from whence they are deſcended. The hiſtorie being ended, *Felicia* did commend the grace, and good wordes wherewith faire *Feliſmena* did tell it, and ſo did all the reſt, that were preient, who taking their leaue of the ſage Lady, went all to take their reſt.

The end of the fourth booke.

The fifth Booke of Diana of George of Montemayor.

THe next day in the morning the Lady *Felicia* roſe vp, and went to *Feliſmenas* chamber, whom ſhe found, not with few teares, newly making an end of apparelling her-ſelfe, thinking euery hower ſhe ſtaied there a thouſand yeeres. And the ſage Lady taking her by the hande, they went into a gallerie that looked into a garden, where they had ſupped the night before, and hauing asked her the cauſe of her teares, and giuing her ſom comfort and aſſured hope, that her greefes ſhould haue ſuch an end, as ſhe her-ſelfe deſired, ſhe ſaide vnto her. There is nothing in the world more ready to take her life away, whom I loue well, then with incertaine hope to depriue her of the remedie of her greefe, for there is not an hower that ſeemes not ſo long vnto her (liuing in this ſort) as ſhe thinkes the howers of her life ſhort and ſpeedie. Becauſe therefore my deſire is to fulfill thine, and after ſome fewe troubles to haue thee obtaine the ſweet content and reſt, that Fortune hath promiſed thee, thou ſhalt depart from thine owne houſe heere, in the ſame habite that thou cameſt, when thou didſt defend my Nymphes from the force and violence of the brutiſh and cruell Sauages; aſſuring thee beſides, that when my helpe and fauour may ſtande thee in ſteede, vnſent for, thou ſhalt alwaies haue it. So that thy departure faire *Feliſmena* muſt be preſently; & truſt in God, that thy deſire ſhall haue a happie end: For if I knew it to be otherwiſe, thou maiſt well thinke, I woulde not be without other remedies to make thee forget theſe thoughts, as I haue done to many other Louers more. *Feliſmena* was glad to heare the graue Ladies wordes, to whom ſhe replied thus. I know not howe with words (diſcreete Lady) I may giue you condigne thankes, nor with what deeds and humble ſeruice make any part of ſatisfaction of this infinite fauour, which I receiue at your Ladiſhips hands. God grant I may liue ſo long, that by proofe your Ladiſhippe may know the great deſire I haue to do you all the ſeruice I may. That which your Ladiſhip commands me to do, I will preſently go about, which cannot but haue good ſucceſſe, being directed by her counſell, that can in euery thing giue the beſt. The ſage Lady embraced her, ſaying. I hope to ſee thee, faire *Feliſmena*, in this houſe more ioyfull and contented, then now thou art. And becauſe the two Shepherdes and Shepherdeſſes are ſtaying for vs, it is reaſon that I go, to giue them alſo ſome remedy for their ſorrowes, that need it ſo much. Wherfore both of them going out of the hall, and finding *Syrenus* and *Syluanus*, *Seluagia* and *Beliſa* attending their comming, the Lady *Felicia* ſaide to *Feliſmena*. Entertaine this company faire Lady, while I come hither againe: and going into a chamber, it was not long before ſhe came out againe with two cruets of fine criſtall in either hande, the ſeete

of them being of beaten golde, and curiouſly wrought and enameled: And comming to *Syrenus*, ſhe ſaide vnto him. If there were any other remedy for thy greeſe (forgotten Shepherd) but this, I woulde with all poſſible diligence haue ſought it out, but becauſe thou canſt not now enioy her, who loued thee once ſo well, without anothers death, which is onely in the handes of God, of neceſſitie then thou muſt embrace another remedie, to auoide the deſire of an impoſſible thing. And take thou, faire *Seluagia*, and deſpiſed *Syluanus*, this glaſſe, wherein you ſhall finde a ſoueraine remedie for all your ſorrowes paſt & preſent; and a beginning of a ioyfull and contented life, whereof you do now ſo little imagine. And taking the criſtall cruet, which ſhe helde in her left hande, ſhe gaue it to *Syrenus*, and badde him drinke; and *Syrenus* did ſo; and *Syluanus*, and *Seluagia* drunke off the other betweene them, and in that inſtant they fell all downe to the ground in a deepe ſleepe, which made *Feliſmena*, and *Beliſa* not a little to woonder, to whom the ſage Ladie ſaid. Diſcomfort not thy ſelfe *Beliſa*, for I hope in time to ſee thee as glad, as euer any was after their many ſorrowes and paines. And vntill thy angrie fortune be not pleaſed to giue thee a needfull remedy for thy great greeſes, my pleaſure is, that thou ſtill remaine heere in my companie. The Shepherdeſſe woulde haue kiſſed her hands at theſe words, but *Felicia* did not let her, but did rather imbrace her, ſhewing how greatly ſhe loued her. But *Feliſmena* ſtanding halfe amazed at the deepe ſleepe of the Shepherdes, ſaide to *Felicia*: If the eaſe of theſe Shepherds (good Ladie) conſiſteth in ſleeping (me thinkes) they haue it in ſo ample ſort, that they may liue the moſt quiet life in the worlde. Woonder not at this (ſaide *Felicia*) for the water they drunke hath ſuch force, that, as long as I will, they ſhall ſleepe ſo ſtrongly, that none may be able to awake them. And becauſe thou maiſt ſee, whether it be ſo or no, call one of them as loude as thou canſt. *Feliſmena* then came to *Syluanus*, and pulling him by the arme, began to call him aloud, which did profite her as little, as if ſhe had ſpoken to a dead body; and ſo it was with *Syrenus* and *Seluagia*, whereat *Feliſmena* maruelled very much. And then *Felicia* ſaide vnto her. Nay, thou ſhalt maruell yet more, after they awake, bicauſe thou ſhalt ſee ſo ſtrange a thing, as thou didſt neuer imagine the like. And becauſe the water hath by this time wrought thoſe operations, that it ſhoulde do, I will awake them, and marke it well, for thou ſhalt heare and ſee woonders. Whereupon taking a booke out of her boſome, ſhe came to *Syrenus*, and ſmiting him vpon the head with it, the Shepherd roſe vp on his feete in his perfect wits and iudgement: To whom *Felicia* ſaide. Tell me *Syrenus*, if thou mighteſt now ſee faire *Diana*, & her vnworthy husband both togither in all the contentment and ioy of the worlde, laughing at thy loue, and making a ſport of thy teares and ſighes, what wouldeſt thou do? Not greeue me a whit (good Lady) but rather helpe them to laugh at my follies paſt. But if ſhe were now a maide againe, (ſaide *Felicia*) or perhaps a widow, and would be married to *Syluanus* and not to thee, what wouldſt thou then do? My ſelfe woulde be the man (ſaide *Syrenus*) that woulde gladly helpe to make ſuch a match for my friende. What thinkeſt thou of this *Feliſmena* (ſaide *Felicia*) that water is able to vnlooſe the knottes that peruerſe Loue doth make? I woulde neuer haue thought (ſaide *Feliſmena*) that anie humane skill coulde euer attaine to ſuch diuine knowledge as this. And looking on *Syrenus*, ſhe ſaide vnto him. Howe nowe *Syrenus*, what meanes this? Are the teares and ſighes whereby thou didſt manifeſt thy loue and greeſe, ſo ſoone ended? Since my loue is nowe ended (ſaid *Syrenus*) no maruell then, if the effects proceeding from it be alſo determined.

And

And is it possible now (said *Felismena*) that thou wilt loue *Diana* no more? I wish her as much good (answered *Syrenus*) as I doe to your owne selfe (faire Lady) or to any other woman that neuer offended me. But *Felicia*, seeing how *Felismena* was amazed at the sudden alteration of *Syrenus*, said. With this medicine I would also cure thy greefe (faire *Felismena*) and thine *Belisa*, if fortune did not deferre them to some greater content, then onely to enioy your libertie. And bicause thou maist see how diuersly the medicines haue wrought in *Syluanus* and *Seluagia*, it shall not be amisse to awake them, for now they haue slept ynough: wherefore laying her booke vpon *Syluanus* his head, he rose vp, saying. O faire *Seluagia*, what a great offence and folly haue I committed, by imploying my thoughtes vpon another, after that mine eies did once behold thy rare beautie? What meanes this *Syluanus* (said *Felicia.*) No woman in the world euen now in thy mouth, but thy Shepherdesse *Diana*, and now so suddenly changed to *Seluagia*? *Syluanus* answering her, said. As the ship (discreete Lady) sailes floting vp and downe, and well-ny cast away in the vnknowen seas, without hope of a secure hauen: so did my thoughtes (putting my life in no small hazard) wander in *Dianas* loue, all the while, that I pursued it. But now since I am safely arriued into a hauen, of all ioy and happinesse, I onely wish I may haue harbour and entertainment there, where my irremooueable and infinite loue is so firmely placed. *Felismena* was as much astonished at the second kinde of alteration of *Syluanus*, as at that first of *Syrenus*, and therefore saide vnto him laughing. What dost thou *Syluanus*? Why dost thou not awake *Seluagia*? for ill may a Shepherdesse heare thee, that is so fast asleepe. *Syluanus* then pulling her by the arme, began to speake out aloud vnto her, saying. Awake faire *Seluagia*, since thou hast awaked my thoughtes out of the drowsie slumber of passed ignorance. Thrise happy man, whom fortune hath put in the happiest estate that I could desire. What dost thou meane faire Shepherdesse, dost thou not heare me, or wilt thou not answere me? Behold the impatient passion of the loue I beare thee, will not suffer me to be vnheard. O my *Seluagia*, sleepe not so much, and let not thy slumber be an occasion to make the sleepe of death put out my vitall lightes. And seeing how little it auailed him, by calling her, he began to powre foorth such abundance of teares, that they, that were present, could not but weepe also for tender compassion: whereupon *Felicia* saide vnto him. Trouble not thy selfe *Syluanus*, for as I will make *Seluagia* answere thee, so shall not her answere be contrarie to thy desire, and taking him by the hand, she led him into a chamber, and said vnto him. Depart not from hence, vntill I call thee; and then she went to the place againe where *Seluagia* lay, and touching her with her booke, awaked her, as she had done the rest, and saide vnto her. Me thinks thou hast slept securely Shepherdesse. O good Lady (said she) where is my *Syluanus*, was he not with me heere? O God, who hath carried him away from hence? or wil he come hither againe? Harke to me *Seluagia*, said *Felicia*, for me thinkes thou art not wel in thy wits. Thy beloued *Alanius* is without, & saith that he hath gone wandring vp and downe in many places seeking after thee, and hath got his fathers good will to marrie thee: which shall as little auaile him (said *Seluagia*) as the sighes and teares which once in vaine I powred out, and spent for him, for his memorie is now exiled out of my thoughts. *Syluanus* mine onely life and ioy, O *Syluanus* is he, whom I loue. O what is become of my *Syluanus*? Where is my *Syluanus*? Who hearing the Shepherdesse *Seluagia* no sooner name him, could stay no longer in the chamber, but came running into the hall vnto her, where the one beheld the other with such apparaunt signes of cordiall affection, and so strongly confirmed by the mutual bonds

of their knowen deserts, that nothing but death was able to dissolue it; whereat *Syrenus*, *Felismena*, and the Shepherdesse were passing ioyfull. And *Felicia* seeing them all in this contentment, said vnto them. Now is it time for you Shepherds, and faire Shepherdesse to goe home to your flocks, which would be glad to heare the wonted voice of their knowen masters: And make this account, that you shall neuer want any helpe and fauour at her handes, who is so ready to pleasure you in what shee may. And the holy end (*Syluanus*) and consummation of thy loue shall be, when with her, whom thou dost so deerly loue, thou shalt combine thy selfe in the sacred bonds of chaste and lawfull mariage, whereof I will be carefull to put you both in minde, when time & opportunitie shal serue. And (faire *Felismena*) prepare thy selfe also for thy departure, for to morrow is the day, wherein it behooues thee to go from hence. After this, all the Nymphes came in at the hall doore, who now knew of the remedies, that their gracious Ladie had giuen the Shepherds for their griefes, which thing made them not a little glad, *Doria* especially, *Cynthia* and *Polydora*, bicause they were the principall occasions of their content. The two new louers did busie themselues in nothing else, but in looking vpon one another with such affection and tendernes, as if a thousand yeeres had bin past since their loues had first begon between them. And that day they all taried there, with as great ioy and pleasure, as by such a new commenced loue might be imagined, vntil the next day in the morning, when the two Shepherds and the Shepherdesse, taking their leaue of the sage Ladie *Felicia*, and of *Felismena*, and *Belisa*, and likewise of all the Nymphes, with great ioy returned to their villages, whither they came the verie same day. And faire *Felismena* (who had that day put on againe her Shepherdesses weeds) taking her leaue of the sage Ladie, and being particularly and well aduised what to doe, with many teares embraced her, and, accompanied of all those Nymphes, went forth into the great Court before the Palace gate, where embracing euerie one by her selfe, shee went that way that they did direct her. *Felismena* went not alone, neither did her imaginations giue her leaue so to do: for on the one side she went thinking of that, which the wise Ladie had told her; and considering on the other, what little hap and lesse successe, she had yet in her loue, which made her doubt of her future happines. With these contrarieties of thoughts did she go warring in her minde, which though on the one side they made her wearie; yet on the other they did entertaine her with their company, so that in the meane time she forgot her solitarie and painefull way. She had not trauelled far in the mids of a faire valley, when towardes the west part therof, she espied a far off a Shepherds coat, which, at the entrance of a green wood stood, amongst many high Okes, and inuited thither by her importunate hunger and wearines, and also bicause the heate of the day began to come on so fast, that shee was forced to passe it away vnder the shadow of those braunchie trees, she bended her steps directly towards it. Comming to the coate, she heard how a Shepherd said vnto a Shepherdesse, that sat neere vnto him, these wordes. Entreate me not, good *Amarillis*, to sing, since thou knowest what great causes I haue to sigh, and weepe all the dayes, whilest my languishing soule shall not forsake this wearied and fainte bodie. For though musicke is no small meanes to encrease his melancholie, that is euer sadde and pensiue, as his ioye and mirthe, whoe liues a merry life; yet my greefe is not of such a qualitie, that by any humane arte or industrie may be increased or diminished. Heere hast thou thy baggepipe, play and sing, faire Shepherdesse, for well maist thou do it, hauing thy hart as free, as thy wil exempt from the bondage of loue. Then the Shepherdesse answered him againe.

Be

Be not ſuch a niggard of thy skill, *Arſileus*, which the heauens and nature haue ſo bountifully beſtowed on thee: for, ſhe that doth aske it at thy hands, will not denie to pleaſure thee in any thing ſhe may. Sing if it be poſſible that ſong, which (at the requeſt of *Argaſtus*) thou didſt make in the name of thy father *Arſenius*, when, for his loue, you both ſerued and ſued to the faire Shepherdeſſe *Beliſa*. Thy condition is ſtrange *Amarillis* (ſaide the Shepherd againe) ſtill demanding that of me, which doth leaſt of all content me. What ſhall I do, for perforce I muſt pleaſe thee, and yet not perforce, ſince he were very diſcourteous (to ſay the truth) that would not of his own accord do thee any ſeruice he could. But now thou ſeeſt, how my ill fortune doth euer narrowly purſue me, when I woulde faine take ſome ſmall reſpite, and eaſe from my greeuous thoughts. And ſeeing the great reaſon I haue (*Amarillis*) to burſt out in continuall lamentations and teares, why doſt thou then command me to ſing? What pleaſure doſt thou take to offende the occaſions of my ſorrowe? I pray God thou maiſt neuer haue the like, to feele the greeſe that I do, bicauſe Fortune might not (ſo greatly to thy coſt) informe thee of my paine. Thou knoweſt well enough I haue loſt my *Beliſa*, and that I liue without hope of her recouerie. Why doſt thou then commaund me to ſing? But ſince I will not haue thee conceiue an opinion of me to be diſcourteous (for it was neuer my manner and condition to be accounted ſo amongſt faire Shepherdeſſes, to whom we Shepherdes, and my ſelfe eſpecially for my *Beliſas* ſake, owe all reſpect of loue and dutie, and are ſo much beholding) I will endeuour (though moſt againſt my minde) to content thee: Whereupon taking vp his Rebecke that lay hard by him, he began to tune it, and doe that, which the Shepherdeſſe requeſted him. *Feliſmena*, that was liſtening to their talke, might heare very well what ſpeeches paſſed betweene them; And when ſhe ſawe they talked of *Arſenius*, and *Arſileus*, ſeruants to faire *Beliſa*, (both which ſhe tooke to be long ſince dead, as *Beliſa* had told, not only her, but the Nymphes alſo, & the Shepherds, when they found her in the Shepherds coat in the Iland) ſhe verily thought, that all, that ſhe heard, and ſawe there, was but a meere dreame, or ſome fantaſtick illuſion. But giuing attentiue eare, ſhe perceiued how the Shepherd began to touch his Rebecke ſo diuinely, that ſhe thought it to be ſome celeſtiall muſicke, who hauing plaide on it a little with a more heauenly then humane voice, began to ſing this ſong following.

O Vaineſt hopes, Alas, how many Daies
Haue I beene bondſlaue to a braue Deceite?
And how, in vaine, haue theſe two wearied Eies
With ſhow'rs of teares watred this pleaſant Vale?
Appai'd I am of cruell Loue, and Fortune,
And knowe not yet whereof I doe Complaine.

No ſmall harmes I muſt paſſe, ſince I Complaine,
For, to endure, framed are all my Daies,
The traunces, and deceites of Loue and Fortune:
But whence Complaine I, of a braue Deceite,
Of ſuch a Shepherdeſſe within this Vale,
On whom (to my great harme) I caſt mine Eies?

Yet am I much beholding to my Eies,
(Although with greeſe of them I doe Complaine)

Since

Since by their meanes I ſawe within this Vale
The faireſt thing, which neuer in my Daies
I thought to ſee, And this is no Deceite;
In proofe whereof, aske it of Loue and Fortune.

Though on the other ſide, inſtable Fortune,
And time, occaſion, and my dolefull Eies,
And not ſuſpecting this moſt braue Deceite,
Caus'd all the ill, whereof I doe Complaine:
And ſo I thinke to end my wofull Daies,
Counting my greefes, and paſſions to this Vale.

If that the riuer, hill, the meade, and Vale,
Earth, heauen, and fate, and cruell Loue, and Fortune,
The howers, and the moments, yeeres, and Daies,
My ſoule, my hart, and theſe two wearied Eies,
Doe aggrauate my greefe when I Complaine,
Who then can ſay, I liue by fond Deceite?

Deceiu'd I was, but this was no Deceite,
For, that I haue beheld within this Vale
So rare perfection, I doe not Complaine,
But to behold, how Loue and cruell Fortune
Would ſignifie vnto theſe wearied Eies,
That there ſhould come a helpe after ſome Daies.

And now the yeeres are paſt, the months, and Daies,
Vpon this confidence, and cleere Deceite:
Wearie with weeping are my watrie Eies:
Wearie to heare me is the hill, and Vale.
And in the end thus anſwered of falſe Fortune,
Ieſting at that, whereof I doe Complaine.

But wofull man, whereof doe I Complaine,
But of the length of my prolonged Daies?
Perhaps, a ſlaue to me is cruell Fortune,
That for my fault ſhe muſt pay this Deceite?
Went he not free, exempted in this Vale,
Who did command me to lift vp mine Eies?

But who againe can tame his greedie Eies,
Or can I liue, if I doe not Complaine
Of th'ill, which Loue hath done me in this Vale.
Curſt be that ill, that laſtes ſo many Daies:
But death cannot (if this be no Deceite)
Stay long to giue an end vnto my Fortune.

Calmes wonted are to come after hard Fortune,
But neuer ſhall be viewed of mine Eies.

(Nor

(Nor yet I thinke to fall in this Deceite)
O well, let the firſt ſuffice, which I Complaine,
And will (faire Shepherdeſſe) as many Daies,
As the remembrance laſteth of this Vale.

If (Shepherdeſſe) that day, when in this Vale
I did behold thee (to my hardeſt Fortune
The finall end had come of all my Daies,
Or I had leſſe beheld thoſe coyeſt Eies,
The cauſe ſhould ceaſe, whereof I doe Complaine,
And I would fall no more into Deceite.

But purpoſing to worke me this Deceite,
When by and by thou ſaweſt me in this Vale,
Milde thou didſt ſeeme: See then if I Complaine
Vniuſtly of falſe Loue, and cruell Fortune?
And now I knowe not, why thou turn'ſt thine Eies
Away, vnleſſe thou greeueſt at my Daies.

My ſong of Loue and Fortune I Complaine,
And ſince a braue Deceite *ſo many* Daies
Did laſt, water mine Eies *this hill and* Vale.

This did the Shepherd ſing, keeping time with his teares, and reſting with his ſighes, and the Shepherdeſſe ſat harkening vnto him with great content, to ſee with what a grace he did both play and ſing. But after the Shepherd had made an end of his ſong, laying his rebecke out of his hand, he ſaid to the Shepherdeſſe. Art thou now pleaſed *Amarillis*, for (to content thy minde) thou maiſt make me do that, which doth vtterly diſpleaſe me. And accurſed *Alfeus*, I wiſh that Fortune would bring thee to that paſſe, wherunto by thy deteſted ſorceries I am come, bicauſe thou mighteſt then know what good cauſe I haue to hate thee, for the cruell deſpite that thou haſt done me. O ſweet *Beliſa*, is there any in the world more bound to thee then I am? God graunt I may deduct this ſorrowfull life ſo long, that mine eies may once again enioy thy peerleſſe beautie, & that thine may ſee, if I do not acknowledge, how much I do owe vnto them. Theſe words the Shepherd ſpake with ſuch plentie of teares, that there was no hart (had it beene neuer ſo hard) that by hearing them, would not haue melted. But now that thou haſt told me *Arſileus* (ſaid the Shepherdeſſe vnto him) the beginning of thy affection, and how thy father *Arſenius* was the principall occaſion of thy ſeruice and great loue to *Beliſa*; bicauſe when he ſued vnto her, ſhe did participate, and thou profit thy ſelfe by thine owne letters & ſongs, and ſometimes by thine owne muſicke, (of all which he might haue well excuſed himſelfe) I pray thee now tell me, how thou didſt leeſe her. This is a thing (ſaid the Shepherd) which I would ſeldome repeat, but bicauſe it is euer thy qualitie, to commaund me to tell thee that, which is moſt grieuous vnto my ſoule, hearke then, and in a few words I will tell it thee.

There was a man in our towne called *Alfeus*, who had the name amongſt vs to be a great Magician, and he loued *Beliſa* extremely, before my Father euer began to ſerue her, but ſhe could not abide, not onely to ſee him, but not to heare of his name,

name, which if any had but founded in her eares, they could not haue angred her worse. Now when this Coniurer vnderstood (I know not how) of the appointed meeting betweene me and *Belisa*, to talke together in the night from the toppe of a Mulberie tree in her fathers Orchard; *Alfeus*, full of diuels, commanded two spirits to take the shape of my father *Arsenius*, & mine vpon them, & that he, that took vpon him my shape, shuld go to the appointed place; & the other, that took my fathers, should come thither, & shoot at him in the tree with a crosbow arrowe, thinking he was not his Son, but another, & then to come presently vnto him, & knowing him to be his Son, should kill himselfe, for greefe that he had slaine his owne Son, to the end that the Shepherdesse *Belisa* should kill her-selfe, seeing my selfe & my Father dead, or at least do that, which afterwards she did. This villany did the traitor *Alfeus* work, for despight of that great loue, which he knew *Belisa* did beare me; and for the contempt, which she had of his vnworthy affection. When this was in maner aforesaide done, and *Belisa* thought that my Father and I were both slaine, like a careles and desperate woman, she forsooke her Fathers house, and is gone where none can yet tel where she is, or any tydings of her. This did the Shepherdesse *Armida* tel me, and I do verily beleeue it, according to that which succeeded after. When *Felismena* had heard what the Shepherd had tolde *Amarillis*, she wondred not a little, imagining with her-selfe, that all that he tolde, did seeme to be true, and by the signes that she sawe in him, knewe that he was the same *Arsileus*, *Belisas* seruant, whom she thought to be dead, and therefore saide to her-selfe. It is not reason, that Fortune should giue her any content, that would denie it a Shepherd, that doth so well deserue it, and that stands so much in neede thereof. I will not at the least, depart from this place, without giuing him such ioy, as he will receiue at the newes of his beloued Shepherdesse. Whereupon comming to the dore of the coate, she saide to *Amarillis*. Will it please thee (faire Shepherdesse) to giue the forlorne woman of Fortune, that hath lost her way, and the hope to finde it out againe, leaue to passe away the heate of the day in this place with thee? The Shepherdesse seeing on a sudden such exceeding beautie, and so comely a feature, was so amazed, that she was vnable to answer one worde againe: but *Arsileus* saide vnto her. There wants no other thing (faire Shepherdesse) for the performing of thy request, but the place, which is not so good as thou deseruest: but if thou art wont to bee serued with such homely lodging, Come in, and wherein wee may doe thee any seruice, our good wils shall excuse the wants of our abilitie. These wordes *Arsileus* (saide *Felismena* againe) seeme well to come out of thy mouth, but the ioye, that I will leaue with thee in requitall of them, I wish may befall to me of that, which I haue so long desired. And saying thus, she went into the Coate, and the Shepherd and Shepherdesse rose vppe, offering her their places, and all three sitting downe againe, *Arsileus* saide to *Felismena*. Haue you euer seene mee before (faire Shepherdesse,) or hath any body tolde you of my name? I knowe more of thee *Arsileus* (saide *Felismena*) and of thy estate, then thou thinkest, although thou art in a Shepherdes weede, far different from that I sawe thee in, when thou wert a student in the famous Academie of *Salamanca*: If there be any thing heere to eate, I pray thee giue it me, for I will tell thee afterwardes a strange and true thing, which thou hast desired long since to knowe. This will I doe with a good will (saide *Arsileus*) though I can doe no kinde of seruice, due ynough to the great apparance of thy vertues and deserts. Whereupon *Arsileus* and *Amarillis*, taking of their seuerall scrips, gaue *Felismena* such victuals, as they had. And after she had refreshed

refreſhed her ſelfe, deſirous to make him a ioyfull man, who liued ſo long a time in greefe and ſorrow, ſhe began to ſpeake to him in this ſort. There is nothing in the world (*Arſileus*) that ought more religiouſly to be kept then firmneſſe, and moſt of all in a womans hart where it is ſeldomer wont to be found. But the reaſon thereof I plainly perceiue, that men for the moſt part are occaſions of their ſmall conſtancie towardes them. I ſpeake this for the great bond wherein thou art obliged to a Shepherdeſſe, that I knowe, who would not (if ſhe knew thou wert aliue) exchange her ioy and content for all that the whole world could affoord. And then ſhe began to tell him in order all that was paſt, from the time that ſhe killed the three Sauages, vntill ſhe came to the Lady *Felicias* houſe: In which diſcourſe *Arſileus* heard the golden newes of the thing, which he ſo deerely loued, and all that had paſſed betweene her and the Nymphes, when they found her ſleeping in the *Iland of the Lake*, as you haue heard before: And that ioie, which he then felt, when he vnderſtood, that the loue and faith which his Shepherdeſſe did beare him, remained yet ſincere, and inuiolate in her hart, and the place certaine, where he might finde her out, was ſo extreme, that he fell downe in a traunce betweene them both, by putting his life in hazard, with ſurfeit of that ſudden paſſion: But comming to himſelfe againe, he ſaid to *Feliſmena*. With what wordes ſhall I ſufficiently (faire Shepherdeſſe) thanke thee for the great curteſie thou haſt done me, and with what deedes acquite that ſingular content, wherewith thou haſt now bleſſed me, the like whereof I pray God ſo amply in euery thing may giue thee, as thy hart can either wiſh or deſire. O my ſweete *Beliſa*, is it poſſible that I ſhall ſee thoſe eies ſo ſoone againe, that had ſo great power ouer mine, to kiſſe thoſe delicate hands, that made ſo intricate a knot in my hart, to heare thoſe angelicall words, and ſee that ſingular beauty, that rauiſhed ſo much my admiring ſenſes. And that after ſo many troubles of minde, and turmoiles of Fortune, ſuch ſoueraine felicitie to ſucceede in their places? And ſpeaking this with many teares, he tooke *Feliſmenas* hands, and with great reuerence kiſſed them. And ſo did the Shepherdeſſe *Amarillis*, ſaying. Thou haſt reuiued (faire Shepherdeſſe) the moſt ſorrowfull man that euer I did ſee, and filled him full of ioye, who did leſt deſerue to haue it. Sixe monethes hath *Arſileus* liued in this Cotage ſo ſorrowfull and deſolate a life, as none coulde imagine the like, without all manner of conſolation, but that certaine Shepherdeſſes, feeding their flockes in theſe plaines (of the which I am one) ſometimes come in to viſite him, and to affoord him that comfort, which his greefe (were it at the leſt capable of any at all, woulde giue him leaue to embrace. This is not ſuch a greefe (ſaide *Feliſmena* againe) that he, that hath it, may thinke to take any comfort in any thing, but in the firſt cauſer thereof, or by whom he heareth ſuch newes, as I haue now tolde him: which are ſo good for me (faire Shepherdeſſe) ſaide *Arſileus*, that they haue reuiued a liuing hart in me, which was mortified and worne almoſt out with the clogge of continual care. So much did the Shepherds words & teares, vttered and powred foorth for ioy, mollifie her tender hart, as by her owne, ſhe gaue manifeſt proofe thereof. And in this ſort they tarried there, vntill the heate of the day was paſt; and then *Arſileus*, taking his leaue with great thankes to both the Shepherdeſſes, with infinite ioy went towards the Temple of *Diana*, the ſame way that *Feliſmena* did direct him.

Syluanus, and *Seluagia* with that content, as they are wont to haue, which after a long abſence, enioy the ſight of their deſired Loue, did goe towardes the pleaſant meadowes, where their flockes went feeding in companie of the Shep-

herde

herde *Syrenus*, who went alſo free and deliuered from that kinde of content, that hee behelde in them, and from the paine, which the want thereof is wont to procure; bicauſe hee neither thought of louing well, nor cared, whether he was beloued or no? Whereupon *Syluanus* ſaid vnto him. Euerie time that I ſee thee (my deere friend *Syrenus*) thou ſhouldeſt not be the man (me thinkes) that thou wert wont to be, but that iointly with thy former thoughts and affection, thou art thy ſelfe alſo chaunged: On the one ſide, I haue in a manner pitie of thee; on the other, it greeues me not to ſee thee careleſſe of loues misfortunes. In what reſpect (ſaid *Syrenus*) haſt thou pitie on me? Bicauſe I thinke it (ſaide *Syluanus*) the moſt malecontent and worſt eſtate of life, not to loue well, nor to be beloued againe. It is not long ſince that thou didſt vnderſtand this cleane contrarie (ſaid *Syrenus*.) And for mine owne part, I pray God that Fortune may ſtill preſerue me in this ill eſtate, and thee in that ioy & pleaſure which thou takeſt in ſeeing thy *Seluagia*. For though there might ariſe ſome emulation of thy loue, and being beloued of ſo faire a Shepherdeſſe; yet can I aſſure thee, that Fortune doth not neglect to tune you the content, that you receiue of your mutuall loue. The hurt, ſaid *Seluagia*, that ſhe may doe vs with her diſordinate effects, can neuer be ſo great, as my ioy is to ſee my ſelfe ſo well beſtowed. Ah *Seluagia* (ſaid *Syrenus* to her) I haue alſo ſeene my ſelfe as well beloued, as none might be more, and thought as little to ſee an end of my loue, as you do now: but let none account without Fortune, nor lay his foundation without the conſideration of the mutabilitie of time. But I doe owe no ſmall reſpect of loue and duetie to the ſage Ladie *Felicia*, whom the heauens requite: For I neuer imagined to ſpeake ſo freely of mine ill in ſuch a time, when I thought to feele it ſo little. But I am more indebted to her (ſaide *Seluagia*) bicauſe ſhee was the cauſe, that I loued him well, whoſe ſight I euer enioyed before mine eies: But *Syluanus* turning his eies to her, ſaide. This debt I ſhoulde with great reaſon (my life) requite, if it were ſuch a thing, that might with life bee paied, which God grant thee (ſaide *Seluagia*) ſince without the ſame mine ſhoulde be woorſe then a continuall death. *Syrenus* ſeeing the amorous words on both ſides, with a ſmiling countenance ſaide vnto them. It is well that euery one can ſo well acquite himſelfe for his good turne done him, that the one will neither be in debt, nor the other haue any indebted to him; and yet in mine owne opinion it is better, that you reioyce ſo much, and ſo louingly entreate of your amorous affections, my ſelfe not being a thirde in them. With theſe and other ſpeeches the newe Louers and careleſſe *Syrenus* paſſed away the time and length of the way, which they made an end of about ſunne ſet: And before they came to the fountaine of the Sicamours, they heard a voice of a Shepherdeſſe ſweetely ſinging, whom they knew by and by, for *Syluanus* hearing her, ſaide vnto them. This is *Diana* doubtleſſe, that ſinges at the fountaine of the Sicamours. It is ſhe indeede (ſaid *Seluagia*.) Let vs go behinde theſe Myrtle trees neere vnto her, bicauſe we may heare her the better. Agreed ſaide *Syrenus*, although the time hath beene, when her muſicke and ſight delighted me more then now. But all three going into the thicket of Myrtle trees, and bicauſe it was about the going down of the Sunne, they ſawe faire *Diana* neere to the fountaine, ſhining with ſuch ſurpaſſing beautie, that they ſtoode (as men that had neuer ſeene her before) amazed and in a woonder. Her haire hung downe looſe from her head behinde, and gathered vp with a carnation ſtringe, which parted them in the middes: her eies were fixed on the ground, and ſomtimes looking into the cleere fountaine, and wiping away ſome teares, that nowe and then trickled downe her beautifull cheekes, ſhe ſung this Dittie.

When

When that I poore ſoule was borne,
I was borne vnfortunate:
Preſently the Fates had ſworne
To foretell my hapleſſe ſtate.

Titan his faire beames did hide,
Phœbe 'clips'd her ſiluer light,
In my birth my mother dide,
Tong, and faire in heauie plight.

And the nurſe, that gaue me ſucke,
Hapleſſe was in all her life:
And I neuer had good lucke
Being maide or married wife.

I lou'd well, and was belou'd,
And forgetting, was forgot:
This a hapleſſe marriage mou'd,
Greeuing that it kils me not.

With the earth would I were wed,
Then in ſuch a graue of woes
Daily to be buried,
Which no end nor number knowes.

Tong my father married me,
Forc't by my obedience:
Syrenus, thy faith, and thee
I forgot, without offence.

Which contempt I pay ſo far,
Neuer like was paide ſo much:
Iealouſies doe make me war,
But without a cauſe of ſuch.

I doe goe with iealous eies
To my foldes, and to my ſheepe,
And with iealouſie I riſe,
When the day begins to peepe.

At his table I doe eate,
In his bed with him I lie,
But I take no reſt, nor meate,
Without cruell iealouſie.

If I aske him what he ailes,
And whereof he iealous is?
In his anſwere then he failes:
Nothing can he ſay to this.

In his face there is no cheere,
But he euer hangs the head:
In each corner he doth peere,
And his ſpeech is ſad and dead.

Ill the poore ſoule liues ywiſſe,
That ſo hardly married is.

The time was once, when *Dianas* teares and dolefull ſong and the ſorrow, that by her ſadde lookes ſhe expreſſed, might haue ſo much mooued *Syrenus* hart, as put the Shepherdes life in ſuch danger, that all other remedies (but onely proceeding from the ſame) had beene impoſſible to haue helpt it; whoſe eies and hart, ſince now they were deliuered out of that dangerous priſon, tooke no delight to beholde *Diana*, nor greeued at her ſorrowfull lamentations. And the Shepherd *Syluanus* had leſſe cauſe in his minde to be condolent for any greefe that *Diana* had, conſidering ſhe neuer had the ſmalleſt regard of the greateſt woes which he paſſed for her ſake. Onely *Seluagia* helped her with her teares, fearefull (by the fall of her ioy) of her own fortune, whereupon ſhe ſaid to *Syrenus*. There is no perfection, beautie, nor fauour, in natures gift, which ſhe hath not liberally beſtowed on *Diana*, bicauſe her beautie is peereleſſe, her wit and diſcretion admired, her good graces excellent, and all other her commendab'e parts, which a Shepherdeſſe ſhould haue, not to be ſeconded: ſince in the leſt of them, that made her ſuch a woonder in our age, there was neuer any yet that excelled her. Onlie one thing ſhe wanted, which I euer ſuſpected and feared, and this was her good Fortune, which woulde neuer accompanie her, to haue made her liue a contented and ioyfull life, which (to ſpeake the truth)

ſhe euer well deſerued. She that ſo vniuſtly hath taken it from ſo many (ſaide *Syrenus*) by great reaſon ſhould not enioy ſuch a happie eſtate; which I ſpeake not, that I am not ſorrie to ſee this Shepherdeſſe ſo ſorrowful, but for the great reaſon I haue, not to wiſh her any content at all. Saie not ſo (ſaid *Seluagia*) for I cannot thinke, that *Diana* hath offended thee in any thing. What offence did ſhe by marrying, compelled thereunto by the conſtraint of her parents, and kinsfolkes, and not by her owne will? And after ſhe was married, what could ſhe do (hauing due regarde to her honor and honeſtie) but forget thee? Truly *Syrenus*, thou ſhouldeſt haue greater cauſe to complaine of *Diana*, then I haue heard thee hitherto alledge. In truth *Syrenus* (ſaide *Syluanus*) *Seluagia* hath ſo great reaſon for that ſhe ſaith, that none can well diſprooue it. And if there be any that of ingratitude can iuſtly accuſe her, it is I, who loued her more then my ſelfe, ſhe requiting it ſo ill againe, and with ſuch cruell contempt as thou knoweſt well enough. *Seluagia* caſting an amorous eie vpon him, ſaide. But thou didſt not deſerue (my beloued Shepherd) to be ſo ill entreated, ſince there is no Shepherdeſſe in the worlde, that may not thinke her-ſelfe bleſt to enioy thy happy loue. About this time *Diana* perceiued, that their talke was of her, for the Shepherds were ſo loude, that ſhe might heare them very well: Wherfore riſing vp, and looking among the Myrtle trees, ſhe knew the Shepherdes, and the Shepherdeſſe that was ſitting betweene them. Who, perceiuing that ſhe had eſpied them, came to her, and curteouſly ſaluted her, and ſhe them againe with a good grace and countenance, asking them, where they had beene ſo long a time. Whom they anſwered with another kinde of wordes and countenance, then they were wont to do, which ſeemed ſo ſtrange to *Diana*, that though ſhe tooke no care for any of their loues, yet in the end it greeued her, to ſee them ſo much altered from that they were wont to be, and eſpecially when ſhe perceiued what great ioy *Syluanus* tooke in beholding faire *Seluagia*. And bicauſe it was now time to go home, and that the flockes tooke their accuſtomed way towards the village, they went after them, and by the way faire *Diana* ſaide to *Syrenus*. There are many daies paſt, Shepherd, ſince I ſawe thee in theſe valleyes. But more (ſaide he) ſince I woulde haue loſt my life, in lieu ſhe had not ſeene me, that made me paſſe it away in ſuch great greefe, whereas in the end it contents me not a little to talke of my paſſed fortunes, that finde my ſelfe now in a ſafe hauen. Doſt thou then thinke this to be a ſure eſtate, (ſaide *Diana*) wherein thou now liueſt? It cannot be dangerous (ſaid he) when I dare ſpeake thus before thee. I neuer remember (ſaide *Diana*) that I ſawe thee ſo much loſt for my loue, but that thy toong might haue had as much libertie, as now it hath. Thou art as diſcreet in imagining this (ſaid he) as in all other things elſe. Why ſo (ſaide *Diana?*) bicauſe there are no other meanes (ſaide he) to make thee not know that, which thou haſt loſt in me, but onely by thinking that I did not loue thee ſo much, that my toong might not haue that libertie, as thou ſayeſt. But yet for all this I pray God giue thee ſo much content as ſometimes (ſaide *Diana*) thou haſt wiſhed me: For though my loue be now paſt, yet the relickes therof that remaine in my ſoule, are ſufficient to wiſh thee al the happines in the world. Euery word that *Syrenus* ſpake was a dagger to *Dianas* hart. For God knowes, if ſhe would not haue rather giuen a more willing eare to his wonted complaints, then occupied her minde in beleeuing ſuch apparant ſignes of his newe libertie. And though ſhe anſwered to euery thing the Shepherd ſpake vnto her, with a certaine kinde of careleſſenes, and did helpe her-ſelfe by her owne diſcretion (bicauſe ſhe would not ſhew any ſigne of ſorrow for their libertie) yet in her minde ſhe ruminated

nated the discontent, that by their speeches & semblances she had so deepely cõceiued. And with talking of these and other matters, they were come to their village by that time the Sunne had hidden all his beames, and taking leaue one of another, they went to their owne houses.

But comming to *Arsileus* againe, who went with great ioye and desire towards the wood where *Dianas* Temple was, to see his Shepherdesse, he came to a little brooke, that ranne hard by the Temple amongst a row of greene Sicamours, vnder whose coole shadowes he sat him downe, hoping that Fortune would send some body that way, by whom he might make his *Belisa* vnderstand of his being there, bicause he thought it somwhat dangerous to come vpon her on the sudden, especially when she thought him long since to be dead: And on the other side, the vnpatient desire that he had to see her, would not suffer him to take any rest at all. But the Shepherd consulting with himselfe what was best to be done, espied by chaunce a Nymph of wonderfull beautie comming towardes him with her bowe in her hand, and her quiuer at her necke, looking on euerie side, if she could espie any Deare or wilde beast, to trie how she could bestow an arrow, that she carried in her bow ready bent. But seeing the Shepherd, she went straight vnto him, who rising vp, did her such reuerence as was due to so faire a Nymph, whom she curteously saluted againe: For this was faire *Polydora*, one of the three that *Felismena* and the Shepherds deliuered from the violent hands of the Sauages, and a deere friend to *Belisa*. But both sitting downe againe vpon the greene grasse, *Polydora* asked him what countrey man he was, and the cause of his comming thither. Whom *Arsileus* answered thus. The countrey where I was borne (faire Nymph) hath so ill intreated me, that (me thinkes) it greeues me to call it mine, although on the other side, I am bound to loue it much, and more then I am able to expresse. And to tell thee the cause, that Fortune had to bring me to this place, it were first needefull for thee (faire Nymph) to tell me, if thou dost belong to the sage Lady *Felicia*, in whose Palace (I heard say) my deerest *Belisa* doth remaine, the onely cause of my exile out of my natiue town, & of that infinit sorrow, which her long absence hath made me feel. I am of Lady *Felicias* house (said *Polydora*) & the greteſt friend in the world to the Shepherdesse that thou hast named: and bicause thou maist also make such an account of me, if I thought I might profit thee any thing by giuing thee some coũsel, I would aduise thee to forget hir, if it were possible, or (if it lay in thy power) not once to haue an amorous thought of hir, bicause the remedie of thy griefe is no lesse impossible, then the helpe of that, which she suffers, since the cruell ground doth now feede on him, who was once the hope of al her sorrow. And may this be true (said he) that the earth doth consume hir seruant *Arsileus*? most true (said *Polydora*) for this was he, whom she loued more then her selfe, and he, whom I may iustly call the most vnfortunate man besides thee, bicause thou hast setled thy thoughts in such a place, where it is impossible for them to haue any remedie. For though I was neuer in loue my selfe, yet do I hold it for a firme opinion, that the passion of death is not so ill, as that, which one suffers by louing, her that hath her affection setled in another place. I beleeue it well faire Nymph (said *Arsileus*) and that such are *Belisas* golden virtues and rare constancie, that as imperious death cannot make her settle her affection in any other place, so there is none in the world, that can make her chaunge her minde, wherein (faire Nymph) the whole summe of my felicitie consisteth. How doth thy felicitie consist Shepherd (said she) by louing so as thou saist, when as her loue is so strongly fixed in another place? This is a strange kinde of affection, and neuer heard of before. Bi-

cauſe thou maiſt no longer (faire Nymph) maruell at my words, nor at the maner of the loue which I beare to *Beliſa* the ſoueraigne miſtreſſe of my thoughts, giue eare a while (ſaid *Arſileus*) and I wil tel thee that, thou neuer thought'ſt to heare, although the beginning of it, thy friend, and the loadſtarre of my life hath perhaps told thee. And then he told her from the beginning of their loues to *Alfeus* his inchauntments and braue deceit, and euerie thing elſe, that till then in his loues aforeſaid befell vnto him: which the Shepherd told ſometimes with teares, being loth to recall to memorie his paſſed miſhaps; ſometimes with ſighes, that he fetcht from the centre of his hart, imagining what his miſtreſſe *Beliſa* might feele in theſe occurrents and greeuous accidents. And by his dolefull words and alterations in his countenance, he gaue ſo great a ſpirit to that he ſaid, and ſhewed ſuch ſignes of inwarde griefe, that as it ſtrooke the Nymph in a great admiration, ſo likewiſe in no leſſe compaſſion of his paines: but when ſhe vnderſtood, that vndoubtedly he was *Arſileus*, the ioy that ſhe conceiued thereof was ſo great, that with words ſhe could not tell it, and thought her ſelfe vnable at that preſent to do any more, but with inward ſence to ſurfet on the ſweet ioy of ſuch happie newes. Behold then what might be expected of comfortleſſe *Beliſa*, when ſhe ſhould vnderſtand of theſe gladſome tydings. The Nymph therfore caſting hir eies on *Arſileus*, not without teares of inward gladnes ſaid vnto him, I would I had thy ripe wit and fluent toong (*Arſileus*) to make thee know what infinite pleaſure I conceiue by the good ſucceſſe, that Fortune hath ſolicited for my *Beliſa*, becauſe I might otherwiſe be deceiued, by thinking that ſo ſimple a conceit and barren wordes as mine are, could declare it. I euer thought that the coutinuall griefe of my *Beliſa* ſhould be at length conuerted into great gladnes, induced thereunto by the great deſerts of her ſingular beautie, wiſdome, & faith that ſhe hath euer kept firme and inuiolate, but did euer feare on the other ſide, that Fortune neuer made account to giue it her ſo amply, and in ſuch ſorte, as I did deſire it, bicauſe it is her condition (for the moſt parte) to bring her effectes to paſſe cleane contrarie to their deſires that loue well. Happie maieſt thou call thy ſelfe *Arſileus*, ſince thou didſt deſerue to bee ſo well beloued in life, that couldeſt not bee forgotten after death. And bicauſe the deferring of ſuch great ioy, for a hart that needes it ſo much, may not be too long, giue me leaue to goe and cartie ſo good newes to thy Shepherdeſſe, as thoſe of thy life, and of her deceiued minde. And depart not from this place vntill I come againe with her whom thou doſt ſo much deſire, and moſt deſerue to ſee. As I can expect nothing elſe (ſaide *Arſileus*) from ſuch excellent wiſdome, and exceeding beautie as thine, but all ioy and contentment whatſoeuer: euen ſo faire Nymph (bicauſe thou doſt ſo greatly deſire to giue it me) thy will be done, whereby I hope to gouerne my ſelfe as well in this, as in all things elſe, that ſhall enſue thereof. Whereupon they taking leaue of one another, *Polydora* went to tel *Beliſa* theſe inopinate newes, & *Arſileus* remained ſtill, tarying for them vnder the pleaſant ſhadow of thoſe green Sicamours, who (to entertaine the time with ſomething) as they are wont to doe, that are attending ſome ioyfull thing, tooke out his Rebecke, and to the tune of it, began with ſweeteſt voice to ſing theſe verſes following.

Now Loue, and fortune turne to me againe,
And now each one enforceth and aſſures
A hope, that was diſmaied, dead, and vaine:
And from the harbour of miſhaps recures

A hart, that is consum'd in burning fire,
With vnexpected gladnes, that adiures
My soule to lay aside her mourning tire,
And senses to prepare a place for ioy.
Care in obliuion endlesse shall expire:
For euery greefe of that extreme annoy,
Which when my torment raign'd, my soule (alas)
Did feele, the which long absence did destroy,
Fortune so well appaies, that neuer was
So great the torment of my passed ill,
As is the ioy of this same good I passe.
Returne my hart, surfaulted with the fill
Of thousand great vnrests, and thousand feares:
Enioy thy good estate, if that thou will:
And wearied eies, leaue of your burning teares,
For soone you shall behold her with delight,
For whom my spoiles with glorie Cupid *beares.*
Senses which seeke my star so cleere and bright,
By making heere and there your thoughts estray,
Tell me, what will you feele before her sight?
Hence solitarinesse, torments away
Felt for her sake, and wearied members cast
Of all your paine, redeem'd this happy day.
O stay not time, but passe with speedie hast,
And Fortune hinder not her comming now.
O God, betides me yet this greefe at last?
Come my sweete Shepherdesse, the life which thou
(Perhaps) didst thinke was ended long ago,
At thy commaund is ready still to bow.
Comes not my Shepherdesse desired so?
O God what if she's lost, or if she stray
Within this wood, where trees so thicke doe growe?
Or if this Nymph, that lately went away,
Perhaps forgot to go and seeke her out.
No, no, in her obliuion neuer lay.
Thou onely art my Shepherdesse about
Whose thoughts my soule shall finde her ioy and rest:
Why commst not then to assure it from doubt?
O see'st thou not the sunne passe to the vvest,
And if it passe, and I behold thee not,
Then I my vvonted torments vvill request
And thou shalt vvaile my hard and heauie lot.

When *Polydora* went from *Arsileus*, not far from thence she met with the Shepherdesse *Belisa*, who was going to recreate her selfe in the greene wood, in the companie of the two Nymphes *Cynthia* and *Doria*, who seeing her comming in such haste, began to be afraid, thinking that she ran away from some thing, from the which it behoued them also to flie away. But now when she came neerer vnto them,

the ioy that they perceiued by her milde eies and countenance did warrant them from danger, and being come to them, ſhe went preſently to the Shepherdeſſe *Beliſa*, and imbracing her with great ioy and gladnes, ſaide thus vnto her. If thou kneweſt from whom this imbracement came, thou wouldſt with greater content (faire Shepherdeſſe) receiue it then now thou doſt. I can come from no part faire Nymph (ſaid ſhe) where I may more ioyfully accept it, then from thine owne ſelfe, ſince he, from whom with the ſupremeſt ioy in the world I ſhould entertaine it, is not now in the world: And I would deſire to liue no longer, if I were now altogither depriued of the content, that this miſerable life may at ſome times affoorde me, which onely I account, faire Nymph, thy friendly and gracious companie. This life (ſaide *Polydora*) from henceforth I hope thou ſhalt enioy with more content then thou canſt imagine: And bicauſe thou maiſt knowe how, let vs ſit vnder the ſhade of this greene Sicamour, and I will acquaint thee with ſuch matters, as ſhall reuiue thy ſpirits, and decaied ſoule. *Beliſa*, and the Nymphes ſat them downe taking *Polydora* in the mids, who ſaid to *Beliſa*. Tell me (faire Shepherdeſſe) how certaine art thou of the death of *Arſenius* and of *Arſileus*? *Beliſa* vnable to ſtop the ſudden eruption of her violent teares, anſwered. So certaine, as one that beheld that tragicall ſpectacle with her owne eies, the one ſhot thorow with an arrowe, the other killing himſelfe with his owne Faulchion. But what wilt thou ſay to one, that will tell thee, that theſe two, whom thou didſt ſee dead, are aliue, and in perfect health? Her would I anſwere (ſaide *Beliſa*) that told me this, that ſhe had a deſire to renew my teares, and to bring thoſe to my thoughts againe, whoſe remembrance is my death, or that ſhe tooke a delight to ſport her ſelfe with my greeſes. I am certaine (ſaide *Polydora*) thou thinkeſt not ſo of me, for thou knoweſt how thy cares haue touched me neerer then any other, to whom thou didſt euer impart them. But tell me what is that Shepherd of thy towne, that is called *Alſeus*. The greateſt Coniurer (ſaid *Beliſa*) and the moſt cunning Magician that is (I thinke) in *Europe*, who did once fondly ſpend his time in louing and ſeruing me. He is a man (faire Nymph) whoſe dealing and conuerſation is altogether with Diuels, which he makes to take ſuch ſhapes vpon them as he liſt himſelfe, ſo that many times thou wouldſt thinke, thou were talking with thy familiar acquaintance (into whoſe ſhape he transformeth ſome ſpirit or other) when indeede thou art talking with a very Diuell. Thou muſt therefore knowe faire Shepherdeſſe (ſaide *Polydora*) that the ſame *Alſeus* with his enchantments and diuelliſh deuiſes hath beene the cauſe of the deceite, wherein hitherto thou haſt liued, and of the infinite teares, that for the ſame thou haſt powred forth, bicauſe knowing that *Arſileus* was to ſpeake with thee that night (as it was concluded betweene you) he cauſed two ſpirits to take the ſhapes of *Arſileus* and his father vpon them. And *Arſileus* deſiring to talke with thee, effected that, that ſhould fall out, which with thine eies thou didſt that night beholde. Bicauſe thinking they were dead, thou mighteſt deſpaire and kill thy ſelfe, or do that (at the leaſt) which thou haſt already done. When *Beliſa* heard what faire *Polydora* did tell her, ſhe was ſo farre beſide her-ſelfe, that for a while ſhe could not ſpeake one word, but comming to her-ſelfe again, ſhe ſaid vnto her. Thou haſt told me (faire Nymph) ſtrange things, if my ſorrow woulde giue me leaue to beleeue them. By that loue which (thou ſaieſt) thou doſt beare me, tell me (I beſeech thee) how thou knoweſt it, or of whom thou haſt vnderſtoode that thoſe two, which I ſawe dead before mine eies, were not *Arſenius* and *Arſileus*? Of no other ſaide *Polydora*, but of *Arſileus* himſelfe. What, of *Arſileus*, ſaide *Beliſa*? Is it poſſible that my *Arſileus* doth liue,

and

and so nigh to blesse me with these happy newes? I will tell thee how possible it is (saide *Polydora*) if thou wilt go with me, for before we come yonder to those three hedges, which thou seest before thee, I will shew thee the man, that shal restore thy decayed hope, and restore thee thy life againe. O soueraigne Deities (said *Belisa*) what words do I heare? That the renuing of my ioyes & felicitie is so apparant, and that my *Arsileus* is there? Why dost thou not leade me (faire Nymph) to the place, where I may see him, and die at his feete with ioy of his happy sight? Ah thou dost not loue me (*Polydora*) so much as thou saiest. This did the faire Shepherdesse speake with an vncertaine kinde of ioy, and doubtfull hope of that, which she so much desired. But *Polydora* rising vp, and taking her by the hand, and the Nymphes *Cynthia* and *Doria*, who for ioy also to see *Belisas* good happe, would not stay behinde, went to the brooke, where *Arsileus* was. And before they came, a temperate aire, that came from the place where he sat, rauished their sences with the sweete voice of the enamoured Shepherd, who had not yet left off his musicke, but still began a fresh to sing vpon this old prouerbe.

Good fortune come and tarie.

With the glosse that he himselfe did descant vpon it to his owne purpose.

The Glosse.

What motions, times and changes,
What waies, what vncouth ranges,
What slights, what disillusions,
What gladnes (in conclusions)
Haue risen of such sorrowes?
One faith yet all these borrowes,
And one good loue assureth,
And my misfortunes cureth.
And since from greefe they varie,
Good fortune come and tarie.

Good hap thou still dost moue thee,
So light as not behooues thee,
And if, thus to content me,
Thou thinkest to repent thee?
Then better is my smarting:
For if thou goest, At parting
My sense and wits forsake me:
But if (more sure to make me)
Thou com'st, my soule to marrie,
Good fortune come and tarrie.

But if I come in vaine heere,
Or liue deceiu'd, to plaine heere:
For, wretched men what feare not?
To loose my life, then weare not
The same more safe each hower?
O feare, strange is thy power.
For th'ill thou figurest euer.
But since such beautie neuer
Did any falshood carrie,
Good fortune come and tarrie.

When *Belisa* heard *Arsileus* his musicke, she felt such inward ioy, as the like did neuer any, whereupon resoluing with her selfe to shake off all former sorrowe that had appalled that surpassing beautie, which nature had bountifully bestowed on her, and decaied those pleasant lookes, and comely fauour (the onely source of *Arsileus* his teares and sighes) in her sweete and alluring face, now on a sudden with a renewed grace and excellent beautie (whereat the Nymphes were not a little amazed) she spake in this sort, saying. This is, without doubt, the voice of my *Arsileus*, if I doe not deceiue my selfe by calling him mine. When the Shepherd did see the cause of all his passed cares, and present contents before his eies, the ineffable ioy that he conceiued thereat was so great, that his hart vnable to comprehend it, was troubled in such sort, that at that instant he could not vtter a word: To whom the Nymphes,

Nymphes, perceiuing in what a traunce the ſight of his Shepherdeſſe had put *Arſileus*, moſt louingly came, when the Shepherd, ſuſpending that for a litle while, which the preſent ioy wrought in him, with many teares ſaide. With what wordes am I able to expreſſe the ſatisfaction that fortune hath made me for ſo many greefes and troubles, as for thy ſake (ſweete Shepherdeſſe *Beliſa*) I haue endured. O who may giue me now a new hart, and not ſo diſtempered with ſorrowfull thoughts, to receiue into it ſuch vnſpeakable ioy as thy happy ſight preſents me! O fortune, I haue no more to requeſt of thee, and thou no more to giue me: yet onely one thing I aske thee, That, ſince it is thy faſhion to giue no ſupreme happineſſe without extreme heauineſſe, the great force of this vnexpected ioy, which thou haſt giuen me this ſeuenfold happy day, may with little ſorrowe (in liew of ſuch a ſoueraigne ſweete) and with ſuch an oppoſite, as may but a while countermaund this ſweete content, be mildly and with fauour tempered. And faire Nymphes, in whoſe ſacred guard and ampare, ſuch great treaſure hath bin diuinely preſerued, & where it could neuer haue beene better imployed, let your harts reioice with mine, at this infinite ioy that reuiues it, which thing (if you your ſelues haue ſometimes loued well) ſhall ſeeme no leſſe then due to my reſtored good. O faire Shepherdeſſe, why doſt thou not ſpeake vnto me, doth it greeue thee to ſee me, or doſt thou take no delight in ſeeing thy *Arſileus*? hath his greeuous ſight troubled thy toong, or the extreme ioy thereof hindered the paſſage of thy golden wordes? Whom *Beliſa* anſwered thus. The ioy which I haue to ſee thee (my deere *Arſileus*) were but little, if with words it might be told. Let it ſuffice thee to know in what continual panges and dangers of my life, thy ſuppoſed death hath put me, and by that thou ſhalt ſee what a world of ioy thy renewed life hath brought to this my mournfull ſoule. At the ende of which words, by reaſon of an iſſue of ſwelling teares aſcending vp from the center of her ſorrowfull hart into her eye brinkes, ſhe was not able to vtter out the reſt of her minde, which the tender harted Nymphes, being mollified with the milde and pitifull words of both theſe louers to one another, did helpe and accompany with theirs. And bicauſe night was comming on, they went all to *Felicias* houſe, telling to each other the diſcourſe & accidents of their liues, which till then they had both paſſed. *Beliſa* asked her *Arſileus* for his father *Arſenius*, who told her, that, as ſoone as he knew ſhe was gon, he went to one of his Farmes not far from thence, where he liues as quiet and contented a life, as he could wiſh, hauing put all mundane affaires in obliuion: whereat *Beliſa* was verie glad, and ſo they came to the Palace of ſage *Felicia*, where they were welcommed with great ioye and feaſt, whoſe hands *Beliſa* kiſſed many times, ſaying, euermore that ſhee was the cauſe of her good Fortune. And ſo did *Arſileus*, to whom *Felicia* ſhewed an earneſt will to do euer for him, what lay in her power.

The end of the fifth booke.

The ſixth Booke of Diana of George of Montemayor.

AFter that *Arſileus* was gone, *Feliſmena* ſtaied ſtill with the Shepherdeſſe *Amarillis*, that was with him, demaunding of one an other the courſe of their liues, a common thing to them, that finde themſelues in like places. And as *Feliſmena* was telling the Shepherdeſſe the cauſe of her comming thither, a iolly Shepherd came to the Coate, though very ſad by his countenance and gate. When *Amarillis* ſawe him, ſhe roſe vp in great haſte to be gone, but *Feliſmena* taking hold by her garment, and ſuſpecting what the cauſe of her ſudden departure might be, ſaid vnto her. It were not reaſon Shepherdeſſe, that I ſhould receiue this diſcourteſie at thy hands, who deſires ſo much to ſerue thee. But as ſhe ſtriued to be gone from thence, the Shepherd with many teares ſaid vnto her. My deſire is (*Amarillis*) hauing reſpect to that, which thou makeſt me ſuffer, not to ſee thee ſorie for this vnfortunate Shepherd, but to conſider what belongs to thy wiſedome and beautie, and that there is nothing in the worlde worſe beſeeming a Shepherdeſſe of thy braue qualities, then to intreate one ſo cruelly, that loues thee ſo entirely. Beholde theſe wearied eies (*Amarillis*) that haue ſhed ſo many teares, and then thou ſhalt ſee what reaſon thine haue to ſhew themſelues ſo angrie againſt this miſerable man. Alas, that thou flieſt away from me, not ſeeing the reaſon thou haſt to abide my preſence. Stay *Amarillis*, and harken to my complaints, and to my iuſt excuſes, and if thou wilt not anſwere me at all, yet I will be content, ſo that thou ſtaieſt ſtill. What can it hinder thee to heare him, whom it hath ſo deerely coſt to ſee thee? And looking vpon *Feliſmena*, with many teares he beſought her, not to let her goe, who with ſweete and gentle wordes intreated the Shepherdeſſe not to vſe him with ſo ſmall pitie, whom he ſhewed to loue more then himſelfe, or that ſhe would (at the leſt) harken vnto him, ſince ſhe could not hurt hir ſelfe much by doing ſo litle. But *Amarillis* ſaid: Intreat me not (faire Shepherdeſſe) to giue eare to him, who beleeues his thoughts, more then my words. For behold, this Shepherd that ſtands in this fained ſort before thee, is one of the moſt diſloyall men, that euer liued, & one of them that moſt of al troubles our ſimple louing Shepherdeſſes with his falſe deceits & diſſimulatiõs. Then ſaid *Filemon* to *Feliſmena*. My onely requeſt and deſire is, faire Shepherdeſſe, that thou wouldſt be iudge in the cauſe betweene *Amarillis* and me, wherein if I am found culpable, or the iuſt prouoker of that anger, and ill opinion that ſhe hath wrongfully conceiued againſt me, that then I may looſe my life; and if ſhe be, that I may haue no other thing for ſatisfaction, but her confeſſion, how much ſhe hath iniured, and owes me. To leeſe thy life (ſaid *Amarillis*) I am ſure thou wilt not, bicauſe thou wilt not wiſh thy ſelfe ſo much harme, nor me ſo much good, as for my ſake to put thy life in aduenture. But I am content, that this faire Shepherdeſſe be iudge (if it pleaſe her) betweene vs, to conſider of our reaſons, and to declare which of vs both is more worthie of blame. Agreed (ſaid *Feliſmena*) and let vs ſit downe at the foote of this greene hedge neere to the flouriſhing meadow before our eies, for I will ſee what reaſon you haue to complaine of one another. After they were all three ſet downe vpon the greene graſſe, *Filemon* began thus to ſay. I truſt faire Shepherdeſſe, if thou haſt at any time beene touched with the force of Loue, that thou ſhalt plainly perceiue what ſmall

reaſon

reaſon *Amarillis* hath to be angrie with me,& to conceiue ſo ill an opinion of the vnſtained faith I beare her,which makes her ſurmiſe that,which neuer any other Shepherdeſſe hath euer yet imagined of her louing Shepherd. Knowe therefore (faire Shepherdeſſe) that the fates (not onely when I was borne, but long before)determined, that I ſhould loue this faire Shepherdeſſe, which ſits before thy faire & my ſorrowfull eies, whoſe intents I haue anſwered with ſuch effect,as there is no loue(I thinke)like mine,nor any ingratitude like to hers. It fell out afterwardes,that from my childehood,ſeruing her in the beſt manner I coulde, there are fiue or ſixe moneths paſt, ſince my miſhap brought a Shepherd hither called *Arſileus*, who went vp and downe ſeeking a Shepherdeſſe called *Beliſa*, which by ſome ill ſucceſſe of Fortune,wandred like an exile heere and there amongſt theſe woodes & groues. And as his ſorrow was very great,it fell out,that this cruell Shepherdeſſe,either for great pittie ſhe tooke of him,or for the little ſhe had of me, or for what cauſe elſe (ſhe knowes beſt herſelfe) woulde neuer be out of his companie: To whom if by chance I did but ſpeake thereof, ſhe was ready to kill me with anger; for thoſe eies which thou ſeeſt there,procure death no leſſe,when they are angry, then life when they are milde and gentle. But now when all my ſences were thus occupied, mine eies with teares, my eares with hearing denials, my thoughts with a bitter taſte of ſorrow, my ſoule with a rare and vnſpeakeable kind of affection, and my vnderſtanding with the greateſt iealouſie, as the like neuer any had, I made my complaint to *Arſileus* with ſighes,and to the earth, and theſe groues with pitifull and bitter lamentations,ſhewing them what iniuries *Amarillis* did me. Her deceiued imagination of the ſuſpect, that I had of her honeſtie, hath bredde in her ſo great deſpite and hatred againſt me, that to be reuenged of me, ſhe hath hitherto perſeuered therein,which greeuous torment ſhe is not onely content to lay vpon me,but when ſhe ſees me before her eies,flies from my preſence, as the fearefull Hinde from the hungry and purſuing Hounde. So that by the loue which thou oweſt thy ſelfe, I pray thee (good Shepherdeſſe) iudge whether this be a ſufficient cauſe to make her thus abhorre me,and if my fault on the other ſide, be ſo great,that it deſerues ſuch endles and extreme hate. *Filemon* hauing made an end of the cauſe of his greefe and iniurie, wherewith his Shepherdeſſe tormented him; *Amarillis* began to ſhape her anſwer thus. This *Filemon*(faire Shepherdeſſe)that ſits before thee,hath loued me well(I muſt needes confeſſe)or at the leaſt,made a fine ſhewe thereof, and ſuch haue his ſeruices beene towards me, that to ſay otherwiſe of him, then he deſerues, it would ill beſeeme me. But if for his ſake,in lieu and recompence of that affection, I haue not reiected the ſuites and ſeruice of many iolly Shepherds that feede their flockes vpon theſe downes, and in theſe pleaſant vales; and alſo (for his loue)haue not contemned many countrey youthes, whom nature hath enriched with no leſſe perfections then himſelfe, let himſelfe be iudge. For the infinite times, that with their amorous ſutes I haue beene importuned, and thoſe wherein I haue kept that firmnes due to his faith, haue not (I thinke) beene at any time out of his preſence, which neuertheleſſe ſhould be no ſufficient cauſe for him to make ſo ſmall account of me,as to imagine or ſuſpect any thing of that, wherein I am moſt of all bounde to my ſelfe. For if it be ſo, (as he knowes well enough) that for the loue of him I haue caſt off many, that died by mine occaſion, how coulde I then forget or reiect him for the loue of another? A thouſand times hath *Filemon* watched me, not leeſing a ſteppe that the Shepherd *Arſileus* and I haue troden amiddes theſe greene woods, and pleaſant vales, but let him ſay,if he euer heard *Arſileus* talke to

me

me of loue, or if I answered him any thing touching such matter. What day did *Filemon* euer see me talke to *Arsileus*, whereby he might conceiue any thing else by my words, but that I went about to comfort him in such great sorrow, as he suffered: And if this be a sufficient cause to make him thinke ill of his Shepherdesse, who can better iudge it, then himselfe? Behold then (faire Shepherdesse) how much he was giuen to false suspects and wrongfull iealousie, that my wordes could neuer satisfie him, nor worke with him, to make him leaue off his obdurate minde by absenting himselfe from this valley, thinking therby to haue made an end of my daies, wherein he was deceiued, when as he rather ended his owne ioy and contentment, if for me at the least he had euer any at all. And this was the michiefe besides, that *Filemon* being not onely content to beare mee such a kinde of vniust iealousie, whereof he had so small occasion, as now (faire Shepherdesse) thou hast seene, hee did likewise publish it at euerie feast, in all bridales, wrestlings, and meetings, that were made amongst the Shepherds of these hilles. And this thou knowest (good Shepherdesse) howe it did preiudice mine honour more then his contentment: In the ende hee absented himselfe from mee, which course since hee hath taken for a medicine of his malladie (which it seemes hath the more increased it) let him not finde fault with me, if I haue knowne how to profit my selfe more thereby then he hath. And now that thou hast seene (faire Shepherdesse) what great content that I felt, when thou toldst the Shepherd *Arsileus* so good newes of his Shepherdesse, & that I my selfe was most earnest with him to haue him go and seeke her out, it is cleere, that there could not be any thing between vs, that might ingẽder such cause of suspition, as this Shepherd hath wrongfully cõceiued of vs. So that this is the cause, that hath made me not only so cold in the loue that I did beare him, but not to loue any more, wherby to put mine honor & good name in hazard of false suspects, since my good hap hath brought me to such a time, that (without forcing my selfe) I may do it at mine own choise & libertie. After *Amarillis* had shewed the small reason the Shepherd had to giue so great credit to his iealous imaginations, and the libertie wherein time, and her good fortune had put her (a naturall thing to free harts) the wõefull Shepherd replied in this sort. I doe not denie (*Amarillis*) but that thy wisedome and discretion is sufficient to cleere thee of all suspition. But wilt thou now make nouelties in loue, & inuent other new effects, then those which we haue heretofore seene? When a louer would loue well, the least occasion of iealousie torments his soule, how much more when those were greater, which by thy priuie conuersation and familiaritie with *Arsileus* thou hast giuen me. Dost thou thinke (*Amarillis*) that for a iealousie certainties are needfull? Alas thou deceiuest thy selfe, for suspicions be the principall causes of their entrance: which was also no great matter, since I beleeued that thou didst beare *Arsileus* good will, the publishing whereof was as little preiudiciall and lesse offensiue to thine honour, since the force of my loue was so great, that it made mee manifest the ill that I did feare. And though thy goodnes assured mee, when, at stealth and deceite of my suspectes, I thought thereof, yet I alwaies feared, least some aduerse succesſe might befall vnto me, if this familiaritie had beene still continued. But to that thou saiest (faire Shepherdesse) that I absented my selfe, I answere, that vpon a stomacke, or to giue thee any offence or greefe thereby, I did it not; but to see if I could haue any remedie in mine owne, not seeing the cause of my great mishap and greefe before mine eies, and bicause my pursutes might not also offende thee. But if by seeking remedy for so great an ill, I went against that, which I owed thee,

thee, what greater puniſhment can I haue, then that which thy abſence hath made me feele? If thou ſaieſt thou didſt neuer loue *Arſileus*, it giues me greater occaſion to complaine of thee, ſince for a thing of ſo ſmall importance, thou didſt forſake him, who ſo greatly deſired to ſerue thee. So that I haue the more cauſe to accuſe thee, the leſſe thy loue was to *Arſileus*. And theſe are the reaſons *Amarillis* and manie more, which I do alleage, not in mine owne excuſe and fauour, whereby I thinke not to helpe my ſelfe at all, ſince in matters of loue they are woont to profite ſo little; onely requeſting thee (gentle *Amarillis*) that thy clemencie and the faith which I haue euer borne thee, may be of my ſide, and mooue thee vnto pittie, the want whereof can preſcribe no ende to my greefe, nor meanes of reconciliation in thy hard condition and crueltie. And with this the Shepherd made an ende of his words, and began to poure forth ſo many teares, that they were ſufficient (with the requeſts and ſentence that *Feliſmena* gaue in his behalfe) to mollifie *Amarillis* hard hart, and to make the enamoured Shepherd come againe into her good grace and liking, for which he was ſo glad a man, as neuer more; and *Amarillis* not a little ioyfull, by ſhewing how much *Filemon* was deceiued in his falſe ſuſpicions of her. And after this, they paſſed away that day with great content of the two reconciled louers, and with greater ſorrow of faire *Feliſmena*, who next day early in the morning departed from them after many embracings, and promiſes, to ſende to each other newes of their affaires.

But *Syrenus* being now free from loue, and *Syluanus* and *Seluagia* more enamored then euer before, and faire *Diana*, not a little diſcontent for the ſorrowfull ſucceſſe of her affaires, paſſed away her melancholike life, feeding her flocke along the bankes of the great riuer *Ezla*, where, many times meeting with one another, they talked of that, which pleaſed their fancies beſt. And diſcreete *Seluagia* being on a day at the fountaine of the Sicamours, the Shepherdeſſe *Diana* came thither by chance, to ſeeke a lambe that had runne out of the foulde, which *Syluanus* had tyed to a myrtle tree, for when they came thither, they founde it drinking at the cleere ſpring and by the marke knewe it to be faire *Dianas*. But being come (as I ſay) and curteouſly welcommed of the newe louers, they ſat them downe vpon the greene graſſe, leaning to one of the Sicamours, that ſtoode about the fountaine, and after they had talked of many matters, *Syluanus* ſaide vnto her. Why doſt thou not aske vs (faire *Diana*) for *Syrenus*? Bicauſe I woulde not talke of matters paſt (ſaid *Diana*) for the great greefe which preſent things do giue me: The time was, when I tooke more delight to aske for him, and hee for mee, and to ſpeake and conuerſe with one another then now, which giues neither of vs the like contentment; but time doth cure infinite cares, that ſeeme remedileſſe to many men, which if I vnderſtood not ſo, there could not be now a *Diana* in theſe faire meades & plaines, in regard of the ſorrowes and care that are daily offred me. God neuer graunt ſo much harme to our pleaſant fieldes (ſaide *Seluagia*) by depriuing them of ſuch great beautie as hers is. That ſhall not be wanting as long as thou liueſt (ſaide *Diana*) and whereſoeuer thy grace and perfections are, little may be loſt by my want, in truth whereof, behold thy *Syluanus*, who (I thought) would neuer haue forgotten me for any other Shepherdeſſe, and yet in the end hath ſhaken hands with me for thy loue, which deſerued a great deale more. This did *Diana* ſpeake with a gracious ſmile, although ſhe laughed not ſo much in minde at theſe things, nor with ſo good a hart as they thought. For though ſhe once loued *Syrenus* more then her owne life, and deſpiſed *Syluanus*, as nothing ſo much, yet it greeued her more, that *Syluanus*

had

had forgotten her for the loue of another, whose sight he now enioyed euery day with great contentment of his newe loue, then that *Syrenus* had freed himselfe out of her loue, whom nowe no new affection mooued. When *Syluanus* heard what *Diana* said, he answered her thus. Time, and the reuolutions of the heauens shall first cease (faire *Diana*) before I will forget thee, for thy beautie and wisedome is not such, that may be euer put in obliuion. Truth it is that I am now bound to my *Seluagia*, bicause (besides many other good parts in her obliging me to her loue) she neuer esteemed her Fortune to bee woorse by this, that she is nowe beloued of him, whom thou did'st alway so reiect and make so small account of. No more of this (saide *Diana*) for thou art well bestowed, and I was not well aduised by not louing thee, as thy loue deserued it at my hands. But if at anytime thou didst desire to giue me some content, I beseech thee (al I may) and thy faire *Seluagia*, to sing some song, to entertaine the time, and to passe the heate of the day alway; which now beginnes so fast, that we must be faine to passe it vnder these Sicamours, and there enioy the bubling of this cleere spring, which shall not a little helpe the sweetenes of your song. The new louers were not daintie to be praied, though faire *Seluagia* was not very well content with this kinde of talke that *Diana* had with *Syluanus*. But bicause in her song, she thought to be reuenged on her, to the tune that *Diana* plaied on her Bagpipe, both of them began to sing as followeth.

I See thee iolly Shepherd merry,
And firme thy faith and sound as a berry.
Loue gaue me ioy, and fortune gaue it,
As my desire could wish to haue it.
What didst thou wish, tell me (sweete louer)
Whereby thou might'st such ioy recouer?
To loue where loue should be inspired,
Since there's no more to be desired.
In this great glory, and great gladnes,
Think'st thou to haue no touch of sadnes?
Good fortune gaue me not such glory,
To mocke my loue, or make me sorie.
If my firme loue I were denying,
Tell me, with sighes would'st thou be dying?
Those wordes in iest to heare thee speaking,
For very greefe my hart is breaking.
Yet would'st thou change, I pray thee tell me,
In seeing one, that did excell me?
O noe, for how can I aspire,
To more then to mine owne desire.
Such great affection dost thou beare me
As by thy wordes thou seem'st to sweare me?
Of thy deserts, to which a detter
I am, thou maist demaund this better.
Sometimes me thinkes, that I should sweare it,
Sometimes me thinkes, thou should'st not beare it.
Onely in this, my pap doth greeue me,
And my desire, not to beleeue me.

Imagine that thou dost not loue mine,
But some braue beautie that's aboue mine.
To such a thing (sweete) doe not will me,
Where fayning of the same doth kill me.
I see thy firmnes gentle louer,
More then my beautie can discouer.
And my good fortune to be higher
Then my desert, but not desier.

About this time came *Syrenus* downe from the village towards the fountaine of the Sicamours, with great desire to meete *Seluagia* or *Syluanus*, for hee nowe tooke no greater delight in any thing, then in the company of these two louers. And if he had (perhaps) a touch of *Dianas* loue in his memorie, the time that he had spent in louing her, did not leaue him altogither without some pensiue thoughts, not, for that her loue now gaue him any paine; but becauſe the remembrance of a good estate, doth breed some small kind of griefe and discontent in him that hath lost it. Before he came to the fountaine, in the mids of the greene meadow which was beset round about with Myrtles and Laurels, he found *Dianas* sheepe, that went by themselues all alone feeding amongst the trees vnder the keeping of two fierce masties. And as the Shepherd staied to looke vpon them, thinking of the time, wherein he had greater care of them, then of his owne, the masties with great furie came running vpon him. But when they came somewhat nigh and knew him, by wagging their tailes, and holding downe their necks (that were armed with collers of sharpe nailes) the one fell downe at his feete; and the other by skipping vpon him fawned on him with the greatest ioy in the world. And the sheepe did no lesse, for the Bell-wether with his rurall bleating came to the Shepherd, whom all the rest followed, and knowing *Syrenus*, came round about him, which sight he could not behold without teares, calling to mind that sometimes in the company of faire *Diana* he had fed that gentle flocke. And seeing that in the silly beasts that loue and knowledge did abound, which wanted in their mistresse, it was so forcible a motion in his minde, that if the vertue of the water, which sage *Felicia* had giuen him, had not made him forget his olde loue: it might well haue beene, that there was nothing else in the worlde that coulde haue let him from renewing it againe. But seeing himselfe thus in the mids of *Dianas* sheepe, and with the thoughts, that the memorie of such a thing did put before his eies, to the tune of his merie Recbecke he began to sing this song.

Passed contents,
O what meane ye?
Forsake me now, and doe not wearie me.

Wilt thou heare me, O memorie,
My pleasant daies, and nights againe,
I haue appaid with seuenfold paine:
Thou hast no more to aske me why,
For when I went, they all did die:
As thou dost see,
O leaue me then, and doe not wearie me.

Greene field, and shadowed valley, where are
Sometime my chiefest pleasure was,
Behold what I did after passe:
Then let me rest, and if I beare
Not with good cause continuall feare,
Now doe you see.
O leaue me then, and doe not trouble me.

I sawe a hart changed of late,
And wearied to assure mine:
Then I was forced to recure mine

By good occaſion, time and fate,
My thoughts, that now ſuch paſſions hate,
O what meane ye?
Forſake me now and doe not wearie me.

You lambes and ſheepe that in theſe layes,
Did ſometimes follow me ſo glad:
The merry howres, and the ſad
Are paſſed now with all thoſe daies:
Make not ſuch mirth, and wonted plaies,
As once did ye:
For now no more you haue deceiued me.

If that to trouble me you come,
Or come to comfort me indeede:
I haue no ill for comforts neede.
But if to kill me, Then (in ſumme)
Full well may ye
Kill me, and you ſhall make an end of me.

After *Syrenus* had made an ende of his ſong, faire *Diana* knewe him by his voice, and ſo did the two enamoured Shepherdes *Syluanus* and *Seluagia*. They called to him, telling him, that if he was minded to paſſe away the heate of the day in the field, there was the freſh fountaine of the Sicamours, and faire *Diana*, both which ſhould be no ſmall allurements to inuite him thither. *Syrenus* anſwered him, that he muſt needs ſtay all day in the field, vntill it was time to go home againe with his ſheepe to the towne, and comming where the Shepherd and Shepherdeſſes were, they ſat round about the cleere fountaine, as they were commonly woont to do. But *Diana*, (whoſe life was ſo ſorrowfull, as one may imagine, that euer ſawe a Shepherdeſſe, the faireſt and wiſeſt that was then knowne, married ſo greatly to her greefe) went day by day ſeeking out new occaſions to entertaine the time, and to paſſe her life away, and ſtudying often to preuent her continuall and ſorrowfull thoughts. But the Shepherdes ſitting and talking of other matters touching the feeding of ſheepe, and their profite, *Diana* brake off the ſubſtance of their talke, ſaying to *Syluanus*. It is a proper thing, Shepherd, that, ſitting before thy faire *Seluagia*, thou talkeſt of other impertinent things, and not of praiſing her beautie, nor of the great loue, that ſhe beares thee: Let the field and lambes alone, the good or ill ſucceſſe of time and fortune, and enioy the good hap that (Shepherd) thou haſt nowe, by being beloued of ſo faire a Shepherdeſſe, for where there is ſo great reaſon to haue continually ſuch contentment of minde, thou need'ſt not care for that, which Fortune doth but ſometimes giue. How much I am beholding to thee *Diana* (anſwered *Syluanus*) none can expreſſe but he, that knowes what great reaſon I haue to acknowledge this debt, bicauſe thou didſt not onely then teach me to loue well, but now alſo ſheweſt me the way to vſe the contentment, that my loue affoordes me: The reaſon thou haſt to warne me, not to talke of any other matter (my Miſtreſſe being in preſence) but onely of the content that by her ſight I receiue, is great & infinite, the which I promiſe thee (faire *Diana*) to do, while my happy ſoule ſhall be conteined in this ioyfull body. But I maruell at one thing, to ſee how thy *Syrenus* doth caſt his eies another way, when thou ſpeakeſt vnto him, it ſeemes thy wordes pleaſe him not, or that he is not ſatisfied with thy anſwers. Blame him not (ſaid *Diana*) for careleſſe men & enimies to their own good will do more then this. Enimy to mine own good (ſaid *Syrenus?*) If I was euer ſuch an one, let death puniſh me for my error. This is a prety ſhift to excuſe thy fault. To excuſe my fault (ſaid *Diana?*) If I haue not yet the firſt offence to do thee, I pray God I may neuer haue any other cõtent, then that, which I now enioy: It is wel that thou doſt finde fault with me for being married hauing parẽts. But it is wel (ſaid *Syrenus*) that thou didſt marry hauing another Loue: And what power had that Loue (ſaide *Diana*) where obedi-

ence was due to parents? And what power had those parents (saide *Syrenus*) that obedience, those times, those fauourable or sinistrous successes of Fortune, to ouerrule so true a Loue, as before my departure thou didst shew me? Ah *Diana*, I neuer thought there was any thing in the worlde, that could dissolue so great a faith as that, and how much more *Dianas*, considering that well thou mightest haue married, and not forgotten him, who loued thee so entyrely. But thinking of the matter vnpassionately, it was now better for me, since thou wert resolued to marrie, and being married, to forget me quite. For what reason saide *Diana*? For what, saide *Syrenus*? Bicause there is no woorse thing in the worlde, then for a Shepherd to loue a Shepherdesse that is married, nor that makes him, (that beares her true loue and affection) sooner to loose his wits and sences: the reason whereof (as wee all know) is, that the principall passion which doth torment a louer (after the desire of his Mistres) is cruell iealousie: For what dost thou then thinke, that a poore vnfortunate Louer that loues wel is able to do, what griefe (thinkest thou) he passeth, when he knowes, that his Shepherdesse is in the armes of her new married husband, and he bewailing and weeping his disgrace and ill Fortune in the streete. And this is not all the torment, when such a mischeefe and death remaines yet thereof, that he must not complaine of it at all, but must suffer (silly man) and holde his peace, bicause by complaining he shall be thought no lesse then a foole or a madde man (a thing as contrarie to his rest as may be:) For if the iealousies were of some other Shepherd, that serued her, by complayning of the fauours she doth him, and by hearing her excuses, the Louer might better passe away his greefe; but this is such a kinde of torment, that in an instant one shall loose it, if he haue no stay in his desire. Leaue of this talke (said *Diana*) for thou hast no neede to loue, nor to be beloued. In respect of not hauing it to loue (saide *Syrenus*) I am glad in not hauing it also to be beloued. Strange is thy libertie (said *Diana*) but stranger was thy forgetfulnes (said *Syrenus*) if thou dost remember well the words thou spakest to mee at my departure. But let vs (as thou saiest) leaue of to speake of things which are past, & let vs thanke time and Lady *Felicia* for those that are present. And thou *Syluanus*, take thy Pipe, and I will tune my Rebecke to it, and let vs sing some verses togither, although so free a hart as mine cannot sing of anie thing, that may giue content to thine, that is of another qualitie. I will giue thee a good remedie for this (saide *Syluanus*:) For let vs imagine that we are both in the same case, as this Shepherdesse made vs liue, when we filled these hils and dales with our amorous complaints. *Syluanus* deuise liked them all well, but *Seluagia* was a little displeased thereat, who for that time, (bicause she would not seeme to be iealous, where she was ascertained of so great loue) helde her peace: And the Shepherds began to sing in manner following.

Syrenus.

IF teares cannot with tenderneſſe relent thee,
How can my ſong thy cruelty aſſured,
Since nought of mine could euer yet content thee:
What hart was euer that ſo much endured?
That to deride thou neuer canſt ſuffice thee,
A greefe that hath the worlds wonder procured.
Ah blinde conceite, let loue nor time diſguiſe thee,
And ſuch a thought of change that neuer told me
But to thy good and my content aduiſe thee.

Ah

Ah wilt thou in ſuch cares and greeſes enfold me,
Fierce Shepherdeſſe, and in ſuch lamentations
To ſpend my dolefull yeeres, wilt thou behold mo?
A hart that's thine, diſpos'ſt thou in ſuch faſhions?
Intreat'ſt thou thus a ſoule to thee affied,
That the leſt greefe it is to ſuffer paſſions?

Syluanus.

Loue ſuch a knot, that's endles thou hiſt tied,
That's blinde, and thou, and I more blinde intended:
She is blinde, for whom my life's denied:
For I ſawe not my life, and pleaſure ended,
Nor ſhe how I for her to death imploy me,
Nor thou, that I in flames am thus incended.
Fell Loue, ſhall faire Diana *now deſtroy me*
With abſence? then conclude (ſince hate ſurrounds it)
To end my life, and fortunes that annoy me.
Ioy's ſlowe, time flies, and with his ſhortnes wounds it,
Hope dies, an amorous thought liues ſtill augmented:
Loue ſhortens it, prolongs it, and confounds it.
To ſpeake I am aſhamed thus tormented,
And though it greeues me, yet with ceaſleſſe payning
Without the ſame I cannot liue contented.

Syrenus.

O ſoule, forſake not now thy dolefull plaining,
And you my wearied eies
Ceaſe not in ſwelling teares my cheekes to ſteepe,
Since you haue learn'd to weepe,
And waile the chiefeſt cauſe of all my cries.

Syluanus.

And waile the chiefeſt cauſe of all my cries:
Yet (cruell Shepherdeſſe)
Sometimes they were of my moſt ſweete content.
O thoughts in ſorrow ſpent,
How ſmall time laſts a ioy and happines?

Syrenus.

How ſmall time laſts a ioy and happines,
And that ſweete gracious ſmile,
(Fortune) wherewith I ſawe thee not accoyd?
Now all is well imployd
In him, whom time doth counſell and beguile.

Syluanus.

In him, whom time doth counſell and beguile,
Loue works his beheſt:

But in his things who can him well aduise?
Or his deceites who spies?
O cruell Shepherdesse, O cruell brest.

Syrenus.

O cruell Shepherdesse, O cruell brest
Whose crueltie is no
Whit lesse then her braue beautie and her grace,
And my mishap and case:
How to my cost my sorrowes doe I knowe?

Syluanus.

My Shepherdesse, in white and red more cleere,
Then both those roses pluckt, in May we see:
And brighter then the sunne beames sent
From their coruscant Orient
By morning, that vpon thy foldes appeere:
How can I liue, if thou forgettest me?
My Shepherdesse, thy rigour then impaire,
For crueltie becomes not one so faire.

Syrenus.

My faire Diana *more resplendant, then*
The Emerauld, or Diamond in the night:
Whose beautious eies doe cease
My sorrowes, that increase,
If gently that (perhaps) to me they bend.
So maist thou with thy flocke so faire and vvhite,
Come to my shadovved sheepefold in the heate,
That such a vvretch thou vvould'st not ill intreate.

Syluanus.

My Shepherdesse, when that thy yellow haire
Thou combest in the beames of shining sunne,
Dost thou not see the same obscured?
My pride and ioy by them procured?
That am from hence beholding it so faire,
Woon now with hope, now with despaire vndone,
But so maist thou thy beautie braue enioy,
As thou wouldst giue, a meane in such annoy.

Syrenus.

Diana, *whose sweete name in all these hils*
The wilde beastes tames, and crueltie rebates:
And whose surpassing beautie to it
Doth subiect fortune, and vndoe it.
And feares not loue, but wars against his wils:
Respecting not occasion, time, nor fates.

To

To thee thy flockes and folds ſuch ioy may giue,
As careleſſe of my greefe thou wouldſt not liue.

Syluanus.

The heate is paſt (Syrenus) *and doth ceaſe,*
The Shepherds to their folds begin to goe,
And wearie graſhoppers doe hold their peace:
The night will not ſtay long, which, hid belovve,
Is comming in, vvhile Phœbus *in our skie*
Doth heere and there his vading light beſtovve:
Therefore before the darkeſt ſhade ſhall lie
Vpon the ground, and vvhile the vvren doth ſing
In top of this greene Sicamour on hie,
Our vvandring flockes together let vs bring,
And driue them vvhere Diana *novv doth ſtay*
For vs, vvhile in the vvoods our voices ring.

Syrenus.

My friend, Syluanus, *goe not yet avvay,*
Since all his beames not yet the ſunne doth hide,
And that vve haue ſufficient of the day.
There's time for vs and for our flocke beſide,
And time to driue them to the riuer cleere.
For in this meade to day they ſhall abide:
And, Shepherd, let my ſong be ended heere.

All the while that the Shepherds were ſinging, the Shepherdeſſe *Diana* was leaning her faire face vpon her hand, whoſe ſleeue falling downe a little from her wreſt, diſcouered an arme whiter then the driuen ſnow, ſhe held her eies downe to the ground, powring out ſuch plentie of teares, as were ſufficient arguments of more inward griefe and paine, then ſhe would (though faine) haue then vttered. And as the Shepherds ended their ſong, with a deepe ſigh, in company whereof it ſeemed that her ſoule would haue flowen out, ſhe roſe vp, & without taking her leaue, went downe along the valley, dreſſing her golden haire, whoſe vaile hung intangled behinde in a bow, when ſhe roſe vp. And if the Shepherds had not tempered the great pitie which they had of her, with the little that ſhe had of them, neither the one nor the others hart had beene able to indure it. And ſo all of them went to gather vp their ſheepe, that (ſcattered abroad) went skipping vp and downe the greene meadow.

The end of the ſixth booke.

The ſeuenth Booke of Diana of George of Montemayor.

After that *Feliſmena* had reconciled *Amarillis* & *Filemon*, & left them with full purpoſe and reſolution, the one neuer to do any thing to the diſcontentment and complaint of the other: being now gon from them, ſhe went downe along the valley, wherein ſhe wandred many daies without hearing any newes, that might affoorde her the leaſt content, that ſhe deſired: and yet carrying with her an aſſured hope of ſage *Felicias* wordes, ſhe

ſhe did not let it paſſe out of her minde, but thought, that after ſo many trauels, Fortune would be wearie at the laſt of troubling her any more: And theſe imaginations ſupported her ſomewhat in the greateſt torments of her deſire. But trauelling one morning on her way, thorow the mids of a woode, and at the going out of certaine thick buſhes which appeared frō the top of a high hill, ſhe beheld before her a moſt pleaſant and greene Champaine that lay all along beneath the hill, and of ſuch length, that ſhe could ſcarce ſee to the end of it; for twelue miles right out it butted vpon the bottoms of certaine hils, that might hardly be diſcerned. Thorow the mids of this pleaſant plaine a goodly riuer ranne, which in many places made freſh and faire bankes on both ſides, whereon grew thicke Birches, greene Sicamours, and diuers other trees; and in other places leauing the criſtalline waters diſcouered to the wandring view, and in ſome (brinked with ſandie plats) did from a far off more brauely beautifie the faire riuer bankes. The graine which was ſowne in all thoſe fields, was at hand to yeeld vp the deſired fruit, and by reaſon of the fertill ſoyle was verie well growen: which being mooued by a little gale of winde, waued vp and downe ſome in greene, & ſome in yellow colours, which made moſt pleaſant ſhades and delightfull obiects to the greedie eie. The greene and delectable vale was in ſome places three miles broad, and in others a little more, and in none leſſe then this. The faire Shepherdeſſe therefore comming downe her way from the hil aboue, entered into a great wood full of Sicamours and wilde Oliue trees; in the middes whereof were many ſtately houſes ſo ſumptuouſly built, that they made her not a little to maruell: And liſting vp her eies on a ſudden, there appeared to her ſight a great and faire Citie, which being full of faire houſes and ſtately buildings, from the top of a rockie hill that was right before her, reached in breadth with the wals to the great riuer that ranne thorow the mids of the plaine. The buildings of that famous citie were high, and wrought with as great arte, as humaine induſtrie could deuiſe. Amongſt the which were many towres, Pyramydes, and ſhining pinnacles, reared vp to the skies. The Temples were many, and ſumptuous, the houſes ſtrong, the wals loftie and ſtrongly embattelled; the bulwarkes thicke and full of munition: ſo that excelling in ſtately ſtructure and euen proportion, it made a faire ſhow, and gaue a goodly glorie to the great and auncient Citie: all which from that place ſhe ſeuerally beheld. The Shepherdeſſe was amazed to ſee that braue ſight, and on the ſudden to be ſo neere ſo faire a Citie; from whence, as from all other popular concurſe with great care ſhe endeuored to flie. And yet ſhe could not chooſe, but ſat her downe a little vnder the ſhadow of an Oliue tree, to behold from thence all in particular which you haue heard; and ſeeing that populous Citie, great *Soldina* her natiue Citie and Countrey came to her muſing thoughts; from whence, the loue that ſhe bare *Don Felix* had exiled her, which was an occaſion not to make her paſſe it out of her memorie without teares, bicauſe the remembrance of a good thing loſt, doth for the moſt part offer occaſions of no leſſe. But the faire Shepherdeſſe leauing that place and citie on the right hand, went ſoftly on by a path hard by the riuer towards that part, where the Criſtalline waters with a gentle and pleaſant noiſe runne ſmoothly into the Ocean. And hauing gone ſixe miles by the pleaſant bankes of that riuer, ſhe eſpied two Shepherdeſſes at the foote of a great Oke neere to the riuer ſide, paſſing away the heat of the day, both which (though they were but meanely faire) yet in ſweete fauour and gentle behauiour, were paſſing gracious. The hew of their faces was a nutbrowne ſanguine, but amiable, the colour of their haire, a darke browne-abram; their eies and eiebrowes blacke, and yet of a ſweete and mild

aſpect

aſpect in their countenances. Vpon their hands they had ſeuerall garlandes of greene Iuie, tied vp togither with many roſes and ſweete flowers. The faſhion of their attire ſeemed to her to be different from any other kind of apparell, that ſhe had ſeene till that time. But one of them riſing vp in great haſte, to driue a flocke of ſheepe out of a flaxe field, where they had broken in, and the other going to driue her goates to the riuer to drinke, they went and ſat them downe againe vnder the ſhadow of that leafie Oke. *Feliſmena*, that had hid her ſelfe in a plat of high bulruſhes, and ſo neere to the Shepherdeſſes, that ſhe might well heare what paſſed betweene them, vnderſtood that the language they ſpake, was the Portugal toong, and that the kingdome wherein ſhe was, was Portugall; for one of the Shepherdeſſes taking the other by the hand with a ſweete grace in her owne toong ſaid thus to the other. Ah my *Duarda*, what ſmall reaſon haſt thou to deſpiſe him, who loues thee more then himſelfe? How better beſeeming thee were it, not ſo ill to entreate a thought that is ſo much employed in thy perfections? It greeues mee that ſo faire a Shepherdeſſe ſhoulde bee ſo farre from pitying him that hath ſo great neede thereof. The other, that ſeemed to bee more at libertie, with a certaine diſdaine, and a fillippe of her hande (a common note of careleſſe and free mindes) anſwered her thus. Wilt thou haue me tell thee, *Armia*? If I ſhould truſt him another time, who hath ſo ill apaied the loue I bare him, he ſhall not beare the blame of the ill, that I ſhall procure by mine owne deſire, but my ſelfe. Lay not before mine eies the ſeruices, that this Shepheard hath ſometimes done me, nor tell me the reaſons that he giues thee to mooue me, for the time is now paſt, when they once helpt him. He promiſed to marrie me, and behold he hath married another. What would he nowe haue? Or what pretendes this enemie of my quiet reſt? What, now that his wife is dead, would he haue me marrie him? O God forbid that I ſhould doe my ſelfe ſo great iniurie. Let him go, *Armia*, let him go: for if he loues me ſo much as he ſaith, this loue ſhall ſerue me for a renenge of his deepe deceite. The other ioyning her ſmiling face to *Duardas* frowning countenance, and louingly imbracing her, with milde & gentle wordes replied thus. How wel hath all becomen thee, gracious Shepherdeſſe, which thou haſt ſaid? I would neuer deſire to be a man, but euen now, to loue thee more then mine owne ſelfe. But tell me, *Duarda*, why art thou ſo deſirous to haue *Danteus* leade ſo ſorrowfull a life? He ſaith, the reaſon that thou haſt to complaine of him, ſerues him for his excuſe. For, before he married, being with thee one day neere to the hedge of *Fremoſelle*, he ſaide vnto thee. *Duarda*, my father wil marrie me, what is thy aduiſe in this matter? And that thou didſt anſwere him roughly. How now *Danteus*? Am I ſo olde, or haue I ſo great power ouer thee, that thou doſt aske my opinion and leaue for thy marriage? Thou maieſt doe what thou liſt, and what thine owne will and thy fathers ſhall oblige thee to: for in the like caſe I my ſelfe would do no leſſe: And this was ſpoken with an eſtranged countenance, and not with that woonted kinde of milde and gentle ſpeech, but as if it had beene quite paſt thy memorie, that thou didſt once loue him well. Calleſt thou this an excuſe (ſaid *Duarda*) If I knew thee not *Armia*, ſo well as I doe, thy wiſedome and diſcretion ſhould hazard their credit with me. What ſhould I anſwere a Shepherd, who publiſhed euery where, that there was nothing in the world whereon he would caſt an affectionate eie, but on me, how much more then, that *Danteus* was not ſo ignorant, but that he vnderſtood by my countenance and manner of my wordes, that with my will I would not haue anſwered him, as I did. What a mockerie was this (I pray thee *Armia*) for him to meete me one day before this came to

paſſe,

paſſe, neere to the fountaine, and with many teares to ſay thus vnto me. Why art thou ſo vngratefull *(Duarda)* to the good will which I beare thee, that thou wilt not be married to me without thy fathers conſent? when time (thou knoweſt) will weare out the anger, that they may conceiue thereof. Whom I then anſwered thus. Content thy ſelfe *Danteus*, that I am thine, and that I can neuer be any others, whatſoeuer ſhall befall vnto me. And thy word and promiſe, which thou haſt giuen me to be my husband, contents me well ynough: deſire not then, in reſpect of ſtaying a little time longer, a thing, whereof ſuch miſchiefe may enſue. At which wordes he tooke his leaue, telling me the next day that his father would marrie him, and requeſting me to giue him leaue, and not content with this, but to be married in deede three daies after. Doſt thou not therefore thinke this *(Armia)* ſufficient reaſon for me, to vſe the benefite of that libertie, which with ſuch trouble of my thoughts I haue at laſt obtained? Theſe are things (ſaide the other) ſoone ſpoken and paſſed betweene the trueſt louers, but muſt not be taken ſo much at the hart, nor ſo narrowly interpreted, as thou doſt vnderſtand them. For thoſe, which are ſpoken, thou haſt reaſon, *Armia*; but for thoſe that are done, thou ſeeſt it well ynough, if they touch not our ſoules too neere, that loue well. In the ende *Danteus* married, and it greeues me not a little, that ſo faire a Shepherdeſſe liued ſo ſmall a time, and more, to ſee that one whole moneth after her buriall being ſcarce paſt, new thoughts began to occupie his minde againe. God tooke her away (ſaid *Armia*) to the end that *Danteus* might be thine, for indeede he could be no others but thine. If this be ſo (ſaid *Duarda*) that he that is ones, cannot be anothers, I finde my ſelfe now to be mine owne; and therefore cannot be *Danteus* his. But let vs leaue of a thing not worth the loſſe of time that is ſpent about it, which ſhal be better imployed in ſinging a ſong: And then both of them in their owne toong with a ſweete grace began to ſing that which followeth.

Times change and ſhall (as we doe ſee)
And life ſhall haue an ende:
But yet my faith ſhall euer bee
Whereon my eies depende.

The daies, and moments, and their ſcope,
The howres with their changes wrought,
Are cruell enemies to hope,
And friendes vnto a louing thought.
Thoughts ſtill remaine, as we doe ſee,
And hope ſhall haue an end;
But yet my faith ſhall not leaue me,
Her honour to defend.

Inconſtancie in truſt contriued,
Cauſeth great danger in concluſion,
And life that is of hope depriued,
Standes not in feare of diſilluſion.
Times goe and come, as we doe ſee,
And life ſhall haue an end,
But yet my faith ſhall neuer bee
Diſtan'd for foe or friend.

This

This ſong being ended, *Feliſmena* came out of the place, where ſhe had hid herſelfe, directly to that place where the Shepherdeſſes were, who amazed at her ſudden ſight, but more at her rare grace and beautie, went to her, and with louing embracings welcommed her, asking her of what countrey ſhe was, and from whence ſhe came. To which demaundes faire *Feliſmena* could not anſwer, but with manie teares asked them what countrey that was, wherein they nowe were. For by her owne toong ſhe cleerely made them knowe, that ſhe was of *Vandalia*, and that for a certaine miſhap ſhe was baniſhed from her countrey. The Portugall Shepherdeſſes with their pitifull teares did the beſt they could to cõfort her, being very ſorrie for her exile, a common thing to that nation, & more proper to the inhabitants of that prouince. And *Feliſmena* asking them what citie that was, which ſhe had left, where the riuer with his chriſtalline ſtreames, and ſpeedy courſe came running on with great force: and bicauſe ſhe alſo deſired to know, what caſtle that *Montemayor* was, which was ſcituate on the hill, higher then the reſt, and many other demands, one of them called *Duarda*, tolde her, that the citie was *Coymbra*, one of the moſt famous & principall cities, not onely of that kingdome, but of all Europe, for the braue territories & fieldes about it, which that great riuer (called *Mondego*) watred with his cleereſt waters. And that all thoſe fieldes, where with great ſwiftnes it ranne, were called the fieldes of *Mondego*: And that the caſtle which ſhe ſawe before her, was the ancient light and glory of Spaine; which name (ſhe ſaide) did better fit it, then the right name of it, bicauſe in the mids of the infidelitie of *Marſilius* the Mahometicall king, who had ſo many yeeres encompaſſed it with a cruell and continuall ſiege, it did euer ſo ſtrongly defend it ſelfe, that it was alwaies the conquerour, and neuer ſubdued, and that it was called in the Portugall toong *Montemor*, or *Velho*, where the vertue, valour, wiſedome, and magnanimitie remained for trophees of the noble deedes, that the Lords and Knights of it did in thoſe daies, and that the Lords and Ladies that now dwelt in it, flouriſhed in all kinde of vertues, and commendable parts. And ſo did the Shepherdeſſe tell her manie other things of the fertilitie of the ſoile, of the antiquitie of the buildings, of the riches of the inhabitants, of the beautie, diſcretion, and vertues of the Nymphes & Shepherdeſſes, and of the aptnes and actiuitie of the iolly Shepherdes, that dwelt about that impregnable caſtle: All which things did put *Feliſmena* in great admiration. But the Shepherdeſſes requeſting her to eate ſomthing (bicauſe they thought ſhe needed it) ſhe thankfully accepted their curteous offer. And whiles ſhe was eating that which the Shepherdeſſes had ſet before her, they ſawe her ſhed ſo manie teares, that cauſed no ſmall ſorrow in them both. And deſirous to aske her the cauſe of them, they were hindred by the voice of a Shepherd, that came ſweetely ſinging to the tune of his Rebecke, whom the Shepherdeſſes knewe to be the Shepherd *Danteus*, for whom *Armia* pleaded ſo much to the gracious *Duarda* for pitie and pardon. Who ſaide to *Feliſmena*. Although theſe are but homely cates (faire Shepherdeſſe) and countrey Shepherdeſſes fare, yet fals it out to be a dinner for a Princeſſe, for thou didſt but little thinke when thou cam'ſt hither, to dine with muſicke. There is not any muſicke in the world (ſaide *Feliſmena*) that pleaſeth me better then thy ſight and conuerſation, gracious Shepherdeſſe, which by greater reaſon makes me thinke, that I am a princeſſe, then the muſicke thou talkeſt of. Theſe words ſhould be adreſſed (ſaid *Duarda*) to one of more woorth, and higher deſerts then I am, and that had a riper wit, and deeper conceite to vnderſtande them. But howſoeuer I am, to my poore abilitie, thou ſhalt finde an earneſt will & an vnfained affection

affection in me readie to do thee all the seruice it may. Ah *Duarda* (saide *Armia* to her) how discreete art thou, and how mightest thou not win the onely praise of wisedome, if thou wert not cruell? Is there any woman in the worlde like thee heerein, who of purpose art offring occasions of impertinent speech, and to busie thy head with other matters, bicause thou hast no list to harken to the wofull Shepherd that by dolefull song is breathing out his sorrowes and mishaps. *Felismena* vnderstanding what that Shepherd was by *Armias* wordes, praied them to be still and to giue eare vnto him, who to the tune of his Rebecke did in his owne toong sing this song following.

Sighes, since you lighten not my hart,
Why go you not, why stay you still?
For in the end hope doth impart
A remedie vnto mine ill.

Yet hope to helpe me neuer stood,
Where reason worketh all in vaine:
Nor euer promis'd so much good,
As crueltie doth giue me paine.
But loue and trust giue me an art,
And qualitie of such a skill,
That neither hope reuiues my hart,
Nor crueltie the same doth kill.

Mine eies you need not then complaine,
With which her faire ones I haue seene,
And what neede you to feare againe,
Since viewed by her you haue beene?
And therefore change shall haue no part,
Nor entrance in my constant will,
Though crueltie doth kill my hart,
Or whether hope remaineth still.

The Shepherds musicke pleased *Felismena* better then the Shepherdesses meat, for she thought the song was made to complaine more of his owne griefe, then to lament an others. And as he made an ende, she said. Shepherd, it seemes thou hast truely learned by my ils to complaine of thine owne. Vnfortunate woman, that can neither heare, nor see any thing, which sets not before me the small reason I haue, to desire life. But yet God grant I may so long enioy it, vntil mine eies may see the cause of their burning teares. I hinkest thou faire Shepherdesse (said *Armia* to her) that these words deserue not to be heard, and that the hart, from whence they came forth, to be more esteemed then this Shepherdesse regards them? Talke not saide *Duarda* of his words, talke of his works; speake not of his dittie, but of his deeds, for by them his intent and meaning is to be iudged. If thou dost enamour thy selfe of songs, and delightest in Sonets compacted of industrie of fine and flattering words; Thinke not, that I do so: for as they are things wherein I take least pleasure; so by them I lesse perswade me of the loue he beares me. *Felismena* then fauouring *Duardas* reason, said. Behold *Armia*, how many ils might be auoided, and great mischiefes not effected, if we would not hearken to smooth & filed speeches, & lightly credit words framed by free harts: for, by nothing else they shew their properties more, then by a cunning and false tale, vttered by an eloquent & fine toong; that when we thinke it most true, there is nothing more false. Vnhappie me, that could not in time helpe my selfe with this counsell. But by this time was the Portugall Shepherd come where the Shepherdesses were, who in his owne language saide to *Duarda*. If the teares of these eies, and the sighes of this my hart are not sufficient (Shepherdesse) to mollifie that hardnes, wherewith thou dost so ill intreate me, I require nothing else, but that my company may not be troublesome vnto thee in these fields, and that the sorrowfull verses (which my griefe makes me sing, like to the dying swanne neere to this riuer) may be no occasion of thy miscontent and trouble. Passe away (faire

Shepherdesse)

Shepherdeſſe) the parching heate of the day vnder the ſhade of theſe greene Oſiars, for thy ſwaine will driue thy goates to the riuer to drinke, and tarrie with them, while they are waſhing themſelues in the criſtalline waters. Kembe and adreſſe (louely Shepherdeſſe) thy ſilke ſoft haire vpon the brinke of this cleere fountaine, from whence iſſueth out the running brook, that round about watereth this ſweete meadow: And in the meane time I will carrie thy faire flocks to feed, and keepe thy ſheep from going into the corne, that growes along the riuer ſide. I pray thee (ſweet Shepherdeſſe) take no care for any thing, for I haue no reſt all the while that I am not trauelling about thy buſines. If this ſeemes to thee but a ſmall token of loue, tell me then, wherein I may ſhew the good will & entire affection that I beare thee? For no eſpeciall loue doth wrong (to ſpeake the truth) in any thing whereof it offers any experience at all. *Danteus* hauing made an end, the Shepherdeſſe *Duarda* anſwered him thus. If it be true (*Danteus*) that there is any loue in the world, I haue borne it thee, and as great, as thou thy ſelfe knoweſt. Neuer any of theſe Shepherds, that bring their flockes to feede in the fieldes of *Mondego*, and to drinke in theſe cleere waters, obtained ſo much as one onely word of me, whereby thou mighteſt haue occaſion to complaine of *Duarda*, nor of the loue that ſhe hath euer ſhowen thee. Thy teares, and burning ſighes haue neuer touched any neerer at the hart then me. The day, mine eies beheld thee not, could not ſee any thing that pleaſed them. The bullocks that thou didſt keepe, were of more account to me, and I had a greater care of them, then of mine owne. And (for the moſt part) fearing, leaſt the keepers of this delightfull Champaine might hinder their feed, I went to the top of this little hill, to ſee if I could eſpie them, whereas I brought mine in place, when they could not feed the graſſe of theſe faire riuer bankes, without feare of being impounded. And I was not afraid to put my ſelfe in this ſubiection and danger, to put thee in aſſurance and ſafetie. I know well, that of this my ſubiect and apparant kind of loue thy affiance did ariſe; and of thy affiance, that which thou doſt. Thou did'ſt marie *Andreſa* (whoſe ſoule is now in glorie) a thing that in times paſt, made me to die for griefe: but I prayed to God, that I might ſee my ſelfe at laſt reuenged of her and thee, and after thy marriage I haue ſuffered that, which thou and others ſufficiently knowe: And in the end my Fortune hath concluded, that thine ſhall giue me no more paine and care. Let me then inioy my libertie, and hope not to regaine that with me, which by thine owne folly and default thou haſt ſo fondly loſt.

The Shepherdeſſe hauing made an ende of her ſharpe anſwer, and *Feliſmena* beginning to arbitrate the matter between them; they heard a great noiſe in the other ſide of the meadow, like to the ſounde of blowes, and ſmiting of ſwordes vpon harneies, as if ſome armed men had fought togither, ſo that all of them with great haſte ranne to the place, where they heard the noiſe, to ſee what the matter was. And being come ſomewhat neere, they ſaw in a little Iland, (which the riuer with a round turning had made) three knights fighting againſt one. And although he defended himſelfe valiantly, by ſhewing his approoued ſtrength and courage, yet the three knights gaue him ſo much to do, that he was faine to helpe himſelfe by all the force and pollicie he could. They fought on foote, for their horſes were tied to little trees, that grew thereabouts. And now by this time, the knight that fought all alone and defended himſelfe, had laide one of them at his feete with a blowe of his good ſword, which ended his life: But the other two that were very ſtrong and valiant, redoubled their force and blowes ſo thicke on him, that he looked for no other thing then death. The Shepherdeſſe *Feliſmena* ſeeing the knight in ſo great

danger, and if ſhe did not ſpeedily helpe him, that he could not eſcape with life, was not afraide to put hers in ieopardy, by doing that, which in ſuch a caſe ſhe thought, ſhe was bound to performe: wherefore putting a ſharpe headed arrowe into her bowe, ſhee ſaide vnto them: Keepe out knights, for it is not beſeeming men that make account of this name and honour, to take aduantage of their enimies with ſo great oddes. And ayming at the ſight of one of their helmets, ſhe burſt it with ſuch force, that the arrow running into his eies, came out of the other ſide of his head, ſo that he fell downe dead to the ground. When the diſtreſſed knight ſawe two of his enimies dead, he ran vpon the third with ſuch force, as if he had but then begun the combat; but *Feliſmena* helped him out of that trouble, by putting another arrow into her bow, the which tranſpiercing his armour, ſhe left vnder his left pap, and ſo iuſtly ſmot his hart, that this knight alſo followed his two companions. When the Shepherds and the knight beheld what *Feliſmena* had done, and how at two ſhootes ſhe had killed two ſuch valiant knights, they were all in great woonder. The knight therefore taking off his helmet, and comming vnto her ſaide. How am I able (faire Shepherdeſſe) to requite ſo great a benefite, and good turne, as I haue receiued at thy hands this day, but by acknowledging this debt for euer in my gratefull minde. When *Feliſmena* beheld the knights face, and knew him, her ſences were ſo troubled, that being in ſuch a traunce ſhe could ſcarce ſpeake, but comming to her-ſelfe againe, ſhe anſwered him. Ah my *Don Felix*, this is not the firſt debt, wherein thou art bound vnto me. And I cannot beleeue, that thou wilt acknowledge this (as thou ſaieſt) no more then thou haſt done greater then this before. Beholde to what a time and ende my fortune and thy forgetneſſe hath brought me, that ſhe that was woont to be ſerued of thee in the citie with Tilt and Tourneyes, and honoured with many other things, whereby thou didſt deceiue me, (or I ſuffered my ſelfe to be deceiued) doth nowe wander vppe and downe, exiled from her natiue countrey and libertie, for vſing thus thine owne. If this brings thee not into the knowledge of that which thou oweſt me, remember how one whole yeere I ſerued thee as thy page in the Princeſſe *Ceſarinas* Court: and how I was a ſolicitor againſt my ſelfe, without diſcouering my ſelfe, or my thoughts vnto thee, but onley to procure thy remedie, and to helpe the greefe, which thine made thee feele. How many times did I get thee fauours from thy miſtreſſe *Celia* to the great coſt of my teares and greefes: all which account but ſmall *Don Felix* in reſpect of thoſe dangers (had they beene vnſufficient) wherein I would haue ſpent my life for redreſſe of thy paines, which thy iniurious loue affoorded thee. And vnleſſe thou art weary of the great loue, that I haue borne thee, conſider and weigh with thy ſelfe the ſtrange effects, which the force of loue hath cauſed me to paſſe. I went out of my natiue countrey, and came to ſerue thee, to lament the ill that thou did'ſt ſuffer, to take vpon me the iniuries and diſgraces that I receiued therein; and to giue thee any content, I cared not to lead the moſt bitter and painefull life, that euer woman liued. In the habite of a tender and daintie Ladie I loued thee more then thou canſt imagine, and in the habite of a baſe page I ſerued thee (a thing more contrarie to my reſt and reputation then I meane now to reherſe) and yet now in the habite of a poore and ſimple Shepherdeſſe I came to do thee this ſmall ſeruice. What remaines then more for me to doe, but to ſacrifice my life to thy loueleſſe ſoule, if with the ſame yet, I could giue thee more content: and if in lieu therof thou wouldeſt but remember, how much I haue loued, & do yet loue thee: here haſt thou thy ſword in thy hand; let none therefore, but thy ſelfe reuenge the offence that I haue done thee.

thee. When the Knight heard *Felismenas* words, and knew them all to be as true as he was disloyall, his hart by this strange & sudden accident recouered some force againe to see what great iniurie he had done her, so that the thought thereof, and the plenteous effusion of blood that issued out of his woundes, made him like a dead man fall downe in a swoune at faire *Felismenas* feete. Who with great care, and no lesse feare, laying his head in her lap, with showers of teares that rained from her eies, vpon the Knights pale visage, began thus to lament. What meanes this cruell Fortune? Is the periode of my life come iust with the last ende of my *Don Felix* his daies? Ah my *Don Felix* (the cause of all my paine) if the plenteous teares, which for thy sake I haue shed, are not sufficient: and these which I now distill vpon thy louely cheekes, too fewe to make thee come to thy selfe againe, what remedie shall this miserable soule haue to preuent, that this bitter ioy by seeing thee, turne not into occasion of vtter despaire. Ah my *Don Felix*, Awake my loue, if thou dost but sleepe, or beest in a traunce, although I would not woonder if thou dost not, since neuer any thing that I could do, preuailed with thee to frame my least content. And in these and other lamentations was faire *Felismena* plunged, whom the Portugall Shepherdesses with their teares and poore supplies, endeuored to incourage, when on the sudden they saw a faire Nymph comming ouer the stony causey that lead the way into the Ilande, with a golden bottel in one hand, & a siluer one in the other, whom *Felismena* knowing by and by, saide vnto her. Ah *Doria*, could any come at this time to succour me, but thou faire Nymph? Come hither then, & thou shalt see the cause of al my troubles, the substance of my sighs, & the obiect of my thoughts, lying in the greatest danger of death that may be. In like occurrents (saide *Doria*) vertue and a good hart must take place. Recall it then (faire *Felismena*) and reuiue thy daunted spirits, trouble not thy selfe any more, for nowe is the ende of thy sorrowes, and the beginning of thy contentment come. And speaking these wordes, she besprinkled his face with a certaine odoriferous water which she brought in the siluer bottle, whereby he came to his memorie againe, and then saide vnto him. If thou wilt recouer thy life, Sir Knight, and giue it her that hath passed such an ill one for thy sake, drinke of the water in this bottle: The which *Don Felix* taking in his hande, drunke a good draught, and resting vpon it a little, founde himselfe so whole of his wounds, which the three knights had giuen him, and of that, which the loue of *Celia* had made in his brest, that now he felt the paine no more, which either of them had caused in him, then if he had neuer had them. And in this sort he began to rekindle the old loue, that he bare to *Felismena*, the which (he thought) was neuer more zealous then now. Whereupon sitting downe vpon the greene grasse, hee tooke his Lady and Shepherdesse by the hands, and kissing them manie times saide thus vnto her. How small account would I make of my life (my deerest *Felismena*) for cancelling that great bond, wherein (with more then life) I am for euer bound vnto thee: for since I enioy it by thy means, I thinke it no more then right, to restore thee that, which is thine owne. With what eies can I behold thy peereless beauty, which (though vnaduisedly) I knew not to be such, yet how dare I (for that which I owe thee) cast them in any other part? What wordes are sufficient to excuse the faults, that I haue committed against thy faith, and firmest loue, and loyaltie? Wretched and accursed for euer shall I be, if thy condition and clemencie be not enclined to my fauour, and pardon: for no satisfaction can suffice for so great an offence, nor reason to excuse me for that, which thou hast to forget me. Truth it is, that I loued *Celia* well, and forgot thee, but not in such sort that thy wisedome and beau-

tie did euer ſlide out of my minde. And the beſt is, that I knowe not wherein to put this fault, that may be ſo iuſtly attributed to me; for if I will impute it to the yoong age that I was then in, ſince I had it to loue thee, I ſhoulde not haue wanted it to haue beene firme in the faith that I owed thee. If to *Celias* beautie, it is cleere, that thine did farre excell hers and all the worlds beſides. If to the change of time, this ſhoulde haue beene the touchſtone which ſhould haue ſhewed the force and vertue of my firmenes. If to iniurious and trayterous abſence, it ſerues as little for my excuſe, ſince the deſire of ſeeing thee ſhould not haue been abſent from ſupporting thy image in my memorie. Behold then *Feliſmena*, what aſſured truſt I put in thy goodnes, that (without any other meanes) I dare put before thee, the ſmall reaſon thou haſt to pardone me. But what ſhall I doe to purchaſe pardon at thy gracious hands, or after thou haſt pardoned me, to beleeue, that thou art ſatisfied: for one thing greeues me more then any thing elſe in the world, and this it is. That, though the loue which thou haſt borne me, and wherewith thou doſt yet bleſſe me, is an occaſion (perhaps) to make thee forgiue me, and forget ſo many faults: yet I ſhall neuer lift vp mine eies to behold thee, but that euerie iniurie, which I haue done thee, will be worſe then a mortal inciſion in my guiltie hart. The Shepherdeſſe *Feliſmena*, who ſaw *Don Felix* ſo penitent for his paſſed miſdeedes, and ſo affectionately returned to his firſt thoughts, with many teares told him, that ſhe did pardon him, bicauſe the loue, that ſhe had euer borne him, would ſuffer her to do no leſſe: which if ſhe had not thought to do, ſhe would neuer haue taken ſo great paines and ſo many wearie iourneyes to ſeeke him out, and many other things, wherewith *Don Felix* was confirmed in his former loue. Whereupon the faire Nymph *Doria* came then to the Knight, and after many louing words and courteous offers in the Ladie *Felicias* behalfe paſſed betweene them, ſhe requeſted him and faire *Feliſmena* to goe with her to *Dianas* Temple, where the ſage Ladie (with great deſire to ſee them) was attending their comming. *Don Felix* agreed thereunto, and taking their leaue of the Portugall Shepherdeſſes (who wondered not a little to ſee what had happened) and of the woefull Shepherd *Danteus*, mounting vpon the horſes of the dead Knights that were ſlaine in the late combate, they went on their waie. And as they were going, *Feliſmena* told *Don Felix* with great ioy, what ſhe had paſt ſince ſhe had laſt ſeene him, which made him to maruell verie much, and eſpecially at the death of the three Sauages, and at the Palace of the ſage Ladie *Felicia*, and ſucceſſe of the Shepherds and Shepherdeſſes, and at euerie thing elſe contained in this booke. And *Don Felix* wondred not a little to vnderſtand how his Ladie *Feliſmena* had ſerued him ſo many daies as his page, and that he was ſo far gon out of his wits and memorie, that he knew her not all that while. And his ioy on the other ſide, to ſee that his Ladie loued him ſo well, was ſo great, that by no meanes he could hide it. Thus therefore riding on their way, they came to *Dianas* Temple, where the ſage *Felicia* was looking for their comming: and likewiſe the Shepherd *Arſileus*, and *Beliſa*, *Syluanus*, and *Seluagia*, who were now come thither not many daies before. They were welcõmed on euerie ſide, & with great ioy intertained; but faire *Feliſmena* eſpecially, who for hir rare vertues and ſingular beautie was greatly honored of them all. There they were all married with great ioy, feaſts, and triumphes, which were made by all the goodly Nymphes, and by the ſage and noble Ladie *Felicia*; the which *Syrenus* with his comming augmented not a little, of whom, & of the Portugall Shepherds *Danteus*, and *Duarda*, more ſhall be ſpoken in the ſecond part of this booke.

The end of the ſeauen Bookes of Diana of
George of Montemayor.

THE FIRST BOOKE OF THE SECOND PART OF DIANA OF George of Montemayor.

Written by Alonſo Perez.

ALthough it was not otherwiſe poſſible, but that the ioy of theſe happie Louers was very great, ſince fortune had now lifted them vp to ſo high a degree of content, and happines, as they themſelues could not wiſh for more, (euery one poſſeſſing his onely deſire) yet I thinke that *Felicias* was not any whit leſſe then theirs, by ſeeing her ſelfe viſited by ſo worthie a companie, and that by her onely meanes they enioyed ſuch wiſhed reſt: And the rather, for that ſhe was more capable to feele this ioy, by reaſon of the excellencie of her wit, the mature iudgement whereof, the more it was higher then theirs, the more it made the internall powers and workes of the ſoule more perfect and abſolute. So that if the ſage Lady had onely regarded her pleaſure and content (forgetting what was conueeient for euery one of them) ſhe would not haue requeſted them to come to her Palace againe: but being ſo carefull for thoſe things, which were moſt needefull for them, by neglecting her owne will and deſire, ſhe prouided for euery one in particular. Whereupon (certaine daies being paſt, in which ſhe had entertained them with moſt royall and ſumptuous feaſtes, and ſmall they were not, ſince ſhe was mightier in operations then others in imaginations) ſhe bethought her of *Arſileus*, and of his deere loue *Beliſa*, and therewithall remembred how needefull it was for them to goe viſit and comfort their aged parents, who paſſed many a doubtfull and ſorrowfull thought for them, *Arſenius* eſpecially father vnto *Arſileus*, whom ſhe had now remedied and rid from the loue, which ſo lately had made him dote on faire *Beliſa*. Who therefore giuing the Lady *Felicia* infinite thankes for the benefites, and louing entertainment they had receiued at her handes, and taking their leaue of the Lordes, Ladies, Nymphes, and Shepherdes that were there, the next day following went to their owne towne. And not many daies after, *Felicia* one night after ſupper ſaide thus to *Syluanus* and *Seluagia*. I could not chooſe but blame you fortunate Shepherdes, for the ſmall care you haue of your flockes, if I my ſelfe were not in fault, bicauſe you haue neuer asked after them in all this time, nor (I thinke) once remembred them, fearing leſt by reaſon of your abſence, they haue beene in great want, and not without cauſe, being not carried to feede at conuenient times vpon the greene and fauorie graſſe, nor (at their neede) driuen to the cleere ſprings to quench their burning thirſt, nor with wonted loue put into the coole and pleaſant ſhades: And ſeeing that with familiar and gentle hand they are not eaſed of the burden of their fruitfull bags, that ſwell with abundance of white milke, and that with the accuſtomed and knowen voice of their louing Shepherds they are not called to licke the ſmooth peebles of the ſauourie ſalt; nor that your ſweete Bagpipes (ſeconded with many amorous Ditties, which not long ſince made there the woods and dales to ring)

haue ſounded in their eares: It is therefore conuenient that to morrow you depart at the riſing of purple *Aurora* the foreteller of ſpeedie *Phebus*, whereof I put you in minde, at this time eſpecially, bicauſe your abſence from them before was not ſo great, that you needed to be told thereof. Which departure of yours I woulde not haue you thinke is to any other ende, but to ſet ſome order in your affaires, that at your pleaſure you may the ſooner returne hither againe, aſſuring you that elſewhere you ſhall not be better entertained with deedes, then heere with hart and good will. And your returne ſhall onely be to ſolace your ſelues in the companie of *Don Felix*, and *Feliſmena*, whoſe time is not yet come to depart. Wherefore I pray you goe about it, for ſetting all things in good order touching your flockes and domeſticall affaires, you may doe the other the better; yet promiſing you, that before you come to your dwelling places, you ſhall finde thoſe that can looke well to your flockes, if you will at the leſt commit them to their charge: and who will moſt willingly take it vpon them. Let your returne (therefore) be with as much ſpeede as may be, which ſhall reſult to your owne profite, and to their pleaſure with whom you ſhall paſſe away the time heere. *Syluanus* and *Seluagia* had their eies ſo faſtened on the maieſticall countenance of the Sage Lady, perceiuing her ſpeech to be onely addreſſed to them, that with great reuerence they roſe out of their places, and gaue a diligent eare vnto her, bicauſe they might better vnderſtande the meaning and effect thereof. For otherwiſe ſeldome were their eies caried away into any other part, but to looke vpon one another, vnable to remooue them (the leaſt time that might be) from thence, wherein each others ſoule had no ſmall portion, and thinking it ſtealth, to remooue their thoughts from that entire affection, whereof their mutuall harts had ſo ſure poſſeſſion. Whereupon the ſage Ladies ſpeech being ended, both of them turned their amorous eies to each other againe, *Syluanus* making louing ſignes to *Seluagia* to anſwer the Ladies intent. To whom with a ſeemly bluſh, as partly aſhamed thereat, ſhe ſaide in this ſort. It is now no time (my deere *Syluanus*) to vſe circumſtances of ſuch arte, when there is no cauſe, neither doe they well beſeeme this place. For though their vſage to all women is commendable, yet not in particular, for the husband to his wife, and in ſuch ſort as if he went about to preferre her before himſelfe. For after that the woman hath deliuered herſelfe into the poſſeſſion of her husband, ſhe therewithal yeeldeth vp to his iuriſdiction the title of her libertie, by the ſweete and ſacred bonde of marriage. Whereupon I ſhall ſee the loue thou beareſt me, if thou vſeſt this pleaſant bonde according to the iuſt lawes thereof, by ſetting aſide the ſuperſtitious vanities of vnlawfull and wanton loue. *Syluanus* had not let *Seluagia* eſcaped ſo ſmoothly without an anſwer, if he had not thought it an vndecent part to defer his to the ſage Lady. Wherfore giuing a becke with his head to his Shepherdeſſe in token of thanks, and that he was well pleaſed, with her louing words, he anſwered *Felicia* thus. Preſuppoſing (ſage Lady) that we muſt do all that you commaund and ſet downe, and that there is nothing more behouefull for our welfare, then your will, and pleaſure, therein it lies to command vs whatſoeuer, I feeling no greater reprehenſion in mine owne behalfe, then that which proceedes from your wiſe and louing aduiſe, ſaying, that I haue no care of my flocks, nor thought of them at all: For though (I confeſſe) I haue not remembred them as reaſon woulde I had done, yet cannot I therefore be iuſtly blamed, but rather thinke, that if I had done otherwiſe, I might haue beene in greater fault. For it were not meete, ſince I haue receiued ſuch benefits in your houſe, that I ſhoulde forget one minute, that ioy and content,

tent,wherewith ſuch ſweete and pleaſant thoughts are ingendred and preſerued,to thinke vpon thoſe flockes that feede vpon the vnſauorie graſſe. And you may alſo beleeue,that if my fewe and ſilly ſheepe, nay if the whole worlde ſhould periſh,and be loſt,and that if it lay in my hands to helpe them both, in reſpect of employing my high and happy thoughts (the leaſt time that might be) on my faire and vertuous Shepherdeſſe,my ſheepe ſhould remaine without helpe,and the world without ſuccour. *Seluagia* that was not vnskilfull in paying ſuch debts with like coine again, anſwered him thus.Asit lieth not in me,(my deere friend) ſo will I not find fault with any thing thou doſt: which I ſpeake to this end,bicauſe thou ſhouldeſt not vſe (as I told thee before) any more words ſo apparantly manifeſting that loue, whereof I doubt not: Although there is nothing(if I muſt tell the truth, after the glorie that I haue conceiued in my ioyfull thoughts by being thine)that can pleaſe and content me more then to ſee, how farre by wordes and effect thy true loue extendeth. For though ſome ſay,That where deedes be, wordes are in vaine, yet I take great pleaſure in hearing them, when they are by all probabilitie correſpondent vnto deedes, and eſpecially in matters of loue, whereof we now talke. For ſince the interiour part is a hidden and ſecret thing, and which is ſooneſt diſcouered by wordes, wee muſt therefore not meanely account of them, that pretend to make the interiour knowne by th'exteriour. True it is that ſuch words and outward actes muſt be meaſured by the effects of him that pronounceth them. For oftentimes we ſee that many things are vttred by a falſe and deceitfull toong, which were neuer ment in the hart. Which I ſpeake not in preiudice of thy loue (my deere Shepherd) or to inſtruct thee of diſloyaltie,aſſuring that I am glad to heare thy words, whereby (beſides the certaintie that I haue of thy trueſt loue) thou makeſt me the moſt contented woman in the world. And in this I take no ſmall glory, and that thy loue (not able to containe it ſelfe within the ſoule)flowes out by the mouth, like the little pot which filled with water is hardly ſet on the fire without running ouer. And bicauſe thou maiſt not thinke to ouercome me in affection, I would wiſh that as loue hath giuen me deedes, it had alſo lent me ſome wordes, to make a full ſatisfaction of thoſe true ſignes of thy vnfained good will, which hath brought me ſo much in thy debt. But ſince they are ſo ſtrange vnto mee, I muſt, with onely offring that which I am able to giue, endeuour to diſcharge my ſelfe thereof. They all tooke great delight to heare what amorous wordes paſſed betweene the Shepherdes, which had not ended ſo ſoone, if *Felicia* had not cut them off, ſaying: That ſince the one was ſatisfied and content with the others anſwere, their complements ſhould now ceaſe, and turning to *Syrenus*, ſhe ſaid. And thinke not (free Shepherd) that I haue forgotten thee, for thou ſhalt hereafter ſee woonders at my hands. I know not any thing good Ladie (ſaid *Syrenus*)wherein I may truely ſay you haue forgotten me, ſince you haue made me ſo much remember my ſelfe, that with cleere eies I may eaſily diſcerne, not only my follies paſt; but alſo thoſe which theſe Gentlemen and ſhepherds are ſo fondly fallen into. Euerie one laughed at *Syrenus* words,to whom *Felicia* ſaid. In ſooth *Syrenus*, all are of thy opinion, if not, aske thy corriuall *Syluanus*,and his beloued *Seluagia*. The blind man (anſwered *Syrenus*) cannot iudge of colours. Whom wilt thou haue then for iudge(ſaid *Felicia?*) Him(ſaid *Syrenus*)that hath the eies of reaſon. And who is he,ſaid *Felicia?* If there be no other (ſaid *Syrenus*) my ſelfe. So wouldeſt thou giue ſentence (ſaid *Felicia*)in thine owne fauour;but knoweſt thou not,that the iudge is not admitted,when he is not free from paſſion? But I am(ſaid *Syrenus.*) Otherwiſe (ſaid *Felicia*) thy iudgement would not be

be allowed. Not for me at the least (saide *Syrenus*) though it be for others. Let vs leaue this for some fitter time (said *Felicia*.) And (*Syrenus*) thou shalt to morrow accompany *Syluanus* and *Seluagia* home, because thou camest in their company hither, but with condition (as theirs is) of thy speedie returne againe. *Syrenus* answered, that it pleased him well. It is well then, said *Felicia*: and therfore let vs go take our rest with some parting song to the tune of thy free Rebecke, and *Syluanus* and *Seluagia* with their enamoured Bagpipes shall answer thee. Then did *Syluanus* take his Bagpipe for *Syrenus* to sing to it, and *Syrenus* his Rebecke to play to *Syluanus* when he had done. And so *Syrenus* leading the song, began thus.

Syrenus.

WHo hath of Cupids *cates and dainties prayed,*
May feede his stomacke with them at his pleasure:
If in his drinke some ease he hath essaied,
Then let him quench his thirsting without measure:
And if his weapons pleasant in their manner,
Let him imbrace his standard and his banner.
For being free from him, and quite exempted,
Ioyfull I am, and proud, and well contented.

Syluanus.

Of Cupids *daintie cates who hath not prayed,*
May be depriued of them at his pleasure:
If wormewood in his drinke he hath essaied,
Let him not quench his thirsting without measure:
And if his weapons cruell in their manner,
Let him abiure his standard and his banner:
For I not free from him, and not exempted,
Ioyfull I am, and proud, and well contented.

Syrenus.

Loue's so expert in giuing many a trouble,
That now I knowe not, why he should be praised:
He is so false, so changing, and so double,
That with great reason he must be dispraised:
Loue (in the end) is such a iarring passion,
That none should trust vnto his peeuish fashion:
For of all mischiefe he's the onely Master,
And to my good a torment and disaster.

Syluanus.

Loue's so expert in giuing ioy, not trouble,
That now I knowe not, but he should be praised:
He is so true, so constant, neuer double,
That in my minde he should not be dispraised:
Loue (in the end) is such a pleasing passion,
That euery one may trust vnto his fashion:

For

For of all good he is the onely Maſter,
And foe vnto my harmes, and my diſaſter.

Syrenus.

Not in theſe ſayings to be prooú'd a lier,
He knowes, that doth not loue, nor is beloued:
Now nights and daies I reſt, as I deſier,
After I had ſuch greefe from me remoued:
And cannot I be glad, ſince thus eſtranged,
My ſelfe from falſe Diana *I haue changed?*
Hence, hence falſe Loue I will not entertaine thee,
Since to thy torments thou doſt ſeeke to traine me.

Syluanus.

Not in theſe ſayings to be prooú'd a lier,
He knowes, that loues, and is againe beloued:
Now nights and daies I reſt in ſweete deſier,
After I had ſuch happy fortune proued:
And cannot I be glad, ſince not eſtranged,
My ſelfe into Seluagia *I haue changed?*
Come, come good Loue, and I will entertaine thee,
Since to thy ſweete content thou ſeek'ſt to traine mee.

The reſt of the companie tooke great delight to heare the Shepherds ſing, and how contrary they were in their opinions, commending *Syluanus* his wit and skill very much, which he ſhewed in euery point with the ſame termes to contradict *Syrenus*. And after this, they went to ſleepe, the Shepherds then taking their leaue for their departure earely in the morning, becauſe riſing betimes, not to trauell in the heate of the day, their viſiting in the morning might not hinder their quiet ſleepe. *Felicia* gaue *Doris* in charge to fill their ſcrips that night before with ſufficient prouiſion for their way, who like a friendly and louing Nymph, that was neuer ſlacke to ſerue their neceſſitie, going about it immediately, did put into the ſame good ſtore of victuals.

The opprobrious and rude ſhame of the ignominious coniunction, had nowe thruſt out vermillion and purple *Aurora* to leaue with her abſence, the deformed little old man in a ſolitarie ſadnes, for feare of being eſpied by *Phœbus*: and the little ſtars as moſt obedient, and of leſſe force, with the comming of the mounting Sunne into our Hemiſphere, hid themſelues when the three Shepherds went from *Felicias* rich pallace towards their poore Cottages by their accuſtomed and knowen waies: which with their pleaſant and merry talke they ouercame, and made leſſe painfull, conferring togither of bitter and ſorrowfull memories of times paſt, and entermingling them with recitall of the ſweete and ioyfull remedies of their former greefes, which by *Felicias* fauours they enioyed, liuing now in a happie and wiſhed eſtate.

But *Clicies* louing friend had ſcarce lifted vp his chariot ouer the face of the earth, when from the ſide of a hill they eſpied a Shepherd comming downe with a paper in his hand, ſtaying betweene pace and pace, and vnfolding it, looked into it, and put it by and by into his boſome againe, and without playing on Bagpipe or Rebecke, began to ſing this Sonnet.

A Sonnet.

From whence O Paper mine such happie fauour,
That vndeseruedly thou must be placed
Before that flowre that yeeldes the sweetest sauour,
Which nature hath with all her powres graced?
Thou shalt the figure see (my louing Paper)
Where all the vertues make their wished dwelling,
And of the rest not any one escape her,
Graces, and giftes, and beauties most excelling.

Then when thou com'st before my heauenly treasure,
Say thus from me to her. He sends me hither,
Who liues to serue thee, whilst his life extendeth:
In onely this his thoughts are musing euer:
In ioy of this both nights and daies he spendeth:
To serue thee is his onely sport and pleasure.

At the very instant when the Shepherd made an end of his Sonnet, the three Shepherds met with him, for they might well haue come to the valley before, where their way and the other Shepherds met both togither in a crosse path, but that of purpose to heare him, they lingred out the time as they went; to whom (after they had saluted him) they saide. Since our Fortune hath beene so good to vs (iolly Shepherd) to make vs take part of thy sweet Sonnet, do not thus leaue vs in suspence, by hiding from vs, what this happy paper containeth. I am content saide (the Shepherd) vpon condition (when you haue read it,) you will let me go without any more questions, as well for that I go in haste, as also that it doth not please me to giue any further account and discouerie of my selfe. *Syrenus* taking the paper to read it, and seeing it was a letter saide. Tell vs in briefe (if it please thee) the contents heerof, bicause thou knowest how hardly (otherwise) the ground and meaning of letters are vnderstood. No more (said the Shepherd) but this. A most faire yoong Shepherdesse, to whom in good qualities, and excellent parts I come nothing neer (I will not speake of the rest, since in these she hath not her equall) for want of better companie, hath vouchsafed to like of mine, whereupon she and I, to passe away the time, haue feined to play the parts of two true Louers. Wherein, (when I tooke least heede) I quickly perceiued, that the faining of my side was turned to good earnest (she remayning still in her former estate and libertie) and that her iesting neuer made any true impression of loue in her owne hart, as it hath done in mine. The rest and almost all if thou wilt diligently reade, or harken vnto, thou maiest easilie gather. *Syrenus* then beginning to reade it, saw that it said thus.

Poore I that am not now for thee
(If any health I haue to lend)
To thee, that hast each part of me
All that I haue, I meane to send.

Receiue this letter left alone,
That to conuert all his to thine,
And not in any thing his owne,
This onely paper is behinde.

Since I haue giu'n thee all the rest,
Thine honour it shall not gainstand,
To take a thing, that is the lest:
A peece of paper at my hand.

So

So poore and base a thing as this,
Cannot offend thy minde so high:
Why then, it cannot be amisse,
To take and reade it by and by.

But in the same if thou dost find
Words written ill, and not well coucht,
Knowe that my hand did like the winde
Tremble, when that my pen it toucht.

The blots, which heere thou see'st disgrace
My letter, making it to blame,
My teares they are, that fell apace,
Knowing to thee I wrote the same.

Reade it, I pray thee, to the end:
And make an end of all my woes,
Open thine eies to this I send,
And to my griefes giue some repose.

And to the end thou maist it reede,
It comes not from an En'mies brest,
But from a faithfull hart indeede,
And from a friend aboue the rest.

It is no letter, that defies
(Defied for I am too much)
Alas in conquer'd men it lies
Not in their power to be such.

In endlesse peace I seeke to liue,
And on thy grace I doe relie,
If not, the doome and sentence giue
Vnto my life condemn'd to die.

I haue contended to this howre
Thy mighty forces to resist,
And now I finde, thy onely powre
Doth conquer (Mistresse) as thou list.

It is not much, that in the field
Vnto thy valour I giue place,
Since that the God of loue doth yeeld
Himselfe, vnto thy wounding face.

So that now subiect I remaine
Vnto thy sou'raine force, I see,
Then wound me not, for t'is in vaine,
Since wholy I doe yeeld to thee.

My life I put into thy hands,
And now doe with me at thy will:
But yet behold, how pitie stands
Entreating thee thou wouldst not kill.

So shalt thou make thy conquest braue,
If in thy spoiles and triumphes, such
Remorse of pitie thou wilt haue,
Which all the world commends so much.

I saw thee sit not long agoe
Feasting with ioy and pleasant fare,
And I, because I could not soe,
Did feede vpon my woes and care.

There leisurely thou didst begin
Of other cates and flesh to feede,
But I with haste did rauin in
My pains, wherwith my hart did bleede.

The Riuer water thou didst drinke
With freest minde deuoid of care,
But I in fluds of teares did sinke,
The which to drinke I did not spare.

I saw thee with thy little knife
Cutting thy bread and meate againe,
And then (me thought) my wofull life
Should in like sort be cut in twaine.

A little Boy sat in thy lap,
Thou didst imbrace him with great ioy:
Oh would it had beene then my hap
To haue beene that same little Boy.

Thou gau'st to him a louing kisse:
What heere I felt, I will repeate,
Let it suffice, that I was this
Most happy childe, but in conceate.

But not contented vvith the same,
Marking the place where thou didst lay
Thy lips, vnto the childe I came,
And tooke from him the kisse avvay.

Each thing of thine so vvell I loue,
That if I see them to decay,
Me thinks, my care it doth behoue
To saue, to cast them not avvay.

For

For all the bones, which thou didst leaue,
With greedy stomacke I did picke,
Bicause I onely did conceaue,
That they thy daintie mouth did licke.

The place I marked of the pot,
That did thy Corall lips diuide,
When thou didst drinke, and I did not
Forget to drinke of that same side.

And with the wine which I did shed
Of purpose, on the cloth aboue:
Often (in vaine) these words in red
My finger wrote: I loue, I loue:

(Disdainfull) thou dost not esteeme
These signes, nor these inductions know,
Or dost at least (as it doth seeme
Dissemble: it must needes be so.

And onely that thou dost dissemble,
Which might vnto my profit fall,
But that which makes me now to tremble,
Alas, thou fainest not at all.

By seeing such effects in me,
That thou dost cause my heauines,
Thou fain'st, my plaintes are not for thee,
But for some other Shepherdesse.

Thou seest how for thy loue I paine,
And at thy gracious feete I lie.
(To grecue me more) yet dost thou faine,
That for another I doe die.

But if thy beauties in great store
Engender pride of such excesse,
Thou must beleeue, and faine no more,
That my pure loue is no whit lesse.

If thy perfections doe surpasse
All beauties that the world doth breede,
As much as Dimond passeth glasse,
So doth my loue all loues exceede.

And when thou com'st to know, that none
Is worthy of thy louely grace,
Thou must not faine, that I am one,
That may deserue so sweete a place.

I am not worthy of so deere
A choice (I say) to be my lot,
Since all the world hath not thy peere,
For that it selfe deserues thee not.

And though I said so (in a vaine)
I shall not be beleeu'd, I knowe;
For well thou know'st what one doth faine,
Is of a thing which is not soe.

Dispose of me euen at thy will,
And faine as much as any one,
So thou beleeue, and faine not still,
That I loue none, but thee alone.

Then on thy gentlenes I call
In pitie, which thou hast forgot,
Thou would'st not mocke my loue at all,
Nor faine, that I doe loue thee not.

Great Ioue can witnesse heere to thee,
That it doth greeue me not so much,
The little loue thou bear'st to me,
As once to faine, that mine is such.

Nor it doth greeue me of thy guise,
To see thee mocke me in such sort:
Or that my things in any wise
May cause thy laughter and thy sport.

But it doth glad me without measure,
That thou dost mocke my loue so lost,
Since by such meanes I giue thee pleasure:
(Although it be vnto my cost.)

To make thee laugh, I doe adiure
The heauens (as I thy loue may ioy)
That many times I doe procure
To doe, and tell thee many a toy.

And though I know none will omit
To call me foole (not without cause)
A simple man of little wit,
Sweruing too much from reasons lawes:

Yet Shepherdesse it skils me not,
Nor it doth not my minde dismay
That all repute me for a sot,
So I may please thee any way.

Since

Since that I cannot (Shepherdesse)
With things in earnest please thy vaine,
I will content thee (at the lest)
Frō hence with toies (though to my pain)

To thee they are but things in iest
(For so thou mean'st to take them all)
But euer to my painfull brest
True they haue prooú'd, and so they shall.

Mocke me thy fill, since thou dost make
It all thy glee, thy sport, and laughter:
But I doe wish, that Loue may take
A narrow count of thee heereafter.

I once did also iest with loue,
Loue did I scoffe, and loue despise,
But to my paine I now doe proue
What did thereof to me arise.

And this is that poore silly mee
This wicked traitor brought vnto;
But woe is me, that now with thee
I knowe not what he meanes to do.

With iestes and sports of thousand fashions
Two thousand fauors thou didst lend me,
But yet the God of loue, to passions
In earnest turnes them, to offend me.

With thine owne hand (O what a thing)
In iesting didst thou carue to me?
In iest thou saidst, and sometimes sing,
Mine onely Shepherd thou shalt be.

O sweetest foode of sauour ie tast,
Of force my poore life to maintaine:
Sweet words, whose sound did bind me fast,
Of force to giue me rest againe.

Both word, and deede, and what did passe
(Though but a merry iest it were yet)
So singular a grace it was,
That in my brest I cannot beare it.

To sickest men, to giue great store
Of meate, and so much as they craue,
It is not good, but iust no more,
Then it is meete for them to haue.

Fauours I craue by heapes of thee, (desse)
That thou wouldst giue me (Shepher-
But yet (perhaps) they may kill me,
For little force I doe possesse.

It hurts the driest field and meade,
As much to cast in them great plentie
Of water, as if they lay deade,
Of water, and of moisture emptie.

So fauours in the selfesame sort,
If that they haue no rule, nor measure,
Suffice to make ones life more short,
As wel as scornes, hates, and displeasure.

But in the end, and howsoeuer,
Take thy full ioy, although I die.
Whether it be with death for euer,
Or with my life, I care not I.

Mocke, and with me doe what thou list,
And happen will, what happen may,
My will thy will shall not resist,
But thy commaund shall still obay,

Commaund me then to be thy loue,
Commaund me in thy loue to end,
And he that rules, and is aboue
All harts, commaund thy hart to bend.

Since mightie Loue commaunds my hart,
Of force thy louer I must bee,
Ioine thou with loue, and take his part,
Then all the world shall honour thee.

But I haue written to be plaine
Enough, since thou hast not thy fill
By giuing me continuall paine,
Desiring yet to serue thee still.

But in the end now will I cease,
Although my torment doth not end:
Desire is conquerd by the feare
I haue, thy patience to offend.

When *Syrenus* had made an end of reading this letter, the Shepherd tooke it out of his hands, & without staying any longer, went his waies singing. That which

he ſung, whileſt they could heare him (giuing great eare vnto him) was to the purpoſe of that, which he had told them before he ſhewed them the letter.

A Sonnet.

I Plaid with Loue, Loue plaid with me againe,
I mocked him, but I was mockt in deede,
He would not let my hart his art exceede:
For (though a Boy) yet mocks he doth diſdaine.
A friend he is to thoſe, that doe not faine;
My ieſtes (it ſeemes) doe true affection breede:
And now, if Loue is not reuenged with ſpeede,
My hart can witnes that with earneſt paine.
Goe louers then to ieſt it out apace
With this God Cupid but a boy, and blinde,
And you ſhall ſee, if it be good or noe?
Thinking to haue delight, you ſhall haue woe,
Seeking cold water, fire you ſhall finde,
Who plaies with boies, comes often to diſgrace.

They maruelled not a little at the ſweetenes of his ſong, & were no leſſe ſorrie, becauſe they knew not what Shepherd he was; but ſeeing it was not then poſſible to know him, they went on their nigheſt waies. Some haſte they made to paſſe away the heate of the day in that Iland, where they found the deſperate Shepherdeſſe *Beliſa*, taking the ſame to be a more freſh and pleaſant place, and more quiet for their recreation then any other. Whereunto being come, they ſaw how a little brooke, couered almoſt all ouer with ſweet and ſmelling herbs, ranne gently thorow a little greene meadow amongſt a ranke of diuers trees, that were nouriſhed and maintained by the cleere water; vnder the ſhadowes of which, as they were now determined to reſt themſelues, *Syrenus* ſaid. Let vs ſee (if you thinke good) from whence this little ſpring doth iſſue foorth: It may be the place is more freſh and cooler thereabouts; if not, or if we cannot finde out the fountaine, from whence it flowes, we will come hither againe. It liked his company well, and ſo they deſired him to leade the way. Euerie place and part, that all the brooke vpwards they troad on, inuited them to pleaſant reſt, being all alike to the verie fountaine, whereupon *Seluagia* ſaid. If we cannot finde out the beginning of this ſpring, we ſhall not finde (at the leaſt) any diſcontent for our ſelues, or ſuffer any trouble in returning backe againe, ſince ſo conuenient places (as better, and more pleaſant we cannot wiſh for our deſired reſt) in going vp higher, are offered vnto vs. Hauing now gone vp a little along the running brooke, and not found out the head, and that euerie ſtep (as I ſaid) preſented vnto them a pleaſant place of reſt, they went ſtaying ſomtimes, & ſomtimes reaſoning with themſelues, where they might ſit, one of them ſaying: This place is more freſh: and another anſwering, no, but this, let vs ſit downe heere, for this is more pleaſant: no, but here (ſaid another:) So that the pleaſant obiect of euerie place held them in ſuch ſuſpence, that none of them could chooſe out the beſt. But reſoluing at the laſt vpon one, they tooke the ſcrips of their ſhoulders, and paſſing their ſheepehookes from their left hands, they tooke them in their right to lay them downe to reſt, when they ſaw, that with greater quantitie of waters and freſher ſhades of green trees the brooke ranne vp higher; ſo that for a new hope, a new aire and place was

obiected

obiected to them. They had not yet ſcarce begun to goe vp a little farther, when the brooke forſaking her right courſe towardes the left hand, made them turne their ſteps backe againe, where they diſcouered a great thicket, and ſpring of diuers trees. Comming to the which, they ſaw a very narrow entrance, and ſomwhat long, whoſe ſides were not of wals fabricated by artificiall hand, but made of trees by nature (the miſtreſſe of all things:) ſo that the wooddy place was no leſſe enobled and imbeliſhed with the naturall verdure, then the ſtately chambers with embоſſed gold. For there was ſeene the deadly Cypreſſe, the triumphant Laurell, the hard Oke, the low ſallow, the inuincible palme, the blacke and ruggie Elme, the Oliue, the prickie Cheſtenut, & the high Pineapple, one amongſt another; whoſe bodies were bound about with greene Iuie and the fruitfull vine, and beſet with ſweet Ieſmines & many other redolent flowers, that grew very thicke togither in that place. Amongſt the which many little birds (inhabitants of that wood) went leaping from bough to bough, as in ſcornefull cages, making the place more pleaſant with their ſweete and ſiluer notes. The trees were in ſuch order ſet togither, that they denied not the golden ſunbeames to haue an entrance in betweene the boughes and leaues, to paint forth the greene ground with diuers colours, which reuerberated from the flowers, that were neuer ſteadie in one place, by reaſon that the mooueable leaues did diſquiet them. This narrow way did alſo lead to a little greene, couered all ouer with fine graſſe, and not touched with the hungrie mouthes of deuouring flockes. At the ſide of it, was the fountaine of the brooke, hauing a care, that that place ſhould not drie vp, ſending forth on euerie ſide her flowing waters. The water of this cleere fountaine came out of a ſtony rocke, which a great Oke with his hard rootes did imbrace, on either ſide whereof ſtood two great Laurell trees. This fountaine did riſe towards that place, where the ſunne beginnes to mount, declining ſomewhat to the ſeptentrionall part. The ſame rockie ſtone, whereby the water ranne out, ſerued both for a mouth and channell, which was not wrought with the blow of the hard Cheſil; but by the continuall running of the gentle water: and ſo it was in ſome places a little more worne, then in others, being more ſoft, or (to ſay more properly) leſſe hard in one place then in another; and by reaſon of the concauitie of the ſtone, there was ſeene an inequalitie, that repreſented a more pleaſant and gracious running, bicauſe it made the water come out more merily with high and low fals, repreſenting certaine criſtalline in cleeres, and ſhadows, a pleaſant and delightfull ſight to the greedie eie. The water fell into a fountaine of the ſame rockie ſtone, wrought after the ſame forme, as the channell was: It was foure ſquare, and euery ſide was fower foote in bredth, and in depth ſixe or a little more. The Petrenall was not right, to ſmite fire with the blowe of hard ſteele, bicauſe it was not blacke, but ſo white, that had it not beene for the hardnes thereof, none would haue thought, but that it had beene Alablaſter. And though it was not ſo curiouſly cut out, and wrought like marble, yet was it maruellous and ſtrange for the turne it ſerued. And ſo for the cleerenes of the water, as alſo for the whitenes of the rockie ſtone it was ſo chriſtalline, that if any foule thing did fall therein, it was ſo apparant to his ſight that came thither, that (maugre his will) hee was forced not to ſuffer it to receiue ſuch iniurie, but to bring it againe to the former purenes: For which cauſe it was euer kept verie cleere, and cleane. The water ranne out of it into an Ilande on both ſides, to enuironne the greene plat, which was ſet round about with white Poplars, blacke Elmes, and greene Sallowes. It was in length about a hundred and fiftie paces, and a hundred and twentie in bredth. There was no entrance into

it,but where the Shepheds went in,and by another way right ouer againſt the ſame, made almoſt in the ſelfe ſame forme and faſhion: for the thicknes of the trees ſtopped vp all other waies, and alſo bicauſe the water that ranne by the ſides,iſſuing towards the ſide without in ſome places of that brooke, did wax ſo broad between the place of the trees, that by the playne it could not, by reaſon that it was ſomewhat higher. Neere to this fountaine did the Shepherds ſit vnder the ſhadow of a braunchie Oke,and certaine Laurell trees, and taking out ſome of thoſe victuals that *Doria* had prouided for them (after they had reſted themſelues a little) they ouercame their importunate hunger, ſatisfying their appetites ſufficiently with the ſame: and bicauſe they had a good way to goe that day, they tooke not their reſt, as much as the place and their deſires did inuite them; but before all the heate of the day was paſt(leaſt the time ſhould alſo paſſe away with it) they were about to goe from that place. But as they were preparing themſelues to riſe, and to be gone, *Syrenus* ſaide to *Syluanus*. It is not reaſon *Syluanus*, that, liuing now in ſuch ioy and content, and in the preſence of thy beloued *Seluagia*,thou ſhouldeſt let thy Bagpipe waxe ſo drie; nor, is it meete, that from this pleaſant place (the friendly entertainment and delights whereof thou haſt enioyed) thou ſhouldeſt depart, without requiting it with the ſweetnes of thy melodie, and ſong. With greater reaſon (anſwered *Syluanus*) ſhould the *Hamadryades* preſeruers of theſe trees, and the *Driades* inhabitours of theſe green woods complaine of thee, that wouldeſt go away, without giuing them ſome part of thy ſweete harmonie,and melodious voice. Let vs leaue this courteous contention (ſaid *Syrenus*) and doe that which I requeſt thee, for the great reaſon which thou haſt to do it for that which I told thee firſt, though thou wilt not (perhaps) for that, which I alleaged laſt. For the firſt indeed I cannot deny thee ſaid *Syluanus*,but in faith I know not what to ſing,that might not grieue thee, that art ſo far from loue,or offend me that am ſo full of amorous thoughts, ſo that in the end I can ſing nothing (vnleſſe it be to mine owne griefe) but that which belõgs thereunto. To heare thy delicate ſongs, and inioy the ſweetnes of thy voice (ſaide *Syrenus*) I will be content with any thing: but ſince it muſt needes be in ſuch ſort, in thy ſong I pray thee ſhew, how far the firmnenes of thy loue extendeth, which thou beareſt to thy louing Shepherdeſſe; for by occaſion heereof I know ſhe cannot,nor will not chooſe but anſwere thee againe, in whoſe ſweet voice and ſong I ſhall take no leſſe delight,then in thine. I am content ſaid *Syluanus*. And then thus he began.

Syluanus.

IT may fall out the heauens may turne at leiſure,
And ſtay themſelues vpon the higheſt mountaines:
And Ezla, *and* Mondego, *at their pleaſure.*
With haſtie courſe turne backe vnto their fountaines:
And that the flaxe, or reede, laid to the fire,
May not conſume in flames, but burne like wire:
But yet the day and time ſhall happen neuer,
When Syluan *ſhall not loue* Seluagia *euer.*

Immediately without any entreatie, *Seluagia*, bicauſe ſhe would not die in *Syluanus* debt, nor be beholding to him in this reſpect, taking her Baggepipe vp, in this ſort did anſwer him.

Seluagia.

Seluagia.

The ground shall first be void, nor trod, nor vsed,
Leesing her nature, and her proper being:
First shall the raine, and vvater be refused
Of plants, no moisture round about them seeing:
First shall our life vvith aire be not sustained,
And first the foode of hunger be disdained:
Before the vvorld shall see a deede so hainous,
Seluagia *not to loue her deere* Syluanus.

Syluanus.

The presence of the vvoolfe, that doth deuoure
The sillie lambes, in shades shall not be feared:
As little shall the hare, vvithin her bovvre
The yalping hounds, nor harts of lions teared;
Nor Mouse of Cat, All hate shall be extruded,
And louing peace tvvixt all shall be concluded:
But yet the time and day shall happen neuer
When Syluan. *shall not loue* Seluagia *euer.*

Seluagia.

The flocke of little chickes (the dams deere treasure)
Of rauening kites and gleades shall be eschevved:
The Partridge shall securely liue in pleasure,
Of praying Goshauke being not pursued:
The pullaine shall not be of Foxe molested,
But peace, and truce tvvixt all shall be suggested:
But neuer lies a deede in her so hainous,
As that Seluagia *should forget* Syluanus.

Syluanus.

I say, vvhile any part shall be maintained
Of thy Syluanus *vvith blood and vitall povvres,*
And vvhilst each member of the same sustained
Shall be vvith soule, vnto their latest hovvres;
And if (besides) the soule can loue (expired)
When to the graue the body is retired,
In life, in death, else let him prosper neuer:
Syluan. *shall loue his Shepherdesse for euer.*

Seluagia.

I say, vvhile liuing breath shall not be vvanting
In thy Seluagia, *louing thee so truly:*
And vvhile her soule, vvithin her body panting,
Shall make aboade, and gouerne it so duly:
And after vvardes, if that (the same deceased)
Body and soule may be in loue increased,
In life, and death, and after death so hainous,
Seluagia *shall for euer loue* Syluanus.

Syrenus being very glad for the contentment of their companie, and to see them both loue one another with such mutuall and great affection, and knowing that it belonged to the dutie of friendship, and (though he had refused) that they woulde entreate him in the end to sing, without more ado, tooke his Rebecke and sung thus.

THe Gods graunt you to frolicke in your hall,
His yeeres, that so long time vvith nature striue,
And that in happie fortune you may liue,
Free from all kinde of sorrovves great or small:
And in your loue one haire may neuer fall
Of iealousie, a plague ei'd like a sieue.
Let heauens to temporall ~~Gods~~ their fauours giue.
Fire, aire, sea, earth, and nature at your call.
The rot may neuer touch your soundest stockes,
Feare of the vvoolfe your shades may not molest:
And vvily foxe not feare your pretie lambes.
In plenty may encrease your goodly stockes,
Tvvo kids may yeerely yeane your fruitfull dams,
And your faire Evves vvith double tvvinlings blest.

The Shepherds hauing made an end of their sweete songs, rose vp, and casting their hairy scrippes on their shoulders, staying themselues vpon their knotty sheephooks, began to go on their way. Who being comen out of that pleasant place into a faire meade, to passe the time away, and lighten their trauell and length of their way, went inuenting and exercising diuers pastorall sports, of which they made *Seluagia* iudge betweene them both; sometimes throwing with their slings at some white or marke, that they could espie within their reach vpon the side of some hill or tree; sometimes trying with great dexteritie the goodnes of their slings, to see, who coulde giue the greatest cracke with them; sometimes striuing who coulde throwe his Sheepehooke fartheſt; sometimes contending to pitch them neereſt to some white, or Daisie in the way before them, and whether of them with the strength of his arme could come nigheſt to some other marke, as farre as they could reach; and sometimes striuing who could smite a stone fardest with them. In this sort they passed the time and wearines of their way, vntill the broade mantell of the darke night beginning to ouerspred those plaines and fieldes, made an ende of their sports, and warned them to take their rest, where they lodged that night. The next day in the morning betimes, when the prety birdes with their warbling notes filling the aire (not yet fully cleere) with harmonie, foretold the comming of the Vermillion morning, they began to make an end of their former iourney. And now did the sunne cast downe his beames hotter vpon their heads, and with greater heate shewing his forces, when the three Shepherds came in sight of their knowne fieldes, and plaines, so often troden of them before. Whereupon they now began to know their wandring flockes, and amongst those *Dianas* sheepe, although they were mingled with the flockes of her vnworthy husband *Delius*: And so as *Sylvanus* was saying, (These are the flockes of the vngratefull and disdainfull Shepherdesse *Diana*, and of the Shepherd *Delius*, happie without desert) *Seluagia* saide. It is not good to go by and not salute *Diana*, if we finde her there: And so they went that way to seeke her out, where they had not gone farre, but they sawe her standing very

very ſadde, and leaning againſt a great Oke with her elbow vpon her ſheepehooke, and her cheeke vpon the palme of her hande, whereby one might haue iudged the care and ſorrow that ſo much troubled her penſiue minde. After a little while (as though ſhe was angrie with herſelfe for caſting her-ſelfe into ſo great a greefe) ſhe put her hand into her boſome, and tooke out a fine little Baggepipe, the which putting to her mouth to play on it, in that very inſtant, ſhe threwe it to the ground, and without more adoe, ſliding downe along the bodie of the tree, ſat her downe, as if for great feeblenes ſhe had not beene able to ſtaie herſelfe on her feete, and caſting out a ſorrowfull ſigh, and looking vpon her harmleſſe Baggepipe, ſhe ſpake theſe words. Accurſed Baggepipe, conſuming fire burne thee, for the greefe and anguiſh that thou haſt giuen me. I brought thee with me to lighten and aſſwage my cruell ſorrow, in which dutie thou haſt not onely failed, but redoubled it the more. Thou ſhalt not then accompanie me any more, for the ill requitall of that loue, wherewith I did euer cheriſh thee. Now I am not any more for thee, nor thou to ſerue my turne: There ſhalt thou lie for the parching ſunne to open thee, making thee as drie as I am comfortleſſe; and for the raine to rotte thee, making thee as moiſt as my cheekes, ſpunged with continuall teares. Ah woe is me, how am I deceiued, in thinking that the ſilly and ſenceleſſe Baggepipe is in fault of that, which enuious Fortune hath made me feele, and in forgetting (being ſo skilfull in other things) how more abundantly my fortune ſurchargeth my ſoule with paine and troubles, then this poore Baggepipe with any fault or iniurie? How do I afflict and moleſt my ſelfe for a ſmal cauſe, hauing ſo many to wearie me withall? O God, how comes it to paſſe, that the cauſe of my paſſed ioy and gladnes is now the occaſion of my preſent ſorrow, and that thoſe things, which before were light and eaſie, are now moſt greeuous torments and burdens to me? Howe ſoone is pleaſure exiled from my poore ſoule, wherein it was woont to make ſo ſweete a ſoiourne? In how ſhort a time haue I loſt my deere content, whylom my only & truſtie companion? And how eaſily am I depriued of all ioy and happines, which I once ſo much at will poſſeſſed? To what end doth it auaile me to be endowed with beauty and wit (which with modeſtie I may chalenge, ſince all do affirme the ſame in me) vnleſſe they were ſufficient to remooue ſome part of my greefe? But I beſeech the ſoueraigne Gods, that I were ſo farre from beautie and wit, as I am at this preſent from ioy and comfort, ſo that either the firſt had not brought me to this painfull condition of life, or want of the ſecond paſſed it away without feeling it ſo ſenſiblie. O *Syrenus* and *Syluanus*, how are yee now reuenged of me, although it be vnknowne to you, thou *Syluanus* of the contempt I did vniuſtly beare thee, & thou *Syrenus* of the ill requitall I gaue thee for thy ſincere and earneſt loue. How neere (alas) doth the ſorrowfull memorie of that ioyfull time come to my minde, that did ſo ſoone ſlide out of my hands? I would the Gods had beene ſo pitifull to me, at one and ſelfe-ſame time to haue ended my daies, and thoſe delightfull howers. When ſhe had ſpoken theſe words, ſhe gaue ſo great a ſobbe, and ſuch vehement ſighes, that it ſeemed ſhe had no more life left to animate her afflicted and feeble body. *Syrenus* his libertie and obliuion, and *Syluanus* his new content were not ſo great, but that their harts did melt with pitie at *Dianas* ſorrowfull words and afflictions: for the paſſions and effects, which with her dolefull ſpeeches ſo liuely ſhe repreſented, were ſo manie, that might haue mooued the cruell Tygres to tendernes and compaſſion. In all this complaint ſhe ſpake not a worde almoſt, that was not accompanied with a greeuous ſigh. *Seluagia* therefore (who by experience knew well, how much a great greefe

greefe aggrauateth the hart that suffers it) felt *Dianas* paine no lesse, then both the Shepherds. But aboue all the rest, a certaine Shepherd, who bicause he woulde not be seene, stoode closely behinde a great Oke, yet as neere vnto her as he could, to heare her the better, & to see her face. The three Shepherds that were not far off, perceiued him, though he saw them not againe: And it was woorthy of admiration, to see how astonished he stoode at *Dianas* beautie, augmented (if it might be) with the burning anger and anguish of her greeuous thoughts, and enameled with the cristalline teares, which he sawe trickle downe from her cleere eies vpon her Rosie cheekes; so that the Shepherd did neither stirre hand nor foote, nor did once put togither (a common and naturall thing in all men) his mooving eie-lids. But *Diana* vnable to take some little rest and ease in any place, rising vp from the harde groũd, she went into those bushy thickets; next vnto hir, which was as great a griefe vnto the vnknowne Shepherd, as if his tender hart had been rent out of his panting brest. For seeing *Diana* gone, and that she would not harken to his request (for he praied her to stay a little longer) he made haste to followe her: But thinking with himselfe, that it contented her better to be alone, he went not after her, bicause he woulde not in any thing offende her, but sitting downe againe, and taking out his Rebecke, he began to sing this song following.

Faire Shepherdesse Diana,
Where dost thou now thy figure hide,
More bright then cleere Diana,
When to her full course she is hide.

Venus, *the Goddesse faire,*
Of beauties all the souer aine,
Wonders at this affaire,
That now her beauties doe not raine.

A sunnie beame thou art,
And who beholdes thy heauenly dies,
Thou wound'st with natures art,
And wounded, in his passions dies.

Thou art a Dimond well,
From whence sweete liquor floweth fast,
Ambrosium *thou art well,*
From which mine eies shall neuer fast.

Each thing in thee thou hast
To make thee perfect in each part,
If now thou would'st but haste
To pitie, not my soule to part.

This wager will I beare,
And lay, Thou wantest not an ounce,
More cruell then a Beare
To be, or Tygre, or an Ounce.

Cruell thou art in praying,
For thee I burne, as flames in Kill,
Those that to thee are praying
For mercie, thou dost scorne and kill.

My soule thine absence teares,
And gives vnto the same againe
Torments, my torments teares,
(Teares that doe make so small a gaine.)

More bitter then the gall,
Thy absence is, or Sallow wan,
With sorrow it doth gall
My hart, and makes me pale and wan.

In beautie not a peere
Thou hast, for it exceedes the rest,
But where it doth appeere,
Thy crueltie there gives no rest.

O what a foole am I
To wish to see her in this plaine,
That from her mouth an (I)
Will not afford, but (No) so plaine.

No paine I doe deserue
For words, having worse deeds essai'd
For whom Loue thus doth serue,
It is not much this to haue said.

If

If that thou mean'ſt to ſeale
Thy crueltie in deedes to leaue,
How can I then conceale
The ſame in ſong among theſe leaues?
Faire Shepherdeſſe, who bad
Thee flie from me? If thou doſt waigh,
So baſe a thing, and bad,
Deſerues not glory any way.

They marueled much at the Shepherdes new kinde of ſong, and how hee wreſted the ſelfe ſame words to fall in ryme, that were of different ſignifications: to whom at laſt they came, who, perceiuing he was eſpied, held his peace. And after they had ſaluted each other, *Syrenus* ſaid. Whoſoeuer thou art iollie Shepherd, ſo may not thy louing flockes be deuoured of the hungrie wolues, nor want the ſweete and coole ſhades in burning ſummer, nor taſte of the foule waters in ſeeking out cleere ſtreames and fountaines, that thou wouldeſt hold on thy ſong: for this Shepherd and faire Shepherdeſſe here ſhall plaie vnto thee, whoſe merie Bagpipes, and ſweete ſongs haue not once, but a hundred times ſtayed the nimble footed Faunes and Satyres in their ſwift flight, and made the faire Nymphes to come out of their greene arbours to liſten to them. Shepherd, ſaide *Firmius* againe (for this was his name) thy manner of adiuring me is but of little force, ſince it ſhall greeue me little or nothing whether my flockes be torne by rauening wolues, when deeper matters then theſe trouble my mind, which (more then deuouring wolues) teare my hart a ſunder. But yet for the reſpect which thou haſt told me of theſe Shepherds (which I beleeue no leſſe) I would be glad to giue you all the pleaſure I could, but ſince I haue it not my ſelfe, nor am deſirous to haue it in this ſort, it is impoſſible that you ſhould take any by my meanes; and the more, ſince by thoſe ſignes of ioye, that by their countenance may bee gathered, they haue little neede to borrowe it from him, that hath none at all. We will not denie (ſaid *Seluagia*) but that, which thou haſt ſaid, is true, that ſo much, and more readie we are to ſhew our ioye, as thou art to manifeſt thy ſorrow, which is not (by that we our ſelues haue ſeene) of many daies, nor howers continuance, becauſe it ſeemes to bee (to ſpeake in plainer termes) for loue of the faire Shepherdeſſe *Diana*. And if it be ſo, the ſorrow cannot be much, which in ſo ſmall a time cannot do any great harme. I will not deny Shepherdeſſe (ſaid *Firmius*) nor confeſſe vnto thee, that *Dianas* beautie hath deſtroyed my content. But admit ſhe were the cauſe thereof, thou haſt but little skill (it ſeemes) and leſſe experience in *Cupides* woundes; for thou ſayeſt that in a ſmall time a great wound cannot be made, as if it were needfull for loue to haue ſome longer time to make a deep & perfect wound, to touch one to the quick. Thou knoweſt mine but a little (ſaid *Seluagia*) by not confeſſing, that it is not onely greater then thine, or any others that were euer borne. Thou hadſt not ſaid amiſſe (ſaid *Firmius*) if thou didſt adde (in thine opinio.) It needed not (ſaid *Seluagia.*) and leſſe need haue I (ſaid *Firmius*) by thy loue to know mine own, if (at the leaſt) I had any at al. By not confeſſing it (ſaid *Seluagia*) thou ſheweſt the litle intereſt thou haſt in loue: and perhaps the great propertie (ſaid *Firmius*) that I haue in griefe and ſorrow, becauſe I dare not tell it. Why (ſaid *Seluagia*) who doth hide the glorie of thy thoughts? My ſmall deſertes (ſaid *Firmius.*) So much the better (ſaid *Seluagia*) becauſe the glorie is greater. Nay the worſe for this (ſaid *Firmius*) becauſe the fall ſhall be the greater. Thou art a great maſter of words (ſaid *Seluagia*) Nay of workes (ſaid *Firmius.*) I haue not ſeene them hitherto (ſaid *Seluagia.*) To this laſt *Firmius* would not anſwer againe: But *Syrenus*, that maruelled all this while at the ſharpe and wittie anſwers of the vnknowen Shepherd, put himſelfe betweene them both to ende this ſtrife, as alſo for that he ſaw *Syluanus* ſomewhat altered, ſeeing his Shepherdeſſe vrged ſo much, although he diſcreetly

creetly tempered himselfe with *Firmius* his moderate and mild answers, which made him hold his peace, which otherwise he would not haue done: wherefore *Syrenus* said. No more gentle Shepherds, as you loue your selues. Then *Seluagia* acknowledging her fault, and the modestie of the Shepherd, she looked on him with a milde and sober countenance, saying. Pardon me good Shepherd, for the force of my great loue vrged me to say thus much. But I (said *Firmius*) must rather craue pardon, for if there be any offence, it is of my side. I am glad (saide *Syrenus*) that you are friendes againe, and that you will not fall out for so small a matter. I knewe thee *Syrenus* (saide *Syluanus*) when once thou wouldest not iudge it so light a thing as now thou dost. But of friendship Shepherd, (looking vpon *Firmius*) he saide, tell vs (since thou hast shewed thy selfe so wise in euery thing) how that may be, which thou didst say: That loue doth make his operations as perfect in a short time, as in a longer: for (me thinkes) it should be cleane contrarie to reason and experience, I meane, if it be not by some extraordinarie and secret science, as *Felicia* doth, a Ladie not meanely experimented in those operations. On the otherside, I woulde faine know the cause thereof, if at least there be any; for to make a change in our selues, (which is but an easie matter in comparison) we must haue the helpe of some time, how much more then is it requisite for so great a worke as that, which *Cupid* makes. In base and simple Cottages in my natiue fieldes (replied *Firmius*) I woulde haue thee also aske this question, where so wise and learned a Shepherd abides, who is able, not onely to satisfie thy doubts heerein, but what else thou wouldst desire to knowe. But as concerning this matter, I remember I heard him say: That as the Sunne, when it appeeres, doth in the very point and instant powre downe all his brightnes without wasting any time, & perfectly giues vs his light: So *Cupid* (whom he called the God of loue) when he takes possession of the louers hart, doth in an instant with his full and absolute force command and raigne there. This comparison (said *Syluanus*) doth not like me so well. Why so, said *Firmius?* for according to the same (saide *Syluanus*) we should all loue in equall proportion and degree, if loue withall his force in such sorte wounded euerie one, which I will not confesse. Shepherd (said *Firmius*) thou hast so well touched the matter to the quicke, that I must needs yeeld my selfe ouercommed, and yet without shame, since the meaning thereof exceedes my pastorall condition and conceit. But giue me leaue a little, and I will bethinke me (if I can remember) how he resolued the like obiection. But this (I thinke) and the rest is slid out of my memorie, and yet (me thinkes) I should remember it, and haue it at my toongs end. And now I call it to minde, though I know not whether so well as he spake it. But howsoeuer it is, you must accept it in such rude sort, as I shall tell it you. He said, if *Cupid* wrought more in one hart then in another, that this proceeded not of *Cupids* part, who assailes all equallie, but of the better disposition of the hart, where he makes his impression; and for this he brought a pretty comparison. For with examples he made vs Countrey-fellowes vnderstand this and manie other things, bicause by them we might remember the better what hee told vs. But the example was this. That as the Sunne or fire doth sooner heat a piece of wood, then a stone (giuing as much heate to the one as to the other) bicause the wood is apter and better disposed to receiue the heate, then the stone: so loue maketh a greater impression in one hart then in another, by reason of the better disposition of one, then of another. He added moreouer, that as the stone resisteth heate better then the wood; and after it is once hot, more hardly leeseth that heat, then the wood, which more easily receiued it: so he, that most resisteth loue, and being

ing

ing after ſubiect vnto it, with greater *difficultie* deliuers himſelfe, then he who ſuffered himſelfe but eaſily to be ouercommed by it. And with this aske me no more of this matter: for as I now remember no more; ſo was not then my weake capacity able to attaine to the knowledge & conceit of thoſe things, which he alleaged. And yet I know not how I vnderſtood this: for when we were ſatisfied, thinking we had knowen it ſufficiently, and that (in our iudgements) there was no more to conceiue, you might haue ſeene him chaunge the whole matter againe, and gaineſay his former propoſitions; ſo that he quite vndid all that he ſaid before, and confuted his former examples by other cleerer aſſertions, and more apparaunt reaſons that he had in ſtore; and when we were inclined to this place, he turned vs againe to the other, and then to the contrarie, at his pleaſure: ſo that he wrought vs like weakelings on euerie ſide, as liked him beſt, making vs euer incline to that which he laſt of all alleaged. In the end, though he had ſet all cleerely down before vs; yet (when he liſt) he marred, and darkened all againe. If he had ſpoken (ſaid *Syrenus*) in any other thing but in loue, his company had beene as fit and acceptable to me, as thine is now. But truely it was a ſtrange ſufficiencie in a Shepherd to do what thou haſt told vs: for there is no reaſon (me thinks) to refell that which thou haſt ſaid, by that experience which ſometimes I haue had in like matters. But tell mee yoong Shepherde, where did this Shepherde learne ſo much? I knowe not, ſaide *Firmius*. For as I am a ſtraunger in theſe partes, ſoe is hee in thoſe. But I imagine that loue, and his good iudgemente were his beſt Schoolemaſters there: For (as I perceiued by him) hee had in both no ſmall experience: and was (as wee heard) *but a Shepherd in habit*, and that his misfortunes had clad him in paſtorall weedes. They muſt (no doubt) be very great (ſaid *Syrenus*) when they brought him to ſo poore an eſtate. Doe you not know them well, ſaid *Firmius*? No, ſaid *Syluanus*; and therefore I pray you tell them vs. It were too long and troubleſome a taske for me (anſwered *Firmius*) to tell them now, and therefore I pray you requeſt it not of me. He ſaieth well (ſaid *Syrenus*) and we had alſo need to reſt vs, wherefore let vs goe our waies: And God be with thee gentle Shepherd. And with you, anſwered *Firmius*. But if our company like thee, ſaide *Syluanus*, come and reſt with vs: the which *Seluagia* and *Syrenus* did alſo both requeſt him to doe. The Shepherd thanked them and refuſed, for he had rather beene alone the better to paſſe away his paſſions in ſolitarineſſe, and to goe ſeeke *Diana*, whoſe louely face and beauties he caried about with him in his hart. Yet no excuſe could auaile him with the Shepherdes, for in the end they caried him with them. The one to take pleaſure in his ſweete companie and conuerſation; the other to weane him (if he could) from his amorous thoughts, with the which he was not meanely troubled for the loue of faire *Diana*, which they well ſuſpected, though he hid it from them, as much as he could, bicauſe he knew not what *Diana* was, and faine would haue asked, if he had had any good meanes and opportunitie without ſuſpicion. But as they were now come neere to their towne, *Seluagia* ſaid. It ſhall not be amiſſe, to make our towne know of our comming, and content, which our merrie Baggepipes and Rebeckes ſhall ſound foorth. They all agreed thereunto, and tuning one with another, began to play on them very ſweetely. *Syluanus*, and *Seluagia* vpon Baggepipes, *Syrenus* and *Firmius* vpon Rebeckes. *Seluagia* praied *Firmius* and *Syrenus*, ſince the played on Rebeckes to ſing. To play on my Rebecke (ſaide *Firmius*) though vnwilling I agree thereunto, but to ſing it moſt of all diſcontents me. Yet refuſe not (ſaid *Seluagia*) to pleaſure vs. Sing if thou wilt ſomething in the praiſe of faire *Diana*, for this (I imagine)

imagine) will not be vnpleasant vnto thee; and then shall *Syrenus* sing that which best likes his fancie. Whereunto *Firmius* condescending, and euery one playing on their instruments, he began to sing this Sonnet.

THe fearefull Bat that lurks in stonie wall,
Flies heere and there assured of her sight,
When that she sees the signes of darksome night
Approching on, contented therewithall;
But when she spies the sunnie beames so bright,
Her fault she doth acknowledge and recall.
So vvow of late to me it did befall:
For I did thinke there vvas no other light
Nor beautie then in her, vvho did inuite
My senses first to loue: but (to my thrall)
When I beheld Diana *so bedight*
With beauties, and such grace Angelicall,
Then by and by I knevv that heeretofore
I plainly err'd: but neuer could doe more.

The time was once, when *Syrenus* could not haue beene better pleased, then to haue replied vpon *Firmius* in *Dianas* praises. But being now free, he thought there was not any thing, whereon he might best employ his song, then in giuing the fieldes and Shepherdes to vnderstande of the comming of *Syluanus*, and *Seluagia* his deerest friends, who therefore with a friendly note began to sing as followeth.

THe open fieldes, the meadovves fresh and greene
Their colour and their signe of hope had lost,
Hauing not Syluan. *and* Seluagia *seene,*
With vvhose svveete presence they did alvvaies bost.

The goodly vales and hils vvere hard and dried,
Without the steps, that novv doth make them glad,
Shepherds and sheepe in melancholie died,
Depriued of their songs, that once they had.

Now all with pride will shew their ioies againe,
All will reioice, as once they did before:
The hill, the vale, the field, the meade, and plaine,
For merry spring and sommer they restore:
Welcome Seluagia *then, your ioyfull spring,*
And her Syluanus, *that doth sommer bring.*

Syluanus and *Seluagia* would gladly haue answered him, had they not beene hindered by the confluence and flocking of Shepherdes and Shepherdesses, that came running togither at *Syrenus* voice (so well knowne amongst them) and to the welcome of the Shepherdes, so welbeloued of them all. And bicause it was now about that time of the day, when they should defend themselues from the glowing sunne, they were a good while in the towne, hauing left their gentle sheepe vnder the

shades

ſhades of diuers trees, and ſafegard of their fierce maſties. Their welcome of the Shepherdes, and their thankes to them againe being paſt, they went all to take their reſt, taking *Firmius* with them, who maruelled greatly at the earneſt loue and affection that all the Shepherdes and Shepherdeſſes ſhewed at *Syrenus* comming, of whoſe abſence (which till then he knew not of) he woulde haue talked ſomething with him, but deferred it, vntill he had fitter time and opportunitie. But it was told him before he asked it, and the whole ſucceſſe of his loues from the beginning to his preſent eſtate of life. O how many bitter draughts of iealouſie did he ſwallowe downe in the meane time (thinke you) that they were telling of the fauours, that *Diana* had in times paſt beſtowed on *Syrenus*. Then would he haue beene glad, that they had neuer begun to tell that wounding diſcourſe, and if at that time they had not made an ende of their talke, they had put him in great perill of his welfare. *Syrenus*, *Syluanus*, and *Seluagia* perceiued very well his ſecret greeſe of minde, by ſo manie changes of his colour, that went and came in his face, that they were apparant ſignes of the preſent greeſe he felt. But when they came to the drinke that *Felicia* gaue him, they reſtored him to life againe, who tooke beſides no ſmall ioy and comfort in ſeeing how far *Syrenus* was from *Dianas* fauours, and how freely, and without alteration of countenance, he talked himſelfe, and heard them tell the thinges that were paſt and gone, whereupon he neuer made an ende in thanking and bleſſing the ſage Lady *Felicia* in his minde, thinking that ſhe had done that eſpeciall fauour for him, by giuing *Syrenus* the cup of forgetfulnes to drink on, ſince by meanes thereof, ſhe tooke ſo great a blocke out of his way, not bicauſe he thought *Syrenus* knew not how to ſerue and pleaſe her, better then he, nor that he had leſſe good parts in him then *Syrenus*, to obtaine any fauour of her; but bicauſe he being vnknowne, and *Syrenus* hauing made loue ſo long before him, he thought it a harde matter to bring him out of fauour with *Diana*, and as difficult a thing to throwe him downe from ſo high an eſtate, as he had attained vnto. But he reuolued in his memorie, and conſidered of *Dianas* inconſtancie towards *Syrenus*, though he laide the fault more on *Syrenus* for abſenting himſelfe at ſuch a time, thinking, if he had come then in the nicke, when *Syrenus* did, that he had knowne better how to haue helpt himſelfe by ſuch an occaſion. His head was ſo occupied in theſe and other conſiderations, that the Shepherdes perceiuing in what paſſions he was, left him all alone, bicauſe they were glad to pleaſure him in any thing they could, who then began to talke of their own affaires, & to giue good order for conuenient prouiſion, & keeping of their flockes. After they had agreed vpon theſe matters, they determined to know of *Firmius* if he woulde remaine in thoſe parts any long time, and if it were his will to take vpon him the charge and keeping of their flockes till their returne: wherupon they went to him, and asked him his name, and knowing it, would haue knowne from whence he came, and what he was. But perceiuing theſe demands did not like him very wel, they would not vrge him farther then his own will & pleaſure: but they told him what they had agreed vpon, if he thought good to do it. He gaue them many thankes for the good opinion and confidence they had in him, not knowing what he was, ſaying, he was very glad to do it. For though he was minded not to ſtay in that countrey, yet to do them any ſeruice (he could) he woulde at ſuch time make his abode there, during the time they went about their other buſines. In the end after they had agreed with him, they deliuered him their flockes, which he kept ſo well and charily all the time that they were yet at home, that they were very glad they had founde out ſo good a keeper, but hee was more, that his

fortune was so good, to haue so fit an occasion to remaine, where hee thought he might somtimes enioy *Dianas* presence with so good an excuse, and not of intent to procure the same.

In these daies (though they were but a fewe) none durst take in hande to play on their Bagpipes and Rebecks; for so sweete were *Firmius* his songs, and so melodious his voice wherewith so greatly he rauished the rest, that they thought their time but ill bestowed, that was not spent in hearing him. They went many times to intreate with *Diana* for him; but she was so froward and disdainefull, that their conuersation and speeches with her; and her answers to them againe pleased not each other verie well. Not her, not bicause she was not glad to see those Shepherds (and *Syrenus* especially) but bicause it was a great griefe and torment to her minde to haue him before her eies solliciting for another, who was sometimes all her ioy and delight (hauing yet some few reliques of her former loue she bare him) and to see him now so obliuious of all the same. Not the Shepherds, bicause being so iocond & merry, they woulde not haue any sad in their companie, especially *Diana*, to whom they wished all the good that might be, though now in another sort, then in times past they did it. And the company both of the one and other neither pleased *Diana* nor themselues, bicause that sorrow and solitarines, which pleased *Diana*, the Shepherdes eschewed and fled, and the delights and ioyfull companie that the Shepherds sought out, *Diana* did vtterly forsake: So that if they went to see her, it was onely to driue out of her minde (if they coulde) her great and greeuous thoughts. Into the which, *Seluagia* seeing her on a day so plunged, to ridde her from them, saide. So may the Gods be fauourable vnto thee *Diana*, and giue thee that content, which thou most desirest, if thou wouldst sing, and play on thy Bagpipe a little. How art thou deceiued *Seluagia* (said *Diana*) by thinking that I should hope for content, when I know assuredly there is none at all left for me, bicause all the waies, whereby it shoulde haue passage into my soule, are now stopped vp. And this is my greatest greefe, that I haue no hope at all neuer to be ridde from my continuall sorrow. One onely meane, whereon my chiefest hope dependeth is left, which is vntimely death. And yet fortune being in euery thing so contrary to me, hath taken it away also from me, since I cannot giue it my selfe, without great infamie and shame to remaine me euer after to my name and memorie: which shoulde not yet be a hinderance to the performance of it, nor I would not care for the same, if there were not another matter in the way. Thou dost request me to singe, and (alas) I can do nothing but weepe. The day that you came home, I essaied to do it, but demand of my hart, if not, of my Baggepipe what passed; for this remained afflicted and full of greefe, and that throwen away in a profounde and painfull passion, where yet (I thinke) it lies, beseeching the Soueraigne Gods, that, as I had strength and a hart to cast my senceles Bagpipe away, I had also the power to cast my hart from mee, that then and nowe doth feele such excessiue woes. So that now hauing forgotten my singing, and left my Bagpipe, pardon me if herein I cannot pleasure thee. Then said *Syrenus* to *Seluagia*: It is not in *Dianas* power (faire Shepherdesse) to do any thing against thy will. Nor in her power (said *Diana*) to haue any thing fall out to her owne will. But since in times past (saide *Syrenus*) when the conquering of thee did most of all behooue me, thou didst euer carrie away the victorie, why then in this (wherin I loose nothing, nor care to be ouercommed) need I pretend to be conquerour? I will not enter into disputations with thee, and therefore let it be as thou wilt. O how manie inward sighes did euerie one of

theſe words, and the remembrance of that which was paſt, coſt afflicted *Diana*. But for loue of thy ſelfe (ſaid *Syrenus* to *Diana*) let vs goe and ſeeke out thy Bagpipe: for it is no reaſon thou ſhouldeſt requite it ſo ill, that hath done thee ſo good ſeruice: And by the way we will goe to our flockes, and bring thee acquainted with *Firmius*, of whom I haue told thee ſometimes before, and if we could intreate him to ſing, I know thou wouldeſt take great delight to heare him: the one for his great iudgement and wiſedome; the other, becauſe he is as ſorrowful as thy ſelfe, whereby thou mighteſt (I thinke) receiue ſome comfort and content. But if *Syrenus* had knowen, what ſhould afterwards haue befallen vnto him of theſe praiſes, and of other things which he told of *Firmius*, he would not onely haue left vndone what he did, nor ſpoken at all in the matter, but not once haue had a thought thereof. Thou haſt tolde me ſo much of this new Shepherd (ſaid *Diana*) that I muſt needes goe ſee him: for there are two things in him (thou telleſt me) befitting my humours ſo well, but eſpecially his melancholie and ſadde life, wherein I ſhall beſt conforme my ſelfe with him. Now were they come in ſight of the place, where *Diana* had left her Bagpipe, when they ſaw *Firmius* ſinging to the tune of his Rebecke. We are come in good time (ſaid *Syrenus*) for *Firmius* is ſinging, and (happily) I muſt needes ſay, ſince ſo ſeldome he is wont to do it, being continually ſo full of ſad and penſiue thoughts. Comming therefore ſoftly and ſecretly on, becauſe they would not be ſeene of him, they heard him ſinging this tranſuerſed *Sextiuen*.

IN this greene Meade *mine Eies what doe you ſee,*
The Bagpipe of my Nymph *ſo paſſing faire?*
Vnleſſe my ſenſes Dreame, *ſo ſhould it be,*
For Sure *this is the* Oke, *wherewith deſpaire*
She lean'd vnto, and heere the graſſe yet lies,
And field, that ſhe did water with her eies.

What doubt I then? mine Eies *ſee it ſo plaine:*
For Sure *I knowe, this is the very* Meade,
And tree that did her tender limbs ſuſtaine:
This is the Bagpipe, which my Nymph *did treade*
Vpon: This is the Oke, *the happy beame,*
Whereto ſhe lean'd, I knowe this is no Dreame.

But if I Dreame, *that thinking with mine* Eies
All this I ſee, and all doth prooue but nought:
And if this Oke *in dreame I doe ſurmiſe,*
And ſee this Meade, *but onely in my thought,*
Where my faire Nymph *did print her goodly feete:*
O Sure *it were a dreame to me moſt ſweete.*

Ioue *thee I pray, if this I doe but feare,*
And if my Dreame *doth fall out* Sure *or no?*
By all the loue to Nymphes, *that thou didſt beare,*
Open mine Eies *the trueth that I may knowe:*
Helpe me to pray him greene and flowrie Meade,
Helpe me to pray him, Oke *with branchie heade.*

What hath deseru'd this faire and stately Oke,
Why that should not be Sure, *which I doe see?*
What hainous fault could this fine Meade *prouoke,*
Why things in deede should seeme but Dreames *to mee?*
Vnto mine Eies *what is befallen of late,*
Why that they should not see my Nymphes *estate?*

This Bagpipe of my Nymph *I will deuise,*
To hang it heere (faire Oke*) to honour thee:*
A woorthy Trophee, though before mine Eies
Lying disgrac't for teares they cannot see,
If it be Sure, *or if I dreame in vaine,*
(Spoil'd in this Meade *with parching sunne and raine)*

That gracious Nymph *that gaue my hart the stroke*
In this greene Meade, *I sawe (a heauenly prize)*
And (if I dreame not) leaning to that Oke;
Nay, Sure, *I did behold her with mine* Eies:
O that she had but seene me then againe,
Or that I had but seene or dream'd in vaine.

Thus as he made an end of his song, gathering vp the freshest and sweetest flowers he could finde, he adorned *Dianas* Bagpipe so finely with them, that one would haue thought, it had beene that *Horne*, that *Hercules* tooke from *Achelous* transformed into a Bull, the which, the *Naiades* decked with plentie of coloured Apples and flowers, whereupon it tooke the name *Cornu copia* or the *Horne* of plentie. When he had done thus, he hanged the Bagpipe vpon the Oke, whereunto she had leaned, and hard by it (as afterwards they perceiued) wrote these verses.

I am Dianes, *th'* Arabian bird *in beautie and in grace,*
Let no man therefore once presume to take me from this place.

Syrenus, who of purpose (it seemed) would haue had *Diana* shew some loue to *Firmius*, stept before his company, and pulling *Firmius* by the lappe of his coate behinde (for his backe was towards him) said vnto him. I will shew thee Shepherde a brauer and fresher bowe then this, and more woorthy of this *Trophee*, and which will perhaps giue thee more content then this Bagpipe, and such a thing that shall be no lesse welcome to it, then to thy selfe. *Firmius* desired him to shew it him. Then *Syrenus* pointing to *Diana* with his finger, said vnto him. Dost thou see it there? *Firmius* was so altered with the sudden sight of faire *Diana*, that though he would faine haue dissembled it, neither the colour in his face, nor the faintnes of his legs would giue him leaue to do it, for that was gone, and these were not able to support the bodie without great paine. But in the end borrowing a little strength of his weakнes, in the best sort he could, he incouraged his hart to hide that, which was so openly manifest, and answered *Syrenus*. There should be other *Trophees* of higher honour placed in this bowe. By this time came the two Shepherdesses, and *Syluanus* and saluted him: but he was in such a case, seeing *Diana* so neere him, that he gaue no great heed to their salutations. Whereupon *Diana* turning to *Seluagia*, said. This Shepherd should (belike) talke to none, but to himselfe alone: for in company (me thinkes)

thinkes)he hath no liſt to anſwere vs. You muſt needes be the cauſe thereof (ſaide *Seluagia)* for he neuer wanted talke for vs. Now as thou loueſt thy life (ſaid *Diana)* aske him how he knew my name. This I can tell thee (ſaid *Seluagia)* without asking him. For when thou threweſt downe thy Bagpipe in this place, talking with thy ſelfe,thou didſt name thy ſelfe, which I know to be true; for we our ſelues heard it, and then ſhe told her in what ſort they ſaw her, and how they found *Firmius*, and what he then did and ſaid,when ſhe was gone; and told her moreouer,that they had asked the ſame things of *Firmius* himſelfe, bicauſe in his ſong hee had many times named her. If it be thus (ſaide *Diana)* he knowes more of my matters then I would he did. But let vs heare what thy *Syluanus* ſayeth vnto vs. We haue requeſted *Firmius* (ſaide hee) to ſing heere a little, and we can by no meanes entreate him: but as I vnderſtande by others, and partely by mine owne coniecture, that if thou wilt but ſpeake the worde vnto him, hee will doe it by and by. There is no reaſon (ſaide *Diana*) (by condeſcending to my requeſtes) that hee ſhould denie you yours. But if you be not able to entreate him, heere is *Seluagia*, that can enforce him. Indeed in thy beautie (ſaid *Seluagia*)all the force and vertue that is ſufficient to mooue greater matters then this, doth conſiſt. But let vs leaue this,& do that(I pray thee)which my *Syluanus* requeſteth thee. *Diana* then looking vpon *Firmius*,ſaide vnto him. Vrged more by the importunate requeſtes of theſe Shepherdes,then by any confidence of thy part,or aſſuredne of mine owne,I pray thee(yoong Shepherd)ſatisfie their deſires. *Firmius* comming neere to *Diana*, ſaid vnto her, and ſo ſoftly as they could not heare him. As theſe Shepherdes are in a ſafe hauen, ſo would they not (by their wils) but be euer ſinging and merrie: but as I am continually in ſtormy tempeſtes and ſuffring ſhipwracke for thy ſake, not knowing on what ſhelfe of diſgrace my fortune will caſt me, would not be but euer weeping and ſad. But bicauſe I neither can,nor will diſobey thy will, vnleſſe it be in leauing of to ſerue thee(which yet at thine own deſire I can not do)what ſhall pleaſe thee,I will ſing, though it be with a hoarce voice like to the dying ſwanne, diuining her enſuing death. Thou art not ſo neere thy ende (ſaide *Diana)* that death ſhould helpe thee. I am ſo neere ended (ſaide *Firmius*) that I looke onely but for death. I did neuer yet ſee any (ſaide *Diana*)die for this cauſe, but with words, and do beleeue beſides, there are not any ſuch: And ſpeaking a little lowder, bicauſe they might all heare, with diſſembling that which ſhe had ſecretly ſpoken vnto him, ſhe ſaide. Thou wouldeſt belike haue me tell thee (*Firmius*) and the reſt, that I am deſirous to heare thee ſing,and bicauſe thou art ſuch a friend to wailing and ſadnes, it were not meete thou ſhouldſt ſing at my will and pleaſure, but to leaue it to thine own.But yet let vs tune & concord with theſe Shepherds,and aske them what thou ſhalt ſing. Thou commeſt too late to agree and concord with vs now,ſaid *Syrenus:* but bicauſe it pleaſeth thee ſo, entreat him to expreſſe by his ſong the cauſe of his ſorrow and paſſions. Let him ſing what thou wilt (ſaide *Diana*) and what hee will, bicauſe thou maiſt not ſay, that I neuer knew how to conforme my ſelfe with thee. Then did *Firmius* take his Rebecke and began to ſing in manner following.

SHepherds giue eare and now be ſtill
Vnto my paſſions,and their cauſe,
And what they be?
Since that with ſuch an earneſt will,
And ſuch great ſignes of friendſhips lawes
You aske it me.

It is not long,ſince I was whole,
Nor ſince I did in euery part
Sreewill reſigne:
It is not long,ſince in my ſole
Poſſeſſion I did knowe my hart,
And to be mine.

It is not long, ſince euen and morrow
All pleaſure that my hart could finde,
Was in my power:
It is not long, ſince greefe and ſorrow
My louing hart began to binde,
And to deuoure.

It is not long, ſince companie
I did eſteeme, a ioy indeede
Still to frequent:
Nor long, ſince ſolitarily
I liu'd, and that this life did breede
My ſole content.

Deſirous I (wretched) to ſee
But thinking not to ſee ſo much
As then I ſawe:
Loue made me knowe in what degree
His valour and braue force did touch
Me with his lawe.

Firſt he did put no more nor leſſe
Into my hart then he did view
That there did want:
But when my breſt in ſuch exceſſe
Of liuely flames to burne I knew,
Then were ſo ſcant.

My ioies, that now did ſo abate
(My ſelfe eſtranged euery way
From former reſt).
That I did knowe, that my eſtate
And that my life was euery day
In deathes arreſt.

I put my hand into my ſide,
To ſee what was the cauſe of this
Vnwonted vaine,
Where I did feele, that torments hied
By endleſſe death to preiudice
My life vvith paine.

Bicauſe I ſavve, that there did vvant
My hart, wherein I did delight
(My deereſt hart)
And he that did the ſame ſupplant,
No iuriſdiction had of right
To play that part.

The iudge, and robber, that remaine
Within my ſoule, their cauſe to trie
Are there all one:
And ſo the giuer of the paine,
And he that is condemn'd to die,
Or I, or none.

To die I care not any way,
Though without why, to die I greeue,
As I doe ſee;
But for bicauſe I heard her ſay,
None die for loue, for I beleeue
None ſuch there bee.

Then this thou ſhalt beleeue by mee
Too late, and without remedie
As did (in breefe)
Anaxarete, *and thou ſhalt ſee,*
The little ſhe did ſatisfie
With after greefe.

The Shepherdes gaue a diligent eare to *Firmius* ſong, to ſee if by the ſame hee would giue ſome light of the loue, that he did beare to *Diana*; but he was ſo vigilant to the contrarie, that though hee reported the cauſe of his paſſion, yet they could vnderſtand no more then they did at the beginning. It was needleſſe for the three Shepherdes to know *Firmius* paſſion by hearing him ſing, who wiſhed rather, that he had manifeſted it by words, that he might not afterwards denie it, or (to ſay better) confeſſe it, when any ſuch ſpeech ſhoulde bee offered thereof. For whenſoeuer they tolde him of it, he ſpake of it ſo obſcurely, that hee neither confeſſed, nor denied that he loued her. And ſo to this intent he finely cloaked with *Syrenus*, that *Diana* by his meanes ſhould demand the cauſe of his ſorrow, thinking with himſelf, that (for any thing that might enſue) being demanded by her, he woulde not deny to manifeſt it vnto her. But if he could haue concealed his loue as well by deedes, as he did by wordes, the Shepherds might haue beene as wiſe, as at the firſt for euer knowing

knowing it. But it fell not out so to *Diana*, who vnderstood well by his last verse, that all the rest were onely ment of her, for it answered to the latter end of her speech, when they both talked so secretly togither. And so she made great account of *Firmius* for his wittie and short answer. Euery one commended his singing, and *Diana*, as well for this, and for that which he sung on the Baggepipe, as also for that which he had spoken to *Syrenus*, was somewhat enclined to like him, thinking verie well of that, which he had sung and spoken. Considering besides, that the trouble, which the Shepherd felt, (being in her presence) was no small cooling carde, and a sharpe bridle to his toong. For this feare, which *Diana* cleerely perceiued was for her sake, she soone tooke away, bicause *Firmius* might be more accepted of her, if there were (at the left) any thing acceptable or pleasant to one, that found her-selfe in so miserable an estate, as she was. But when the song was ended, *Diana* said she would depart, bicause she had staied there a great while, and would go seeke out her husband *Delius*, who would not willingly haue beene one moment out of her sight and companie. Being determined therefore to depart, *Syrenus* entreated her to take her Baggepipe againe with her, if so it pleased her, bicause none other should vnwoorthely enioy such a sweete *Trophee* as *Firmius* had made of it. She tooke it, bicause she thought thereby to shewe some especiall fauour to *Firmius*. And taking it from the tree, she said vnto it. God knowes, I do not carrie thee as a meane to ease or mittigate my passion and sorrow (my intent being cleane contrarie) for though I might seeke some fauour and helpe to sustaine them (being so many as they are) yet will I not aduantage me with any such remedy, but I do take thee with me, bicause those Shepherds might not haue an occasiō to blame me for discurtesie. When she had spoken this, she turned to them, and asked them when they would depart: who told her in the morning, for now they had set all things in good order, and durst not stay any longer, bicause *Felicia* about that time would looke for their comming, whom they had promised to returne assoone as they had set their flockes in good order, and in the custodie of some faithfull Shepherdes. Their departure greeued *Diana* not a little, though she woulde not manifest so much, but saide. Since it is then so, the Gods be fauourable vnto you, and be your guides. They thanked her againe, and praied her not to forget to looke to their affaires, as they would be carefull for hers, and charged her besides, to thinke vpon *Firmius* and his busines, and to supply his wants, if in their absence, he stoode in need of any thing: And that, the pleasures and fauours that she did him, they would esteeme as much, as if she had bestowed them on themselues, since hee remained there to keepe and tende their flockes. Some other thing (saide *Diana*) you might haue demanded at my hands, wherein my good will shoulde not be wanting to my power, for this which you request, considering his great deserts, is no lesse then due to him. Truth it is (said *Firmius*) that of a small desert it hath resulted to bee great, not of my part, which coulde not giue so great a leape, but of my thought, which hath beene sufficient enough to make it most capable of the great glorie it feeles. And yet for all this thou hast obliged me to much, for which I will not giue thee those thankes, that are due to such an offer, because thou maiest not haue occasion to remaine contented onely with wordes. I vnderstande thee not (saide *Diana*) and though I did, yet will I thinke, that I doe not. But knowe Shepherd, that I will doe what I haue saide, if I bee well; if not, it may be then an easie thing for mee to change my opinion, whereat thou must not maruell that I (being the onely disciple of mutable fortune) doe knowe so much what belongs to channge. *Firmius* was so

astonished

aſtoniſhed heereat, that the worde prepared alreadie to anſwer her, ſtucke frozen in his mouth with the colde and ſharpe blaſt of her anſwer, and to ſee with what libertie and ſignorie ſhe had openly declared her hard hart. *Syrenus* perceiuing that *Firmius* did not ſpeake, ſaide to *Diana*. Of one being diſcreet, thou art become extreme. Rather (anſwered *Diana*) of one being extreme (if I may ſay ſo) I am become diſcreet and wiſe: for Fortune hath taught mee ſo much, that ſhe hath brought me to be extreme in beleeuing it: And I am alſo my ſelfe in extremes; and with this I goe, for beholde where *Delius* commeth. For the loue of God come quickely againe. Another time (ſaide *Syrenus*) thou didſt requeſt this of me, and did'ſt ſpeake theſe ſelfe ſame words, which then greeued me more, and ſtroke a deeper impreſſion into my ſoule, then now they doe. *Diana* could not hold her teares at theſe words, and turning to *Syrenus* bicauſe ſhe would not be ſeene of them; and going away, ſhe ſaide vnto him. The Gods, *Syrenus*, take account of all theſe cares, that thou pretendeſt to giue me, & of the ſmall benefit thou haſt got in caſting me in the teeth with this ſorrowfull memorie. With this ſhe held her peace, breathing out a moſt dolefull ſigh, for the griefe of minde had taken her force away from ſpeaking any more; and alſo bicauſe *Delius* was come verie neere vnto her. *Firmius* clogged with the burthen of this grieuous thought, went to gather vp his flockes, bicauſe it was now time. But the Shepherds perceiuing that he was not able alone to driue them togither (being ſo many) euerie one went to helpe him, willing him to take ſome Swaine to his aide, vntill he heard more from them. Whereupon the next morning after, they departed towards *Felicias* Palace.

The end of the firſt booke.

The ſecond Booke of the ſecond Part of Diana of George of Montemayor.

THe Shepherds going on their accuſtomed way, about that time of the day, when the flockes (to eſchew the heate of the higheſt Sunne, go hanging downe their heads, and with their breath rayſing vp the drie duſt, ſeeke out the coole & pleaſant ſhades) they heard a tune of a Bagpipe, & thinking it ſtrange (for as often as they had paſſed that way before, they neuer heard ſo much) they made towards it (the ſound thereof being their beſt guide) to paſſe away there the heate of the day, if the place did like them well. But now as they came ſomewhat neere, they ſaw a Shepherd, who (leauing his Bagpipe) began to ſing this dittie in a low voice to the tune of a ſweete Rebecke that he had in his hands.

WHen I, poore wretch, of all men moſt accurſt,
That neuer durſt aſpire to ſweete content,
In dolours ſpent, in miſeries the firſt,
Liu'd moſt ſecure, to pleaſure onely bent:

Which to preuent, The traiterous God of Loue
With force did ſhoue into my careleſſe breſt

Cares

Cares and vnreſt of things, which I aboue
All other things till then did ſcorne and ieſt:

He thought (at leſt) to be reueng'd of me,
When he did ſee, that I ſcorn'd him alone
Bicauſe that none ſhould once preſume to be
So ſtout, as mocke his might ſo tride and knowne,

Nor his high throne, nor his ſupreme eſtate:
The Elfe of late hath plaide a ſuttell part,
As with new art my ioies to ruinate:
For often as he had eſſaid my hart

With wounding dart of beautie to ſubdew,
And with the view (not long ſince) of a face,
Which tooke no place for then in vaine he threw:
A faire and daintie hand he did vnbrace,

With ſuch a grace, and to mine eies did ſhow,
And ſuch a blowe he gaue me with the ſame,
That then with ſhame his power I did knowe,
For downe it threw me, my braue pride to tame.

Tell me, how came it thus (faire hand) to paſſe,
That ſo I was with ſuch a blowe againe
Throwne downe amaine, (neuer to riſe, alas)
By thee ſo fine and tender to be ſlaine?

Alas, in vaine I tooke thee for a hand,
For can it ſtand, that nature did thee frame?
Into the ſame, I thinke a mighty band
Of Cupids powers of late transformed came

My hart to tame, and dire reuenge to take,
Since I did make ſo little of his powre:
If now each howre for this thou doſt awake
Thy hawty force, my poore hart to deuoure:

Be not ſo ſowre, for pardon I doe craue,
The which to haue, I promiſe to obay
From day to day thy will, thy force and braue
Commaund, and alſo to confeſſe, and ſay,

That thou doſt ſway, more then the reſt aboue,
O God of Loue: And if that any nill
Embrace thy will his follies to reprooue,
I will aduiſe him how thy wrath doth kill.
And euer will endeuour to reclame
The freeſt harts vnto thy louing flame.

The Shepherds wiſhed in their mindes, that he had not made an ende ſo ſoone of his ſweete ſong; but when (ſtaying themſelues a little) they perceiued, that hee was in contemplation of ſome thought, they went to him, and ſaluting, ſaide. Thy ſweete ſong and merry Bagpipe (Shepherd) haue both inuited and forced vs (by leauing our high way before due time) to giue ſome reſt to our wearied bodies, and in this place (if our company may not be troubleſom to thee) with thine to paſſe away the burning heate of the day. *Fauſtus* (for ſo was he called) anſwered. Thinke not (Shepherds) that I am at any time alone, who indeed knowes not whether it be better for me, to be ſo, or no? Although your companie (by that which I may conieƈture of you) ſhall be as acceptable, as your ſelues welcome to me. They thanked him, and ſat downe, when after a fewe ſweete ſpeeches that paſſed togither between them, *Syluanus* ſaide vnto him. So may our God *Pan* fauour thy reſounding Bagpipe, and put thee in that eſtate thou deſireſt, as thou wouldeſt ſing that once againe (ſo that it be no paine to thee) which at our firſt comming to thee thou wert a ſinging. Paine to me (ſaid *Fauſtus*) nay rather Shepherd, it is the greateſt pleaſure that may be, to ſing of my paſſions, and of my pride and ſcorne, wherewith vnworthily I haue repugned great *Cupids* lawes. For let not any from hence foorth (be he neuer ſo ſtout and hardie) preſume to mocke and contemne him, whoſe force controules all: And bicauſe it may not be diſpleaſant to your eares, I will change the maner of my ſong, obſeruing neuertheleſſe the ſame intent. Then taking a Rebecke out of his ſcrip, he thus began to ſing.

CVpid was angrie with my merry face,
Bicauſe I euer laughed him to ſcorne,
And all his followers (hapleſſe and forlorne)
I mock't in publike and in priuate place:
Wherefore he arm'd himſelfe (to my diſgrace)
When time a fit occaſion did ſuborne,
But naught I wreckt his flames, in vaine outworne.

For Satyrlike I did not thee imbrace:
Who ſeeing, that he built vpon the ſand,
If by a face my life he would deuoure,
He ſhewed me then a fine and daintie hand,
Which once beheld, it lay not in my power
To be vnconquered Tyrantlike; nor would
Deliuer me from him although I could.

Syluanus immediately after the Shepherd had made an end of ſinging, ſaide. For all that this God *Cupid* is able to do, I care not greatly that he can do this or more. No (ſaide *Fauſtus*) do you thinke it ſo finall a matter to conquer *Cupid* with a diſarmed hand, when as the ſame lies not in fierce *Mars* his power: Why harken a little to this Sonnet.

IT is a ſigne of valour and of might,
A power, that in wonder doth increaſe,
For any king to win (and neuer fight)
A kingdome, and to enter it with peace.

Proper

Proper it is for Mars *to wound with hand:*
Mars *woundes with hand, if angrie once he be:*
But now behold, the matter thus doth ſtand,
That Cupid *wounds with hand as well as he.*

And my good hap, or ill would haue it thus,
That firſt of all my wofull hart ſhould feele
This new Alarme, wherewith he feareth vs.
So with a hand, to which all harts may kneele,
My hart he hath transfixt to make me knowe,
His valour, ſtrength, his wounding ſhaft, and bowe.

Thou haſt ſufficiently prooued it (ſaide *Syluanus*) and truely I cannot but woonder at the new manner of loues proceeding, and how in the ende (like one, whom this affaire toucheth) thou haſt highly pondred and weighed it in thy minde. But ſo may God giue thee a good hand in thy loue of the hand, as thou wouldeſt tell vs the manner he had to bring thee to the ſweete bondage of ſo faire a hande. From that (ſaid *Fauſtus*) which hitherto you haue heard, you may deduce (as it were) al the reſt; but paſſing that ſleightly ouer, which I haue already tolde you, I will briefely declare the reſt. Liuing (as I now haue told you) not meanely contented in my iudgement to ſee my ſelfe free (if he may be termed free, that is farre from loue) on a night I went to viſite a friend of mine, a certaine Shepherd, who was by chance wounded with a knife, with whom paſſing away the time, in lamenting his miſhap (diuining perhaps mine owne) a Shepherdeſſe, diſguiſed in her attyre, and hauing all her face couered ouer with a fine white vaile, came ſweetely in, ſo comely and gracefull a perſonage, as by her diſcreete words I iudged her to be of excellent and high conceite. Of both which things, as immediately, ſo not meanely was I enamoured, for of any other part I could not, becauſe her iniurious vaile did hide the reſt. But after a little while (to my great harme) ſhe pulled out a hand (a hand I ſay ſhe pulled out) for I know not how ſuch a perfect brightnes could be couered. At the ſight whereof mine eies were ſo blinded, to giue light to my vnderſtanding, that though ſhe did afterwards diſcouer her faire face, yet I was not able to behold it. She went from thence ſooner then I would, and I (ſooner then my neede required) exiled my ſelfe from my wonted ioy: for ſhe woulde not giue me ſo much as leaue to accompanie her with this miſerable bodie, whoſe happie ſoule went away in her heauenly company; whereby you may iudge what kinde of man I then was, that remained in ſuch anxieties, and what I am alſo now, who neuer ſince could finde out the meanes to ſee her any more. And (Shepherd) this is the ſumme of that thou didſt deſire to knowe of mee. If thou telleſt vs nothing elſe (ſaide *Syluanus*) it then ſeemes that as this Shepherdeſſe doth neither know thee, ſo thy paſſion is not manifeſt vnto her. It is true, ſaid *Fauſtus*, ſhe knowes me not, but hath had ſome certaine notice of me by the meanes of another faire Shepherdeſſe, with whom ſhe keepes daily company: who to do me a pleaſure (for ſurely ſhe euer wiſhed my content) made me write vnto her, vpon aſſured promiſe to giue my letter into her own hands, & to procure me an anſwer againe: though from the laſt ſhe hath not yet diſcharged hirſelfe. True it is, ſhe tels me (or faines at the leaſt to put me in ſome hope and comfort) that ſhe hath promiſed me an anſwer. I pray thee pleaſure vs ſo much (ſaide *Syluanus*) to ſhew vs thy letter, for being written by thine owne hands, there can be nothing

nothing elſe expected, but an ingenious and well compoſed order in it. Although there is no ſuch matter (ſaide *Fauſtus*) yet for your pleaſure I will ſhewe it you, for heere I haue the copie of it, hoping by theſe meanes to diſcharge me of you; but it is in proſe of purpoſe, bicauſe I vnderſtood how certaine of my rude rymes (againſt my will) came to her hands. I thinke not (ſaide *Syluanus*) that thy well penned proſe is of leſſe ſubſtance and commendation then thy pleaſant and gracious verſe, and yet I haue heard, that it requires many things more, not ſo commonly knowne to vs Shepherds. Then thruſting his hand into the lining of his Shepherds hoode, hee tooke out a paper, and reading it, they ſawe it ſaid thus.

Fauſtus *his letter to* Cardenia.

HE that hath none himſelfe, nor wiſheth to haue any, but onely that which may come from thy hands, ſends thee (Gracious Shepherdeſſe) all the health in the world. My rude hand trembleth to thinke, that a letter written by it, muſt come to thy faireſt hands, in whoſe iudgement it lies not otherwiſe (I ſuſpect) but to condemne my bold attempt, and chaſtiſe my fooliſh raſhnes, and that I ſhall not haue force to ſuffer the rigour of thy angrie hand, if thou doſt but once withdraw it from my comfort and ſuccour. For thou muſt not vnderſtand that (to make thee amends for the iniurie I haue done thee) as being but a baſe Shepherd, to haue placed my thoughts on ſo famous a yoong Shepherdeſſe, there needes any more puniſhment, then the wound, which thy faire and cruel hand hath giuen me, if by the ſame againe I am not fauoured with ſome remedie. I know well faire Shepherdeſſe (pardon me for ſaying ſo) that reading theſe ill compacted lines, thou wilt be in ſuſpence to know the man, that ſhewes himſelfe ſo much appaſſionate for thy ſake; if any ſuch thing occur to thy thoughts, demaund it I beſeech thee, of a hart, which thou haſt lately got into thy ſubiection, for that ſhal tell thee ſo ſincere and pure a truth, as here by a ſenceleſſe wit ſimply ſet down. Alas for me, that going to viſite one wounded with a knife, I returned from thence wounded by thy Iuorie hand; & thou going to comfort a weake man in bodie, did'ſt leaue me wounded in ſoule. Behold therefore, if being compaſſionate with him, thou haſt not beene cruell to me. Thou wilt ſay perhaps, thou didſt not thinke, any ſuch thing would fall out, which I beleeue verie well, when as the ſame did as little fall in the compaſſe of my thought. But yet thou canſt not be iuſtly excuſed from fault and puniſhment, ſince, no leſſe then her, that with ſuſpitious and priuie weapons armes her ſelfe, thou art woorthie of both. Who then can carrie about her ſuch ſecret weapons as thou haſt done, aſſayling my ſoule (vnarmed then and without defence) with ſuch a victorious and wounding hand. I will not trouble thee any more with my vnpoliſhed & ſimple reaſons, vntil the ſtring of my iarring fanſies be tuned by thy moſt ſoueraigne hande, which the immortall Gods defend with their mightie handes, as thou maiſt me with thy milke white hand.

This letter being ſhort and ſententious pleaſed the Shepherdes verie much. But when it was read out, *Fauſtus* ſaid. Behold here (good Shephedes) the eſtate wherein I am attending the ſentence of my glorious death, or happie life, written by that incomparable white hand. Entreat (gentle Shepherdes) the Amorous God of loue (if your ſacrifices be acceptable to him) to wound her, like my ſelfe, with his golden headed arrow, and hide his leaden one from her. If the ſeruants of this little boy (enamoured Shepherd) ſaid *Seluagia*, may preuaile any thing to obtaine ſuch fa-

uour

uour of him, thou ſhalt be ſoone deliuered from theſe paſſions, by the milde entreaties of my Shepherd *Syluanus* here, and of my ſelfe. But it is needleſſe to make this Shepherd *Syrenus*, a meane and interceſſour for thee, bicauſe he is the moſt iniurious rebell to loue that dwels in theſe villages here abouts. O *Iupiter*, ſaid *Fauſtus*! Is it poſſible that I inioy the thing before mine eies that (next to my moſt ſoueraigne Shepherdeſſe) I deſired to ſee, whoſe loues haue wearied fame ſo much in euerie place? I was about to aske you who you were, and which way you trauelled, wherein it onely remaines for you to ſatisfie my deſire, ſince of the firſt I am not ignorant. Although firſt I would rather aduiſe thee *Syrenus* (for keeping my promiſe to *Cupid*) and pray thee beſides (hauing mature conſideration to his inuincible might) to follow and obey him, and to beware to rebell againſt his ſoueraigntie, bicauſe thou maiſt not ſay, that I haue not warned thee before. I thanke thee for thy good will ſaid *Syrenus*, but for thy coũſel I care not. Well (ſaid *Fauſtus*) herein I haue diſcharged my duty, & thou maiſt do what thou thinkeſt beſt. But yet take heed leaſt ſomtimes hereafter thou beeſt not puniſhed like my ſelfe. But then *Syrenus*, bicauſe he would not haue him talke any more of that matter, told him whither they went, but could not tell him of their returne. I am ſorrie for that (ſaid *Fauſtus*) bicauſe at your returne I would willingly goe with you to ſee the vngratefull Shepherdeſſe *Diana*, whom I haue heard woonderfully commended for beautie and fine graces, and to behold in what hart ſuch forgetfulnes could harbour, hoping (that if, for the great deſire I haue to ſee her, I ſtay here till your returne to accompanie you home) thou wilt not be angrie *Syrenus*. Not I, ſaid *Syrenus*, but as I muſt warne you to take heed; ſo muſt I tell you, that this counſell is better for you, then that which you gaue me. In theſe and other ſpeeches they paſſed the time away, vntill the hower of their departure came, wherein with profered courteſies, and gentle offers on both ſides they went euerie one his way.

With ſome ſmall force yet went vermillion *Apollo* ſhining ouer the face of our old mother, when the three Shepherds, comming neere to the Iland where they had beene before at their laſt departure, did ſee a companie of people togither, and as they came neerer to them, knew it was *Felicia*, & ſome of her Nymphes, with *Don Felix*, and his Lady *Feliſmena*. Not a little amazed thereat, they ſtaied, and perceiued how they came guiding their ſteps towardes them. But they marueiled verie much to ſee them come ſo ſilent, and not talking a worde. But *Felicia* being come, and the Shepherds, hauing in dutifull ſort ſaluted her and the reſt, asked her the cauſe of their comming that way, and of their vnwoonted ſilence. Whom ſhe anſwered ſaying. The deſire I haue (my friendly Shepherds) to pleaſure Lord *Felix* and *Feliſmena*, and the loue I beare to you, to giue you all poſſible content, hath mooued me to bring them hither againſt your comming, bicauſe you might in ſo delightfull a place as this, recreate your mindes altogither. The cauſe of my comming in ſuch ſilent ſort, and without any ſinging of theſe louers, or of my Nymphes is, bicauſe their noiſe may not depriue both them, and you of a ſight woorthie the marking, which ſhal by & by enſue: wherby you ſhall know, that as you your ſelues are not onely in loue, ſo all alone you do not ſuffer troubles and ſorrowes for your deereſt loues: And therfore I will you all to follow me as ſoftly as you can. The Lady then going vp with her companie along the Spring in the Iland (the way which I ſaid before did lead to the pleaſant meade where the fountaine of the Laurell trees was) came vnawares to the very entrance of it: The which Lord *Felix* and his beloued Ladie (not hauing ſeene that place before) imagined it to be ſome earthly para-

diſe, or that they were in the pleaſant fieldes of *Elyſium*, although they were not ſuffered to take any other delight therein, but only the pleaſant view therof with their wandring eies, becauſe (for the ſtrict ſilence inioyned them) with wordes and woorthy praiſes, they durſt not extol that place of paradiſe, nor had leaue to demand any thing concerning the ſame. At the entrance of it, *Felicia* ſat her downe, and all the reſt after her, who ſtaied there a pretie while, not daring almoſt to breath, and ſawe no more, then the trembling Sunne-beames, that with force ſeemed to paſſe betweene leafe and leafe amongſt the greene trees that grewe neere togither; whereupon their thoughts went wandring, and muſing of many matters, and their harts were conſtrained to bite on the bit of forced patience: And faine they would haue changed (in their iudgements) the pleaſure to ſee that which *Felicia* promiſed them, to be ridde of the diſcontent, which their ſilence did procure them. Which thing (when ſhe perceiued it) made her ſmile a little to herſelfe. Being thus therfore in this pleaſant meadow, and tedious mutenes, *Felicia* pointed with her finger to an entrance thereof right ouer againſt them, to haue them all looke that way, where caſting their eies, they ſawe a reuerend old man comming in, graue in his countenance, perſon, and diſpoſition, as alſo in the manner of his habite and apparell: for in euery point he ſeemed to repreſent a moſt woorthie prieſt of *Iupiter*. Hee came holding a ſtaffe in his right hand, and ſuſtained vpon it his olde and wearied body, whereon ſometimes leaning, he looked ſtedfaſtly on the grounde; like a man full of imaginations, and ſometimes againe lifted vp his eies to heauen, like one moſt ſorrowfull and comfortleſſe. He made ſuch ſundrie kindes of motions and geſtures of his body, (obſeruing yet alwaies the due grauitie of his noble perſon) that he did not onely mollifie the tender harts of them that were looking on him, but had been able to haue made the cruell *Hircanian* Tygres milde and gentle, if they had beene preſent, eſpecially with the outward ſhewes of ſorrow that he repreſented of ſome inwarde greefe: for in the middes thereof he gaue a turne about, viewing the heauens on euery ſide, and ſpeaking againſt Fortune (of whom he ſeemed to make his chiefeſt complaint) he vttered this that followeth.

IN each created thing
One motion onely, and of might,
Predominant continually is found.
Which ſtill doth keepe and bring
The ſame, one way, and courſe aright,
That's alwaies like, and vniforme, and round.
And none can be vnbound
From this compacted order though he would,
None can againe the ſame forſake,
Or any other take,
And yet it would not though perhaps it could:
Thou Fortune *art alone*
Without it, in diſorder onely one.

That firſt, and higheſt Sphere,
That mooues, and is not mooued againe
Of any other heauen, that mooues one whit:
The which with his Careare,

And ſwifteſt courſe doth turne away
The loweſt heauens, and caries after it:
An order doth admit,
And doth maintaine, not erring in the leſt:
For it doth cary them with ſpeede,
And with more haſte (indeede)
The neareſt heauen to it, from Eaſt to Weſt:
But rule thou doſt diſdaine,
And onely without order doſt remaine.

The circled Elements
Of qualities moſt oppoſite,
The fire, the aire, the ſea, and earth belowe,
In motions not inuents
A nouell courſe, but moone aright,
And euer keepe good order, as they goe:
None erreth, no.
The earth about his loweſt Centre mooues,
The water next in circle wiſe,
The aire next that that lies,
And fire to that a gallant order prooues:
But Fortune *in thy Spheare*
Thou run'ſt, without good order, rule, or feare.

The heauie fals downe right
(Vnleſſe it haue impediment)
Vnto the Centre of his proper Spheare:
And that, which is but light,
If that it haue an open vent,
Mounts to his higheſt region euery where:
And ſo each thing doth beare
Good order, and good rule continually:
In generation it doth ſpring,
Corruption it doth bring,
In fine, all things by order liue and die:
Without it, thou doſt range
(Fortune) *that with diſorder ſtill doſt change.*

In this world nothing is
(If out of order it be gone)
But ordred it may be in time againe:
Ther's nothing in blacke Dis
(Though there be all confuſion)
Nor order kept (for there it were but vaine)
But may indeede remaine
In order, in their manner, forme, and kinde,
And may be call'd to order fit,
If we conſider it:

Though nought but paines and plaintes are there aſsign'd.
Thou worſe then helliſh thought
In no point canſt not be to order brought.

Thy motion out of kinde
So far beſides proportion lies,
That it can neuer be to order brought:
Swifter ſometimes then winde,
With haſtie ſpeede ſo ſoone it flies,
That it is neuer ſeene, nor felt, nor thought:
The Parthian neuer wrought,
Nor ſent an arrow out of ſteeled bowe
With ſuch great haſte and maine:
Sometimes with ſloth againe,
Like to the ſnaile or Tortuſe ſhe doth goe:
Blinde Fortune *thou doſt reele,*
And more doth he, that ſits vpon thy wheele.

He had no ſooner made an end of the complaints, which he declamed againſt Fortune, when walking towards the fountaine (from the which he was not twentie paces) on the ſudden they ſaw him fling away his ſtaffe, and with a luſtie kinde of agilitie (contrary to his aged limmes) laie hand on his Faulchion, which from vnder a ſide garment that he wore, he tooke out to ſmite a certaine Shepherd that laie a ſleepe in that ſide of the meadow. When they that were thus beholding him, perceiued with what furie he ranne vpon the ſilly Shepherd (whom hitherto they had not ſeene) and with his naked Faulchion in his hande, they would all haue runne to helpe him, but that ſage *Felicia* with ſignes which ſhe made vnto them, willed them to ſit ſtill, telling them the matter ſhould not need it. But the old man was now lifting vp his Faulchion to ſmite him on the head, when two beggerly and foule ragged Shepherdeſſes which were at hand, riſing from the ground, tooke hold on him, the one with a ſorrowfull voice ſaying vnto him. O my good Father. But the old man vnwinding himſelf from them ſtept back, making as though he would ſmite hir that went about to hinder him. Wherupon ſhe, that had firſt ſpoken, perceiuing that he knew her not, ſpake to him againe, ſaying. O my deer Father *Pariſiles* (for this was his name.) The angry & afflicted old man amazed at the tender voice he now knew, and like the marble ſtone benummed in all his ſences, let his Faulchion preſently fall out of his hands, whom then the Shepherdeſſe (calling him by the ſame name as before) moſt louingly embraced, as he was falling downe to the ground. Who comming to himſelfe againe, and with the teares of milde loue ſupplying the interrupted voice of his breſt, threwe his aged armes vpon her, and that face of hers which with lothſome mudde and durt was ſo much defiled, ſweetely beganne to kiſſe. *Felicia* turning to her companie, that (being nowe ridde from the greeſe of their late paſſed ſilence) was laughing with a ſcornfull delight at the preſent ſight, to ſee him kiſſe that foule ill fauoured face, ſaid. Maruell not my ſonnes and daughters, to ſee yon reuerend old man kiſſe thoſe deformed cheekes, for fatherly loue extendeth to more then that, ſo that if ſhe ſeemes foule in your eies, he thinkes her faire, and no leſſe doth the Shepherd that lieth there aſleepe. Like will to like, ſaide *Eliſmena*. It is ſo (ſaide *Felicia*) but bicauſe ſo great an iniurie may not be offered

to

to the honorable old man, as to be embraced with ſuch an vnſeemelines, let vs go to put them aſunder. Whereupon they went towards them, and making as though they had not ſeene them before, *Felicia* ſaid vnto them. God ſaue this noble companie. The other Shepherdeſſe yeelded her due thankes, and a courteous anſwer, for the Shepherd was yet ſleeping, and the old man and the other Shepherdeſſe were ſtill embracing each other. Lord *Felix* comming to them both, ſaid. Thou ſhouldeſt haue enough noble Lord of theſe vnfit embracements. Whereat *Felicia* laughed to her-ſelfe, to ſee how much in their mindes they diſdained the Shepherdeſſe. But the old man ſaid. Nowe may yee (O Gods) conclude my many daies with their laſt period, ſince you haue granted me this vnſpeakeable fauour, to ſee my deereſt daughter: now may yee make an end of my wearied yeeres, hauing before mine eies my onely beloued *Stela*, (for ſo was the Shepherdeſſe called that ſpake vnto him) *Stela* mine onely hope, my ioy and comfort of my life. To this end my praiers tended, to lengthen my decaying life, and to ſee this ioyfull day. This was the white whereat my petitions, oblations, and ſacrifices aymed, for prorogation of my death. And now let it come when it wil, ſince I haue her in my preſence, who in deſpite of death maintaines my life; but yet gentle death, rather then by any other misfortune that may enſue, I might be depriued of her againe, come and bereaue me of this common light. O my deereſt daughter, who did take thee away from me, for I coulde neuer beleeue that of thine owne accord thou wouldſt haue left me without firſt taking leaue of thy louing father. Woe befall to thee (falſe Shepherde) that lieſt there aſleepe, and an ill end betide thy friend, whereſoeuer he be, if he hath it not yet already. Bende not thy eares, O *Iupiter* (ſaide the Shepherdeſſe) to this cruell petition, but rather turne it vpon me (a thing more requiſite for my miſeries) and not on them, whoſe goodnes neuer deſerued any ill at all. I will not conſent (good Father) nor be content to heare them accurſed, that in all points are ſo faultleſſe. *Lo* (*Loue* ſhe would haue ſaid hath erred, if modeſtie and maidenly ſhame had not ſtaied her toong in the middeſt) I haue erred, or rather my Fortune (to ſpeake more truely) hath beene to blame, by granting me no meanes to take my leaue of thee. *Felicia*, who knewe the cauſe of the Shepherdeſſe her greefe, ſaid. Let theſe excuſes now ceaſe. And *Pariſiles* forſake thy ſadnes, ſince now thou inioyeſt thine onely deſire. Who turning to ſage *Felicia*, and marking with what graue auctoritie ſhe ſpake vnto him, ſaid vnto her. Whoſoeuer thou art (noble Ladie) whether thou doſt recken thy ſelfe in the number of mortall women, or art regiſtred in the Catalogue of the immortall Gods (for ſuch an one thou ſeemeſt to be) pardon me, if hitherto I haue not done my obliged duetie, and reuerence, hauing ſo pitifull and condigne a cauſe of pardon: in euerie thing hereafter I am wholy at thy deuotions, and ſubiect to thy commaund whatſoeuer. It is well, ſaid *Felicia*, we ſhall thinke of that hereafter. And bicauſe I will make thee more ioyfull, then euer thou thoughteſt to be (for from him thy comfort ſhall proceed, of whom thou doſt moſt complaine) let vs goe to reſt vs vnder the ſhadowes of thoſe Laurell trees, neere to the ſiluer fountaine brincke: and that thou maiſt beleeue my words to be true, know that I am *Felicia*, if euer my name hath ſounded in thine eares. *Pariſiles* then with the Shepherdeſſes fell downe on their knees to kiſſe her hands, ſaying. Who of all thoſe, that honour our immortall Gods, is there, that is ignorant of the portion which thou haſt with them? *Felicia* liſted them all three vp, and would not ſuffer them to do her ſuch honour, and taking one of the Shepherdeſſes by the hand (called *Crimine*) ſaid to all the reſt. Go you (my Sonnes) to the fountaine, and reſt you

there, while I talke with this Shepherdeſſe, and with that Shepherd a word or two. And thou (my friend *Pariſiles*) with thy deere daughter ſhalt keepe them company, and tell them ſome famous hiſtorie, or antiquitie, vntill it be time to go in to dinner. Then taking *Crimine* by the hand, ſhe went towards the Shepherd that was yet ſleeping all this while, and ſhaking him by the ſhoulder, awaked him, & ſaid. He ſhould ſleep but a little, that comes as a guard to two faire yoong Shepherdeſſes. Whereat the vnknowen Shepherd awaked, and not ſeeing *Stela*, without making the ſage Ladie any anſwere, with a ſudden ſurſault of griefe, ſaid. O *Crimine*, where is *Stela*? Be not afraid (ſaid *Felicia*) for ſhe is not far from hence. Thou mighteſt do better to looke more aduiſedly to thy ſelfe, when as but euen now thy temporall ſlumber had verie neere caſt thee into thy laſt and endleſſe ſleepe. They (of whoſe liues and honours they choſe thee their onely ampare) had more care to ſaue thy late endangered perſon, then thou hadſt of thy ſelfe or them. And bicauſe thou maiſt ſee vnto what extremitie thy fates had almoſt brought thee, knowe that it is not long ſince the knife was at thy throate readie to cut it. The Shepherd could not imagine what ſhe meant by theſe words, nor what companie that was, that ſat about the fountaine, where (turning his eies about to ſee *Stela*) he eſpied her, but *Crimine* ſecretly admoniſhed him to doe his duetie to *Felicia*, who then making low obeiſance vnto her, craued pardon of her. *Felicia* then told him in order what had paſſed; and how *Pariſiles* forgetting his aged weaknes, and ayded by the force of his furie, would haue killed him, & how they would not let him, with that that folowed. In the end the Shepherd was verie ſad, when he knew that old *Pariſiles* was there, not for feare of him, but bicauſe he now thought to looſe his beloued *Stela*, which ſage *Felicia* perceiuing, ſaid vnto him. Abandon (Shepherd) theſe ſorrowfull thoughts, for all ſhall redound to thy content and ioy: for now thou art in ſuch a place, where thou ſhalt haue no wrong, and where thy paſſed troubles, & thoſe of thy ſweet company & deereſt friends ſhall be better ended, then thou art able to imagine. To all this the Shepherd could yeeld no more but humble thankes, though it was not ſufficient to comfort him, bicauſe he was abſent from a deere friend of his, whom he loued more then himſelfe, and who euer requited him with no leſſe loue againe, as by manie prooſes moſt often it appeered. For well might they two haue beene the thirde number, annexed to the onely two paire of friends, that after ſo manie thouſande yeeres were accounted in the world for the greateſt. But the Lady *Felicia* aſſured him, how ſhe would finde out ſome meanes to haue him thither out of hande. At which words he fell downe on his knees, and kiſſed her hands, for any thing that ſhe could do the contrarie. In theſe and other ſpeeches, they went talking vp and downe a pretie while. But God knowes, how *Crimine* was aſhamed of her-ſelfe before *Felicia*, though it was not long, for *Felilia* did remedie that by and by, hauing taken her aſide to no other ende from the reſt of the companie. While theſe three were in theſe ſpeeches, Lord *Felix*, *Feliſmena*, the three Nymphes, and the Shepherds, deſirous to knowe who theſe fower were, and for what cauſe *Pariſiles* in ſo great an anger would haue killed the Shepherd that lay aſleepe, and all the reſt of his fortunes, would faine haue demanded the ſame on him. But yet they did not, bicauſe they ſuſpected he would not tell it them. Whereupon they reſerued it, till *Felicia* was come, to entreat her to mooue *Pariſiles*, or the reſt thereof, bicauſe they knewe they could not then excuſe themſelues. Lord *Felix* therefore with the reſt praied *Pariſiles* to obey the ſage *Felicia*, by diſcourſing ſome noueltie vnto them. But they ſeemed importunate & troubleſome vnto him, for he would not (willingly)

haue

haue beene one moment from the louing embracements of his beloued daughter *Stela*,& ſo did not one minute (when from any other forced thing he ceaſed) caſt his tender eies off her, whereby he gaue *Stela* no meanes to looke vpon the vnknowne Shepherd, on whom her eies and hart attended: but euery time that ſhe might ſteale a looke from her Father *Pariſiles*, making as though ſhe ſat not well, or as though ſhe would ſpit or cough, then with earneſt deſire and affection ſhe beheld him. But in the end the old man hauing no good excuſe to acquite himſelfe from *Felicias* commaund, nor from the requeſts of that faire companie, which ſo ſeriouſly demaunded it of him, began to ſay in this ſort.

My louing Sonnes (for by the priuiledge of mine age I may call you ſo) for as much as the greater part of my life hath beene dedicated to the worſhip and ſeruice of our moſt ſoueraigne Gods, and eſpecially of our Goddeſſe *Iſis* (whoſe vnworthy Prieſt from the entrance of my youth I haue beene) it would be moſt agreeable to my condition, to entreat of the maner, that ought to be obſerued in worſhipping of her, and how much we are bound to performe the ſame. But bicauſe you haue for your Ladie and miſtreſſe (for ſo I take her to be, bicauſe you do accompanie and follow her) the ſage *Felicia*, to whom not I my ſelfe (the loweſt of all Prieſts) but the beſt in all the world may iuſtly be diſciples, it muſt needes be a part beyonde all courteſie, and good manners to enterpriſe any ſuch taske. And this difficultie beſides doth offer it ſelfe to my minde, in that I know not, with what hiſtorie to delight al your eares: For the difference of eſtates, which in this noble companie I perceiue, ſtrikes a doubt into my minde vpon the choiſe of my diſcourſe, conſidering with my ſelfe, that that which will pleaſe ſome, will (perhaps) offend others. To theſe Shepherdes I could preſent ſome things requiſite for their poore eſtate and vocations, and profitable for them and their flockes, and ſome curious ſecretes, which they ſhoulde knowe (happily) neuer yet thought on amongſt Shepherdes. As likewiſe from whence the playing on the fluite or Bagpipe firſt came, and when the honour of their God *Pan*, and the cuſtomes and rites, which in old times they obſerued in their ſacrifices, were firſt in vſe, and why thoſe are decaied, and other now admitted in their places. To you noble perſonages, I could preſent (a thing (perhaps) which would beſt fit your deſires) whereof loue was firſt engendred, and how he worketh, and for what cauſe the God of Loue doth keepe no reaſon, being honored as a God, we holding it for a rule infallible, That the Gods are iuſt, and that in all things they obſerue due iuſtice and equitie. And this is that, which I would more willingly entreate of, bicauſe in theſe meadowes heere, a queſtion was once mooued, which touched not the ſimplicitie of the Shepherd that did aske it. But bicauſe to declare it well, it were neceſſary to entreate of the powers of the ſoule, and the duties thereof, and what place euery one of them hath in mans body, (a diſputation more fit for Philoſophers ſchooles, then for the fieldes, where none but flockes are) I will not explaine it, reſeruing it onely for any one that will thereof be priuately inſtructed. But bicauſe I haue heere a thing before mine eies, which filleth me with admiration, (although it may be, that many that haue beene heere haue perhaps touched the ſame) I will make my beginning thus. Do you not ſee how nature and arte, the one borrowing that of the other, wherein either of them was defectiue, haue done their vtmoſt in making this Iland or meadow (calling it as it ſhall beſt pleaſe you) the very paterne of the Elyſian fieldes? But leauing aſide many things, that I could note vnto you about this matter, I will declare vnto you why this Oke is placed heere in the middes of theſe Laurell trees, bicauſe

you

you may vnderſtand that there was nothing done nor placed heere, but with great wiſedome and conceite. The loues of *Apollo* and *Daphne*, are ſufficiently knowen vnto you, I meane of *Apollo* with *Daphne*, as alſo the preheminences wherewith this God endowed the Laurell tree, whereinto this Nymph was transformed. But how? *Doria* at theſe words interrupting his diſcourſe, ſaide. Me thinkes (noble *Pariſiles*) thou haſt plaied the part of a gentleman Sewer, that haſt (at our chiefeſt appetite) taken away our beſt diſhes. Since then theſe noble perſonages (pointing to Lord *Felix* and *Feliſmena*) whom the ſubiect of loue did more narrowly touch, and theſe Shepherds (pointing to *Syrenus*, *Syluanus*, and *Seluagia*) to whom the firſt point belonged, haue let thee paſſe on without interruption, my ſelfe (to whom it chiefely appertaines, to heare the accidents of ſo famous a Nymph, bicauſe I am one my ſelfe) will not (with my will) giue thee leaue to proceed any farther, before thou haſt told vs the beginning of *Apollos* loues, & why *Daphne* refuſed and diſdained ſo high a God. *Syluanus* and *Seluagia* bluſhing for ſhame and anger, that *Doria* had pointed to Lord *Felix* and *Feliſmena*, and not to them, when ſhe ſaide, that the queſtions of loue belonged more to Lord *Felix* and *Feliſmena*, taking *Pariſiles* by the hande, ſaide. And how thinkeſt thou Nymph? Are we in reſpect of theſe two ſo farre from loue, that to them onely, and not to vs the treatiſe of this demand is more appertaining? Euery one laughing at the Shepherds words, *Doria* anſwered. I haue made a fault (Shepherds) and ſo I confeſſe it. It pleaſeth me well (faire Nymph ſaid *Pariſiles*) to obey thee heerein. But if I begin at the very beginning, it may be I ſhall not make an end before the ſage Lady commeth, where (being conſtrained to end abruptly) I ſhall perhaps do you more wrong, then if I had not begun at all. Leaue not of for this (ſaide *Feliſmena*) for if it be ſo, we will requeſt her to giue vs leaue to heare out the reſt. Since then you will haue it ſo (ſaide *Pariſiles*) giue attentiue eare, for I will recite it vnto you as I did ſee it written in *Apollo* his Temple.

THat deluge of reuengement being paſt,
Determined that was by Gods aboue,
For guilt of wickednes of mortall men:
The earth of moiſture yet remaining full,
Wherewith the heate of Titans *beames conioyn'd,*
Strange creatures did engender of the ſame:
Diuers in ſhape, proportion and in kinde.
Amongſt the which a Serpent *did ariſe,*
Cruell, vntam'd, and greater then a hill,
In Theſſalie, *a Prouince of great fame;*
That firſt put bridle to the horſe his mouth.
This monſtrous Serpent *did deuoure, and waſte*
His natiue ſoile, and all the people there:
He ſpared not the corne (a ſweete reward
And hope of him that did with labour ſowe it)
He ſpared not the ſtrong and painfull Oxe,
(The faithfull ſeruant of the countrey toyle)
As little ſpared he the harmeleſſe Calues,
Nor goates, nor kids, that skipt about the heathes.
He ſpared not the flockes of ſimple ſheepe,
Nor gentle lambes, nor heards of grazing neate.

He ſpar'd no houſe, nor of the little Bee
The ſweeteſt worke (the Miſtreſſe of her art)
This cruell beaſt had no regarde of men,
For whoſe auaile each thing created was.
But as the ſupreme Gods would not conſent,
With angrie hand to ſpoile the world anew:
They did prouide forthwith a ſpeedie helpe,
Since humane skill and wit could not preuaile.
For God Apollo going foorth to hunt,
With bowe and quiuer full of wounding ſhaftes:
Onely on Buckes his cunning aime to trie,
On mountaine goates, wilde boares, and ſauage beaſtes,
He did by chaunce encounter with this Serpent;
Which cruell monſter when he did behold,
He by and by contemn'd his wonted chace,
To make his name eternall by his death.
For ſtraight he bent his hardned bowe of ſteele,
And from his backe his golden quiuer tooke,
And drew thereout his ſhaftes with wounding heads;
Which dipt in poyſon, he did ſhoote with force,
And nailed them betweene the Serpents skailes,
And there lay Python ſtretched on the ground.
(For this the cruell Serpent had to name)
Apollo haughty in his ioyfull minde,
For glory of ſo great an enterpriſe,
Remaining there, to view his noble ſpoiles,
Proude with himſelfe he did triumph ſo much
For this great victory, that he did thinke
That heauen had not a God like to himſelfe;
Which by his ſpeeches he did manifeſt,
Speaking ſometimes vnto the monſtrous beaſt,
Sometimes vnto his quiuer, and his bowe;
With ioy and pride did vtter foorth theſe wordes.

Glorie of glories O moſt excellent,
Triumph of triumphes O the moſt eſteemed,
Of victories O worthy victorie.
O deede, aboue all deedes in honour deemed:
O chance, then any chance more eminent:
O fame of fames the ſole ſupremacie.
O happy war, whereby
My arme ſo fortunate
With power did abate
The fierceſt Serpent that was euer bred:
O crowne moſt worthy for my conquering head.
O bowe, that from complaining didſt deliuer
The people well nie dead,
O happy ſhaftes, O braue and bleſſed quiuer.

Python,

Python, for thee the ground was barren ſtill,
Denying her increaſe, and wonted fruite,
For thee, the learned Bee did aie lament,
That ſhe could not her ſweeteſt worke ſalute:
For thee, the gentle Ewe her ſelfe did kill,
For griefe to ſee her lambe in peeces rent:
For thee out of his tent
The Shepherd durſt not goe,
For cleerely he did knowe,
How much thy poyſoned tooth and breath did harme:
For thee the husbandman within his Farme,
And Citizens within their wals for feare
(Did in their Cities ſwarme)
Of euerie ſhadow thinking thou wert there.

What God deſerues all the heauenly Quire
Incenſe in ſacrifice as doth Apollo?
And what God by his skill and cunning art,
As many as the firmament ſo hollow
Containes, to ſuch great titles doth aſpire
With honours type, renown'd in euerie part?
For nature doth impart
Her gifts, and euerie grace
To me, their proper place.
I did inuent the art of medicine,
If any one like prophet doth diuine,
I am the God, that anſwers and inſpires,
My muſicke paſſing fine
Doth anſwer that the heauens make in their gires.

A famous Sirname I ſhall now obtaine,
O Serpent Python by thy mortall death:
And I will cauſe, that they ſhall celebrate
This libertie in neuer dying breath.
With ſolemne ſports and feaſting to maintaine
This glorie, in eternall time and ſtate.
And that this golden date
In hiſtorie by fame,
That ſtreight doth blaze the ſame,
And ſparing ſuch, as alwaies we do ſee,
Neuer in this may ſuch a niggard be.
And though of others ſhe doth prate too much,
And ſpeaketh partially,
Not any lye herein, her toong ſhall touch.

He therefore being in this ſort content,
By chaunce (and yet it may be to requite.
The gen'rall ſcorne he made of all the Gods)

The childe God Cupid passed by that way.
(A puissant and mightie Lord of loue)
A golden quiuer hung behinde his backe,
In his left hand he bare a bended bowe:
And in his right, two fine and prety shaftes.

His eies were both bound with a silken string,
Whom, now as soone as God Apollo sawe,
Thinking that none, but he deseru'd to beare
A bowe, and shaftes, and quiuer at his backe:
In brauing sort these proud iniurious wordes,
And full of scorne he thus to him affordes.

What's he so proude, and stoute that doth impute him
Worthy of those braue weapons in his hand?
What, knowes he not that they are due to me;
And none but I this honor may demand?
T'is Venus sonne, God Cupid, it is he,
So call'd, but heere he comes, I will salute him:
Infamous villaine, theefe and voide of shame,
And wicked robber of anothers fame.

Be these thy tooles? Tell me, why dost weare them,
That art a wanton, far for thee vnfit?
Deliuer them, for these my hands diuine
Doe beautifie, and on my shoulders sit
With better grace, and honour then on thine,
That art not able halfe ynough to beare them.
Then little boy, leaue of with these to boast thee,
If not, in faith, full deerely they shall cost thee.

This furniture is proper to my might,
These shaftes, this quiuer, and this bended bowe:
With them I slew fell Python, that of sheepe
Whole flockes within his belly did bestowe.
And them to kill wilde beastes, and birdes I keepe,
For onely these belong to me of right.
With them (moreouer) if it be my will,
With mortall woundes mine enemies I kill.

Thy fires and flames should well content thy minde,
With which (fond Loue) with loue thou giuest paine,
Ioine not thy sportes, nor thy dishonest brandes
With these braue weapons of my glorious gaine.
Leaue then this bowe, dishonoured by thy handes,
And see, if that thou canst, that art so blinde:
Thine eies are blinded with a silken string,
How canst thou then ayme right at any thing?

Cupid at this waxt angrie and aſham'd.
But yet with threats to his vnworthie ſcornes,
Nor with proude words in no wiſe would reply.
For mightie Loue, as he is verie wiſe,
And reſolute of that he takes in hand,
Cares not to bragge it out with threatning words:
But doth performe it with moſt valiant deedes.
But yet bicauſe his follies he ſhould know,
And how he was deceiued in his might,
Which all the Gods beſides himſelfe had knowen
(For yet Apollo neuer felt the paines,
Nor cruell torments that braue Cupid giues)
With gentle words proceeding from a minde,
Incenſed more within, then outwardly,
To his braue termes this ſpeech he did reply.

Too proud thou haſt thy ſelfe (Apollo) ſhowen
In ſpeaking ſuch vile words vnto my face.
Such rather I embrace
With honour, and I vſe them not, but ſaying
Nothing at all in ſuch a wrongfull caſe,
I do ſuch things as like were neuer none.
Hearke then how I am knowen
By word of mouth, and how much I am ſwaying.
After by deed, I will bring thee to obaying.
Neptune, and Ioue, and Vulcan I do keepe
Vnder my mightie will:
Few Gods there are, that with their skill,
Do free themſelues, but vnto me do creepe.
The Goddeſſes do weepe
To heare my name, and yeeld with mere conſent
Vnto my gouernment.
And Venus, though my louing mother be,
Cannot eſcape with partiall libertie.

What man is he, neuer ſo ſtrong in armes,
That hath eſcaped in my amorous field?
Here bootes not ſpeare, nor ſheeld,
Nor Mars his weapons, nor his ſtrong defence.
In vaine he fights, whom I will haue to yeeld.
Learning and wiſedome here procure but harmes,
And flie at my Alarmes,
And ſtaying do impriſt a deeper ſence
Of louing paſſions, and with more offence.
Women (mine ornament) do euer hide
What neuer was concealed.
For flames are hardly vnreuealed.
The birds and ſauage beaſtes my hands hath tide

Vnto my yoke, beside,
That Nature doth her selfe my chariot follow.
Then tell me now Apollo,
If that thou think'st to get such puissance,
As that with these thou should'st not come to dance.

Thou dost reioice, bicause these armes are due
To thee, for killing of that monster fell.
But harke, and I will tell,
How these belong more iustly to my might,
Although thy shaft in wounding doth excell,
It neuer yet but beastes and venison slew,
Apollo, this is true.
But mine shall wound thy soule both day and night:
And thou shalt sweare, mine is the onely slight.
So that how much each beast, not me,
In might thou dost exceede,
And gett'st most glory by this deede,
So much more famous shall my conquest be.
But now thy follies see,
In saying, that this quiuer, and this bowe
Did me dishonor so.
For thee, Apollo, better had it beene,
If with my selfe the same thou hadst not seene.

Thou saist I nill deserue this ornament,
Bicause mine eies are blinded with a band;
And therefore that my hand
Must needes shoote false, bicause that I am blinde.
And yet, besides, I tell thee that they stand
Against all reason, and intendement.
Harke now, to what intent?
And how this comes so fitly to my minde.
Then tell me, if thou think'st it out of kinde,
For any God to burne in feruent loue
Of any woman heere?
That more his greefes, and paines appeere,
The more she should from him her liking moue.
If blinde, such things I proue,
And studie to reuenge me with my slight?
Tell me, were it not right?
Then take good heede, since thus my bowe doth kill:
And makes thy reason subiect to my will.

This said, he would no longer with him stay,
Nor harken more to answeres nor replies:
Nor did Apollo care to answere him,
Esteeming nought his childish wordes, and threats.

But Cupid wounding with his golden wings
The loftie aire, that burned as he went,
Without delay he gaines the shadowed top
Of mount Parnasse, where looking round about
He staies, and waites the meanes to venge himselfe
At pleasure of Apollos proude contempt.
Wherefore out of his quiuer he doth take
Two wounding headed arrowes fatall both:
In colour diuers, and in their effects,
For th'one procureth loue, with burning fire,
The other hate, with cold and frozen ice.
Golden is that, that causeth feruent loue,
Leaden is that, that causeth frozen hate:
And talking with them both, as though they did
Conceiue his wordes, in this sort he did say.

Come speedy out (my louing friendes)
And shew your valour, and your force so high:
In you my trust, and hope doth lie,
That you will shew, whereon my strength depends.
Beate downe Apollos pride,
That heere our honour did deride:
That he may know, how well my words agree
With earnest deedes as shortly he shall see.

Since thou, that art so sharpe and tride
With kindling fire in each louing brest,
Thou shalt Apollos hart molest,
That cruell paines, and smartes he may abide.
And thou that art of bluntie lead,
Strike thou some womans hart so dead
In cruell hate, that she shall neuer feele
The sense of loue, no more then stone, or steele.

Apollo there remained very glad,
Calling the heauens, the elements, and beastes,
The trees, the meades, the springs, the birdes, and fish
To ioy with him in his renowned spoile,
And victorie, by Pythons death he got:
For in this sort with ioyfull face he said.

O heauenly frame,
Whose course, and sweete accents
Giue earthly things their life, that ar
Of natures name.
You circled elements,
So contrarie in secret war,
You beastes, that far

And

And neere, in earth doe make your dwelling place,
You birdes, that in the skie
With hastie wing doe flie,
You fishes, that the christall streames imbrace,
For my braue deede
Come shew your selues content in ioies agreed.
You shadowed treene,
An ease of sweete delight,
And fence from Titans burning heate:
Faire meades and greene,
And waters sweete and bright,
This forrest that with liquours weate:
Greene Iuies seate,
That liuest still, and dy'st not in thy kinde,
And wind'st about the tree,
That still vpholdeth thee:
For this braue deed,
Come shew your selues content in ioies agreed.

Apollo *being in this ioyfull moode,*
Behold where comes a fine and tender Nymph,
And fairer then Aurora *in her prime,*
Laden with spoiles, she got by hunting late,
A Nymph endow'd with vertues high and rare.
The father oft vnto his Daphne *saide*
(For so they say this faireſt Nymph was call'd,
And Pene *was her aged fathers name)*
Daughter, to me thou ow'st a sonne in lawe.
Daughter, to me some nephewes thou dost owe.
But with a teint, like the Vermillion Rose,
Bespred vpon her face as white as snowe,
To see her father would haue wedded her,
The chasteſt virgine with her tender armes
All Lilly white about the louing necke
Of her deere father sweetely then did hang:
Requesting him, that he would giue her leaue,
To leade her life in spotlesse chastitie,
And liue therein, as she had liu'd before.
Her louing father graunted her request.
But yet before to hinder her intent,
With graue aduise vnto her he did tell,
How heate of youth, and wealth, and beauties lure,
Were contrarie vnto the chasteſt minde.
And how that each of them alone is able
To worke the tender hart like melted wax.
How much more easie then, when all in one
Were found, as in faire Daphne *they did raigne.*
Yet though she did excell in all these giftes,

She would not leaue to put her chaſte intent
In practiſe, and Dianas *grace to ſerue.*
And ſaying, it was true her father ſpake.
And ſaid, if that ſhe had ſuch cauſe to vaunt
That ſhe was rich, and faire, and nobly borne:
That it was tenfold deerer vnto her
To be accounted chaſte of euerie one.
And that her chiefeſt honour did conſiſt
In honeſt, pure, and vndefiled life.
Now therefore as the virgine did not know
(Bicauſe her minde was ſo on vertue bent)
What thing loue was, nor due of marriage rites,
To hunt it was her onely ioy, and ſport..
Then hither came this gallant Nymph to chaſe,
Where proud Apollo *went by chaunce to hunt:*
Not thinking to finde out ſo farie a game.
Bicauſe his breaſt, free from the thoughts of loue,
Was onely bent in thinking of his ſpoile.
He was ſo glad and did triumphe ſo much
Within himſelfe, that he did neuer thinke
Of any thing but this, till (to his harme)
He caſt his wandring eies vnto the place,
Where he did ſpie faire Daphne *in her chace.*

The good old man *Pariſiles* went proſecuting his hiſtorie, carrying all his hearers with him verie ſilent, by reaſon that the ſubſtance thereof (as alſo the ſtile wherewith he told it) delighted them verie much, when they perceiued the ſage *Felicia* comming with *Crimine*, and the vnknowen Shepherd towardes them, whoſe comming made not *Stela* a little glad, for ſhe lent but a ſmall eare to the tale, bicauſe the Shepherd was not in her companie. But *Pariſiles* turning his head, and ſeeing *Felicia*, ſaid. Behold how it fals out true, which I feared: my tale ſhall breake off till another day, when we will haue fitter time and place for it, wherein nothing ſhall be loſt hauing made ſo good a beginning. By no meanes (ſaide *Doria*) will I conſent hereunto. The like did all affirme with one voice. Then came *Felicia*, and as they were riſing to do her honour, they ſaw the Shepherd that came with her, to be the faireſt, moſt gracious, and goodlieſt youth of perſon, as euer they beheld before. His weedes were of gray cloth, to ſignifie by that colour his troubles and griefes. All along the border of his coate, and ſleeues, went three ribons or laces of ſundry colours, two of them on either ſide, of Lion tawney and Oliue greene, to ſignifie by the firſt his ſorrow, and by the ſecond his torment. That in the mids of his ſorrow and torment was his hope. Other things did the Shepherd weare, worthie himſelfe, and to be marked. But *Pariſiles* did hinder them, bicauſe *Crimine* returned now cleane, and waſhed at *Felicias* requeſt, whom now he alſo knew, and therefore with a loud voice, with caſting vp his eies to heauen, he ſaid. And is it true (O *Iupiter*) which with mine eies I here behold? O ſweete Nymph, my friend and miſtreſſe. Is it poſſible thou art here? If I had knowen my deere daughter had gone in thy company, I would haue ſomewhat moderated my griefe for her abſence. And being come to her, with reuerence he louingly embraced her. But both of them deſiring earneſtly

to

to know the meanes of their vnlooked for comming to that place, *Felicia* said. Defer this till further time: for I know these questions will not hereafter a little delight this companie. Come thou *Crimine*, and speake to all this companie, who will be verie glad of thine. They were a prettie while in congratulations and courtesies, wondering at *Crimines* beautie, and therefore at last thus said. Why did such a shining gemme as this (Ladie *Felicia*) goe hidden in such a base couerture: if her companion be such another, do vs this fauour to make her wash her selfe? To auoide all danger by reason of their tempting beautie (said *Felicia*) and not to be molested like those, that haue suffered many inconueniences for theirs, they haue gone thus disfigured in apparell and face. As for the washing of this yoong Shepherdesse (pointing to *Stela*) it shall remaine at my pleasure, when I will request her to doe it, for dinner being nowe readie, I will deferre it till some other time, for feare I should giue you a dinner against your stomacke, for washing nowe her fowle face and handes, will not (perhaps) make you eat so much, as otherwise you would, and make you haue a lesse appetite, then to see them in the manner that nowe they be. But if you like not of her companie at dinner, she shall sit by her selfe, and dine with *Parisiles*, in whose eies she is nothing so foule, nor ill-fauoured. And then turning to her Nymphes, she commanded them to bring in dinner, who presently came in with it. But if you please good Lady (said Lord *Felix*) command *Parisiles* first to make an end of the tale he hath begun. Since you will haue it so (said *Felicia*) I will entreat, not command him. It were great reason sage Lady (saide *Parisiles*) to hold my peace, & not to shewe so great rudenes before your singular wisedome, if it were not more to obey your iust command. It is well (saide *Felicia*) leaue off this, and do that which all the companie heere requesteth thee. *Parisiles* then began thus. Obeying then most willingly (great Lady) what you haue giuen me in charge, and purposing to tell the cause why this Oke was planted betweene these two Laurel trees, I haue touched the gifts, that *Apollo* gaue to the Laurell tree, when *Daphne* was turned into it: From whence this noble company did not suffer me to passe any further, though I alleaged some excuses to the contrary, but that I must needes from the beginning recount this transformation of *Daphne* into a Laurell tree. And so hauing told of the glorious victorie, that *Apollo* had of the serpent *Python*, and of the quarrell and contention betweene him and *Cupid* for carying both one weapon, I went on along telling, how *Apollo* being proud of this conquest, by chance cast his eies vpon the faire and chaste Nymph *Daphne*: And when you came hither good Lady with *Crimine*, you gaue a gracious impediment to my tale. So that now (since it is your pleasure) I will proceede in it, beginning onely but with a worde or two recited before, to annexe that, and this that followeth the better togither.

APollo *being in this heauenly ioy,*
For victorie by Pythons *death obtain'd,*
Lift vp by chaunce his eies, and spi'de the Nymphe
(The fairest Nymphe as euer he did see)
Whom at the first he onely did behold
With an impartiall eye (a common thing)
And onely markt her beautie, and her grace,
And with that common kinde of honest loue,
In praise of her these louing wordes did moue.

What Nymph might yonder be,
So fine with her dishieueled haire,
That in this forrest hunteth all alone?
I will goe neere to see,
If that she be indeed so faire,
As she doth seeme. Ah (Godheades) there is none
In all your heauenly throne,
No Goddesse, nor no power diuine,
With beautie, and good grace,
That nature doth imbrace,
Then this, in whom most cleerely shine
Her giftes, and chiefest art,
As many as to all she did impart.

But Cupid seeing her in such estate,
Thought it high time to punish the contempt,
And brauing words, that proud Apollo vs'd.
And now to be reuenged on his head
With more dishonor and with greater shame,
He did prepare him to assaile his foe
With those same weapons, that were threatned him:
So, with his headed shaft of beaten gold
He smot his brest, and pass'd his careless hart;
Omitting not to wound faire Daphnes to
With that of hate, headed with heauie lead.
And so with this the Boy remayned glad,
And well did see, though blind what he had done.
And thus content in minde, he did depart,
Vpon some others to imploy his might.
O blinded Boy, of strong and mightie force,
Where none is found but onely in thy hands,
That more the one with feruent loue doth burne,
The more the other freezeth with disdaine.
And proud Apollo now thou shalt perceiue,
(That think'st no equall God to thee in heauen,
Nor celebrated in the earth beneth
With such like honours, which thou clayni'st alone)
That there is one that raignes in heauen and earth,
In hell, and euerie corner of the world,
More puissant then any other God.
Bicause thou art inuentor of the skill
Of phisicke, and of musickes sweetest art;
Bicause (besides) thou tell'st with secret power,
Things that are past, and present, and to come,
Thou think'st thou raign'st alone as Soueraigne.
Now art thou subiect to a sillie maide,
Too base if she be paragon'd to thee:
And yet this greeues him not, but that the more

He

He loues this Nymph, the more doth she contemne
His mightie loue, and all his vaineſt ſuites.
Faire Daphnes hart is hardened and congealed
In loue of this great God of heauen aboue:
Apollos hart conſumes with burning heat
In loue of this poore maide in earth beneath.
The God deſireth to inioy her loue,
And after this deſire commeth hope.
But here his Oracles deceiue him much:
For in theſe things diuining is but vaine.
So with this hope, which is but vaine, and falſe,
He doth maintaine and feede his barren loue.
And feeling with great paine his burning fire,
To Cupid in this ſort he mildly ſpake:

What fire is it, that thus my breaſt doth tame,
And yet no flame, I ſee that's manifeſt?
Is this thy beſt reuenge, O Cupid tell,
Fierce God and fell, which on me thou doſt take?
Hovv doſt thou make the mightie Gods to bend,
And doſt offend the rich, the proud, and vviſe,
And doſt deſpiſe and tame the great and ſmall?
So eaſie ſhall not flixe, nor tovv be burn'd,
Nor reeds be turned to fire laid thereby,
Alas as I vvith thy reuenging games
Do burne in flames: for thou haſt made my hart
To feele the ſmart of loue, and vvith thy might
And golden flight, haſt (cruell) vvounded it.
Which thou haſt ſmit, and ſmitten, ſtolne avvay,
And made decaye of it vvithin my breſt:
Where novv no reſt, nor vvonted ioyes do dvvell.
Then cruell tell the ſame vvhere haſt thou put,
Where haſt thou ſhut my hart of ſorrovv? vvhat,
And is that, perhaps? O that it is.
And novv in this faire forreſt do they vſe,
Thus to abuſe Gods harts, and ſteale and kill?
From hence I vvill (Cupid) make thee my mate,
And friend (though late) for euer thou ſhalt be,
Since linked me thou haſt in ſuch a chaine.
Her haire doth ſtaine the golden Colchos fleece,
Which out of Greece, Iaſon ſhall ſaile to ſeeke:
Her face and cheeke enameled vvith red,
With vvhite be ſpread, paſſing the Roſes gay
In moneth of May, that dare not come in place
To ſee her face, nor yet the Lillie vvhite
Approch in ſight, vvhere her braue beautie ſhines.
Aurora pines in ſeeing her, and dyes.
Her tvvinkling eies, more then the heauenly lights

In froſtie nights doe ſhine, where Cupid *skips.*
Her rubie lips with praiſe ſhall not be vouch't,
But onely touch't and kiſt of mine againe:
Her necke ſo plaine and ſmooth, nothing doth owe
Vnto the ſnowe, for pure vnſpotted white.
What els (O ſpite) her wrongfull garments grudge
To ſhew, I iudge, that nature made each part
With ſuch braue art, as neuer humane eies
Did ſee the like, or heauenly thought deuiſe.

Whilſte God Apollo *wandreth in her praiſe,*
Daphne *with haſtie foote doth flie away.*
Which when he did perceiue, theſe wordes in vaine
(Continuing ſtill his ſpeech) to her did ſay.

O thou the skies that doſt excell, ſtay, ſtay;
Fly not away ſo faſt, thy friend I am:
So flies the lambe from rauening woolfe away,
The Hart againe, of cruell death afraid,
With hart diſmaid doth from the Lion flie;
The doues doe hie them from their praying king
With trembling wing, ſo each thing here belowe
Flies from his foe: But Loue that burnes Apollo
Doth make him follow thee with friendly pace:
O ſee each place, whereon thy feete doe tread,
With thornes beſtread, vnworthily to beare them.
The ſtones doe weare them like the ſhauing file:
Then ſtay a while, and haſte not ſo I pray.
Sharpe is the way, and I for nothing would
My following ſhould make thee (faire Nymph) to fall.
I pray thee, all I may, to moderate
Thy haſtie gate, and I with milder pace,
To ſaue thy face from hurt, will follow thee.
Oh didſt thou ſee, and know but who it is,
That mooueth his great l ue vnto thee ſo,
Thou wouldſt I knowe not flie, but tarie ſtill
To knowe my will, and thinke that thou wert bleſt
To be poſſeſt of ſuch a Lord ſo high.
I dwell not I, in this poore barren hill,
Though heere I kill wilde beaſtes for my delight:
I hold by right, as much as Tanais *ſtreames,*
And Titans *beames doe ſee, where they ariſe:*
This I deſpiſe, but onely for thy ſake,
Where thou didſt take thy beauties firſt of all.
Which countrie ſhall be reard vnto the skies
In all mens eies, vvith fame and dignitie:
And lou'd of me, more then th' Imperiall ſeate
Of heauen ſo great, from vvhence faire Nymph I came.

Neither I am a Shepherd, nor doe keepe
Cattell, or sheepe, but vvhat loue doth commend
To me to tend. In Delphos *for mine honour,*
Of vvhich the ovvnour I am, incense burnes.
Claros *by turnes, and* Tenedos *likevvise*
Burne sacrifice to me: The lands vvhich great
Xanthus *doth vveat, vvherevvith such sudden voice*
I doe reioice the harts of them, that craue
Answvers to haue by Oracle diuine.
Delphos *is mine, and famous there I am.*
Of birth I came more noble then the rest:
For (at the lest) the Gods are kinne to mee.
First in degree great Ioue *my father is,*
And she ywish that raignes in heauenly seate,
A Goddesse great (Latona) *fairer then*
Faire Titan, *when in all his chiefest pride*
Vnto his bride Aurora *he doth hast:*
By me things past, and those that present be
I know, and see, and things to come can tell:
I do excell in verse, and sweetest song:
With arme most strong I draw my bow and flight:
Where it doth light, it hits with sure wound:
Yet haue I found, that Cupids *certaine arrow*
Doth hit more narrow in my wounded breast,
Where all my rest and pleasures it hath spent.
I did inuent the art of medicine.
My wit diuine found out the secret power
Of euerie flower, and herbs whose vertues still
Vnto my skill, and practise subiect bee.
But woe is me, that neither herbe nor pill,
Nor phisickes skill to loue no ease imparts.
Nor that those arts, that profit euery one,
Cannot helpe me their master all alone.

Now running fast away betweene them both,
Daphne *to flie* Apollos *wanton vvill,*
Apollo *following chaste* Daphnes *loue,*
Loue helpe Apollo *vvith his speedy vvings,*
And vnto Daphnes *feete feare tyed her vvings.*
And both sufficient fauours haue of both,
But *loue* in fine doth ouercome pale feare,
Bicause he is more forvvard, light and hot.
But vvhen the Nymph did see her selfe surpris'd,
And that the God embrac'd her in his armes:
Lifting her hands and eies vnto the heauens,
Succour she crau'd of all th'immortall Gods,
Forgetting not her father demy God.
And in this sort besought their fauours all,

Helpe each immortall power,
For ioyntly all your helpes I do deſire,
And humbly do your fauours all inuoke:
None I except out of the heauenly quire:
O ſaue my virgine flowre:
Be readie, elſe with force it will be broke.
O let the earth deuoure,
And ſwallow me within her hidden vaines
With furious paines.
Or elſe deſtroy my ſhape with thunder clap,
Since this miſhap
It wrought. Helpe Pene now my father deere,
If deitie be in thy riuers cleere.

Scarce had faire Daphne ended her requeſt,
When by and by a trembling feare poſſeſt
Her bodie with each member of the ſame.
Hard barke did winde about her ſnow-white breſt:
Her golden haire was turned to greene leaues,
Her armes into two long and branchie boughes:
Her nimble foote, which was of late ſo light,
Faſtned remaind in rootes that could not ſtirre,
And ſuch like ſhape remaind in euerie part.
Apollo deerely lou'd this Nymph in life,
And now he loues her turn'd into a tree:
Where thruſting his right hand into the barke
Felt, that transformed Daphnes hart did yet
Tremble, and quake vnder the ſame ſo new.
He doth imbrace thoſe fine and tender boughes,
As though he would embrace her body yet,
The wood he kiſſeth, but the wood diſdaines
His kiſſes, and doth ſeeme to bend away.
So in this ſort Apollo ſtood a while
Speechleſſe, and thinking of no other thing:
After like one, that is amazed in minde,
Not knowing whether he doth dreame or no,
Vpon the Gods, and heauen he doth exclaime
With angrie wordes of pitie and deſpite;
Bicauſe they vs'd ſuch rigour to his loue.
For faine he vvould had Daphne to his vvife.
But vvhen he ſavv it could not come to paſſe,
He choſe her for his tree, and gaue to it
Great honours, as the like had neuer yet:
And in this great aſtoniſhment he ſaid.

What thing is this, vvhich I do ſee,
Is it a dreame, or none? O that it vvere
A fanſie, or ſome vaine deceite,

What, doe I erre?
Or is it night, or day, what might I be?
If it be true, I see a losse so great
With many harmes my burning soule will threat.

But yet awake I am, for in my right
Hand Python dead, and headlesse I doe beare,
And on my left arme weare
My bowe, and low my quiuer and my flight.
Why, this is Thessalie,
Which this fell beast did waste both day and night,
O woe, and after such a ioy so high,
Must such mishap my sweete content deny?

What hard and cruell God is that,
That hath transform'd with enuie and despite
Her goodly figure, and her face,
Most perfect bright?
Me thinkes, he will deserues to banquet at
The tables of the Gods, nor heauenly place,
Since he hath wronged nature in this case.

My skill and powers beare not such a sway,
To change thee to thy former shape againe:
And that snowe white,
And rosie face, which first did breede my paine:
The reason is, bicause that none
(Though neuer yet so learned any way,
And though they ioin'd their vertues all in one)
Can vndoe that, which one did doe alone.

But now since all the fates so dire,
And wicked destinies this good forbid,
That thou my louing wife should'st be:
Yet though they did
With more despite against my will conspire,
Thou shalt for euer be my louing tree,
And I will neuer cease to honour thee.

My yellow haire like shining threeds of golde,
To honour thee, thy leaues shall compasse round:
My harpe with siluer sound
Thou shalt adorne, and quiuer shalt vphold:
In all the world thy noble fame shall bide:
And when triumphantly
In honours chaire the Conquerour doth ride,
Before them they shall carry thee on high,
Lifting their conquest to the starrie skie.

And

And as my faire and youthfull head
Adorned is with lockes of dangling haires,
Whereon were neuer yet imploid
The little sheares:
Euen so thy leaues shall neuer be destroid.
And angry time thy honour shall not teare;
But euermore greene bowes and leaues shalt beare.

The lightning, that all creatures doth offend,
And euery thing of beauties pride bereaues,
Shall neuer touch thy leaues:
But be obedient to thee without end.
From lightning to defend
The okes, with them thy branches they shall reare,
And euery where
In honour of th' Imperiall palace gate,
On portals they shall place thee with great state.

This did Apollo *speake vnto the tree,*
And gratefully the Laurell bow'd her top,
In steed of mouing her new changed head:
And with her new and tender branches made
A signe, that she with thankfull minde receiu'd
These gifts and fauours, which that God did giue
To her, while Laurell on the earth did liue.

And now beholde (noble companie) how I haue fulfilled your commands, although not so fitly to your demand nor my desire. Woorthie *Parisiles* (saide Lorde *Felix*) you haue done no lesse then was expected at your hands: but yet one doubt remaineth in my minde, for what reason the Oke is better kept then any other tree, since there are of others a great number more necessarie for mans life. There is no God (answered *Parisiles*) but hath some tree, birde, beast, or other thing dedicated to his deitie: as the Oliue to *Minerua*; the Laurell to *Apollo*; the Turtle doue to *Venus*; the Peacocke to *Iuno*, and so foorth. But bicause *Iupiter* is the highest of the Gods, and the Oke is dedicated to him, for this respect, to that tree, more then to any other, we do greater reuerence. I am satisfied, saide Lord *Felix*. But tell me (I pray you) why the Oke was rather dedicated to him then any other tree. To shewe the infinite power and might of *Iupiter*, saide *Parisiles*. It is well answered (saide *Felicia*.) And for this time let demands & answers cease, and let vs go about other necessarie busines, without the which no mortall creature can any long time preserue life. The tables therefore being spred, and furnished with many daintie dishes, *Felicia* tooke *Crimine* and *Stela* by the hands, and caried them out of the meadowe to a fine spring, where *Stela* being washed, she apparelled them as richly as their woorthines and beautie deserued, for she had commanded some garments secretly to be brought thither, knowing what would ensue, and then they returned by and by to the fountaine, (for now they were tarying for her) al things being in a readines against her comming. *Felismena* & the Nymphes beauties were so ecclipsed at *Stelas* comming, as the cleere stars at the rising of the radiant Sunne, whereat all

of

of them did not a little woonder, the women, not without great emulation, procuring yet to comfort themselues, by putting some defect therein, although indeede there was not any at all, which (when they coulde finde any such) they studied to picke it else-where, as out of the basenes of her estate, or to attribute it to some other things, that they (with inquiring and talking amongst themselues) are commonly wont to helpe and flatter theirs withall. But now (saide *Felicia*) you may laugh indeed at *Parisiles* embracements, and you shall see, if we did with good cause finde fault with him for conioyning his reuerend visage with so foule a face. Then *Parisiles* rose vp, and began to embrace *Stela* a new, saying. O my daughter, now do I see thee like thy selfe, and in the habite of thine owne estate and deserts. The vnknowne Shepherd marking all this, his colour in his face went and came, not bicause hee sawe *Stela* in so braue a habite, for his affection did not augment with the brauerie, nor value of her costly garments, neither did his loue diminish with the basenes of her pastorall habite; but for the remembrance of that time, when he had seene her in like ornaments. His colour changed also for enuy of *Parisiles*, thinking that those imbracings were more proper and due to him. But *Felicia* must needes come once againe to put olde *Parisiles* and *Stela* asunder, which done, they went to dinner. To tell the maner and order of their libationes, which they made before they went to dinner, and to describe the preparation, order and diuersitie of daintie messes, as things too prolixe, I thinke best to omit.

The end of the second booke.

The third Booke of the second Part of Diana of George of Montemayor.

WHen dinner was done, all of them being very desirous to know what these Shepherdesses and the vnknowne Shepherd was, & for what cause *Parisiles* shewed himselfe so incensed against him, Lord *Felix*, for his owne desire, and at the request of his beloued *Felismena*, and the Nymphes and Shepherds, praied *Felicia* in her eare, to intreat it of them; whom *Felicia* answered, saying: By this request I might demand of them a thing which I assure you, they themselues cannot tell, for the vnknowne Shepherd, and the faire Shepherdesse knowe not who they are, howe can they then make any report of themselues? And it is not now possible for you to know the course of their liues, for they are heere in the presence of old *Parisiles*, before whom they dare not vnfold it. But yet leaue this charge to me, & I will find out some means to satisfie you heerein. I coulde tell it better then they, (better I say) touching the certaine knowledge who they are: Neuertheless I meane that you shall heare it from their owne mouthes, who can better expresse their owne affections, as those that they passed themselues. When *Felicia* had answered thus, Lord *Felix* made signes to her to speake no more of the matter for that time, whereupon all of them were content, perceiuing it was most conuenient to be so. But hauing nowe reposed themselues a little after dinner, *Felicia* saide vnto the vnknowne Shepherd. Shewe these Shepherds thy sheepe-hooke, and view it well, for it deserueth well to be seene. The Shepherd then rose vp for it, for he had laid it aside with his scrip, when he sat

downe to dinner. And giuing it to the Sepherds, and Lord *Felix* ſeeing it of a different colour, requeſted onely to ſee of what woode it was, for from a very little ſidewiſe, the principall was not deuided, which might be from the middes of the pommell vpward, which was wrought all ouer, and carued very fine, and from one ſide thereof (I ſay) this caruing was not ſeene, by reaſon of the fine workemanſhip. But when Lord *Felix* holding it in his hande, viewed the ſheepehooke well, he ſaide. Why wouldeſt thou haue the Shepherds (good Lady) onely enioy the ſight of this ſheepehooke? Bicauſe it is a thing (ſaid *Felicia*) more properly apperteining to their eſtate. And me thinkes (ſaide Lord *Felix*) it may well beſeeme a Prince his hands, though it is well enough beſtowed, where it is. If I am of any woorth amongſt ſo good a companie as this (ſaide the Shepherd) I will not gainſay you, neither is it my minde, to pay you with the ſame money, leaſt my baſe wordes might diminiſh your high deſerts. Nowe was Lord *Felix* anſwering, when *Felicia* reached foorth her hand, ſaying. Heere take it, and view it well. Then came the Shepherds *Syrenus*, and *Syluanus* to Lord *Felix*, to looke vpon the curious ſheepehooke; Which was all blacke with ſome white ſpots, and the women ſtaied to looke on it afterwardes. They varied amongſt themſelues what wood it might be, and there were diuers opinions concerning the ſame. Some of them ſaid it was the wood of *Aloës*, others of *Ebony*; and in the end concluded, that it was the roote of an *Oliſe*, which was verie like to both. Then they began to view the ſheepe-hooke well, which was of length, as much as a man of meane ſtature to the breaſt; from the part beneath to the mids of the head, and from the part aboue in the ſteele a handfull length: it was garniſhed with copper, which ſhined like gold, ſo finely laid in, and ſo euen with the wood, that if it were not for the different colour, the ſtaffe might hardly haue beene diſcerned from the metall. Then from the metall in the ſteele, without any worke, two ſtrikes went downe as broad as two barley cornes: the reſt of the pommell of the ſheepe-hooke was deuided into fower peeces in bredth, by fower pedeſtals, Baſes, Cannyons, Chaptrees, Architrees, Friſes, and Corniſhes. And yet bicauſe all reached not to the ſteele (for all the fower pillars vpheld it) vpon euerie one was a little child, holding forth his arme, and lifting vp one leg, the better to reach it with his hand, and to ſupport the ſteele of it. Betweene pillar and pillar were fower little figures verie finely wrought, ſo that there were ſixteene carued peeces in all the Pommell: But betweene euerie pillar, one onely fable was carued, belonging to ſheepe or Shepherds, bicauſe it was a hooke for a Shepherd. In the peece that was firſt offered to their ſight, was a goodly white Bull in a heard amongſt many other Buls and Cowes, a fairer Bull then all the reſt, and with white hornes (for the workman helped himſelfe by the white ſtreakes of the wood, when he had any occaſion) whereon *Europa* was putting a garland of flowers, which ſhe tooke from her owne head; the Bull lying gently, ſtanding quietly, & licking her garments, to aſſure hir the more of his gentlenes. A litle before that was ſhe ſitting vpon the Buls back, who by little and little (making as though he went feeding) roſe vp. Aboue the firſt of theſe two peeces, the Bull, turning his head, licked the Damſels handes that rodde vpon him, and pace by pace went towardes the ſea ſhore that was hard by, putting now and then his foote into the water. Aboue the ſecond figure of this firſt ſpace, the Bull leapt indeede into the ſea before him: vpon whoſe backe the Damſell ſitting with great feare, and not regarding her wette and drenched garmentes, thought good to holde faſt by his hornes, to ſaue her ſelfe from falling, turning her pitifull face (and wrinkled for feare) to the ſhore, which

ſhee

ſhee was forced to leaue. When they had behelde this peece, turning the ſheepe-hooke a little about, they ſawe in the ſecond peece of it a goodly Shepherd amongſt a flocke of ſheepe, wearing vpon his yellow lockes a bande of fine white ſilke looſe, to tie them vp on either ſide, bicauſe they might not hang downe about his eies. Whom (for that a little before he was more earneſtly, and with more brightnes beholding the Moone) they knew to be *Endimion*. In the vpper part thereof, they ſaw the ſelfeſame man lying vpon the maſſie body of a tree (cut down) and the Moone with her artes & power endeuouring to caſt him into a deepe ſleepe. The intent why ſhe had to make him ſleepe, was vnderſtoode by that which followed, for when he was aſleepe, ſhe was louingly kiſſing the faire youth. In the thirde part, or ſpace of it, was the Goddeſſe *Iuno* talking with a Shepherd that had a hundred eies, (named *Argus*) pointing with her finger to a faire white heyſer, which ſhe commanded him to keepe well, and threatning him, if he did otherwiſe. The ſame *Argus* a little farther was ſitting vpon a rocke, with his ninetie eight eies (which then watched) looking ſtedfaſtly vpon the heyfer that was cõmitted to his charge. In the vpper peece *Mercurie* was paſſing by in a ſhepherds habite, playing on a Baggepipe, who being inuited by *Argus* to ſit downe and reſt him, at the ſweetenes of his muſicke, all his eies fell aſleepe. A little before that, *Argus* being killed by *Mercurie*, he caried the heyfer away, or (to ſay more properly) *Io* transformed into a heyfer, and gaue her to *Iupiter*. In the fourth part, in *Xanthus* riuer bankes was *Alexander* engrauen, who was afterwards called *Paris*, caſting his left arme about a Nymphes necke (called *Enone*) and with his right hande caruing theſe letters in a poplar, the ſmooth barke whereof ſerued him for paper, and a ſharpe knife for pen and inke.

Firſt ſhall theſe chriſtall ſtreames their courſes backward moone,
Before I will forget my ſweete and deereſt Loue.

A little farther was the Nymph with this Shepherd amongſt the boughes of a lowe Tamariſque, deſpoyling the harmleſſe Nightingale of her deereſt pretie ones, and the ſorrowfull Dame fluttering vp and downe ouer their heads, and, for that iniurie, crying for vengeance to the impartiall heauens. In the peece aboue, *Mercurie* was ſhewing *Paris* (who from that time tooke this name) a golden apple, pointing to it with a wande in his hand, to giue it to the faireſt of thoſe three Goddeſſes that came with him. A little before this were the three Goddeſſes ſtripping themſelues naked at *Paris* command, the better to giue his iudgement, and after hauing viewed them on euery ſide, and each ones ſeuerall beautie, he gaue it to *Venus*, who remained very proud and loftie by obtayning the prize, and the other two hanging downe their heads with ſadde countenances, and angry againſt the Shepherd. In the ſteele of it diuers artificiall ſports were carued, and ſundry kindes of huntings, not to be told or written heere, to auoide tediouſnes. Although Lord *Felix*, and the Shepherdes, *Seluagia*, and the Nymphes euery one by themſelues viewed the ſheepehooke, yet *Pariſiles* would neuer take it in his hands, bicauſe it belonged to that Shepherd, whom he hated aboue al things in the worlde. After they had ſeene and marked the ſheepehooke well, and commended the fine workemanſhip and deuiſes of it, *Syrenus* asked the Shepherd, if he himſelfe had made it. The Shepherd anſwered no, nor knew by whom it was made, but onely him, that gaue it him. It ſeemed he meant thee no ill (ſaid *Syrenus*) when he gaue thee ſo rich a gift as this. Nay rather (ſaid *Crimine*) he that gaue it him, was euen then, and yet is the moſt mortall

enimie he hath, and gaue it him to as cruell an intent and purpoſe, as was euer heard of, bicauſe it might haue beene the meanes to haue brought this Shepherd to a violent and vntimely death, as it hath beene the occaſion not onely of his baniſhment and ours, but alſo of the cruell impriſonment of his deereſt friend. At theſe words the Shepherd *Stela*, and *Crimine* could not hold their teares, whereupon they would aske them no more of that matter. But *Felicia* ſaide. I knowe my friend *Pariſiles*, that it greeues this yoong people, that you and I are heere, who hauing reſpect and reuerence to our age, cannot conuerſe togither with ſuch diſcourſes as are moſt agreeable to their mindes, and common amongſt yoong folkes: Let vs therefore giue them place, if you thinke it beſt, and go and talke togither, for our paſtimes ſhall be no leſſe delightfull vnto vs then theirs to them. But bicauſe they are a ſuſpicious kinde of people, *Stela* and *Crimine* ſhall go with vs. They laughed all at theſe laſt words, and then without more adoe, *Felicia*, and they three went walking out of that meadow. But as they were going (being a little way from the fountaine, where moſt of the company was) *Felicia* ſaide to them that went with her. Staie heere a little, for I haue forgotten to warne them of one thing: wherefore being come backe to the fountaine, ſhe ſaide to the vnknowne Shepherd. Since I haue to talke with *Pariſiles* about a matter concerning thee, thy friend, and the content of you all, my departure from hence is to withdrawe *Pariſiles*, *Crimine*, and *Stela* from this place, bicauſe thou maiſt the better report to them that ſtaie heere with thee, who thou art, or (at the leaſt) as much as thou knoweſt of thy ſelfe, & why, and how thou didſt bring ſo good cõpanie with thee; for as they greatly deſire to heare it, ſo ſhall I thinke thou doſt much for me, if thou wilt affoord me and them this content. When ſhe had ſaid thus, ſhe went backe againe to her companie, which ſhe left ſtaying for her, with whom ſhe walked to a ſecret place, where ſitting downe, ſhe ſaide. Sit downe *Pariſiles*, and daughters forbeare vs a little, or elſe go walke vp and downe there, for I will not haue you beare witnes of the loue that I haue to impart to *Pariſiles*. They two therefore remaining all alone, *Felicia* told him all that heereafter ſhall be rehearſed, and that he ſhould not take it in ill part, that his daughter went in the Shepherds companie; for ſuch an one he was, by whom nothing ſhould be loſt, and the rather, ſince he had entertained her, and her loue with the greateſt puritie, and ſinceritie in the worlde. And that he ſhoulde expect, that all things ſhould ſucceede by a preordinate courſe from the Gods, which we cannot attaine to (ſaide ſhe) in bare conceite, conſidering that they for the moſt part giue to thoſe whom they loue, wiſhed eaſe and content, when they thinke themſelues fartheſt from it. Theſe and many other things did ſhe diſcourſe with him. But the vnknown Shepherd, that ſtaied in the companie of Lord *Felix*, *Feliſmena*, the Nymphes, and the Shepherdes (*Felicia* being gone) began thus to ſaie.

TOuching the firſt thing you demaund of me (noble Lord, and the reſt) to tell you who I am, I know not how to reſolue you therin, for that not many yeeres ſince I knew theſe parts (my parents not being thoſe whom I tooke them to be) and with deſire to know who they were, I came with a certaine friend of mine (the halfe part of mine owne ſoule) out of our ſuppoſed owne countrey. The Gods made him and me not onely in body, face, and condition, but in fortune, and maner of life ſo like, that it might be ſaid, they gaue vs two ſoules for one bodie, or two bodies for one ſoule: and ſo he knoweth no more nor leſſe then my ſelfe, who his father or mother is. We beleeued we were brethren, but that in diſtinct places, & with different perſons

persons we were brought vp: I, with a yoong and courteous Shepherd; he, with an old and reuerend Shepherdesse. I (who am called *Delicius*) was brought vp in a little village in *Tinacria*, in the corner called *Pachinus*, and in the house of a Shepherd (called *Carpostus*) my friend (whose name is *Parthenius*) in another village in the second corner of one of the three which that Iland hath (called *Pelorus*) in the house of another Shepherd called *Sarcordus*. From this base estate fortune lifted vs vp on high, wherein we liued a while: but bicause you may heare the braue and strange meanes, whereby our good or ill hap did guide vs to it, I will now tell it you, wherein I must aduise you to carrie the names of my deere friend and mine in memorie, as also of our nurses, if you will delight you with the rare accident. It happend that *Carpostus* my nurse (I being then but three yeeres old) went about certaine busines to the place where my *Parthenius* was nursed, who seeing him play with other children in the street, stood halfe amazed, thinking it was I (so like were we to one another) and that from out some Cannon I had beene shot into that place: but yet he marueled more, when the child (after he was come to him, & had kissed him against his will) with his weake forces endeuored to winde himselfe from him. At the crie that *Parthenius* gaue, his nurse came out, and with sharpe wordes blamed *Carpostus*, who not so patiently endured her, but that he had offered (had it not beene for some of the townesmen which came running out at that noyse) to haue rudely intreated her. But he still affirmed obstinately that it was his child, and made such adoe about it, that of all of them there he was reputed for a man out of his wits. In the end *Carpostus* held his peace, seeing it was no point of wisedome to be opposite against the whole towne, who affirmed with one voice, that it was the child of that woman: and seeing moreouer, that the child ranne away from him (which more perswaded him to the contrarie of that, which he thought in his minde) he was content to be quiet. But the more he viewed the childes face, handes, qualities, gesture, age, and stature, the more he found himselfe incredulous: And so much, that he could not otherwise thinke, but that the woman had bewitched them al, or that he was surely in a dream. To be briefe, he returned as soone (as he could) to his owne towne in great feare and doubt not to haue found me there. But the ioy, that he conceiued in seeing me (when he came home) and with what a glad countenance I ranne vnto him, as I was wont to doe, made no lesse alteration in his minde: the which my nurse *Carpostus* perceiuing, with a moderate laughter said vnto me. It is not long since (my childe) thou didst denie me: for children & sons our nurses called vs, requested by them so to do, that did first put vs to them to be brought vp. And comming to his wife, he asked her if I had beene at any time from home since his departure, who answered no, but some little while, when I went to play with other children abroad. But why said she? *Carpostus* then told her all that had happened, at which strange noueltie she wondred not a little, and more when he told her of the great resemblance of vs both. And who would indeed haue laughed hartily at the deceite, but that her husband grew verie pensiue and sad: which she considering well with her selfe, asked him if any other thing had happened vnto him, or what the matter was; for if it were no more but that, he might haue greater cause to be glad (she said) then sorrie. *Carpostus* answered, that he had made so great adoe in the towne, affirming it was his childe, that they might iustly iudge him for a senceleſſe and drunken foole. After my nurse *Calasta* (for so she was called, who was euer accounted suttle and wise) had thought a little vpon the matter, she resolued vpon this which you shall now heare. And thus it was. My nurse *Carpostus* and his wife carried me closely (bicause

I might not beé ſeene) to the towne where *Parthenius* was brought vp, where, being verie priuately kept, and *Calaſta* tarying with me ſecretly at the Inne, *Carpoſtus* went againe to ſeeke out little *Parthenius*, and hauing founde him, beganne to wrangle as before, affirming ſtill it was his ſonne, and that hee woulde prooue it before the beſt in the towne, or anie Iuſtice elſe, when as moſt of the townef-men (that had flocked togither to ſee his madnes the other time before) were laughing againe at his headleſſe folly, that nowe yet another time hee ſtoode ſtiffely in his former errour: who neuertheleſſe tooke away the childe *Parthenius*, and (for all that they could do to the contrarie) running as faſt as euer he could, caried him home to the Inne. It was woorthie the ſight, to ſee how he caried the childe, that cried out amaine, and how the people ranne after him, fearing leaſt (like a frantike man) he would haue done it ſome harme. The bruite whereof being ſpred abroad, *Sarcordus*, nurſe vnto *Parthenius*, ranne vp and downe in a great heate to ſeeke *Carpoſtus* out, fearing leaſt ſome harme might befall to his little childe. And hauing quickly found him in talke with other people in the ſtreet, (for by this time he had left the childe priuily with *Calaſta* and me) he woulde faine haue had a blowe or two with him; but that the diſſuaſions of his neighbours ſtaied his vnbrideled furie, as alſo for the gentle and milde words that *Carpoſtus* gaue him: who knowing him to be his father (father he called him, for he knew him for none other) ſaide thus vnto him. Good-man of the childe, whether he be thine (as thou ſuppoſeſt) or mine (as I certainly know it) feare not, but that he is well enough, and without any harme at all. To returne him backe to thee, ſhall be as we can either of vs make our beſt proofe before the iudge: So that if the childe be thine, heere am I, that will reſtore him as ſafe and ſound as I tooke him away; if he ſhall be iudged to be mine (whereof I doubt not) thou needeſt not care for his ſafetie, (if thou doſt not meane (at the leaſt) to care for other mens matters.) Theſe wordes of *Carpoſtus* liked all the townefmen well, not bicauſe they doubted one whit of the wrong, that he offered the other, but to heare his reaſons, which he grounded vpon a thing ſo much without reaſon. For proofe whereof much people flocked togither with either of them in preſence of the Iuſtices, before whom *Carpoſtus* being come, in this ſort began to ſpeake.

As I am aſſured (graue Iudges) before my cauſe ſhall be fully iuſtified before you, that you will take me for a man depriued of my wits, (you being informed perhaps by mine aduerſarie to the contrarie of my demande, and by the townefmen of of this preſent accident) by wilfully oppugning a thing cleerer (as you thinke) then noone day: So when my manifeſt right is but with indifferent iuſtice ratified before your impartiall eares, I doubt not, but his falſe ſuppoſall ſhall be vtterly condemned, and my iuſt demaund apparantly prooued. Whereupon (bicauſe the matter may be more rightly ſcanned and determined) reuerend Iudges you muſt know, that a fewe daies ſince I was depriued (to ſpeake more modeſtly) of a little ſonne, and (thinking leaſt of all of ſuch a wickednes, as the thing to be moſt ſtrange) hauing not long before left him in my houſe at my departure, and comming hither with all the haſte I could, found him vnawares in this towne playing with other children in the ſtreete, onely referring it to your tender conſideration (that haue louing children) what I might iuſtly feele, when leauing him (as I ſaide) at home a little before, I founde him on the ſudden in ſo diſtant a place: whereupon (as I did but the part of a louing father) by taking him away, ſo was I iudged of all men to be a madde and ſenceleſſe man. Seeing my ſelfe mocked and iniured by them for demanding mine owne,

owne, I diſſembled the matter for that time, bicauſe I would not be ſuch an one indeede, by wilfully reſiſting a whole towne: But nowe with witneſſes I come to defend my cauſe, which accuſtomed proof, if perhaps you wil not allow, as inſufficient, or call their ſinceritie in ſuſpicion of my ſuppoſed right, for better prooſe and teſtimonie thereof, I meane (by your permiſſion) to make my claime in ſuch ſort, as ſhall beſt pleaſe mine aduerſarie; whereby I thinke not onely to conuict him, but alſo to make the ſtanders by beleeue, their opinions to be as falſe, as their words iniurious, that they haue vniuſtly conceiued and vttered againſt me: So that, command mine aduerſarie (moſt right full Iudges) to chooſe out ſome way or other to try the truth, if yet (at the leaſt) he claimeth this childe in controuerſie to be his ſonne. To this *Sarcordus* anſwered thus. The matter brought heere before you (moſt reuerend and iuſt Iudges) being accounted of all moſt bad of it ſelfe & moſt vntrue, I thinke ſo farre vnfit (for the high reſpect due vnto you) to trouble your graue eares withall, that were it not by the diſſuaſion of my friends, but eſpecially by the due regarde of iuſtice (wherein he falſely claimes to haue the onely title) and by maintaining of the kings inuiolate peace (whereof I am a member) this controuerſie had beene (without troubling you) long ſince decided. But ſince for iuſtice he cals and cries, which (though ſuppoſed) is not woont to be denied any here, I was content to condeſcend to his owne requeſt, aſſuredly knowing when by your graue cenſures the matter ſhal be thorowly ſcanned, to ouercome him with his owne weapons. All which conſidered, you muſt either iudge this man a very foole in that he ſpeakes (and as I meane to prooue him no leſſe) or elſe thinke, that he comes to importune and mocke you, procuring you come to iudgement of a matter cleerer then the brighteſt light. But bicauſe his impudencie may be thorowly knowen, and that you may inflict due puniſhment vpon him for it, Commaund him, I beſeech you, to bring hither the childe, which with the teſtimonie of all the towne I will prooue to be mine. If this prooſe be ſufficient (ſaid *Carpoſtus* interrupting him) I will alſo prooue it by the vniforme voice of all my towne to be as well mine. Why then graue Iudges (ſaid *Sarcordus*) we will no longer deraine you heere about this matter. Let the childe be brought and ſet betweene vs both, and let him be deemed the right Father to whom it will goe. *Carpoſtus* (for that was the thing he moſt of all deſired) immediately anſwered. Beare witnes all good people what he ſaith. And depriue him (graue Iudges) of a Sonne, whom the childe ſhall forſake, and let not the offender & condemned perſon eſcape vnpuniſhed: he, for his theft committed; me, for my folly & ſhame that is ſpread abroad of me. When hee had ſpoken theſe wordes, he turned him about to a boy that he brought with him on purpoſe, and ſaid vnto him. Run to the Inne and bring the child hither, who brought me ſtraight waies thither, leauing *Parthenius* ſtill in the Inne, whoſe coats I did then weare, for *Calaſta* my nurce had taken off his to put them vpon me, and in chaunge of them, had put mine vpon him. But now when I was come neere, the people made way, *Sarcordus* ſtanding on the one ſide, and *Carpoſtus* on the other. Then the boy that carried me in his armes, brought me in ſight of them both, and I with a merrie countenance (being called by the name of louing ſonne) ran to my Father, not turning ſo much as mine eies to *Sarcordus*, who was with great griefe & anguiſh of minde calling in vaine vpon me. This being done to the great wonder of all the towne (for there was none there that durſt not haue laid his head, but that I was *Parthenius*) *Carpoſtus* tooke me vp and ſet me neere to *Sarcordus* (himſelfe going away) but I ranne by and by after him, making no account at all of *Sarcordus*. At this ſight, as they were all aſtoniſhed, ſo were they

not

not able to ſay any thing els, but that *Carpoſtus* had bewitched me, and therefore took him for ſom cõiurer & wicked perſon. But firſt they brought *Sarcordus* his wife to ſee if I would ſeeme to faune more on her (being (as they thought) mother vnto me) then on him, of whom (to be ſhort) I made no more account then of *Sarcordus*. Wherefore *Carpoſtus* ſaid vnto *Sarcordus* and all the ſtanders by. Why men of ſence and reaſon dote you thus? Be aſſured the child knowes his owne Father well enough. Commaund him therefore (I beſeech you righteous Iudges) to offer no violence to me for carrying away what is mine owne. The Iudges not knowing what to determine in ſo doubtfull a caſe, *Carpoſtus* ſaid. I know not (graue Iudges) why in a matter ſo manifeſt as this, you ſhould ſuſpend your iuſt iudgment, but that without delay you ſhould proceed to definitiue ſentence, vnles you ſeem to make any more doubt herein, which if you doe, I will cleere it, if it pleaſe you to ſend the child backe againe to my lodging by this boy, who ſhall incontinently returne with him againe; for whom I will in the meane time remaine heere a pledge, bicauſe it ſhall not be ſaide, that I tooke poſſeſſion of him before ſentence giuen. That being graunted him, he willed the boy that brought me (but ſecretly in his eare) to carrie me backe, and to bring the other childe, not forgetting to put on his owne coats, who did it incontinently, and hauing brought *Parthenius* there before them all, without any more adoe, he ranne to his Father *Sarcordus*, and to his knowen nurſe *Sarcordus* wife. The Iudges ſeeing ſo ſtrange an alteration, and thinking he did what he liſted with the child (for they tooke me and *Parthenius* to be both one) commaunded to lay hands on him for a notable Sorcerer. To whom *Carpoſtus* (ſeeing whereabout they went) ſaid. Though here I am (worthie Iudges) at your diſpoſition and commaund, yet do me this fauour (I beſeech you) to ſuſpend your doome, vntill you ſee the end of this matter; it may be you will delight your ſelues with the conueiance & rare ſequele of it. And then he bad the boy carrie back the child, commaunding him ſoftly in his eare to bring me and the other childe backe againe, but both naked. And this he deuiſed, becauſe *Parthenius* might not be knowen by his coats. But before we cam, he requeſted the Iudges to command *Sarcordus* & his wife to go aſide, or to put themſelues amongſt the preaſe of the people, ſo that the child, when he was com might not ſee them. They did ſo, & behold we were both broght naked thither, and playing togither, at the ſight whereof the ſtanders by maruelled verie much, and they that came to behold the fame of that which was paſt, wondring yet a great deale more; and others, that came after vs in the ſtreetes, looking vpon one another in ſigne of admiration ſpake not a word, but opened their hands, and ſometimes lifted vp their eies to heauen in token of great wonder & admiration. Then with a loud voice *Carpoſtus* (before we came) ſpake thus. One of theſe children is mine, the other is *Sarcordus* his. Let him therefore take his owne. But bicauſe the child by ſeeing him, may not know him, let him come to claime him behinde the people, and I will alſo hide me heere. *Sarcordus* being therefore come in manner aforeſaide, and not able to diſcerne which was his, my nurſe ſaide. Now do you ſee (graue Iudges and good people aſſembled to behold the ende of this debate) howe I haue this day (to delight you with a rare noueltie) preſented before your eies the ſtrangeſt wonder in the world, bicauſe you might not woonder at me, nor repute me for ſuch a foole, as you haue taken me, for that which theſe fewe daies paſt I haue done with *Parthenius*, beleeuing he was my ſonne, and bicauſe you might ſee, whether I had iuſt cauſe to claime him with aſſurednes for mine owne or not. They were all paſſing glad to ſee this ſtrange concluſion, and tooke him for a very wiſe man, in that he had ſo well

contriued

contriued the matter to ſaue his credit: And with great reaſon (ſaide Lord *Felix*) though all was done (in my opinion) by *Calaſtas* counſell, albeit I cannot alſo otherwiſe thinke, but that *Carpoſtus* was very wiſe by knowing how to gouerne himſelfe ſo well againſt the whole towne. When he had ſaide thus, *Delicius* proceeded in his diſcourſe ſaying. They put on our garments againe, and to giue either their owne, was no leſſe variance, and as great difficultie as before; for if we of our ſelues had not made our ſelues knowne to our nurſes (either of vs going to his owne) we might haue both gone naked home againe. But from that time we entred both into ſuch a mutuall league of amitie, that by no meanes they coulde part vs aſunder: for if one were but abſent from the other, the one preſently asked for the other; ſo much force had one God (I knowe not) that reigned in vs, ouer each others ſoule, diuining the great and inuiolable friendſhip that ſhould be betweene him and me. I feare me (noble Sir, and the reſt) that you would a good while ſince haue asked me what was become of my deere brother *Parthenius* (for ſo we euer called one another) and other queſtions that you haue left of, not to interrupt mee in my tale. *Delicius* would haue paſſed on farther, but his falling teares would not permit him. Wherefore *Cynthia* came to him, ſaying. Drie vp thy teares (Shepherd) and tell on thy tale, for by doing this, thou ſheweſt the ſmall confidence and hope thou haſt in my Lady *Felicias* helpe, whereas I my ſelfe haue alſo diuers times tolde thee before that thy ſorrowes ſhall be remedied. *Delicius* then wiping his eies, ſaide. Thou telleſt me (O Nymph) by that which I ſhew, the ſmall truſt I haue in *Felicia*; but I tell thee, that by thy ſpeech, thou doſt manifeſt how little thou art acquainted with my greefe, and how leſſe thou knoweſt of like paſſions, to which knowledge I wiſh thou maieſt neuer attaine, ſince ignorance in ſuch matters is much more expedient. I could tell thee much about theſe effects, if I thought not to offende this woorthie companie: but onely one word I will tell thee. *That hope doth not pardon the puniſhment, although it doth lighten it a little.* But thou ſeemeſt Shepherde (ſaide *Polydora*) to know the very ſecrets of our harts, bicauſe (as thou haſt tolde true touching the deſire we had to know what was become of thy deere brother) thou didſt chaunce to ſay, that we would not giue thee leaue for anſwers and replies: wherefore diſſembling thy greefe for a while, tell out the reſt as thou haſt begun. With a good will, ſaide *Delicius*. But let it not greeue you (woorthie perſonages) if you heare not now of my beloued brother, conſidering, that the great greefe which I ſuffer for him, muſt nowe ſuffice, and that the proceſſe of my hiſtorie ſhall in conuenient place declare it amplie vnto you; and if not ſo, at ſome other time you ſhall know it, when you ſhall ſee what great reaſon I haue to ſolemnize ſuch a memory with theſe and many more teares. The fame of this ſtrange accident (I told you of) and of our great likenes within a fewe daies after came to the eares of old *Symiſtius*, gouernour of the kingdome where we were borne, who was placed there by *Rotindus* king of *Eolia*, for the which cauſe *Symiſtius* commanding, that wee ſhoulde be brought vnto him (as well for our great likenes, as for the great beautie which we were reported to haue when we were children) tooke vs from our fathers, and not long after ſent vs to *Rotindus*, who alſo hearing that rare report, which fame had blowen abroad of vs, ſent for vs to keepe *Agenestor* his nephew companie, to whom he was Grandfather by the mothers ſide, being then but one yeere yoonger then vs both. As it was ſtrange to ſee what intenſiue loue euery one did beare vs, ſo were the vnſpeakable fauours and affection, which the yoong prince *Agenestor* ſhewed vs, ſo great, that needes we muſt (to content him) lie altogither in one chamber; for whoſe ſake, like

his

his owne perſon we were vſed and entreated. The which redounding to the great aduantage of *Carpoſtus* and *Sarcordus* our nurſes, who were then thought to be our fathers, the king and the yoong prince beſtowed on them ſuch fauours, that well they might haue left their eſtate, if their baſe condition and nature woulde haue giuen them leaue to doe it. But as fewe doe leaue of to bee anſwerable to their beginning, they would not bee accounted amongſt thoſe fewe, thinking themſelues happie enough, to haue clymbed one ſteppe (in wealth at the leaſt) higher then their aunceſtours. *But as proſperitie (whether it bee in goods acquired by friendely Fortune, or by ones proper induſtrie) is alwaies accompanied with enuie:* And that perhappes (nay which is moſt certaine) it pleaſed our Fortune to conduct vs to that, whereunto our ſtarres had appoſnted vs, there wanted not diuers that ſaide, that *Parthenius* and I were not ſonnes of theſe Shepherdes, but onely brought vp by them, though none could tell yet who were our fathers. And in truth many there were that hardly beleeued all that was talked of vs abroad, bicauſe (in regard of the great affection they bare vs) they iudged our beautious features, and gentle inclinations to differ farre from Shepherdes mouldes and diſpoſitions. It troubled our harts with no meane ſorrowe, when we knewe wee were not ſonnes to them, whoſe wee were euer thought to bee: ſo that from our childhoode to this hower, with theſe painfull thoughts and deſires, to knowe who were our owne Fathers, wee haue beene in minde euer troubled. *Parthenius* therefore and I being fully ſixteene yeeres olde, and knowing the foreſaide men not to be our Fathers, wee went to them to bee better informed, what they were: who could tell vs no more, then that a yoong and iolly Shepherd (as you heard before) had put me to *Carpoſtus* to be ſecretly nurſed; & that a reuerēd old Shepherdeſſe had left *Parthenius* with *Sarcordus*, telling vs the markes of the Shepherdeſſe, and *Carpoſtus* of the Shepherd; and that both of them had paid them well before, for our ſeuerall education, and had afterwards giuen them certaine lambes, willing them, becauſe they were to trauell a long iourney to keepe vs till their returne. All this we knew by each of themſelues, for the one (before their late contention) did neuer know the other. The concordant tales of our nurſes, and that theſe matters paſſed at one time would haue giuen vs ſome cauſe of imagination, that we were both brethren, if they had not giuen vs to diuers perſons to be brought vp: for it cannot be thought, that we are the Shepherds and the old womans ſonnes, who were ſo different in beautie and age; & the rather, that *Parthenius*, when the old woman brought him to be nurſed, was but new borne. But we inquiring of our nurſes, if they could tell vs any thing elſe of them, *Sarcordus* ſaid no. And that he had neuer ſeene nor heard of the old woman, ſince ſhe left the lambes with them. *Carpoſtus* my nurſe ſaid, that two yeers, after that we were with the Prince *Ageneſtor*, the Shepherd that brought me to him to be nurſed, came that way to knowe ſome newes of me; who tolde him what had paſſed, and how intirely the Prince loued vs, thinking hee had pleaſed him well by telling him ſuch newes, when the Shepherd rather ſeemed to be little or nothing content therewith, bicauſe ſometimes he made as though he liked of it, and ſometimes to be ſadde for it. Theſe words of my nurſe made me to maruell, and filled my head with care and perplexitie, when I heard that a Shepherde with ſuch diſlike ſhould contemne my proſperitie, and that he would not come to ſee me, my ſelfe being then able (if he had been my Father as *Carpoſtus* beleeued) to haue placed him in as high eſtate, as with reaſon he could haue deſired; & if he had not bin, yet the care that he had to bring me vp, I might haue fully gratified. And it

greeues

greeues me no leſſe (ſaid Lord *Felix*) that I know not the cauſe, why he deſpiſed, or (at the leaſt) made ſo ſmal account of thy eſtate, which by greater reaſon muſt needs greeue thee the more, bicauſe the matter doth ſo neerely touch thee. Alas ſaid *Delicius*, I know not what to ſay, but that all the daies of my life I muſt liue in ſorrow & greefe, vnleſſe to the knowledge of that, which my very ſoule deſires, I may at the laſt attaine. But now returning with theſe cares to *Eolia*, on a day wee proſtrated our ſelues before king *Rotyndus*, and the noble prince his ſonne, & asked them leaue to go ſeeke out our parents, or (at the leaſt) to harken after thē, that did put vs to our nurſes, promiſing (as we were bound) not onely with all ſpeede to returne, but in all dutifull manner to ſerue them againe for the many fauours that we had receiued at their Princely hands: alledging and laying before their eies, how ill it became vs to liue in ioy and proſperitie, and our Fathers (perhaps) in miſerie and pouertie. At our requeſt king *Rotyndus* was not a little greeued, knowing how much the yoong prince loued vs, who without compariſon (after he knew it) felt it more ſenſible, though in the end ſeeing our demaund to be iuſt and holie, with much adoe they granted vs leaue to depart: which when ſo vnwillingly we had obtained, we went likewiſe to demand it of Queene *Agenesta*, whom (in regard of her high & princely deſerts, deriued from a rare and ſingular wiſedome that iuſtly challenged ſuch loue and dutie) we not onely obeied as our gracious Soueraigne, but for thoſe vnſpeakable fauours, which continually ſhe beſtowed vpon vs, loued and honored her as our naturall and deereſt mother. The fame of our departure, & the end thereof was ſpred ouer all the citie, which (though it greeued ſome, yet it made (as we could not otherwiſe thinke) all thoſe that burned with enuie to ſee vs being but ſtrangers in ſo great fauor) not a little glad to heare of it. Amongſt the noble yoong Gentlemen, many there were that offered themſelues to accompanie vs, though of them all we woulde not let any, but one (called *Martandrus*) who with the like errand as we did, went to ſeeke out a friend of his, and the chieſeſt Gentleman in all that kingdome (called *Diſteus*) and his wife *Dardanea*, who (to auoide the kings diſpleaſure, as was reported) by a voluntarie exile had bin long ſince abſent. *Martandrus* therefore this friend of ours went onely away with vs, who thinking to ſpeede better in our affaires, if we went aſunder, each one of vs (to ſeek out by himſelfe his own aduenture) agreed to go his ſeuerall way: So that vpon this concluſion he departed from our companie. But as *Parthenius* and I were about to do the ſame, the highe and mutuall loue betweene vs would not let vs put it in practiſe, for ſo much was the will of one tied to the affection of the other, that in two bodies was but one & ſelfe ſame ſoule. A few daies after, not trauelling any certaine way, we found our ſelues on a day within a goodly forreſt, in that part of famous *Portugall*, where ſwift *Duerus* beginnes to mingle his chriſtalline waters with the ſea, and as we thought to reſt vs there a little to auoide the force of the Sunne, which being mounted to the middle point vrged vs thereunto, we heard (to our thinking) a womans voice ſo ſweetely ſinging, that (like ſenceleſſe things) it amazed vs, not able to ſpeake a worde, but onely to liſt vp our eie-lids, and moue our heads in token of great admiration, wherewith this diuine ſong had ſtroken vs. Liſtening to that which was ſung, we vnderſtoode it was in the praiſe of chaſtitie. But now bicauſe I thinke I ſhall be too tedious, I will till ſome other time, leaue off my commenced hiſtorie. All the Nymphes with one voice requeſted him to proceed, and (if he remembred it) to rehearſe vnto them the ſong, bicauſe they knew not how to ſpend the time better whileſt ſage *Felicia* came. Bicauſe I will not ſeeme diſcurteous (ſaide *Delicius*) in ſo noble and woorthie a companie,

panie, I will tell you what the ſong was, and whatſoeuer elſe you ſhall commaunde me, ſince ſuch an one did ſing it, whom I ſhall neuer forget, nor the ſong it ſelfe, while I haue either life or memorie.

IF to my muſickes skill
Apollo *might his praiſes all reſigne,*
And if (vnto my will)
My ſpeech were ſo diuine,
That Mercurie *for greefe thereat might pine.*

And if that eloquence
So famous of Minerua *ſweete, did ſeeme yet*
But rude irreuerence
To mine, and each one deeme it
But harſh, and plac't with mine, but baſe eſteeme it.

And if I were adorn'd
With hundred mouthes of iron, and like wit,
Or if I had bene borne
With Dimond toongs (admit)
Or ſawe my ſelfe in euery part ſo fit:

The ruine, nor the fall
Of thoſe, whom Ioue *from ſcaled heauen did throwe,*
Nor that great floud, when all
The drowned world did flowe,
I would not tell, nor time in them beſtowe.

Onely by me thy praiſe
(O Chaſtitie*) with honour ſhould be told:*
And with thy heauenly waies
I would no leſſe vnfold
Thoſe goodly partes, that thou doſt ſtill vphold.

Thou art a weeder out
Of vices, from the place of vertues graine:
And thou doſt go about
Our honours to maintaine,
And doſt our ſoules from cancred vice reſtraine.

The onely way and ſigne
Thou art, that doth the ſoule to vertue leade,
A captaine moſt diuine,
That vnder foote doſt tread
Thy foes: Thy fort and tower no force doe dread.

Foule leacherie doth kill
Reaſon, if that it conquered hath the ſame,

And

And captiue to her will
Doth make it (to her ſhame:)
So to the maid the Miſtreſſe ſubiect came.

Thou chaſtitie doſt free
Reaſon (if to thy gate ſhe bend her pace)
In more ſupreme degree:
And ſhe in euery place
Is onely free, that doth thy lawe imbrace.

The ſoule with ſweeteſt balme
Thou filleſt, and the ſenſes doſt refine,
And therewithall, the palme
Of beautie moſt diuine
Thy figure beares, where brauely it doth ſhine.

The vaine thoughts of the minde,
Which reaſon cannot with her counſell tame,
Nor friendly diſcipline,
Thy wiſedome doth reclame:
And apt to each good art the ſoule doſt frame.

Being ſincere, and pure,
Thou ioineſt vs to things pure, and ſincere,
And ſo thou doſt aſſure
Thoſe, that thy robe doe weare,
Friends vnto God, a conſcience free from feare.

In vaine I heere doe waſte
Theſe wordes, wherewith thy praiſes I pretend:
Better it were (at laſt)
In action to commend
Thee, then with words; And ſo I make an end.

Hauing made an end of her ſweete ſong, & perceiuing that ſhe came not againe, we roſe vp ſoftly to ſee, who had ſo much ioyed the Foreſt, filling it with ſo ſweete harmonie. But caſting our eies to the place from whence the delicate voice came, a ſudden noyſe and ruſhing of the riuer waters hard by, made vs ſuddenly looke that way. The cauſe whereof was the paſſage of a moſt fierce Shepherd that in great haſte came wading thorow the riuer. He was of ſtature ſo huge and high that no common tall man might reach with his head aboue his middle, to whoſe high and maine growth each lim of his bodie was proportionablie correſpondent. In euerie part he was ſo hairie, that the skinne of his bodie might hardly haue beene diſcerned, if the haire (like to the briſtles of wild Boares) had not growen right forth. His eies were terrible to behold, and full of foggie fleſh; his wearing of wilde beaſtes skinnes (from whom he rent & tooke them) was ſodden hard for his defence againſt their ſharpe teeth; his ſleeues came no further on his armes, then almoſt to his elbowes, and his hoſe but a little beneath his knees. On his head he ware a broad

Shell of a ſea Tortuſe, which ſerued him for his morion. His ſcrip, that hung downe behind his ſhoulders, was made of a wild goates skinne. Almoſt a whole Pine tree, (big enough for the maſt of ſome tall ſhip) ſerued him for his ſheepe-hooke; the end whereof was poynted with ſharpe and tempered ſteele. The cauſe of his paſſing thorow the riuer in ſuch haſte, was to follow (as we afterwards perceiued) a certaine Damſell, which was ſinging the ſong (which you haue heard) on the other ſide of the riuer. Whoſe faire ſight filled vs with no leſſe wonder, then the fierce ſhew of the huge and monſtrous Shepherd with a pale and ſhiuering feare. As ſoone as the faire virgin had ſet eie on *Gorphoroſt* (for ſo was this deformed fellow called) with incredible ſwiftnes ſhe began to flie away, and comming to paſſe neere vnto the place where we were, we iudged her to be ſome Nymph, reſembling in face like a faire boy, or a boy transformed in countenance like to a faire Nymph: for her habit was not altogither manlike, nor in euerie point apparelled like a woman. Her diſſhiueled haire (in brightnes ſurmounting the fine Arabian gold) in curled lockes hung dangling about her ſnow-white forehead; and from the middes of her head (which with a crowne of Laurell and ſweete coloured flowers was graced) in faire and loc[illegible]treſſes hung careleſly downe. The which being ſpread abroade vpon her euen ſhoulders, and with a ſweete ſight falling downe beneath her fine waſte, were gathered vp by the ſaid Laurell crowne, bicauſe they might not hide ſuch ſingular beautie, nor hinder the light of her radiant eies. On her bodie ſhe wore a fine little doublet of a moſt perfect purple tynſell (the like I thinke not to be imagined) the ſame being richly died, and wouen as curiouſly as art could deuiſe, and ſo fit for her ſightly bodie, that it ſeemed, it was endowed with vnderſtanding, deſiring by no meanes to be ſeuered from it; the which at her faire and ſmooth necke (for ſome greater reſpect) was ſomewhat careleſly looſe. The purple colour of this little doublet with the glimmering beames of her ſnow-white face reflecting vpon it, was repreſented with ſuch a heauenly grace, like to that orient bluſh, which a crimſon vale (pearced by the Sunne bright beames) is wont to caſt vpon ſome white Palace. A little wind gathered by the ſpeede of her ſwift running, faſhioned a delicate lap of the ſame colour of the doublet: the white and azure border whereof came downe but a little beneath the calfe of her fine legge, whem, but halfe a light greene buſquin, wrought all before with flowers of golde, was diſcouered to our dazeled eies, with certaine *Scarpines* or ſhooes (ſuch as *Mercurie* (men ſay) was woont to weare) to defend her pretie foote from the iniuries of the hard ground. Within her Iuorie quiuer, that ſo ſeemely hung on her left ſhoulder, her looſe arrowes went ſhaking vp and downe. The bow ſhe carried in her left hand, with three arrowes in her right, made her in her flight more light and nimble. And in this ſort *Parthenius* and I behelde at once this ſoueraigne virgin; and both at once (as after it was knowen) were ſurpriſed with the beautie of her angelicall face: which made vs ſo farre beſides our ſelues, that both of them in a ſhort time being ouerrun vs a pretie way, we neither thought vpon hir ſuccor, nor once remẽbred to deliuer hir from that bruit beaſt, who was almoſt at hir fainting heels: which help admit, though awaked out of our ſudden paſſion & wonder we had offered to haue lent hir; yet had we neither bin able to control *Gorphoroſtes* beaſtly forces, nor to com any thing neer him in running, nor yet to haue ouertaken faire *Stela* (for this is the Soueraigne name of the noble virgine and heauenly Shepherdeſſe, that diſdaines not my companie) in her ſwift and fearefull flight. Needleſſe it had beene (ſaide Lord *Felix*) to tell her name, when as by thy fine deſcription and praiſes, that thou haſt giuen her, it might be eaſily coniectured

who

who ſhe was. O let him proceede Lord *Felix* (ſaide *Doria*) for me thinkes I am enduring all this while the paines and feare, wherein this faire Nymph was, vntill I ſee her free from the hands of this monſtrous beaſt: wherefore as thou loueſt thy ſelfe, good Shepherd, make haſte, (if it be true at the leaſt) that ſhe eſcaped from him. Then ſaide *Delicius*. Nowe had the cruell *Gorphoroſt* blowen vp faire *Stelas* haire with his firie foming breath, when ſhe, looking pale for feare to ſee him ſo nigh her, and her-ſelfe in ſo apparant danger, encouraged her fainting ſpirits (well-nie ouercome by the violent paines of her ſwift courſe) and got a little againe before him; wherewith being (happily) come to the riuers ſide, where it yeeldes his running ſtreames into the ſea, ſhe ſaide. Yee ſacred Nymphes, if it be true that you haue any power in your waters, forſake not (I beſeech you) a diſtreſſed virgine, long ſince deuoted to the puritie of chaſte *Diana*, ſince you are ſo great friends to her, whom I haue euer honored from my hart. When ſhe had thus ſaid, ſhe threw her-ſelfe into the riuer; and after her, fierce *Gorphoroſt* without feare, lept in, where he had beene in great danger of drowning, if he had had leſſe ſtrength to wreſtle with the furie of the ſwift ſtreame, or knowne as little, by ſwimming, to haue helpt himſelfe. The vgly Shepheard when he ſaw himſelfe on the other ſide of the riuer, ſhaking off the water from him, like to the dirtie ſwine when they come out of their wallowed puddles, and lifting vp his eies to heauen, in a loude and menacing manner began thus to exclaime. O yee partiall Gods (if there be any, beſides mine owne will and appetite) yee vniuſt Gods enuiers of my good, howe would I peece-meale rent you, if I had you in my hands, to teach you not to meddle any more in my matters. And thou *Neptune*, who aboue the reſt art termed to haue an abſolute and ſole power ouer the waters, caſt out from thy habitations that, which of right belongs to me; otherwiſe in theſe caues and dens I will euery day diſquiet thee and thy companie, turning theſe huge and ſteepie hils into thy waters. As he was vttring theſe proud words, we came to the riuer, where we ſawe a goodly Nymph put out her yellow head, and ſpake theſe wordes againſt *Gorphoroſt*. Thou huge and monſtrous beaſt, that, in diſhonour of the immortall Gods art vomiting out blaſphemies, hurtful to thy ſelfe, and not offenſiue to them, harke what I wil ſay vnto thee. Thou haſt now incenſed all the Gods ſo much againſt thee, that (were it not to reſerue thee for ſom greater torments) they would preſently afflict thee with due puniſhment. Trouble not thus our waters, ſince the vtmoſt of thy power is ſo little able to profite thy ſelfe, vnleſſe thou wilt alſo make vs thy principall enimies, and purchaſe our ill wils; which (thinke not) ſhall be ſmall, ſince we haue her in our cuſtodie, whom thou vnworthily calleſt thy Goddeſſe: We keepe her, but not for thee, who by the fates is allotted to another. She remaineth in our pallaces without any harme, for it was not reaſon ſhe ſhould for thy fault, ſuffer any at all. And with this get thee hence, hopeleſſe for euer to ſee her in thy power, in whoſe behalfe the Gods were neuer ſo vniuſt, as to combine two ſuch vnequall perſons togither. To this *Gorphoroſt* anſwered thus. The threatnings of theſe, whom vainely thou termeſt Gods, and Goddeſſes (ſweete Nymph, the happie gardienne of my ſacred Goddeſſe) I little account of, who neuer yet acknowledged ſubiection to any other, but to her, who (as thou ſaieſt) remaineth now in your dwelling places. And her iuſtly do I confeſſe to be mine onely Goddeſſe, and therfore feare her more then all the reſt. And it greeues me, if ſhe thinkes I went about to hurt her, to whom (I confeſſe) I neuer intended any ſuch matter. For if I ranne after her, it was bicauſe ſhe fledde from me, and would not ſtaie to harken to my iuſt complaints. And be-

leeue me (Nymph) bicauſe her tender foote might not be harmed by ſome ſharpe thorne or flintie ſtone, thinking ſhe woulde haue moderated her flight, I followed with a ſlowe pace, entreating her ſtill to ſtaie; and telling her, that ſince the ſwifteſt Does I ouerran, and tooke in a ſhort race, ſhe might not then thinke therein to go beyond me. And this I was deſirous to tell thee, to requeſt thee (gentle Nymph) to holde mee excuſed and blameles to her. By dooing whereof, I promiſe thee to keepe thy waters euer cleere, and vndefiled: And bicauſe ſhe may vnderſtand howe much it greeues me, that I haue offended her, I will purge me of this errour in my caue, without comming once out of it, vntill this newe Moone ſhall haue runne out her full courſe. When he had ſpoken theſe words, he went his waies, & the Nymph refuſing to harken to my cries, and to *Parthenius* his pitifull requeſtes, diued downe againe into the waters. Which thing (if it did not greeue vs both) I leaue heerafter to your iudgements: Seeing therefore how booteleſſe it was to call her, *Parthenius* turning to me (for I had firſt called the Nymph) ſaide. Brother, what wouldeſt thou haue with her? How is it poſſible (ſaide I) but that I muſt call her, ſince ſhe hath in her cuſtodie that power of beautie, that wholly poſſeſſeth my conquered hart. I came foorth (deere brother) to ſeeke out my loſt Father, and haue met with her, that hath found my ſoule. Wo is me, that know not what ſhall become of me. And from hencefoorth now thou maieſt go ſeeke out thy deere parents, which leaue (ſweete friend) I woulde not giue thee (for the Gods knowe how much thy departure greeues me) but onely to content and pleaſe thee: for heere will I ſtaie, vntill I know what the immortall Gods will determine with me. Scarce coulde my louing brother ſtande vpon his feete, when from mine owne mouth he heard that I was enamoured of the faire damſell, bicauſe he had alſo no leſſe then my ſelfe (as by a ſtrange chance I afterwards knew it) yeelded vp to her his loue and libertie. But bicauſe it was either my good or ill happe to manifeſt my paſſion firſt, *Parthenius* diſſembled his, in lieu that I might carie the guerdon away. So that on the one ſide, he was very glad, that one thing offred it ſelfe, whereby I might receiue the firſt fruits of his true friendſhip; and was ſorrie on the other, to ſee that his greefe was remedileſſe. Which perfect function of amitie I would in very truth haue no leſſe performed towards him, if he had firſt opened his loue of her vnto me, as afterwards I did, though yet for all this I muſt remaine his debtor. But bicauſe I might not perceiue the great good turne he did me, and he by diſcloſing it haue loſt the merite thereof, he did not onely diſſemble it right-out, but by words and demonſtration made as if no ſuch matter had beene: And albeit he ſtriued with himſelfe not to loue *Stella*, yet was he not able to performe it, but (as I ſaie) hidde it in ſuch ſort, that it might not be perceiued. Whereupon to that which I had ſaide, he anſwered thus. The Gods neuer ſuffer me to profite nor pleaſure my ſelfe with ſuch a leaue, deere brother. For thou art my father & mother, & to forſake thee, I meane not to ſeeke them out: Let them pardon me whoſoeuer they be, for ſince they left me in my infancy, & perhaps without iuſt occaſion, it ſhal be no part of impietie for me to denie them in their old age, being warranted by ſo iuſt an excuſe. Many other friendly ſpeeches paſſed betweene vs both, & that wheron we concluded was this: To go to the next town, bicauſe it was late, & there by ſom other courſe (if at the leaſt ſome happie meanes did obuiate our deſires) to informe vs what that Damſell was, & thereupon to aduiſe vs what was beſt to be done. Comming therefore neere vnto a little towne, not farre from that place, we eſpied this reuerend old *Pariſiles*, almoſt in the very ſame robes that he now weares, who turned his eies on euerie ſide, to ſee if he might perceiue

her

her comming, for whom (it ſeemed) he had long looked and lamented. To whom in the end a certaine raunger, that a farre off came croſſing ouer the lawnes, appeared, who being come vnto him, ſpake ſome fewe words togither, but what, we could not heare, for we had hid our ſelues a prettie way off: and fewe they were. For by and by the ſorrowfull old man with a pitifull outcrie fell into a great ſwoune. The raunger ſeeing him in ſuch a trance, thinking he was dead, and fearing leaſt his ſudden death (as he thought) might haue beene laide to his charge, ran preſently away as faſt as euer he could, when as we all in vaine called and cryed out alowd vnto him; ſo that, for that time we could not know the cauſe of the good old mans ſorrow. One thing I haue noted in thy diſcourſe, ſaide Lord *Felix*, that thou euer with reuerence and humanitie entreateſt olde *Pariſiles*, who (as not long ſince it ſeemed) would haue killed thee. And with great reaſon, anſwered *Delicius*, to whom I doe not onely wiſh well, becauſe he is Father to faire *Stela*, but honour him for his high deſerts. But returning to my diſcourſe, ſeeing the ranger would not ſtay, we went to the noble *Pariſiles*, who was lying (as aboueſaid) diſtraught of his ſences, and perceiuing that he came not to himſelfe again, we both went to ſeeke out ſome water to ſprinkle on his face, ech of vs going a ſundry way, to bring it the ſooner to him. Which, when after too long ſeeking (as we thought) we could not finde, we returned backe againe, and before we came to the place where we left him, we heard him lamenting in this ſort.

O World, falſe world, and like to hell belowe,
A lake of filthineſſe, and puddle mud:
A ſea, where teares and miſeries doe flowe:
A trauell without eaſe, or hope of good:
A pit of ſorrow, and of endleſſe woe:
A region full of brambles, thornes, and brakes:
A meadow full of adders, toades, and ſnakes.

A ceaſleſſe greefe, a falſe delight, and pleaſure
Of men that goe on wheeles, and dancing ſcope:
Of him, that counteth thee his truſt and treaſure,
And of thy worldlings, falſe and vaineſt hope:
A heape of woes, that hath no end nor meaſure:
A hideous hill of care, and dwelling place
Of monſters, and of paine an endleſſe race.

A poiſon ſweete, a hony full of gall:
A dungeon of deſpaire, a diſmall field
Of wretchednes, of ſeruitude, and all
Infections, that ten thouſand deathes doth yeeld.
A hell, a filth, a miſerie, and thrall,
A care, a greefe, a paine, a plague, a ſore,
A ſlauerie, a death, and what is more.

Many that haue endur'd thy yoke of paine,
Haue gone about in colours to depaint
Thy wicked ſlightes, with which thou ſtill doſt traine
Diſtreſſed ſoules vnto an endleſſe plaint.

And they poore ſoules haue labour'd all in vaine:
But I, if that my greefe will ſuffer me,
By triall can vnfold thy miſerie.

Thy properties ſo falſe I haue concealed,
Thy wicked workes (till now) I haue endured:
From thy deceits I neuer yet appealed,
Feare of thy wrath my patient minde coniured
To paſſe that, which I neuer yet reuealed.
And not to play with thee (falſe world) at ouuert,
But euer in thy blazons to be couert.

Now without feare, for now I am aſſured,
That more thou canſt not doe, then done alreadie:
Now may I boldly tell what I endured,
(Although in vaine) to helpe my greefe ſo ſteady:
Thus euer hath the want of feare procured
The poore mans ſong, as by the way he goeth,
Fearing no theeues, whoſe harme the rich man knoweth.

O with the ſweetenes falſe world thou doſt glut vs
Of thy enchaunted baites that doe delight vs,
And in thy nets of pleaſures thou doſt ſhut vs,
Where with thy hidden hookes thou doſt requite vs:
And after all when ſmoothly thou haſt put vs
In danger, then too open thou doſt ſhow them,
When with reſiſtance we cannot forgoe them.

Thy promiſes are great, thy giftes are failing,
And not to challenge them thou doſt diſdaine vs:
In thy enormous vices we are ſailing
With winde in poope, where ſtill thou doſt detaine vs;
And in the end though nothing then auailing,
The ſhelues and rockes to vs thou art a ſhowing,
When backward our fraile barke cannot be going.

Yet ſome, though few, haue left thee with aduiſe,
Fearing thy ſudden frowne and wonted pranks:
And others (though too late they haue beene wiſe)
To their good hap haue giuen a thouſand thankes,
Whoſe eares thy Syren ſongs could not entice,
Seeing the pay that thou didſt giue to mee
For all the ſeruice I haue done to thee.

And how for good with ill thou doſt requite,
Thou putteſt out our eies, and then in vaine,
With comfort wouldſt annoynt our blinded ſight:
Thou woundeſt all, becauſe none may complaine

Alone,

Alone, or feele the measure of thy spight,
Saying it is an ease to wretched men
In miserie to haue companions then.

But wofull man vncomfortlesse, and sad,
Alone in all this ill, and endlesse paine,
The greatest greefe, that euer any had,
Comparison with mine cannot maintaine:
Disherited I am, in sorrowes clad:
For Stela was the key of all my ioy,
Helme of this ship, that luckelesse starres destroy.

Tell me (false world) why didst thou me create
A man? for not, Stela I had not got,
Not got, not lou'd, not lou'd her, this estate
Not suffred, nor intangled in this knot
Of miseries, that is so intricate.
Then world of woe, in wickednes so rife,
What ease canst thou affoord to my poore life?

O wretched world, in thee I doe remaine
Against my will, thou maist commaund me then:
And since thy snares, thy nets, thy hookes, thy chaines,
With which thou dost deceiue vs silly men
And our subiected wils vnto thy traine,
Who shall accompany my wearied eies,
And this old age from sorrowes warrantize?

O Stela then, my loue, and all my good,
My sweete companion, tell me, may it be,
That this faire face, this figure, and the bud
Of such braue beautie may be hid from me,
And drowned in this deepe and wrongfull flood?
O bitter chaunce, O Iupiter, O Gods,
Is cruelty with beauty thus at ods?

O wretched man, misfortunes onely white,
What shall I doe, when I doe finde the place
Sole, and alone, where whilome my delight
was woont to be? O greefe and heauie case,
When calling on her sweetest name, no wight,
Nor happy answere soundeth in my eares
To comfort me, but shewes of thousand feares?

Then since she liues not, that did giue me life,
Death shall be welcome and most sweete to mee:
Dying with her, to end this cruell strife
Of life and death (Sweete) I will come to thee.

And

And weeping, where my cleereſt light is hid,
There wretched man my life I meane to rid.

By this lamentation, whereunto we gaue an attentiue eare, we vnderſtood the cauſe of his complaint, That the Woodman belike had told him, how *Stela*, flying from *Gorphoroſt*, had caſt her ſelfe into the riuer, but not that which afterwardes ſucceeded. We were no leſſe glad to heare the newes, of that we ſo much deſired to knowe, as to giue him good tidings, whom it behooued vs to make as much beholding to vs as we could, for ſeruing our owne turnes. But as we were now determined to goe and talke with him, my brother ſaid. Let vs ſtay, for if this be Father to thy new Miſtreſſe, it is not beſt that he ſhould now knowe vs, when we our ſelues knowe not what we haue to doe, nor how our matters (not yet well commenced) will fall out. And ſince he ſaide he will goe to the riuer, there to be the miniſter of his owne death, I thinke it beſt for vs to follow him, and demanding what he ſeekes, and whither he goes, to tell him what hath paſſed; which I alſo thinke beſt to be done, when it is ſomewhat darke, bicauſe ſpeaking to him then, he may not knowe vs another time, whereas (if it might afterwards auaile vs) by knowing vs to be the ſame men that brought him theſe good newes, we ſhall not want meanes to tell him that at our owne pleaſure. We thought this to be good counſell, and did therefore put it ſo well in practiſe, that the good olde man being thereby comforted vp a little, went backe againe, and in requitall of theſe good newes, offered me, that was the teller of them, his lodging that night. Which courteſie of his with thankes repaying, I made an excuſe that I had ſome buſines another way, and bad him farewell, wherewith I went backe againe to *Parthenius*, and the olde man homeward to his houſe. The next morning (for there we paſſed away the ſame night) we went to the place where *Stela* had caſt her ſelfe into the riuer, attending there her comming foorth; and being come foorth, to ſee, if we might talke with her. But before we came, we eſpied the virgins olde Father walking vp and downe along the riuer bankes: And going neerer vnto him, to ſee if he offered to caſt himſelfe into the riuer, we ſawe, how wearie of walking he ſat him downe, and then with as lowde a voice as his greefe would giue him leaue, heard him in this ſort ſinging to his deereſt daughter.

Daughter, that in this deere
And chriſtall riuer haſt thy dwelling place
With Nymphes: O harken heere
To me a little ſpace,
Pariſiles, *thy wofull fathers caſe.*

Deny not him thy ſight,
Who euer did for thee himſelfe deſpiſe:
The abſence of thy light,
And heauenly ſhining eies,
Vnto his ſoule a bitter death applies.

Which ſo conſumes his breath,
That liuing thus, his life he doth deſie:
For ſuch a life is death,

And he would rather die,
Then leaue to liue without thy companie.

Ioy now, (and doe not ſtay)
An aged man conſum'd with greefe, vnleſſe
That thou wilt haue him ſay,
The loue thou didſt profeſſe
To him, was all but fain'd, as he may geſſe.

Why doſt thou ſtay ſo long
A wretched ſoule with comfort to ſuſtaine?
O come and breake this ſtrong,
And mourning vale in twaine
Of his affliction, miſerie, and paine.

My ſoule, thou woont'ſt with glee
To heare this voice: but either I am not,
As once I woont to bee,
Or thou art chang'd, I wot,
Or thy poore father els thou haſt forgot.

But firſt I pray to God,
Then ſuch obliuion in thy breſt ſhould bee,
My vitall period
May finiſh, not to ſee
My ſelfe forgot of her, that loued mee.

Come then my hart, and cleere
Thee of this doubt, this fauour let me rere:
If not, this riuer cleere
Shall hide me by and by,
For there with thee I meane to liue or die.

If the waues of the riuer, and the neighbour ſea being mooued to ruthe and pitie, ſeemed to ſtay, and the noiſe of them both with his dolefull voice made gentle and calmed, ceaſed a while, that his tender complaints might be the better heard, how much more would you haue iudged our harts (being wrought with pitie and compaſſion) to be mollified with the amorous plaints, wherwith the pitifull old man did cal vpō faire *Stela*. For it might be wel vnderſtood by his impatience, how much he loued her, when as he thought euery moment he ſtaied there a thouſand yeeres. But there paſſed not much time, when the waters being gently opened, out of the middes of them roſe a faire companie of Nymphes, with garlands of diuers colours vpon their yellow haire: in the middes of which appeered faire *Stela* like chaſte *Diana* amongſt her gracious quire of Nymphes. At whoſe ſight old *Pariſiles*, for the incomparable ioy he had to ſee his deſired daughter, and we to ſee our new beloued Miſtreſſe, fell all downe to the ground, but raiſed vp againe with the ſweetenes of a Set-ſong & a conſort of heauenly muſick, which the Nymphes had made amongſt themſelues, we harkened to that which was ſung, as followeth.

Pariſiles,

PArisiles, thy doleſull ſong and playning,
Thy piteous ſighes, and weeping without meaſure
(To comfort thee) haue made this goodly quire
Leaue their aboades, and ſtately ſeates of pleaſure.
Afflict not then thy ſelfe, but ceaſe thy paining,
And let thy wearied ſoule to reſt aſpire:
Let plaints begun, retire,
And be in ioy, and happy gladnes ended:
And be not now offended
Parisiles, or carefull for thy daughter;
For hither we haue brought her
In good eſtate, for thee to ſee her, knowing,
That more then this to both we all are owing.

If that the Gods are iuſt in any wiſe,
Then are they bound to helpe thoſe that doe pray
To them for helpe, and in their ſeruice liue.
Then ſince that you your ſelues did euer giue
To follow them, and chooſe the better way
In honouring vs by deede and ſacrifice,
The beſt we can deuiſe
Of all good turnes, that may your loue requite,
Belongs to you of right:
Parisiles, the Gods in heauen doe knowe
In ſea, and earth belowe
Thy things, and haue of them a greater care,
Then thou maiſt thinke, and of thy happy fare.

For which thing, they themſelues had firſt ordeined
That Stela, the moſt monſtrous Shepheard flying,
Should caſt her ſelfe into this cleereſt riuer,
For knowing, what her fates and ſtars would giue her,
Their influence with all their helpe denying
By ſecret meanes her fortune, they reſtrained,
And ſuch a ſigne that rained
Ouer her head, that threat'ned to deſtroy her,
And preſent to annoy her:
They therefore will ſhe liue within our bowres,
Vntill theſe luckleſſe howres
Doe paſſe, and while this ſigne and fate expires,
Vnworthy her deſerts, and high deſires.

The Sonne of Goddeſſe Cytherea ſhall
Heerafter be the cauſe of her deſpaire:
(The cruell) wounding her with doubtfull loue:
And ſo this loue, that ſhall ſo doubtfull fall,
Great ſtrife in her, and many wars ſhall moue,
Not knowing which to chooſe, that is moſt faire,

Her

Her breſt (loues ſweete repaire)
Continually ſhall wauer on two men,
Inclining now and then
Her loue to one, then to another ſtraight:
Poore ſoule ſhe ſhall await
In this ſuſpence, not knowing to define
To whether of them both ſhe ſhould incline?

And thinke not that th'immortall Gods intended
To bar theſe loues, that heere I am declaring,
Nor their ſucceſſe would euer haue denied:
For being to a vertuous end applied,
Either of both they would not haue ſuſpended:
Alas, it is their fate ſuch woes preparing,
Not one nor other ſparing.
Both for one cauſe in one loue ſhall be chained,
And both alike be pained:
But yet the Gods ſhall euer be procuring,
That, Stela *then enduring*
Theſe hardeſt haps ſhall not with theſe be placed,
Whom Fortune alwaies checkes, and hath diſgraced.

But thou muſt comfort thee aboue the reſt,
If of theſe three, the hard and cruell fate
Cannot be ſhunn'd; their ioies that muſt adiourne:
After theſe woes Fortune ſhall make them bleſt,
Shewing her face milde and propitiate,
Gentle, and ſweete: Then ſhall they ceaſe to mourne,
For ſhe her wheele ſhall turne:
Annoyes to ioyes, their ſighes to ſweeteſt ſongs
Shall turne, and all their wrongs
Shall ceaſe: Their woes, their miſeries, and teares,
Their ſorrowes, greefes, and feares
Shall be one day conuerted into ioy,
Which neuer after Fortune ſhall deſtroy.

Thy daughter then (Pariſiles) *imbrace,*
And ſo reſtore her to this place againe,
The heauens muſt haue their race:
Then let them run: And ceaſe to mourne in vaine.

This beuie of faire Nymphes, when they had ended their propheticall ſong, came to the riuer ſide, and with a maruellous ſweete conſent did put into *Pariſiles* armes his welbeloued daughter: Betweene whom certaine ſpeeches being paſt, with great thankes to the Nymphes, they tooke their mutuall leaue, the old man going away al alone, though accõpanied with a thouſand perplexed thoughts, & ſwelling tears, that for depriuation & loſſe of his deere daughter fell in great plentie from his aged face. The Nymphes to their chriſtalline aboades, and *Parthenius* and I remaining

not

not a little ſorrowfull (as you may geſſe) for *Stelas* departure, and full of imaginations for that which we heard by the Nymphes diuining ſong, being then ignorant, and doubting whether the contents thereof were ment by vs or not. All which paines, greefes, and troubles threatned therein, and many more faine woulde wee haue ſuffred, in lieu that faire *Stela* had beene the cauſe of them. With theſe and many other conſiderations reuolued in our mindes, we determined to ſtay there, to ſee if the Nymphes (taking faire *Stela* with them) came ſometimes foorth to ſolace themſelues amongſt thoſe greene and pleaſant forreſts: where we ſtaied not long before our deſires had part of their contentment; for euen the next day about that hower when *Tytan* equally viewed all our Hemiſphere, and certaine daies after came out many faire Nymphes, to paſſe away the heate amongſt thoſe coole and freſh ſhades, though their happie ſallies (happie by faire *Stelas* company) did little auaile vs, ſince euery time that we made offer to come out of the woode towardes them, with fearefull flight they ranne backe againe to their acquainted riuer. *Parthenius* therefore ſeeing the ſmall occaſion that was offered vs to talke with them, ſaide vnto me. With this beginning (deere brother) wee muſt not continue on our commenced purpoſe, which is not onely an open impediment to the good ſucceſſe of our determination, but a manifeſt occaſion to moleſt thy Miſtreſſe, and a let to the Nymphes from their wonted paſtime and delight. What remedie then (ſaid I) ſhall we vſe, or what doſt thou aduiſe vs to do, for I cannot by any meanes depart from hence with ſafetie of my life. As I will not counſell thee thereunto ſaide *Parthenius*, ſo the immortall Gods forbid that we go from hence, before we finde out ſome good meanes, whereby theſe Nymphes (their coyneſſe laide aſide) may admit vs into their ſweete company. If there be any remedie for this (ſaide I) then all my ſorrowes, and ſorrowfull life ſhal be (I hope) both eaſed and ended; but alas my greefe will not giue me leaue to conceiue it ſo. And if there be any (ſaid *Parthenius*) it is but onely one. Thou knoweſt well my deere brother, by all thoſe times that wee haue ſeene them comming hither, how they do leſſe diſdaine the ſimplicitie and plainnes of countrey Shepherds, then the ſuſpicious companie of cunning courtiers, and that their rurall baggepipe is more delightſome to their eares, then the enticing and wanton Lute of the others. The which dulie conſidered, it ſhall be better for vs (in my opinion) by leauing of theſe coſtly habits, to cladde our ſelues in homelie Shepherds weedes; which probable inuention being put in practiſe, may happely prooue more fortunate vnto vs, then any other courſe that we may well thinke of. His counſell, which was foorthwith put in execution, liked me ſo well, that we left of our accuſtomed apparell, and put on this which you ſee, not conſenting that garments (whom nature made ſo like) ſhould put any difference betweene vs. And ſo likewiſe we forgot not our ſheepehookes, and ſcrips, and whatſoeuer elſe belonged to a Shepherds calling. But as for ſheepe, we bought none, before we knewe how well this deuiſe anſwered our deſeignes, the which, time, and occaſions afterwards would aduiſe vs beſt to do: for we agreed to ſay, that we left them behinde, in cuſtodie of our Swaynes, and that we came before to ſeeke out the beſt paſture for them. We had alſo fidles, and pipes, whereon we ſoone learned to play, becauſe we could plaie on the Fluet, and Vials and other muſicall inſtruments. With this new habite we paſſed away certain daies, in ſinging & playing many ſundrie things: All which ſeiout ſo fit to our deſires, that not once, but a manie times, the Nymphes kept vs company, bringing *Stela* that faire and ſhining Staire many times amongſt them, by whoſe golden light the courſe of our grieuous life was then, and is yet moſt happily

happily guided: Wherein Fortune ſo highly fauoured me, that day by day (though much againſt my will) I accompanied thoſe faire Nymphes; not, that it was not a ſoueraigne glorie to me to be in preſence of that cleere Sunne I ſpake of; but bicauſe I would haue thought it a greater good, if my deere brother had alſo inioyed the ſame. This is ſtrange (ſaid Lord *Felix*) to ſhew thy ſelfe on the one ſide moſt appaſſionate for faire *Stela*, & to grieue on the other, that thou inioyeſt her ſight al alone, deſiring it for another. But ſtranger it would ſeeme (ſaid *Delicius*) if you knew euery thing that paſſed about this matter: But now let it ſuffice you (Gentlemen and Shepherds) to know this much, and another day (it may be) I will make an ende of that I haue begun. They were all importunate with him to haue him tell on, when *Felicias* comming made them leaue of, who being come vnto them, ſaid to *Delicius*. My friend Shepherd, ſince I inioyned thee of late to a task that not ſo wel contented thee, I am now come to deliuer thee from it, bicauſe I imagine how grieuous it is to thee to paſſe therein any further. To do the contrarie good Ladie (ſaid *Delicius*) were vnworthie your gracious ſelfe, and not quadrant to that, which is expected at your hands, wherein I meane not to giue you the thankes you deſerue, nor hope of any other guerdon, then that which you your ſelfe haue alreadie taken, conſidering that you do no more, then what to your owne ſelfe you are bound to do. For all this (ſaid *Felicia*) let vs (my ſonnes) goe home, for *Phœbus* now doth haſten him to his owne, whoſe roſie beames, though ſilently they begin to decay, ſhall with his Siſters ſiluer lights, to guide our ſteps be carefully ſupplyed. And we might well paſſe away this freſh approching night, and with great pleaſure ſpend it in ſo good companie; but in the end we ſhall better take our reſt in the houſe, whereas for this day let vs content vs with the bootie we carie home. With a fewe ſuch walkes abroad (ſaid *Feliſmena*) we ſhall be quickly inriched: Though in verie truth at our firſt onſet, we haue taken ſo braue a prize and robbed ſo much good, as I thinke, we ſhall not neede to take any paines to lye in waite for more. *Feliſmena* had not gone away in *Stelas* debt, if *Felicia* had not cut her off, ſaying. The faſhion in this place is not to pay by and by, but to truſt ſomething. But how comes this to paſſe, that I haue alreadie taken *Pariſiles, Stelas, and Crimines* words to be my gueſtes, and haue not *Delicius* conſent to be one of them? Aduiſe thee therefore Shepherd, if it pleaſe thee to goe in with vs, for it was neuer my condition to force any againſt their wils, whereby to giue thee any occaſion to complaine of me, and to ſay that like a forced captiue I carie thee in. Your words good Ladie (ſaid *Delicius*) are different from your deedes. For whoſoeuer ſhould heare you ſay, that you did not perforce carie me in, would not (I thinke) beleeue your wordes: for I frankly confeſſe before them all, that you carrie me in as a priſoner, forced and taken. Wherein if they will not credit me, for themſelues (at the leaſt) they muſt needs beleeue me: for I will gage my head, that all will affirme no leſſe, and ſay, that you haue moreouer forced and made them captiue to your wil and commaund. They all laughed at *Delicius* anſwere, ſeeing how well he had acquited himſelfe of *Felicias* ieſt, whereupon they all told *Felicia*, that the Shepherd ſaid true, and that ſhe ſhould not care for ſatisfactions with wordes. And who ſhall iudge this betweene vs (ſaid *Felicia*) for I confeſſe to, that you carie me no leſſe conſtrained and forced to your wils and deſires. But leauing this doubt to be decided, let vs go our waies. Then all of them obeying the ſage *Felicia*, followed her, and with the pleaſant diſcourſes which they mooued there amongſt themſelues, made the way ſeeme leſſe and ſhorter; ſo that ſooner then they would, ſome of them came to the royall Palace. It was now well entred into night, when being come neere to

Dianas Temple, and *Felicia's* Palace, a great number of faire Nymphes (being richly attired) came foorth to meete them, and euerie one with a torch of virgin waxe in her hand to light them in, thereby the rather to manifeſt the great magnificence and maieſtie of *Felicia*, then for any neede of their light at all. For the moone did ſhine ſo bright, that (it ſeemed) ſhe endeuored nothing more then with her ſociable preſence to behold and hearken to that noble companie. They that were neuer before in that rich Palace, maruelled to ſee the ſtately and ſumptuous buildings of it. But when vpon the chiefe portall and entrance thereinto, they ſaw two Nymphes made all of maſſie ſiluer ſtand vpon the Chaptrees of two columnes, with theſe verſes:

WHo comes into this place, let her take heede
How ſhe hath liu'd, and whether ſhe hath kept
The gift of chaſtitie in thought and deede.
And ſee beſides, if ſhe hath euer ſtept,
With wauering minde to forren loue eſtranged,
And for the ſame, her firſt afection changed,

May enter in DIANAS Temple heere,
Whoſe grace and vertues ſoueraine appeere.

Delicius ſaid. This aduiſe (Ladie *Felicia*) ſpeaketh (me thinkes) onely of women, but I would faine know, why it toucheth not as well men, as if there were not ſome, in whom that is alſo found, which warranteth an entrance into this place. If the Goddeſſe of chaſtitie (bicauſe it is the Temple of *Diana*) delighteth onely in the companie and conuerſation of women, then muſt al men conſequently be forbidden to come in. And whereas it ſaieth, that ſhe, that in all thoſe points findes her ſelfe guiltleſſe, may come in, my deſire is to know, if any woman failing in any of them, happen to come in, what would enſue thereof. *Syrenus* before *Delicius* paſſed any further, ſaid. It is wittily demaunded, or els I vnderſtand it not: and truly my deſire is no leſſe to know, what harme would befall to her, that with breach of her firſt faith and loue entered in, thereby to warne the faithleſſe Shepherdeſſe *Diana*. But now another ſcruple (ſaid *Delicius*) ariſeth in my mind, which is, That when we were comming towards this rich Palace, I asked one of theſe faire Nymphes, what euery one of this noble and vertuous companie might be; who briefly ſatisfying me in euerie point, amongſt other things that ſhe told me made me eſpecially to maruell at this, That ſome of theſe heere, were married in this place: Whereupon I would faine know, if in the Temples of the Goddeſſe of chaſtitie it be vſuall to ſolemnize any marriage, bicauſe that myſterie is as ſtrange to mine eares, as the reaſon therof to my conceit. If by reſoluing thee in theſe demaunds (ſaid *Felicia*) I thought to preuent thee of any more replies, I would endeuour to pleaſure thee heerein: but becauſe (I know) thou wilt not therewith content thee, but that with many doubts (that in my anſwers may perhaps occurre) thou wilt yet vrge me further, I am minded to leaue it of for this time, and the rather, bicauſe it is time to go in to take our wonted foode and reſt: Whereupon they went in to ſupper, which by this time was ſumptuouſly made readie for them. Hauing ſupped, they went to bed without

ſinging or playing on their inſtruments, for there were ſome that deſired more their reſt then recreation, and ſleepe then ſolace, thinking their late meriment paſt ſuffiſed them for that day.

The end of the third booke.

The fourth Booke of the ſecond Part of Diana of George of Montemayor.

AMongſt many other times that *Felicia* caried her gueſtes to diſport themſelues at the fountaine of the Laurell trees, (a place more pleaſant then any other) on a day when they were going into the little meadow where that faire fountaine did ariſe, they ſawe two louely Shepherdeſſes (though by their coye lookes ſhewing a kinde of ſignorie and ſtatelineſſe aboue any other) that were ſitting harde by the goodly ſpring, both of them endowed with ſingular beautie, but eſpecially the one, that to their iudgements ſeemed the yoonger. Right ouer againſt them on foote ſtoode a yoong Shepherd, who with the lappe of his ſide coate wiped away the teares that fell downe thicke vpon his blubbered cheekes, in requitall whereof, and of his inward greefe, the Shepherdeſſes did nothing elſe, but by looking vpon one another, affoorde him a gracious ſmile. *Syrenus*, *Syluanus*, and *Seluagia*, knowing it was the ſame Shepherd, that ſhewed them the letter, when they were going from *Felicias* palace towards their owne towne, withdrew themſelues aſide, and euery one of them doing the like, *Syrenus* very ſoftly ſaid. O how glad am I to ſee this yoong Shepherd here, for if he would but ſing, you ſhould ſee that the ſweetenes of his ſongs, which we haue ſo much commended to you, were no fained thing. But it greeues me not a little to ſee him in theſe termes, that he is not like to make me nowe as good as my worde. Take no care for that (ſaid *Felicia*) for he will not forget to do it, and bicauſe you may heare him the better, come ſoftly on with me, for I will bring you to ſuch a place, where they ſhall not ſee you, but where you may at pleaſure delight you with his ſweete muſicke. The Shepherdeſſes were talking with the Shepherd, when *Felicia* brought them as neere (vnſeene) as they could be, but yet not ſo neere, that they were able to tell what they were talking togither. More faire then curteous are thoſe Shepherdeſſes (ſaide Lord *Felix*) that requeſt not the Shepherd to ſit downe by them. It is not for that (ſaide *Felicia*) but for great reſpect of loue and dutie that he beareth to the yoonger, who in her preſence could neuer finde in his hart to ſit, but onely when others were in companie, from whom he thought it beſt to conceale his paſſions. Why is he ſo ſadde (ſaide *Seluagia*) for as I remember, and coulde gather by his letter, his Shepherdeſſe could not doe, nor ſay anie thing, wherein he tooke not great ioy and contentment. I, but Fortune hath nowe turned her wheele (ſaide *Felicia*) for then, and euer ſince, for the reward of his loue, he onely enioyed the preſence and ſweete company of his Shepherdeſſe, the force from whence his ioyes and comforts ſprung: but now, for ſome certaine daies, he is forced to depart from her, which farewell breedeth no leſſe his preſent greeſe & ſorrow. And that which giues him greater paine, is that he knowes not when hee ſhall ſee her againe. But harke and giue attentiue eare, for now they command him

to ſing, whereupon they ſawe him take his Rebecke out of his ſcrip, and with a playning voice began thus to ſing.

PHillis, *my faire yoong Shepherdeſſe,*
That from thee by and by
I muſt depart (O heauineſſe)
O that no, but woe that I.

O from the world that now I might depart,
Since that I muſt (my ioy) forgo thy ſight,
For now I liue too long: Then kill my hart
Miſhap, if thou wilt grant me ſo much right:

Or fatall ſiſters now conſent,
That ſhe or I might die,
I craue it to a good intent:
O that no, but woe that I.

Pardon, it is not I that doe deſire
Thy ſudden and thy wrongfull death not, I.
It is my loue, my hot and burning fire,
That made my toong ſo much to goe awrie:

And feare it is that mooues my hart,
And thoughts of iealouſie,
Since thou doſt ſtay, and I depart,
O that no, but woe that I.

Such iealouſies they are not, thou muſt thinke,
That thou ſome other loue wilt entertaine,
For I doe knowe that loue can neuer ſinke
Into thy breſt (vnto my cruell paine.)

But iealouſie thou wilt forget
Heereafter, and denie
That one did ſee another yet:
O that no, but woe that I.

But if thou doſt (faire Shepherdeſſe) ſuſpect
To burie me in Lethes *lake, let greefe,*
Before thou ſhouldſt ſo ill my loue reſpect,
Conſume my life, let death be my releefe:

Then thou ſhouldſt thinke but ſuch a thought,
Firſt (faire one) let me die:
Although it ſhall be deerely bought,
O that no, but woe that I.

To rid my ſelfe from ſuch a cruell paine,
I would deſtroy my ſelfe, and purchaſe reſt:

But then to kill thee, I doe feare againe,
Bicauſe thou dwelleſt heere within my breſt:

Doe then a noble deede (my life)
From thence with ſpeede to flie,
That then I may conclude this ſtrife.
O that no, but woe that I.

Bargaine with me, let me this fauour craue,
To leaue my hart, that ſo thy harme doth dread,
Thy place againe then after thou ſhalt haue,
If thou maiſt come to it, when it is dead:

For if thou once goeſt foorth, I will
To death with courage hie,
And then my vitall powers kill.
O that no, but woe that I.

As if it lay within thy handes and powre
(Sweete Shepherdeſſe) forſake my wofull hart,
But yet thou canſt not goe from thence one howre,
Neither can I, although I would, depart.

Nor yet I would not, though I might,
I ſay, I would not die,
But yet bicauſe I looſe thy ſight,
O that no, but woe that I.

If that I am in anything to thee
Gratefull, this fauour then of thee I pray
Thou would'ſt, when I am gone, remember me,
And ſay, where is my Shepherd all this day?

Then would I count my greeſe but ſmall,
If thou wilt not deny
This thing, or thinke of me at all:
Woe that no, but O that I.

Then ſay but I, although it be in ieſt,
And neuer meant'ſt thy promiſe to maintaine:
Thou ſhalt thereby procure ſome little reſt
Vnto my parting ſoule, which I will faine:

Little I craue to eaſe my hart,
And paines, yet let me trie
This fauour, Then I will depart.
O that no, but woe that I.

As he thus made an end of his ſong, they roſe vp, and the yonger (called *Phillis*) made a ſigne to the Shepherd with her finger, to reach her vp her ſcrip and Sheepehooke that lay on the ground, at whoſe hands (though in moſt dutifull manner he did it) ſhe receiued them with no more thankes or ſhew of courteſie, then if one of hir ſwaines had giuen it her. And then with a word or two of the Shepherdeſſes, but with his many teares the mournefull Shepherd tooke his leaue: whereat *Phillis* being mooued to ſome ſmall ſorrowe and to no leſſe greefe for his departure, tooke out of her ſcrip a fine little ſpoone (the ſame perhaps that ſhe her ſelfe did eate with) and gaue it him, wherewith the Shepherd did ſomewhat mitigate his helpeleſſe ſorrow: and then they went out of the meadow one way, and the Shepherd another. Might it not be well done (ſaide *Feliſmena* to *Felicia*) to talke with thoſe Shepherdeſſes before they goe. Not now anſwered *Felicia*, for heereafter you ſhall knowe all, when their due time ſhall come, wherein you ſhall then take as great delight to ſee and conuerſe with *Phillis* and *Caſtalius* (for ſo is the Shepherd called that was with them) as now perhaps ſome little greeſe for their departure: whereas beſides it is not now ſo conuenient, bicauſe I knowe, we ſhould make them not a little aſhamed. The Shepherdeſſes therefore being now gone out, they went into the little meadow to the chriſtalline fountaine, where, in ſet daunces and ſweete ſongs (accompanied with pleaſant hiſtories and gracious ſpeeches) they ſpent the time till *Felicia* thought it good for them all to goe to the Temple, when ſhe came to warne them. Who (it ſeemed) did neuer awake, or take care for any other thing, then where, and after what maner ſhe might beſt delight that noble companie. Whereupon ſhe caried them ſometimes to the goodly plaine before the Temple, other times to another pleaſant meadow neere to the wood, and ſometimes to the Laurell fountaine. Truth it is that (to haue all poſſible ioy) Don *Felix* and his faire Lady *Feliſmena*, *Syluanus*, and his louing Shepherdeſſe *Seluagia* needed not to ſeeke it out in exteriour things, ſince their inwarde ioy (to ſee themſelues all fower with mutuall affection ſo happily beloued) was ſo great, that all others (in reſpect of this) were but meere ſhewes and ſhadowes. *Syrenus* tooke a ſingular pleaſure to beholde the contentment of them all, whom ſo vnfainedly he loued. The Nymphes not onely procured it for themſelues, but to delight them all in generall. And *Pariſiles* his anger being now paſt with that which *Felicia* had told him, and ſhaking off his former ſadnes, by enioying the preſence of his daughter, was no leſſe ioyfull then the reſt. But *Stela*, and *Crimine* were in ſuſpence, betweene ſolace and ſorrow, comfort and care, being cheered on the one ſide by the hope that *Felicia* promiſed them, and by knowing that thoſe louers were onely by her meanes recured; but ſad on the other, that by imagination they could not finde out ſome way or remedie for their paines and paſſions, which were ſo ſtrange, that though to their owne content they craued it, yet they could not deuiſe how to their owne wils and deſires they might enioy it. For both of them equally loued *Delicius* and *Parthenius*: but *Stela* eſpecially, who deſired not to haue *Delicius* loue her, if *Parthenius* forgat her; nor eſteemed of *Parthenius* his loue, if *Delicius* had deſpiſed her. Onely *Delicius* amids ſuch ſportes and paſtimes (as were offered there) was far from all comfort, by finding himſelfe abſent from his deere friend *Parthenius*, without whoſe preſence he cared not to enioy his ſorrowfull life. And the danger beſides (which ſhall bee heerafter ſpoken of) wherein he knew his deere friend to be, was euery hower ſo ſenſibly repreſented to his greeuous thoughtes, that he was many times determined to goe and deliuer him, or elſe to die in that reſolution; but that he was prohibited

on

on the one ſide, and had no force on the other to forſake *Stela*, the ioy and light of his darke and mournfull life. The ſeldome enioying of whoſe woonted ſweete ſight, and diſcontinued ſpeech with her, by reaſon of old *Pariſiles*, applied more matter to the heauie burden of his greefe: So that he (though all the reſt did ſing and play) could neuer be perſwaded to keepe them companie, from the which but with faint and fained reaſons he for the moſt part excuſed himſelfe. Whereupon (when opportunely he could do it) he cloſely conuayed himſelfe out of their company, whoſe diſcontentment (his yoong Shepherdeſſes with watchfull eie perceiuing it) did not a little greeue thē. But ſage *Felicia* ſeeing how little her promiſed hope preuailed with the fearefull Shepherd, on an euening before them all ſaide thus vnto him. I woulde neuer leaue to complaine on thee (ſorrowfull yoong Shepherd) if I knewe not the great reaſon thou haſt to bee ſo ſad: And therefore I beſeech you that be heere, not to be offended with the courſe of his melancholike life; nor take it in ill part, if hee cannot pleaſure you as you woulde; praying you beſides to do me ſo much fauour, not to aske him any more, then he is willing of himſelfe to tell you, and to attende the time, when with his gratefull conuerſation and ſweete diſcourſes he ſhall fill your hands full. Of curteſie then good Shepherd, and for ſhame do no more, then what thou ſhalt ſee moſt auailing thy content, ſince we are ſo glad (by al the meanes we can) to giue it thee. Then anſwered *Delicius*. I can receiue no greater fauour in any thing (moſt gracious and prudent Ladie) vnleſſe it be the enioying of my *Parthenius* his preſence) then in that, which you haue alreadie done me: which eſpeciall benefits (ſince my abilitie is ſo ſmall) muſt needs remaine without due requitall. For though in ſigne of ſubiection, my willing minde and perſon woulde bee euer ready at your command and ſeruice; yet it were but a friuolous and vndiſcreet part to promiſe you that, which by all reaſon is alreadie due vnto it. *Don Felix, Feliſmena*, the Shepherds and the Nymphes with one voice ſaid, That they were not a little glad to ſee *Delicius* take content in any thing, who gaue them many thankes for it, craueing pardon of them for the great ſtrangenes he vſed amongſt them. At whoſe hands and of *Felicia* and the reſt obtaining a friendly pardon, hee paſſed away his ſorrowes all alone, going often into that thicke woode to lament his hard and ſiniſter haps; wherein he could not chooſe but many times haue loſt himſelfe, if the ſhining turrets of *Felicias* pallace had not brought him thither again, when he would. Amongſt many other daies, that heere and there ſome went to ſport themſelues in diuers places, it fell out that the Shepherdes *Syrenus*, *Syluanus*, and *Seluagia*, (for *Felicia* and *Don Felix* had gone one way, and the reſt of the companie another) were one day all alone with old *Pariſiles* in a quadrant of the rich pallace, to whom *Syrenus* ſaide. Since it hath pleaſed you woorthie *Pariſiles* (the fewe daies that you haue beene heere) to content all our louers with your pleaſant and amorous hiſtorie of *Cupid* their idolatrous God, my ſelfe, that haue not to do with this blinde boye, why haue you refuſed to gratifie with ſome pleaſant diſcourſe touching a Shepherds ſtate. The firſt day that we enioyed your happie companie, you propounded diuers things concerning the ſame, from that time ſurcharging me with (more then a meane) deſire to heare them diſcourſed by you: And eſpecially the manner of the ſacrifice of our God *Pan*, and how at the firſt it was vſed to be done, and from what time it was held in reuerence, and all the reſt that you propounded about this matter. So that your tale ſhall come nowe in good time, and to very good purpoſe, ſince we are heere all Shepherds and alone. Whereupon I pray you (noble *Pariſiles*) eaſe my impatient minde of the burden of this deſire. I cannot my friend *Syrenus*

(anſwered

(anſwered *Pariſiles*) but obey thee, wherein thou craueſt to be reſolued, ſince it is a thing appertaining to my office, to declare the rights and honors due to our Gods, and alſo a conuenient myſterie for you to know, and a thing eſpecially belonging to *Pan* the great God of Shepherds.

As touching the firſt, you haue great cauſe to make no ſmall account of your functions and eſtates, when not onely *Pan*, but many other of our Gods haue vſed the like, beſides many great Emperours, Kings, & worthie perſonages that haue not diſdained this ſimple and contented kinde of life, which was the firſt charge and vocation, that our forefathers in the primitiue world embraced, whoſe names impertinent for you to know, and tedious for me to report, I meane to leaue vntold. So that you muſt not maruell if I told you that the firſt, to whom we offered ſacrifice, was this God. I know well, that I ſhould take my beginning by declaring what God this is: but bicauſe he hath none, I cannot put it in any other thing, but in himſelfe. For, to ſay that *Pan*, and *Faunus* is all one (as almoſt all authors auerre) I haue no reaſon to beleeue it, when by them themſelues I meane to refell it. For they ſay, that *Faunus* was the ſonne of *Picus*, Father to *Latinus*; *Pan* the ſonne of *Demogorgon*, God of the earth. To ſay alſo (as they affirme) that *Pan* and *Syluanus* is all one, it is falſe: for a certaine Autenticall author, after he had told that *Pan* the God of Shepherds came, ſaid that *Syluanus* alſo came, with a root of a tree, into the which *Cyparisſus* was tranſformed. Whereupon it is cleerely gathered, that one cohereth but ill with the other. That which they hit neereſt of *Syluanus*, is, that he is the God of the dregs of the Elements, whereof all materiall things tooke their eſſence. Reuerend *Pariſiles* (ſaid *Seluagia*) you haue annulled that, which we tooke for a ſure ground, holding it euer for an infallible opinion, that all three were but one, or two of them at the leſt: Not onely you (ſaide *Pariſiles*) but almoſt all, who haue beene of greater reading and iudgement. Indeede (ſaid *Seluagia*) to our ſexe and condition it is not graunted to vnderſtand ſo much, as to gainſay what you haue affirmed, and how much more (ſince you your ſelfe doe ſay it) ought it to be beleeued? But yet one doubt occurreth to my minde about this matter: For noble *Pariſiles*, you ſaide, that *Pan* had no beginning, and afterwardes confeſſed he was the ſonne of *Demogorgon*, how can this be? It is wiſely obiected, anſwered *Pariſiles*, and like one that notes my diſcourſe well. And in truth faire Shepherdeſſe, thou propoundeſt a queſtion to me, which I knowe not how with the honour of my Gods, or with mine owne to reſolue. For in ſooth I muſt faile in one, when I am conſtrained to confeſſe, that I vnderſtand it not, or that our Gods are none, if we muſt beleeue our writers: but bicauſe thou toucheſt me with contradiction in my ſpeech, I will haue thee knowe, that when I ſaide *Pan* had no beginning, it was but mine owne opinion, and true, if *Pan* ſignifies all. When I ſaid, he was the ſonne of *Demogorgon*, it was according to their opinions that affirmed that *Pan* and *Faunus* were all one. And to bring contradiction in their opinions, was a thing ſufficient ynough to throwe them downe from their opinion, ſhewing their affections to be repugnant and contrarie. It remaines therefore for me to prooue, that he is not the ſonne of *Demogorgon*, both which I dare verifie with their owne grounds. For *Pan* is as much to ſay as all, to giue vs to vnderſtand, that he is God of all: They paint him as you knowe. *Demogorgon* is as much to ſay as nature. Now then if *Pan* be God of all, and nature be ſomething, *Pan* is the God of nature; then by conſequence if *Demogorgon* be nature, *Pan* is God of *Demogorgon* his father. If they will ſay that nature is not ſomething, but all, they muſt then be driuen to confeſſe that *Pan* and *Demogorgon* is all one, and not two things, which cannot be

two,

two, ſince ech of them is abſolutely al. So that as our Authors confound themſelues with this God, they wil ſhew the like of all other Gods. But well (ſaide *Syluanus*) whom doe you beleeue that *Pan* is? Let him be whoſoeuer he will (anſwered *Pariſiles*) ſufficeth you to honor this God *Pan* vnder the name of the God of all. The firſt, that I knew did ſacrifice to this God was king *Euander*, and the firſt that built a temple to him in *Arcadia* at the foote of a hill called in the old time *Olympus*, bicauſe *Romulus* (they ſaid) was nurſed in that place. This hill afterwards was called *Palatine*, and *Lyceus*, wherein were fower principall things. A *Wood* conſecrated to *Iupiter*, of ſuch qualitie, that if any deſpiſing the lawe that forbad them to enter in, did go into it, he died within one yeere after. An *Aulter* in the top of it to the ſame *Iupiter*, held in great reuerence. A *Fountaine* of ſo maruellous a nature, that it ſeemed the Gods were more curious in it, then in any other thing; for the water being gently ſtirred with an oken twigge, a vapour roſe ſuddenly out of it like a thicke miſte: The which, not long after being congealed into a cloude, and mixed with others that were there raiſed vp, was ſufficient to haue made a great ſhower of raine. And at the foote of the hill laie a certaine place or ſpace of ground called *Lupercall*, which ſome ſaie tooke that name, bicauſe there were no woolues that ranged vp & downe with their crueltie to hurt the harmeleſſe ſheepe. Others, bicauſe *Romulus* and *Remus* were nurſed there by a certaine woman called *Lupa*. Heere therefore ſtoode the temple of God *Pan*, and heereupon the ſacrifices they do him, tooke their name *Lupercalles*: They were firſt called *Lycea* of the hill, where firſt they were made, and are ſolemnized, as you know, the eighteene of Ianuarie. They that celebrated thoſe ſacrifices were called *Lupercos*: who in making them, ran naked vp and downe the ſtreetes, couering their faces with maskes, and hauing in their handes certaine reines made of Goates skinnes, wherewith they ſmit the handes and bellies of women with childe, and of thoſe that coulde not conceiue, to make the childebirth by theſe meanes more eaſie to them, and the others fruitfull. They went vppe and downe naked (as ſome ſay) to ſhewe thereby (as it ſeemed) the lightnes of their God: and bicauſe *Pan* (as others ſay) abhorred garments, whereupon they paint him without them. And becauſe *Romulus* and *Remus* (as others report) being one daie with other yoongſters to celebrate theſe ſacrifices, and to exerciſe their perſons in games agreeable to their youth, wherein they caſt off their garments for heat, newes came that their flockes were ſtolne away: who with the reſt of the youth, full of rage and anger, not ſtaying to put on their apparell, purſued the theeues, and the victorie obtained by *Remus* with the *Fabians*, that were in his companie, they got their flockes againe. In honorable memorie of which valiant act, it was afterwards ordained, that they that offered ſacrifice to *Pan*, ſhould be naked. All which abouesaide hath continued vntill our times, except the going naked: for it was not vſed ſince a certain Roman dictator refuſed th'imperial crown that a Conſull (made *Lupercus*) did put on his head: for that which that Conſull did, was ſo abhominable in the ſight of the people of Rome, that, for his ſake, they abhorred from thence ſuch an vnſeemely forme of ſacrifice. You ſee here therefore (my friends) how I haue reſolued you (I thinke) in that which you asked me, wherein though I haue ſeemed ſomewhat long, yet ſhorter, then ſo ample a matter as this required. And I thinke too breefe (ſaide *Syrenus*) conſidering how much you haue laide open vnto vs. Wherfore do vs yet this pleaſure (I pray you) to tell vs why God *Pan* ſo much abhorreth garments. With a good will, ſaide *Pariſiles*, for it is both prettie and pleaſant.

Hercules

Hercules going on a day to recreate himſelfe with his loue *Iole* along the ſhadowed woods and pleaſant groues, to eſchew the heate of the Sunne, *Pan* from a hill aloft beheld them, but eſpecially caſt an earneſt eie vpon *Iole*, a woman of a moſt ſweete and faire countenance. He ſaw her, and ſeeing burned in her loue, and ſaid, I haue not now, O yee deities of theſe mountaines, to do with you any more, nor to ſee you from this time forward. Farewell, farewell. For ſhe is onely my delight. *Iole* had her ſhoulders and breſt ſhining like golde with her yellow haire that from her head fell dangling downe vpon them. The ſunne now waxing pale, and ſhining but a little, began to giue as little heate, and the moiſt welkin with the euening dewe of approching night, came ſtealing on apace with her ſable coloured horſes, when *Hercules* with his company tooke vp a caue neere to the vineyards of *Lidia*: wherein, while ſupper was a preparing for the ſeruants, *Iole* for her pleaſure, or for ſome other merrie conceit that ſhe had in her head, did put her apparell vpon mightie *Hercules*, vnripping the ſeames to make it fitter for him, and tearing that which was too ſtreight. On her-ſelfe ſhe put the Lyons skin, and tooke his club on hir ſhoulder, and in her hands, her husbands bowe and arrowes. In this ſort they ſupped, and laid them downe to ſleepe, and with this habite each of them in a bed by themſelues (as time and place affoorded them) began to ſleepe: for it was not lawfull for them that night to lie togither, bicauſe the next day they were to offer vp ſacrifice to *Bacchus*. And now (*Pan* burning in impatient loue) about midnight, which was very darke (for what doth not a louer enterprize) came into the caue, and found the ſeruants, what with their great cheere and wine at ſupper, and what with their ſports afterwards, faſt a ſleepe, thinking the ſame might be alſo the cauſe of their Maſter and Miſtreſſe ſleepe. His good fortune therefore falling out ſo well, conducted him to the place, where *Iole* was (happie man if he had knowne his good happe) where groping vp and down, and feeling the Lyons pawe, with feare he lifted vp his hand, (thinking it was *Hercules* that lay there) as the muſing traueller by the high way, his foote, that hath vnawares troden vpon ſome ſnake or hidden adder he ſawe not. Going therefore from thence he met by chance with the couch where *Hercules* in a habite different from his perſon, lay a ſleepe, whom when *Pan* touched, and felt *Ioles* ſoft and delicate garments, thinking he had founde that he ſought for, at the beds feete began to mount vp, and lifting vp his clothes, in lieu of finding a ſoft and tender skin, felt a hard fleſh and full of haire. *Hercules* awaked out of his ſleepe, gaue the poore louer ſuch a blowe with his fiſt, that he ſmote him from the bed to the ground, where he laie all along. *Iole* awaked at the noiſe, and calling to her ſeruants for light, found the ſillie God on the grounde complaining for the blowe he had receiued, which made not onely *Hercules* and his men, but his beloued *Iole* laugh apace at the infortunate louer. You therefore ſee heere (my friends) why the God deceiued by the garments, doth ſo much hate them. It is well (ſaide *Syrenus*.) But tell vs I beſeech you, as you haue begun, how we ſhould know him to bee the God of all by his picture. They paint him with two hornes, anſwered *Pariſiles*, like to the ſunne beames, and to the hornes of the Moone, his face redde like a firie flame, in imitation of the firie Element. In his breſt a ſtar called *Nebrides* in repreſentation of the ſtarres, which ſtarre I thinke was made of a wilde goates or Hearts skinne, bicauſe *Nebrides* is as much in ſignification as a wilde Goate or Heart: which skins they vſed in *Bacchus* ſacrifices: whereby we may eaſily gather, that he is God of all aboue. From the mids of his body downward, they paint him full of haire and briſtled, to ſignifie the trees and wilde beaſts; with Goates feete,

to

to ſhew the hardnes of the earth. And let this ſuffice for this time.

With theſe and many other like curioſities, that the Shepherds demanded of *Pariſiles*, the night came on to his great contentment. The verie ſame day (as I ſaid) *Felicia* carried with her *Stela*: And Lord *Felix*, *Feliſmena*, and the Nymphes with *Crimine*, went by themſelues to another place. To whom, after they were ſet vnder the ſhadow of ſome thick Sallowes, Lord *Felix* ſaid. So may all thy fortunes ſucceed happily to thee (faire Nymph) and according to thine owne deſire by ſeeing thy ſelfe in the greateſt proſperitie in the world, as thou wilt deigne to tell vs why *Stela* and thy ſelfe go wandring vp and downe ſo ſorrowfull in the company of this faire yoong Shepherd, and how long ſince it is you had acqnaintance with him. Thou commandeſt me Lord *Felix* (ſaid *Crimine*) to renew the ſumme of my ſorrowes and extremeſt griefe. Alas, who can ſtop my teares from their continuall flowing by awaking ſuch tormenting memories? Who can quench my ſcalding ſighes, that with ſuch a heauie recitall will come ſmoking out of my balefull breaſt? How can I tell you my exceſſiue misfortunes in order, ſince there was neuer any in my innumerable paſſions? Let it content you Lord *Felix*, and you faire Ladies to knowe that you haue before your eies the moſt hapleſſe woman of all our ſexe, and in your preſence the verie ſumme and pattern of all diſaſtrous virgins. Hauing thus ſpoken, a profound ſigh accompanied with abundant teares, hindered the reſt of her dolefull words: whereupon they came all together to comfort her, *Feliſmena* ſaying. Beleeue me (faire Nymphe) my Lord Don *Felix* woulde neuer haue requeſted this at thy hands, if he had thought to haue giuen thee the leaſt griefe in the world, but that he and all we were deſirous (by knowing the cauſe of thy ſorrowfull life) to helpe thee as much as we could in thy cares and troubles. O happie Ladie (ſaid *Crimine*) how much art thou deceiued and the reſt, that thinke there is any remedie for my miſhaps. But for the loue and friendſhip you ſhew me, and for that which I beare to you all, giue attentiue eare vnto my words, and vnderſtand my misfortunes; for I will ſatisfie you in that which Lord *Felix* hath demaunded of me. And becauſe you may knowe how far my miſhaps haue extended, and to what end my miſeries haue driuen me:

Know that I am forced to loue one, that hath no power to loue me againe; & that it is not in my power, not to account her my deereſt friend, that entreats me like a cruell foe: Which thing becauſe it may perhaps ſeeme hard to you to beleeue, you muſt vnderſtand that I loue this Shepherd, that is our guide in our trauels, as much as I can, & can in truth as much as I wil. I loue alſo *Parthenius* his friēd as much as I will, & will truely as much as I can: for, as it cannot be diſcerned which is *Delicius*, and which *Parthenius*, and the one impoſſible to be knowen from the other, for like two drops of water they reſemble one another ſo much; ſo cannot I tell, which of them I loue moſt, louing both in equall balance of extreme affection. I thought once to be content and happie by being beloued of one of them, whereof when I was perſwaded, I was not yet ſatisfied. I cannot with reaſon complaine of them, ſince both, or at the leaſt *Delicius* (I think, nay firmly beleeue that my ſuſpition is not in vaine) hath forced himſelf as much as may be to loue me, by working al the means he could, which neuer yet lay in his power to do. Wherby you ſee that I haue placed my loue on him, that cannot (though faine he would) requite it with his againe. But you will aske me perhaps in whom the cauſe & impediment conſiſteth, that they are not anſwerable to that, which both are ſo iuſtly owing me. To this I anſwere my greateſt and deereſt friend I haue in this worlde, bicauſe for hir, both are alike wound-

ded

ded with *Cupids* inuincible flight, ſhe dying no leſſe in both their loues. And who this is, you may eaſily geſſe, for ſhe can be no other then *Stela*. And yet I ſweare to you by all that a true louer can proteſt, that I neuer wiſhed *Stela* any ill, though ſhe is now, and hath euer beene the cauſe why I am not beloued of theſe two peereleſſe Shepherds. For I could for mine owne part do no more in her cauſe then ſhe doth in mine: and though I hated her beſides, yet it ſtoode me in hand to be her friend, when by her meanes I enioyed *Delicius* ſight, & hope by the ſame to ſee *Parthenius*. But bicauſe you may know how we loſt our liberties, and they remained without theirs, I will onely tell you that, which maketh for this purpoſe.

The ſame day (as they afterwards tolde vs) that *Stela* by the ordinance of the Gods came to our company (for now you know that I am one of the Nymphes of the renowned and famous riuer *Duerus*) *Parthenius*, and *Delicius* did ſee *Stela*, and both of them equally loued her, though then it ſeemed not ſo; for *Parthenius* concealed his affection, bicauſe *Delicius* had manifeſted his before: But when *Delicius* tolde, that he was enamoured of *Stela*, they agreed to ſtay in a forreſt hard by, to ſee if ſometimes comming out of the riuer they might haue ſome occaſion to talke with her. But when ſhe came out, and they offred to come towards vs that went in company of her, we fled away, and ran back againe to our riuer. Who perceiuing it was not poſſible to talke to her in that ſort, concluded to deceiue vs by wearing Shepherds weeds, and leauing of their courtly apparell. Thus therefore attending daily for vs, *Stela* and I came foorth, and as they ſaw vs (though they made no ſhewe thereof) one of them plaied aloud on his Baggepipe, to inuite vs (I thinke) vnto their muſicke: which when we heard, as it was a thing not vſed there manie daies before, we came ſomewhat neere, and hid our ſelues behinde a companie of thicke Sallowes. But they, who by ſtealth were looking on vs, perceiuing their deuiſe to haue a good beginning, made as though they had not ſeene vs, and betweene themſelues praied one another to play or ſing ſome ſong. In the end *Parthenius* getting the vpper hand, *Delicius* tooke his Rebecke, whereon he ſo ſweetely played and ſung to it, that we thought *Apollo* had committed ſome newe fault to become a Shepherd againe, and that it was euen he that made that ſweete melodie. The ſong was of great ſentence, the inuention wittie, and the forme of it curious, wherefore lend an attentiue eare to the one and the other, if you deſire to delight you with it.

NEuer a greater foe did loue diſdaine,
Or trod on graſſe ſo gay,
Nor Nymph greene leaues with whiter hand hath rent,
More golden haire the winde did neuer blowe,
Nor fairer dame hath bound in white attire,
Or hath in lawne more gracious features tied,
Then my ſweete Enemie.

Beautie and chaſtitie one place refraine,
In her beare equall ſway:
Filling the world with woonder and content:
But they doe giue me paine, and double woe,
Since loue and beautie kindled my deſire,
And cruell chaſtitie from me denied
All ſenſe of tollitie.

There

There is no Rose, nor Lillie after raine,
Nor flowre in month of May,
Nor pleasant meade, nor greene in sommer sent,
That seeing them, my minde deliteth soe,
As that faire flowre, which all the heauens admire,
Spending my thoughts on her, in whom abide
All grace and gifres on hie.

Me thinkes my heauenly Nymph I see againe
Her necke and breast display,
Seeing the whitest Ermine to frequent
Some plaine, or flowers that make the fairest showe,
O Gods, I neuer yet beheld her nier,
Or far, in shade, or sunne, that satisfied
I was in passing by.

The meade, the mount, the riuer, wood, and plaine,
With all their braue array,
Yeeld not such sweete, as that faire face, thats bent
Sorrowes, and ioy in each soule to bestowe
In equall partes, procur'd by amorous fire:
Beautie and loue in her their force haue tried,
To blinde each humane eie.

Each minde and will, which wicked vice doth staine
Her vertues breake, and stay:
All aires infect by fire are purg'd and spent,
Though of a great foundation they did growe.
O body, that so braue a soule dost hire,
And blessed soule, whose vertues euer pried
Aboue the starrie skie.

Onely for her my life in ioies I traine,
My soule sings many a lay:
Musing on her, new seas I doe inuent
Of soueraine ioy, wherein with pride I rowe:
The deserts for her sake I doe require,
For without her, the springs of ioy are dried,
And that I doe defie.

Sweete fate, that to a noble deede dost straine,
And lift my hart to day,
Sealing her there with glorius ornament:
Sweete seale sweete greefe, and sweetest ouerthrowe,
Sweete miracle, whose fame cannot expire:
Sweete wound, and golden shaft, that so espied
Such heauenly companie
Of beauties graces in sweete vertues died,
As like were neuer in such yeeres descried.

Now as *Delicius* had ended his ſong, and *Stela* thinking that he had made an end indeede of ſinging and playing (although it was not ſo, for *Delicius* was requeſting *Partheniu*s to play on his Rebecke and to ſing) ſhe ſaide vnto me. Tell me faire *Crimine*, Enioyeth this ſolitarie place oftentimes ſuch like voices, ioyned with ſuch heauenly ſweetenes ? If it be ſo, I cannot but in ſome ſort complaine of the amitie lately commenced, and confirmed betweene vs, in that I haue not ſpent the time in ſuch pleaſure and delight, as now by the ſweetenes of this muſicke and fine ſong we haue amply had. After that cruell *Gorphoroſt* (my deere friend ſaide I) whom the Gods confound for bereauing vs of a great part of our pleaſures, began to dwell in theſe partes, this is the firſt Bagpipe and Rebecke, that in this forreſt hath beene long ſince touched, of ſo many Shepherdes and Shepherdeſſes, that haue continually plaied and ſung in other times before when they fed their ſheepe heere, and paſſed away the heate of the day vnder theſe greene trees : whereupon I marueil no leſſe at the noueltie of this accident, then at the rare melodie of the ſong, for I neuer heard the like ſince I firſt dwelt in this place, nor that euer delighted my ſenſes ſo much. But bicauſe they begin to play and ſing againe, let vs goe a little to them, for they ſeeme to be milde and courteous youthes, and ſuch that make a ſhew to haue ſome reſpect and reuerence of vs that be Nymphes. When I had ſpoken this, we went towards them, who perceiuing it, felt an extreme ioy, bicauſe they had now brought their deſired purpoſe to effect. But to diſſemble the more with vs, and bicauſe we might not take vs to our woonted flight, they ſat ſtill, without once riſing to doe vs any courteſie, vntill we firſt ſpake vnto them. When we were come vnto them, and ſawe two ſuch goodly yoong Shepherdes, and ſo like in face and apparell, turning to *Stela*, I ſaide. Behold what two faire Shepherdes, but ſeeſt thou not how like they be ? There is not in my iudgement, ſiluer to ſiluer, gold to gold, nor water to water ſo like as theſe be. Our *Iupiter* and *Amphitrion* could not be ſo much one, nor *Mercurie* ſo like to *Soſia*, when to enioy *Alcmenas* loue, *Iupiter* in the likenes of *Amphitrion* kept him out of his owne houſe ; and *Mercurie* in the likenes of *Soſia* made his man feele the hardnes of his fiſt. Then turning by and by to the Shepherds, I ſpake thus vnto them. Your vnaccuſtomed and ſweete ſongs (gracious Shepherds) after the long ſuſpence and ſilence of many, that haue beene long ſince made in theſe fieldes, haue forced vs to come thus abruptly to enioy the ſweetenes of them ; if we therefore (being Nymphes) are of any eſtimation with you iolly Shepherdes, we beſeech you, that our preſence be not of woorſe condition and entertainment then theſe trees, which (without mooning) were euen now harkening vnto you, nor may diſpleaſe you no more then our abſence, and to make no more difficultie to ſing, now we are heere, then when we were not. At theſe wordes the Shepherdes riſing vp, and asking one another who ſhould anſwere, *Partheniu*s ſaid. Sweete Nymphes in grace and beautie non pareille, we will not deny but that, in reſpect of your courteous ſpeech to vs, we are bounde to performe your gracious requeſt (at will they caſt out golden wordes which ſauoured of the glozings in the Court) and confeſſe no leſſe, that we are conſtrained to obey you more for your owne ſakes, then for any thing elſe, be it ſpoken with pardon of the reſt of theſe goodly Nymphes : So that onely tell vs wherein wee may giue you content, and we will doe our beſt to pleaſe your mindes. Our mindes ſaide I, you haue already vnderſtood. Then ſince it is ſo, ſaide *Delicius*, begin *Partheniu*s to ſing. It were better, ſaid *Partheniu*s, for thee to do it : for in regard of the great ſweetnes wherwith (not without good cauſe) thou haſt alreadie delighted them, thy

ſelfe

ſelfe being alſo more skilfull in muſicke, whatſoeuer I ſhall ſing after thee to my diſgrace, will be but yrkſome, and vnpleaſant to their eares. Thou haſt no reaſon to ſay ſo, ſaid *Delicius*, for thy verſes will giue teſtimonie of the truth of thy ſide. Whereupon *Parthenius* would haue begun, but not finding himſelfe ſatisfied, bicauſe I onely entreated him, and not *Stela*, he ſaid vnto me. I would not (gracious Nymphe) by obeying thy requeſt to content thee, giue any occaſion of diſlike to thy companion, which mooues me to ſpeake it, bicauſe I know not whether it be her will that I ſhould ſing or no? There is not any thing (anſwered *Stela*) that likes this faire Nymph, which doth not alſo pleaſe me, how much the more (if it were not ſo) for hir owne ſake ſhould it ſuffice thee to fulfill her minde, without making any matter of my liking at all. Both of them would faine haue anſwered to theſe words, but that (I thinke) they were afraid, one of them becauſe he would not ſhew himſelfe on the ſudden ſo appaſſionate; the other, not to diſpleaſe or make me bluſh, a thing that made much for their purpoſe; and alſo becauſe I now tooke them by the hands, ſaying to *Stela*. The Shepherd hath ſpoken verie well, and hath great reaſon, entreat him therefore to ſing, for he lookes for it. Bicauſe then we will not delay the matter any longer (ſaid *Stela*) leauing that aſide which might be ſaid heerein, I requeſt him with this warning, that if another time thou entreateſt him to do any thing, and if he will not do it, that he aske not counſell of me, ſince by fulfilling thy will he ſhall ſatisfie mine. We will obſerue this charge (ſaid *Delicius*:) and ſee thou forgetteſt it not *Parthenius*. Then the one began to touch his Rebecke, the other to play on his Bagpipe: And going about to begin his ſong, *Parthenius* was a pretie while in ſuſpence, not knowing what matter to take in hand, for he would haue ſaide ſomething of *Stelas* beautie, for whom he felt no leſſe ſecret paine, then *Delicius* publicke paſſion: But the force of friendſhip on the other ſide diuerted him from it. And ſo partly for ioy to do that which touched the loue of his friend *Delicius*, and with griefe to go againſt that, whereunto he was bound for himſelfe, he would by praying *Delicius* perſwade *Stela* to incline to his owne loue, whoſe beginning was this, entring after the ſelfe ſame ſort as his friend did in the ſong before.

NEuer ſo true a ſubiect to great loue,
Put ſounding Baggepipe to his mouth and toong:
Nor euer Shepherd, that did keepe
In any meade his ſilly ſheepe,
And neuer did ſo gracious members moue
Shepherd ſo faire, ſo luſtie, and ſo yoong,
In throwing of the barre, or ſteeled dart,
As this my deereſt friend, and louing hart.

His ſongs and ditties, which he ſung and plaied,
Hath made the Satyres *leaue the ſweete purſute*
Of Nymphes, that they had chaced,
And in their armes imbraced:
And them beſides, with his ſweete muſicke ſtaied:
Forgetfull of their feare (amaz'd and mute.)
The hardeſt rockes he makes both ſoft and tender,
And mildnes in great wildnes doth engender.

Vnto his perſon, beautie, and his grace
The Nymphes, and Napees *faire to yeeld are glad:*
The Niades, Hamadriades,
The Oreades, *and* Driades:
For ſuch a feature, and ſo ſweete a face
Paris, Alexis, *nor* Endimion *had:*
The faireſt in the world he doth deſpiſe
But onely one, whom iuſtly he doth prize.

Becauſe that ſhe may onely him admit,
Her onely, and none elſe, he doth obay:
She onely doth deſerue
Him, he but her to ſerue:
She onely him, he onely her doth fit:
For th'one is euen with th'other euery way:
For he for her was borne, (for her alone)
And ſhe for him, or elſe was borne for none.

So that if ſhe had not beene borne at all,
He had not lou'd, for he his like ſhould want:
And ſo ſhe, to haue loued
Her equall, it behoued
That he was borne, For none but he ſhould fall
Equall to her, he then might iuſtly vaunt
That ſhe was borne, onely for him reſerued,
And ſhe that he, whom onely ſhe deſerued.

Fortune did fauour him aboue the reſt,
By making him the gladdeſt man that liues,
If that perhaps ſhe knew
His loue ſo pure and trew,
And faith ſo firme, within his conſtant breſt,
(She that her lights vnto each creature giues)
In whoſe braue beautie nature ſtrain'd to ſhowe
More art, and skill then euer ſhe did knowe.

The poore ſoule takes his greefe, and holdes his peace,
Which to reueale he wanted meanes of late:
Once did he goe about it,
But ſtraight then did he doubt it:
With ſaying naught, his paine that doth increaſe
He paſſeth, not to looſe his woonted ſtate:
For though ſhe be in all the world alone
The faireſt, yet as hard as any ſtone.

Then (Shepherdeſſe) this rigour lay aſide:
And flie not him, that paines ſo much for thee:
It is a great defect

Such

Such hardnes to detect:
Let not ſo ill a thing with thee abide,
Where each thing is, as good as good may bee.
And ſince in thee there ſhould be nothing vicious,
Pay then the loue, thou oweſt vnto Delicius.

Theſe two laſt ſtaeffs ſo liuely touched *Parthenius* that ſung them, that (being forced to craue that for another which he would haue had himſelfe) he could ſcarce make an end of them: Which was cleere and manifeſt, for after the maner of thoſe that ſobbe, he redoubled ſome ſyllables, whereby he gaue vs to vnderſtande, that he felt ſome ſorrow in his diſtempered hart, which more euidently we ſuſpected, ſeeing how with ſom inward ſighs he ceaſed without making an end of his ſong. But yet we could not attaine to the cauſe of his greef, wherof (though earneſtly we craued it on him) he told no more, then by fained apparances (far from the truth indeed) we were able to coniecture: To whom therefore with a modeſt ſmile I ſaid, I would not be of thy qualitie (gracious Shepherd) to praiſe thee in thine owne preſence, as thou haſt done thy friend, although he excels thee not (perhaps) in any thing, ſince in ſweete voice and good grace thou art as like him, as in faire ſhape and figure. But for all this *Delicius* is beholding to thee (for ſo me thinkes thou calleſt him) but *Bicauſe the praiſe in ones preſence is held for no leſſe then a glorie*, I woulde counſell thee to reſerue it to ſome other time, when he is out of thy ſight and hearing. Thou muſt not condemne me (gracious Nymph anſwered *Parthenius*) without hearing firſt what I can ſay, for it may be thou wilt iudge it (though thy accuſation ſeeme iuſt to thee) cleane contrarie, when by good reaſon I ſhall reſolue thee heerein, premiſing that this rule is not ſo vniuerſall, *That none muſt not be praiſed in preſence*, but that neceſſitie may oftentimes infringe it: whereby not onely one may praiſe another in his preſence, but that he may do the ſame by himſelfe, for his ownebehoofe. What neceſſitie is requiſite for that ſaid *Stela*? To this when *Parthenius* held his peace, turning to *Delicius*, ſhe ſaide vnto him; If thy friend will not anſwer, tell thou vs what it is. *Delicius*, although he knew it, not preſuming yet to tell it, ſaide: I ſaie nothing, but that in my vſurped name he ſings of his owne praiſes and deſerts. *Parthenius* going about to replie to this, I ſtept in betweene and ſaide. Let there bee no more time ſpent in curteſies; but tell vs, if it pleaſe you, from whence you are, (for your habites denie you to be of any place heereabouts) and whither your way lies, and eſpecially if you meane to ſtay any long time in this countrie? And bicauſe we know alreadie one of your names, to oblige you the more to make vs know the others, know that I am called *Crimine*, and my friend and companion heere *Stela*. *Delicius* then taking her by the hand anſwered. Our incertaine & doubtfull pilgrimage is to ſeeke out our Fathers, with certaine tokens that we carrie with vs to know them (for being children they left vs yoong, as yet neuer knowing how they are called, or from whence they are) which are no other but to ſeeke out a faire yoong Shepherd, and a graue olde woman, both which at one time, but in different places, gaue vs to certaine nurſes to be brought vp. The name of my companion and friend is *Parthenius*; Mine, as thou ſaieſt by my friends ſong. Our tarrying heere ſhall be no longer then it ſhall pleaſe both you. If it be referred to our pleaſure ſaid *Stela*, take vs not for ſuch ſimple ones, that we know not how to profit our ſelues by enioying ſo good conuerſation, and ſo ſweete and vnwoonted muſicke. Yet woulde we not be ſo ill aduiſed to preferre our pleaſure before your due pietie, nor without content to hinder your

good intent. The moſt religious intent, ſweete and faireſt *Stela* (ſaid *Delicius*) and that which toucheth our ſoules neereſt, is thy gracious command to haue vs ſtaie ſtill in this countrey, bicauſe we may not leeſe ſo pleaſant howers as theſe be. I will not hinder ſo commendable a purpoſe (ſaid *Stela*) although I would be glad, if (now returned, and your fathers found) it liked you to liue ſtil heere in theſe parts, to ſpend thoſe few howers, that we vſe to come abroad, in honeſt & ſeemly recreation. Then I calling that to minde which *Parthenius* had ſung, That *Delicius* on a pride and bratierie had deſpiſed all women for onely one, whom hee loued more then himſelfe, with ſmiling I anſwered. And now Shepherd I will command thee to ſtaie, at the leaſt to ſee if I muſt alſo be put in the number of diſdained women, or if I am onely beloued of thee. With theſe and ſuch like ſpeeches we paſſed away the heate of the day, with this agreement in the end, that they ſhould ſtay a certain time therabouts, to inquire out ſome newes of their vnknowne parents in thoſe parts, and not forget to paſſe away the heate of the day in that ſame place, where we would not faile to keepe them companie. Which being agreed on, *Stela* ſaid vnto me; Let vs now go, if thou thinkeſt good, my friend *Crimine*, for it is a pretie while ſince we came foorth, bicauſe we will not giue our keeper an occaſion to blame vs for our long tarying. But bicauſe you may better vnderſtand this, which *Stela* ſaid, you muſt know, that by all meanes poſſible we procured to giue *Stela* all the content and pleaſure we could, for which cauſe we did let her go with company to diſport her-ſelfe vp and downe in that greene forreſt. But being afraide of fierce *Gorphoroſt*, one of vs euer remained at the riuers ſide vnder a palme tree, that ſtoode almoſt right ouer againſt that part, where there was but one paſſage, to the end, that if the vgly Shepherd had come downe, ſhe might haue warned vs by ſounding of a cornet, to hie vs home againe with *Stela*. Taking our leaues therefore of the Shepherds (no doubt without ſome inward ſighes of theirs) we returned to our dwelling places, and they ſtaied ſtill in the forreſt. The next day going very ſoftly about the ſame hower, and by ſecret places to ſee how they were occupied, we founde them ſitting vpon the greene graſſe, and Sleeping in ſuch ſort, that they ſhewed, that that was not their principall intent; for the chriſtalline teares, that trickled downe their burning cheekes in corriualitie, ſignified more ſtore of ſorrowfull thoughts in their harts, then heauy vapours in their heads. The face of the one was right againſt the others, as though they had beene talking togither, leaning their cheekes vpon the one hand, and with the other arme ſuſtaining the waight of the arme and head, in which ſort they lay caſting out ſomtimes profound & greeuous ſighs. Which thing mouing vs to no ſmall compaſſion, for nowe we were ſomewhat affected to them, we determined to withdraw our ſelues, leaſt being awaked, they might (perhaps) haue had an occaſion to be aſhamed to be ſeene in that ſort: And from thence a little way off, of purpoſe to awake them, but as though we had ſeene nothing, we began to ſing, taking for the ground and ſubiect of our ſong, the teares, that they had ſhed before vs. That which we ſung was this.

With ſorrow, teares, and diſcontent,
Loue his forces doth augment.

Water is to meades delight,
And the flaxe doth pleaſe the fire:
Oile in lampe agreeth right,

Greene

Greene meades are the flockes desire:
Ripening fruit, and wheatie eares
With due heate are well content:
And with paines and many teares
Loue his forces doth augment.

As their sleepe was nothing else but an extasie, scarce had we begun, when they awooke, and seeing that we left singing when we came neere them, they saide. If your comming were an occasion to make an ende of your singing, we would be glad that you had stayed a little longer; wherefore let not our presence be of worse condition to depriue vs of this delight, then our absence was by enioying it, and since we refused not to do what you commanded vs, nor made it strange to acquaint you with the basenes of our simple Bagpipes, disdaine not then (faire Nymphes) by that which we entreat you, to shew vs the highnes of your excellent voices. Well well the truth of this is knowen (said we againe) but not denying your demaunds, since we haue time for it, tell vs now if you meane to rest you here a fewe daies. Rest (faire Nymphes) answered *Delicius?* Why, we know not what it is, if we had it here. But we are determined to haue it as long as it shall please your good wils; which are ready to do you all the pleasure we may, said I, but I will tell you one thing, which it may be ye neuer yet heard. By the report and certaine newes of the fertilitie of this Countrey, there are tenne or twelue yeeres past, since from the North parts there departed a mightie huge Shepherd with a great number of sheepe, and came to feed in these grounds (certes not so faire and amiable a personage as either of you) the Sonne of God *Syluanus* he saith, and of a most strong and fierce Shepherdesse, that came with him, whether fayrer and more gracious then my companion here, I am not able to tell you. This vnseemely Shepherd was not onely like to his parents in face and fiercenesse, but in either of both, as also in hideous feature he hath the aduantage of them. Seeing therefore that fame was no lyer, and how the situation of that part of the riuer (being no lesse then a great Iland) inuited him for his habitation, without feare of the wilde beastes, which made it desert and inhabitable, he determined to liue there: Which Iland, as it will in time I hope be cleane eaten out by the riuer (for by little and little it is euerie day made lesse) so I wish it had now the full and complete time with the forcible waters to be quite consumed. The name of this monstrous man is *Gorphorost*, whose incredible strength and bignes, because you may vnderstand, behold the depth of this riuer, and the maine force wherewith it runs, with wading ouer himselfe a foote, by three and three, and fower and fower he sets ouer all his sheepe on the other side: which haue multiplied in such numbers (for since his comming he hath almost killed all the wilde beasts that might destroy them) that there is scarce any place to containe them: and so, not able to put a great part of them vnder the shades, he lets them goe freely amids the fields and along the riuer bankes, without feare of estraying or any other danger, being inuironed by the waters that keepe them in manner of a prison. We wished well to *Gorphorost*, and would haue pleasured him for killing the wilde beasts, that annoyed not a little this pleasant countrey whersoeuer they went, if therewithall not iniuring the Shepherds of these places, he had not depriued vs of their friendly company, though to our selues, but onely in these respects he did neuer any other harme, who are rather bound vnto him (though of his own vertue it proceeds not the not offending of vs) that he hath bin a meanes, whereby this faire Nymphe is in our companie. The

end

end therefore, for the which I haue made this ſhort admonition, is, that we would not haue you for our ſakes ſuffer any harme by this rude Shepherd, who for all this hath forgotten a great part of his fiercenesſe, ſince he gaue place and entrance to gentle loue. Wherupon you may know how great the force of that mightie child is. But if in theſe daies (for I am certaine he will not come out for a ſolemne oath he made) ſome good meanes may be found to make you liue heere with ſafetie, we will not be a little carefull to ſeeke it out for you: And if there bee none, yet ſhall it pleaſe vs better, that with your abſence you ſhould be free from daunger, then with your preſence (for our content) to hazard your liues, or ſafetie anie waie. They thanked vs for our good will, and ſeemed not to take care for anie thing, that might happen, in lieu, that wee fayled not of our agreement with them; *Parthenius* aſſuring vs, that he could ſo well flatter, and pleaſe fierce *Gorphoroſt*, that they might without any harme abide there ſtill. With theſe words and ſome amorous ſongs that we fower did ſing in courſe, we paſſed away the heate of that day, and returned (as we were woont) to the riuer, they remaining ſtill in that pleaſant forreſt, which ſerued them for their dwelling place, and making prouiſion of neceſſarie foode for their ſuſtenance from the villages thereabouts. Not onely *Delicius*, *Parthenius*, *Stela* and I failed not in thoſe firſt eight daies to be at the appointed place of our meeting, but the fame of the new Shepherds came to the eares of ſome other Nymphes, who comming thither, and conforting with vs, made many gracious and pleaſant quiers, dances, and ſongs to the tune of their Rebeckes and Baggepipes; ſomtimes lending a gentle eare to *Parthenius* and *Delicius* ſweete ſongs; ſomtimes applying our ſelues to telling of tales: At which pleaſant meetings old *Pariſides*, who ſometimes came to ſee his daughter, gaue no ſmall content to euery one with his wiſe precepts and counſell touching the honour of the immortall Gods, and ſhewing their diuine prouidence in all creatures, and by them the great power and might of their eternall creator, by explaining the accelerate courſes and motions of the celeſtiall globes, and the cauſe of their vnwearied ſwiftnes. In which time *Delicius* and *Parthenius* gained ſo greatly to their wils, the loue of all my companions, Shepherds and Shepherdeſſes, (who alſo reſorted thither) knowing what *Gorphoroſt* had vowed, that they were not meanely beloued of all, as well for their ſweete ſongs and playing, as alſo for their wiſedome, demeanour, and good graces. But aboue all faire *Stela* and I without compariſon exceeded them, though my loue with *Parthenius* was more openly extended, wherunto I had then moſt of all diſpoſed my minde; and for no other cauſe, then that I knew *Delicius* had emploied his thoughts and loue on *Stela*; and alſo bicauſe I thought *Parthenius* was moſt free. Betweene vs both, like rude girles, we knew not how to gouerne our ſelues in *Cupids* affaires. Betweene vs both, being but a little prudent, we were ignorant howe we ſhould behaue vs in the effects of this childe, and therefore endured him impatiently, though harder and more violent he was to *Stela* then to me, not bicauſe I had beene a longer ſcholler in *Venus* ſchoole, or had more experience in her blinde Sonnes effects then ſhe; but bicauſe ſhe deſired, and forced her-ſelfe to wring out the worme out of her hart, that euery day without feeling it, crept more and more into the center of it; for of ſuch qualitie is this traytour loue, that the more one endeuors to ſhake him off, with greater force he takes place and ſeiſeth on his conquered ſoule: So that *Stela* the more ſhe laboured not to loue the Shepherds, the more couragiouſly loue aſſailed hir, which made her night nor day take any reſt, nor finde eaſe in any thing: all which I afterwards knew by her owne mouth, who at the

firſt

firſt diſſembled the matter ſo cunningly, that I could gather nothing of it. And ſo, meaning to take away the effect by remooving the cauſe, ſhe would ſometimes flie from cõpany, refraining to com where the Shepherds were ſtaying for vs, vnles ſhe was importuned by me. But after certain daies that we foure were al alone togither, I ſaid. It is not reaſon yong Shepherdes, that with the reſt we liue in doubt of knowing you, but that in ſome point we may perceiue a difference betweene you, when as oftentimes we cannot, no more then the reſt, call you by your right names, which I aſſure you troubles vs not a little: So that I would faine haue one of you take ſome kinde of marke to be knowen from the other, but in ſuch ſecret ſort, to put vs out of doubt, and make the reſt remaine ſtill therein: Our intent anſwered *Delicius*, hath beene hitherto (gracious *Crimine*) to haue our garments make no diſſimilitude betweene them, whom one will and ſhape hath made ſo like. But to pleaſure thee herein, & that by taking it, no offence be miniſtred to thy companion, let faire *Stela* ſet downe the difference betweene vs in outward ſhew, ſince ſhe hath made it in the inward ſoule. I know not Shepherd ſaid *Stela*, what difference I haue put betweene you and *Parthenius*. Thy conceit faire *Stela* is not I thinke ſo hard, as thy hart, but that thou maiſt eaſily coniecture, how much loue workes in me for thy ſake. The pitteneſſe of my thoughts (ſaide *Stela*) hath made me ignorant of that, which I would had not beene. The hardnes of thy hart (ſaid *Delicius*) hath made me prudent in that, which was not ſo much expedient for me. Doſt thou then ſpeak it in good earneſt ſaide *Stela*, That thou loueſt me? Doſt thou then aske it in ieſt (ſaid *Delicius*) if I loue thee? No ſaid *Stela*: But then belike I am ſhe (as the matter fals out) to whom thou haſt adreſſed all thy ſongs and teares. *Delicius* thinking to haue a proſperous gale (whereof we alſo thought him aſſured, for all this while ſhe ſeemed not to be angrie, but milde and gentle, whereby ſhe got that out of his hart (which the ſorrowfull ſoule had kept ſo ſecret in his breaſt) with a pitifull eie caſt on her, anſwered. Euen ſhe indeed thou art, as the matter fals out, to whom I auow the terme and ſeruice of my life and voluntarie ſubiection of my ſoule, that is, &c. Enough, enough ſaid *Stela*. I vnderſtand thee too weil, and am now reſolued of my former ſuſpitions. I neuer thought that the bold preſumption of a miſerable and obſcure man could ſo far extend as to entertaine a thought ſo preiudiciall to my honor. Wherefore from this day let come who will to enioy thy poiſoned conuerſation. When ſhe had ſpoken theſe bitter wordes, with an auſtere and angrie countenance, ſhe flung from thence without any companie, and with no leſſe haſte, then the timorous virgin, that walking by ſome hedge, and treading with her fine foote vpon ſome careleſſe viper, appalled with feare, flieth with ſpeede away: The tender harted *Delicius* not able to powre foorth any complaints, as one ſtroken dumbe, remained no leſſe aſtoniſhed then the Shepherde, ſeeing the fairhfull Maſtie harde by his ſide ſtroken dead with a fearefull thunderclap, and the graſſe but euen now greene at his feete, burned by the ſudden lightning thereof. On whom I tooke ſo great compaſſion, that I could not ſtaie my teares, but turning my face to *Parthenius* to bid him helpe his fellow, I eſpied him in a ſenceleſſe trance, repreſenting more the image of a dead bodie, then the figure of a liue man, to whom it was no leſſe then death to ſee his deere friend in ſuch a plight, and woorſe then death to his decaied ſoule, knowing that he muſt nowe be depriued of the ſight of his deere *Stela*, the onely reward and comfort of all his priuate paſſions. Seing my *Parthenius* in ſuch a caſe, like a true louer I claſped my hands togither, and then opening them againe, ſaide. O diſmall day! At which very

inſtant

inſtant I caſt my ſelfe vpon *Partheniꝰ* (for when *Stela* was riſen vp to be gone, I alſo roſe vp from my place) & ioyning his pale face to mine, kiſſed him ſoftly; he (poore *Partheniꝰ*) hanging downe his head in my lappe. At the voice that I gaue, *Deliciꝰ* (awaked as it were out of a deepe ſleepe) ſighed; and ſeeing *Partheniꝰ* in like caſe, fell againe into another ſwoune, and remained in ſuch ſort as my *Partheniꝰ* did. I was a good while embracing my *Partheniꝰ* (for loue and pitie ouercame my due regarde of modeſtie) and held him in ſuch ſort as you haue heard, not taking away my face from his, but at the end crauing helpe of *Deliciꝰ*, I perceiued he ſtood in no leſſe neede of the ſame. Beleeue me (Gentlemen) if my paine might haue beene augmented, I muſt needs haue felt it by this ſecond ſight of *Deliciꝰ*: But my griefe being extreme, and nothing able to adde more torments to my tortured ſoule, I felt them not, vnleſſe it were to ſee my ſelfe all alone in ſuch a caſe. But animated by the deſire I had to helpe them, I tooke a fine aſhen diſh out of one of their ſcrips, and ranne to the riuer for ſome water, and hauing brought it, beſprinkled both their faces with it: who being therewith, and with ſhaking them, a little awaked, with a merier countenance then courage, I ſaid vnto them. What faintnes of hart is this yoong Shepherds? Yee are but yoong Apprentiſes (it ſeemes) in *Cupids* ſeruice, ſince you will giue him ouer at the firſt encounter by leauing your liues in his hands. But faine would I know *Partheniꝰ* (for then I imagined nothing of his ſecret loue) what made thee ſo much beſides thy ſelfe (for the cauſe of *Deliciꝰ* his griefe, and of his ſudden traunce I know well enough.) What, did *Stelas* ſharpe anſwere touch thee ſo neere? No, anſwered *Partheniꝰ*. What was it then, ſaid I againe? *Partheniꝰ*, who would not for all the world haue manifeſted the loue he bare to *Stela*, anſwered: bicauſe I ſaw my deere *Deliciꝰ* in ſome danger, whoſe chiefeſt deſires and their full accompliſhment I rather wiſh with greater content, and in higher degree then mine owne. It greeued me not (Gentlemen) to heare him ſpeake this, for now had the impatient worme of iealouſie begun to gnaw my throbbing hart. I beleeue thee ſaid *Feliſmena*, but knoweſt thou what I thinke of all theſe matters, and contentions that thou haſt tolde, That thou wert the onely gayner, ſince thou enioyedſt ſo pleaſant (though ſo ſmall a time) being in ſuch ſort as thou wert with *Partheniꝰ*. By our virgin rights I ſweare to thee (ſaide *Crimine*) that I would rather haue beene depriued of that delightfull being with my *Partheniꝰ*, ſo that I had beene excuſed of the great greefe I had to ſee him in ſo pitifull a caſe. For if thou haſt not tried faire Ladie, yet happily thou maiſt haue heard ſay, That a pleaſure or delight is but halfe taſted which is diſtempered by one bitter greefe or ſorrow. But leauing this aſide, will you knowe (ſaid *Feliſmena*) whereupon I haue thought? Whereon ſaid *Crimine*? On this (ſaid *Feliſmena*) muſing with my ſelfe, how thou couldeſt call the Shepherdes by their owne names, whereas thou ſaiedſt, they could not be knowen one from another for their great likenes, which cauſed thee to requeſt ſome priuie tokens to diſcerne them, which hitherto yet thou haſt not told vs. So that I conceiue not how without knowing them diſtinctly (as if the difference were now made) thou ſhouldſt name them ſo right, giuing to each his proper name. Thou ſaieſt well faire Lady (ſaid *Crimine.*) But that which is already told, may ſatisfie thy demaund. For *Deliciꝰ* alone was the man (I ſaid) that loued (at the leſt openly) without telling whom, vntill this laſt accident befell, which we by his ſpeeches, and ſo ſoone as he had but opened his mouth eaſily gathered, ſo that although we knew not them, when we came to them, yet by the manner of their talke we were afterwardes cleered of that doubt. It is well (ſaid *Doria*) And as thou

loueſt

loueſt thy ſelfe faire *Crimine*, proceede in this hiſtorie of your loue and fortune, for I am partaker of ſome of the paine, wherein thou leſteſt the ſolitarie and ſorrowfull Shepherdes. To comfort them in their great greefe, ſaide *Crimine*, I reaſoned with them with ſome apparant and conſolatorie wordes, but the afflicted Shepherdes ceaſed not to powre out abundance of teares, with no ſmall quantitie of burning ſighes: whereupon blaming them ſometimes, and ſometimes incouraging them, I endeuoured to cheere them vp, but all was not ynough to disburden them of deſpaire in that ſorrowfull place, if I had not armed them with an apparant hope to reſtore *Delicius* to *Stelas* fauour againe, by enioying it more then euer he had before, though he would not haue meanely contented him with that alone, whereof he was depriued without requeſting any more. But thinking it was now, more then conuenient time to goe my waies, I tooke my leaue of the Shepherdes, promiſing them to doe what poſſibly I could in their affaires, in the which I onely commended patience vnto them for a few daies, telling them that a hard impoſtume in the beginning could not be cured, vntill by time, and plaiſters laide thereunto, it be firſt mollified and made tender; and that in the meane while I would not with other Nymphes forget to viſit them, though not ſo often as I deſired, not to leaue *Stela* all alone, as alſo for auoiding of ſuſpicion. In this ſpace of time bicauſe *Delicius* and *Parthenius* did leade ſo ſad and vncomfortable a life, which by no kinde of paſtime could be cheered, and alſo bicauſe the vowed time of *Gorphoroſts* comming abroade was neere at hand, all our company was diſſolued. *Parthenius*, who was not onely carefull for that which touched him, but eſpecially for that which was needefull for his friend, went ſometimes walking vp and downe along the riuer bankes, and by ſinging many amorous and ſorrowfull ſonnets, practiſed to enter into familiaritie & friendſhip with fierce *Gorphoroſt*, bicauſe they might by theſe meanes (whileſt hee kept him companie, and tolde him many things to pleaſe his louing humour) without any danger continue ſtill in that forreſt; and alſo, bicauſe holding him other times with tales and diſcourſes, *Delicius*, my ſelfe and *Stela* (if *Stela* perhaps grewe afterwards to be more gentle) might in the meane time be ſecure in mutuall company togither. *Parthenius* therefore beginning his walkes in this ſorte, fierce *Gorphoroſt* came downe from a high hill, whom when *Parthenius* beheld, he ſat him downe vpon a round banke made by the water, and plaied on his Baggepipe ſo loud that *Gorphoroſt* might heare him. But ſcarce had the ſound thereof pierced his eares, when ſtep by ſtep (which any other Shepherd with running very faſt could not outgoe) he came to the riuer bankes on the other ſide: when *Parthenius* ſawe him nigh at hande, he left his Baggepipe, and taking his Rebecke, began to ſing in the praiſe of loue (for afterwards he told vs all the matter) the which, for that it made for his purpoſe, as alſo for the ſweetnes of the ſong, delighted not a litle the fierce ſhepherd, who had foorthwith paſſed to the other ſide where *Parthenius* was, if he had not feared by cõming vpon him vnawares, to haue made him run away, though he was now ſomewhat aſſured to the contrarie: when hee ſawe *Parthenius* (being ſo nigh vnto him) not once begin to ſtir, nor to leaue of his ſinging, whereon preſuming a little, he ſpake thus vnto him aloude (for the diſtance of the place by reaſon of the great riuer being betweene, & the noiſe which the waters running with great force continually made, were an impediment that he could not be ſo well heard.) So may this God be euer fauourable vnto thee (iolly Shepherd) if thou wilt giue mee leaue to come to thee, to enioy part of thy ſweete muſicke and ſongs: for by her, that hath ſole power ouer my hart I ſweare, thou ſhalt not nowe, nor at any time heereafter

haue

haue any harme at my hands. *Parthenius* hereupon made him a ſigne to come ouer, which he did out of hand, and there they gaue to each other a particular account of their liues, *Parthenius* hauing euer a ſpeciall care to conceale that, which by reuealing it, might be hurtfull vnto him. They paſſed away the time there a good while, when at the laſt *Parthenius* played and ſung ſuch things, as pleaſed *Gorphoroſts* vain, wherewith the fierce Shepherd was not onely moſt highly content, but no leſſe glad, that he had got a companion and friend, to whom he might impart his vneuen loues with *Stela*. In this ſort therefore they ſpent that day, and tooke their leaue of one another, *Gorphoroſt* requeſting him not to forget that place of meeting. While *Parthenius* was a gaining *Gorphoroſts* good will, (wherein he had ſo much profited himſelfe by his paſſing wit and diſcretion, that in his armes to the other ſide of the riuer he oftentimes tranſported him, to ſhew him all his riches and habitation) I laboured to pacifie angrie *Stela*, wherein I tooke ſuch paines, and was ſo forward, that I had put her (as it were) in *Cupids* boſome, to make her know his force and ſignory; and in ſuch ſort, that though ſhe had no force to reſiſt loue; yet ſhe encouraged her ſelfe to paſſe away her paine without diſcouering it once vnto me, being her chiefeſt ſecretarie, and deereſt friend: Neuertheleſſe I ſtudied by all meanes poſſible (by procuring *Delicius* pardon) to make her returne to her former companie and conuerſation; whereupon, when moſt of our Nymphes were on a time in ſeuerall companies agreed to paſſe awaie the heate of the daie, I ſaide vnto her. I cannot but greeue (beloued *Stela*) that for ſo light an occaſion wee ſhoulde leeſe ſo many pleaſant howers as wee were wont to haue. Truth it is *Crimine* (ſaide *Stela*) that I would faine enioy them, if they were entertained with ſuch puritie and honeſtie as at the firſt we found them: And I know not why thou ſhouldſt terme it light, when to thy ſelfe (as at the leaſt to me it ſeemed) it ſhould be no leſſe heauie to indure. What harme didſt thou get by it (ſaid I) or how couldeſt thou be agreeued that ſo iollie a yoong Shepherd, ſo wiſe, and diſcreet ſhould loue thee (I know) with ſuch apparant tokens of true and ſincere affection; whom neither *Apollo*, when he fedde *Admetus* heards, nor any other did euer excell in any thing. And how more auaileable (if not for their deſerts) were it for vs to haue their companie, to no other end, but to paſſe away the heate of theſe daies, which well thou mighteſt diſſemble, ſince in the end thy will remaines ſo free to do whatſoeuer ſhall like thee beſt. Should I conſent (ſaid *Stela*) to haue one loue me beyond the limits of chaſtitie? Why this (ſaid I) is not in thy power, bicauſe thou canſt not let it: for command *Gorphoroſt* to leaue of to loue thee, and thou ſhalt ſee how much thy deſire or command preuailes. I know it well (ſaid *Stela*) but then muſt I ſuffer him to manifeſt ſo diſhoneſt a motion to me? Thou art in the fault (ſaid I) by prouoking him firſt vnto it, as if (it ſeemed) thou hadſt no other deſire. By meanes whereof the careleſſe and ſimple louer, thinking there was no ſuch hidden deceit in thee (as with thy faire words to draw that out of his breſt, which with faſt and ſecret bonds he had encloſed there) and thinking to take opportunitie by the forehead, plainly laied open vnto thee his vnfayned and feruent affection; wherein thou wert much beholding vnto him, ſince otherwiſe (perhaps) he would neuer haue manifeſted it (by paſſing rather in the meane time great paines for feare of offending thee) vntill thou didſt firſt command him. Since it is then ſo (ſaide *Stela*) that thou wilt lay this fault vpon me, I will take the blame and puniſhment vpon my ſelfe, which ſhal be heereafter not to ſee nor ſpeake with him, nor to haue any thing to do with him, bicauſe I will not fall with him into more errours: And as for him let him taſte the fruite of his owne

boldnes,

boldnes, which punishment as it will not (I thinke) be greeuous to me to suffer, so will it not be hurtfull to him, to gather that which he himselfe did sowe: How easie a thing it is for thee (said I) I see well, but how hard it is for him, I cannot conceiue, assuring thee, that if thou hadst but seene him at that present, thou wouldst consider better of that I say, who is yet in such a case, that thou art scarce able to knowe him; with whose teares and burning sighes the hard dimonds and christall may be mollified and melted. And beleeue me *Stela*, if it had not beene for me and *Parthenius*, that did put him in some vncertaine hope, bicause he shoulde not despaire, he had before this time paied deerely for his fault, (if by doing thy command, he made a fault) though yet in the end I greatly feare me that he cannot endure very long, if thou dost stay too long from visiting him, who now requires no other thing for his onely satisfaction and content. Truely (said *Stela*) thou hast termed them wel (vncertaine hopes) for so they are indeede, and of vncertaine they shall be for euer vaine. When I perceiued her hardnes, and of what small force my perswasions were, with mine eies full of teares I said vnto her. Ah *Stela* how ill dost thou requite my great loue towards thee, how small an account dost thou make of the loue, that thou owest me, and howe ill dost thou thinke of the tender affection, which I haue euer vowed vnto thee? the reuenge of all which (if with speede thou dost not prevent my ensuing sorrow) I craue at the iust hands of our impartiall Gods. Speaking thus vnto her, and renting the fine vaile that weakely couered my amorous brests, with many sighes, and so profounde, that my breath seemed to burst my inwarde soule, I foulded mine armes, and leaning my head vpon my knees (for then I was set downe) I made strange and pitious motions with my bodie. *Stela* stoode astonished at such a sight, not knowing whereunto she might attribute so great extremes, and so was she in a great suspence, vnable to speake or do any thing, but weepe for loue and pitie (not knowing wherefore) onely thereby to keepe me companie: and a little while after embracing me, she began thus to say. My deere Sister and Mistresse, if this offence which without reason (as I know no lesse) thou hast conceiued against me, thou takest in ill part at the first, I do no lesse wonder at this new accident, that thy vnwonted teares mooue me thus to pitie. Tell me wherein I am culpable, or how I haue offended thee; and beware thou putteſt me not in suspition that thy friendship to me is stained and vnpure, when as mine hath euer beene towards thee vertuous, and sincere. For thou sayest I requite thee ill, bicause I will not see that presumptuous Shepherd. O my deere friend *Stela* (said I) how faine would I be as thou art, that I might with that libertie that thou hast, tell thee the cause of my cõplaints, or that thou wert as I am, to heare with my subiection. What reason I haue to make them, and to accuse thee. But in the end with the possibilitie that I shall attaine to, and as shortly as I can, I will tell it thee, to take away that suspition which thou hast of me, and not to conceale any secret matter from one another, an vnlawful part to our right of mutual friendship. The reason that iustly moues me to complaine of thee is, that thou wilt not go see *Delicius*, and this is for another matter then thou thinkest of, and therefore be attentiue. It is now cleere enough to thee, what great loue and amitie is betweene both the brothers, which hath made *Parthenius* feele the griefe of his friend *Delicius* no lesse then he did himselfe, whereby he is in as great daunger of his life: For when *Delicius* falling downe, had lost his colour, and was in such an agonie, *Parthenius* was in no lesse to see his friend in such a case, that thou wouldest haue thought the last period of both their liues had beene come, who had beene long since deliuered from their paines, if by some small hope

I had not reuiued them; yet thinking that either of them would be glad to liue, not for himſelfe, but bicauſe the other might liue: for both of them knew well that one of their liues could laſt no longer then the other enioyed his, ſo that denying to go ſee *Delicius*, thou leaueſt *Parthenius* in great danger. Thou wilt (perhaps) aske me, what I haue to do with the good or ill fare of this vnhappie Shepherd, by ſeeling it ſo much as I do: faine would I haue another tell thee this, but in the end ſetting all virgin modeſtie aſide with thee, ſince it lies in my power to do no leſſe, Thou muſt know, that ſince theſe Shepherds came hither for their ill (I will not ſay for mine, for though their ſight coſt me tenne thouſand liues, I cannot yet denie but that I haue beene happie) I am not able to tell thee how I yeelded to loues commaund, being forced to loue *Delicius* no leſſe then *Parthenius*; for I neuer found any thing, wherein I liked the one more then the other: with which doubt, not knowing to what ſide to adhere, I was certaine daies in ſuſpence; but afterwards knowing that *Delicius* was in loue with thee, and *Parthenius* free, I thought it beſt not to make my ſelfe ſubiect to him who was alreadie a captiue, but to the other, whoſe loue hath made ſo forcible an impreſſion in my vnarmed hart, that without him my life is hatefull to me. Thou ſeeſt therefore by this, faire *Stela*, how for that which concernes me ſo much, I wiſh ſome content to *Delicius*. It can coſt thee but a little (deere friend) to pardon him for the good that I ſhall gaine, when alſo no harme can redound to thee thereby, & the rather ſince he craues pardon of thee with proteſtation neuer after to offend thee. Thou demandeſt a hard matter at my hand (ſaide *Stela*) but bicauſe I ſee thy teares, which I cānot ſuffer to iſſue out in ſuch abundance, wherby thou doſt manifeſt the greeſe which thou feeleſt, and bicauſe thou maieſt not haue any occaſion to complaine of my friendſhip, I will do that which I thought not to do; but on ſuch a condition, that thou ſhalt neuer complaine on me againe, if by committing anie other ſuch fault, I denie *Delicius* my ſight for euer: whom I would alſo knowe, that neither he, nor any deſert of his part could obtaine pardon for ſo great a fault, if he had not procured ſo good a mediatour: for it is not my will, that for his ſake thou ſhouldſt thanke me for it. Embracing her then for this curteſie and gentle offer, that ſhe made me, I thanked her for it, and with her good leaue went my waies (imagine how glad) to ſeeke out my Shepherds, and found *Delicius* all alone, for *Parthenius* was with *Gorphoroſt*. Needleſſe it is to tell you if *Delicius* was glad to ſee me come to him with another kinde of countenance, then I was woont ſome daies before, for as I promiſed him, ſo I performed, to go and ſee him: who perceiuing now my ſignes of gladnes, ſaid vntò me. The only hope of my health, & comfort in my cares, doſt thou bring thy noble hart ſo ioyful, as thy gracious countenance ſo full of con tent? Tel me quickly, without more circūſtances, for thou knoweſt that *A good deed quickly done, is twiſe done*, although it be but one: by which words knowing him to be *Delicius*, I ſaid. To morrow thou ſhalt ſee *Stela*. What do I liue (ſaide *Delicius*?) If between this and then thou doſt not die, ſaide I. In her good grace, ſaid he? If thou wilt ſaid I. O good words, ſaid he. But thou muſt do better deedes, ſaid I. Doubt not of that, ſaid he, but that I do, and will make it the higheſt and beſt deed in the worlde to loue *Stela* my trueſt ſoule. O *Delicius* (ſaide I) how do I conceiue, that thy great loue, or the ſmall diſſembling thereof (I will not ſay ſmall knowledge) will be heereafter hurtfull to thee. Let come what will (ſaide *Delicius*) for I will rather ioy to ſuffer for louing too much (if there be any exceſſe in loue) then to bee harmed for louing too little. I will not counſell thee (ſaid I) not to loue, for it would auaile mee nothing at all: But I muſt tell thee, that it is expedient for thee not a little to diſ-

ſemble

ſemble thine affection, eſpecially before *Stela*, if thou wilt not be onely odious vnto her, but alſo depriued of her deſired preſence. By performance whereof, knowe that ſhe will make truce with thee for her part and for thine. Not for my part (anſwered *Delicius*) although I ſhould yet paſſe greater harmes by this occaſion, which cannot be greater then theſe which I haue alreadie ſuffred: But in the end ſhe hath made ſuch truce according to her will, that ſhe hath ſeemed the conquerour, ſince none is able to come to reſiſt her hand to hand. Well, well, ſaid I, time conſumeth many things, and it may be that amongſt ſo many, the anger of thy *Stela* may alſo be forgotten. God grant it (anſwered *Delicius*) but not to the preiudice of my great loue. Tell me (ſaid I) what is become of thy brother, or where is he, that he is not with thee? In faith (ſtept out *Doria* and ſaid) I was not a little woondring with my ſelfe that all this while thou didſt not aske for thy *Parthenius*, ſince thou wert ſo pained and loſt (or at the leaſt as thou haſt made ſhewe) ſo much in his loue, which made me long to aske thee the cauſe thereof. Loſt ſaideſt thou, nay rather found ſaid *Crimine*, and happie in it. But I will anſwer to that which thou haſt asked. If aſſoone as I came, I had asked for him, *Delicius* woulde haue thought, that my cheefeſt intent was to ſee *Parthenius*, and not to helpe him, which (to get the good will of both) was no good way at all. I coulde giue thee other reaſons (faire Nymph) but let this ſuffice. But returning to that I was telling, when I asked for *Parthenius*, *Delicius* ſaide, he was gone to *Gorphoroſt*, and tolde me of the new friendſhip lately begun between them both: whereof though I was ſomewhat afraide; yet I could not chooſe, but thinke well of his policie to tary the ſafer and longer time in thoſe parts. I would haue ſtayed for him vntill he had come, to haue counſelled him, how he might haue conuerſed and behaued himſelfe with that fierce Shepherd. But I muſt needs go, bicauſe *Delicius* told me, that he would not come ſo ſoone againe; for that *Gorphoroſt* was determined to ſhewe him the Iland, and the Caue where he dwelt. The next day before our accuſtomed hower, chalenging *Stela* for her promiſe, I carried her with me to the wonted place, the which a Nymph (to whoſe lot it befell that day) watched (as I ſaid) to ſee if any danger was at hand. We going on therefore that way, and *Stela* ſeeing the ſhadowes to be but narrow, ſaid: We go too ſoone, for the Shepherds be not yet come: and admit they were, it is not decent nor conuenient for vs to go before our accuſtomed howers, bicauſe they might not thinke, that being ſo deſirous to ſee them, we preuented our wonted time: If therefore (friend) thou thinkeſt good, let vs goe into the thickeſt of the forreſt here, to walke vnder the ſhades, while it is fitter time to go. I told her I was content, & bad her leade the way. But going in this ſort from tree to tree, we might perceiue in the tender barke of a great and tall aſhe, from as high as a man of more then a meane ſtature, might reach from the ground, certaine verſes written verie ſmall and cloſe togither, and comming to the ſame to ſee what they were, I began to read them as followeth.

SInce all my fortunes are ſo ouerthwart,
And ſo vnequall to my iuſt pretence,
That where dame Nature (Miſtreſſe of her art)
Did make an end to frame each beauties part,
There all my ils and ſorrowes did commence:
Anguiſh, and woes, fierce torments, griefe, and paine
With their braue force my ſoule doe ouerrunne,
That they doe worke it to their onely vaine,

As blustring windes vpon the cloudes and raine,
Or as the snowe that meltes before the sunne.

And then since that my wet and wearied eies
Were woont to be enuious once to see,
Bicause they sawe the seate, where nature lies
With all her treasures, and the chiefest prize,
Of beautie, that in all the world might be:
Now shall they onely seeke, and wish this hire
(Continually in butternes to weepe)
Now shall they burne in swelling teares like fire,
And now in lieu of seeing that desire,
My cheekes in them shall neuer cease to steepe.

Since th'absence of the Nymph, I loue so much,
Hath deyn'd to beare me company of late,
Then needes my life must languish, and be such,
That greefes and sorrowes will not also grutch
To follow absence, as their chiefest mate:
And since my Star is hid, and gone away,
Whereby my life and senses I did guide,
I cannot choose but erre, and goe astray,
And liue in senseless darknes euery day,
Finding no light wherein I may abide.

And now exiled, shall my body flie
(Since hard mishap the same did so oppresse)
But yet my soule shall euermore be nie,
And shall be neuer absent, though I die,
From the sweete body of my Shepherdesse:
And soif that my vitall powers quaile,
Or bodie die by wandring heere and there,
Impossible it is my soule should faile,
Or death or danger should the same assaile,
Accompanying her body any where.

My soule for euer doth in her remaine,
My body but for absence doth lament,
That though my wretched body now is faine
To wander heere, yet doth my loue restraine
My soule to stay, that neuer would consent:
Then (miserable body) once begin
This sorrowfull departure with no wonder
To feele with paine and greefe: And neuer lin
To waile the cruell torments thou art in,
With soule and body parting thus asunder:

You shall my drenched eies, no lesse then this,
Feele this great miserie, that greeues me soe,

Your companie heere shall not be amisse,
Since that you were the onely fault, ywisse,
Of all my troubles, and tormenting woe.
Then seas of teares begin to drowne your marge,
And weepe for your attempt so rashly done,
Let weeping be your office and your charge,
And care no more to looke so much at large,
Let it suffice, you sawe another sunne.

The intellectuall and inward eies
Shall onely haue this charge, and care to see,
And you my corporall, with mournefull cries,
Bewaile my harmes, in which no comfort lies,
Onely to you this office I decree.
And those which are impassible at all,
Shall see at length and in succeeding time
Impossible and strange things to befall,
And you, as passible heerafter shall
Weary your selues by meanes of such a crime:

For you they shall with double sight behold
That shining blaze, that braue and glorious sight,
Without the feare of hurt, and shall be bold
With great delight their senses to vnfold
On that, which did your lookes with harme requite.
They shall behold that now I am, and was
Condemn'd without the course of iustice lore,
For if I did offend to loue her as
My selfe, then I confesse this fault did passe
To make me suffer, what I can no more.

And of this thing I meane not to repent
For happen will, what happen shall, to proue
Each amorous torment I am well content,
And with good will with meere and franke consent
I yeeld vnto the harme that comes of loue.
In louing her, I doe all what I may,
Though to my minde it falleth out amisse,
I promise to forget her euery way,
And that my loue for euer shall decay,
If she would leaue to be what now she is.

Alas she cannot leaue to be the same,
A thing it is, her minde that well doth please,
Hauing no peere in cruell beauties fame:
Nor I cannot, but still maintaine this flame,
Nor t'is a thing conuenient for mine ease:
And if she said to me, with little loue,

That it were best for me to hate and scorne,
And should finde ease, if I began to proone
The same, I answere, that it doth behoone
Me still to choose the worse, to worser borne.

My piteous wordes she did condemne with fell
And angry lookes, for telling her mine ill
(Infernall greefe and to my soule a hell)
That with such cruelties she should repell
Me so, bicause I did obey her will:
She bid me tell her (O accursed day)
If that my torments were for her or no?
And if I lou'd her so as I did say?
She did commaund, Alas I did obay
Why angry then, if she will haue it so?

Weepe eies of earth O weepe, and weepe no more
My miserie, and whether it doth tend:
Eies of my soule, behold and then deplore
My wretched state, what I was once before,
And what I am, and what must be my end,
O wofull life, O poore afflicted hart,
Tell me (poore soule) how canst thou not but faile
In passions of such torments, paine, and smart?
With such a thought how dost thou not depart
And perish when no succour can preuaile?

O hapless louer wretched, and forgot,
Though happy once, and happy but of late:
To day thou diest, but yet thy loue cannot,
To day thy greefes begin their gordian knot,
To day thy ioy doth end, and happy state:
To day thy woes, and sorrowes doe appeere,
To day thy sadnes, and thy paines are knowen,
To day thy sweete content doth finish heere,
To day thy dismall death approcheth neere,
To day thy firmest loue, and faith is knowen.

What doe you now mine eies, what doe you rest?
Let out your flouds, whose streames in greefe doe swell:
For it may be, you may within my brest
Quench out this burning flame, or at the lest,
Coole this great heate that burnes like Mongibelle?
But woe is me, I striue but all in vaine
Against the streame: For golden Tagus streames
Nor Duerus flood, nor Iberus againe,
Can quench this heate or mitigate the paine,
How then my teares? Alas, these are but dreames,

And

And in such sort, bicause it doth offend
My hart, that burnes like to the smithie flame,
For it doth more increase, and doth extend,
And more it doth with sparkling flames incend,
The more that water's cast vpon the same:
And now since want of hedgrow faileth me,
And that I feele increase, not want of paine,
I thinke it best for me to goe and see,
If I can finde some other hedge or tree,
To write that there, which this cannot containe.

With the taste of this sorrowfull song I will now leaue of, which me thinkes is of great substaunce, whether the affection I beare the Shepherde that wrote it, makes me thinke so (for by the wordes thereof you may vnderstand it was written by *Delicius*) or that then the reading, and now the recitall of it, whereby the miserable estate of the poore youth was then and now represented vnto me, doth make me iudge it to be no lesse I know not: Assuring you, that then for a little I woulde not haue made an ende to read it out, though I had sought it in euery place, if the teares which fell so fast from mine eies to see the greese of so faire and vnfortunate a yoong Shepherd, had not let me. Tell me no such thing (saide Lord *Felix*) for if I thought thou hadst not as well read the other, which he saide he went to write in another tree, I would intreat thee to recite this onee againe: but we shall haue time enough (if it please the Gods) to heare out the rest. But what will you say (said *Crimine*) if I should tell you, that we neuer remembred to seeke out the other. Therein I beleeue thee not answered Lord *Felix*, for so smal care should not (me thinks) befall in women of so great respect, and in thee especially, who didst loue him with such tender care and affection. Not to deceiue thee therefore nor thy imagination (saide *Crimine*) know Lord *Felix*, that we sought and found it out. O how hast thou reioiced my hart, saide *Felismena*! but take heede heereafter *Crimine* what thou sayest: and if wee shall continue friendes, I praie thee mocke vs no more in this sort, for thou hadst not a little troubled my minde by making mee beleeue, that thou hadst not sought it out. But staie yet (saide *Doria*) for I am not of your opinion, that she shoulde recite this other song so soone as you woulde haue her. Why saide Lord *Felix*? Bicause I woulde first knowe, saide *Doria*, if it be such an one as the last, for if it be not, she did well to leaue of her tale at such a point; for it is not the condition of my palate, to remaine with an ill taste, when it hath once a good one. Verie true, said *Felismena*. What answeredst thou therefore *Crimine* to this? I haue not perhaps the same taste (said I) that she hath; so that it may be that what is sweete to her, may seeme bitter to me, or contrarie: for in tastes there is no small difference. But for my selfe I can say, that the rest to come pleaseth me no lesse, then that which is past. Then by this reason (said Lord *Felix*) thou maist tel it, which I beleeue thou wilt not otherwise choose to do with the condition that *Doria* alleaged vnto thee. Since you haue faire Ladies (saide *Polydora*) staide your selues more then I would in questions and answers, I will also propound mine. Of which I dare lay a wager you will confesse, that one of them wil seeme better to you then all the rest. And for this I wil not cal any other to be iudges, but your selues; and in faith not to appeale in any time from the sentence giuen. Thou takest much vpon thee (said *Felismena*) and more, leauing it in the arbitrement of these that

be

be contrarie to thee. Nay rather little (ſaid *Polydora*) for I know well that for your credits you dare not but pronounce it in my fauour. Tell it then to trie (ſaid Lord *Felix.*) You all take vpon you (ſaid *Polydora*) not meanely to be in loue, and prayſing (not without good cauſe) the ſong, and hauing heard *Crimine* confeſſe, that ſhe could not make an end to read it for pitie ſhe had of *Delicius*, what is the reaſon, that you haue not asked any thing what he did, or what *Stela* felt, or what impreſſion it made in her? Theſe are queſtions more woorthe the asking of louers, then to bee ſo preciſe in demaunding, if it were written or not, and if ſhee ſawe the other, or not? It would haue greeued mee (being no louer) if ſhe had not beene condolent for him, who was put in ſuch anxieties, and you that affirme it to be ſo, ſeeme not to be ſorrowfull for this paſſion; whereby it ſeemes you haue no deſire to helpe him with ſo much as a worde. *Polydora* gaue them all great delight with her friendly anger, which ſhee ſhewed in ieſt, of whom there was not anie that thought not, but that ſhe was in good earneſt, if in the ende ſhe had not laughed. Then all with one voice ſaide, that the verdict ſhould paſſe on her ſide. Euery one holding their peace to ſee what *Crimine* would anſwer to it, ſhe began thus to ſaie. Thou haſt ſo highly conſidered the matter *Polydora*, that if thy demand had come ioyntly with the queſtions of theſe Gentlemen, I would (to haue ſatisfied thine) (with pardon be it ſpoken) haue left theirs vnanſwered. And truely if loue had not required of *Stela* a narrow account of the hardnes of her hart, then thine alſo had beene without an anſwer, bicauſe I thinke you would not giue any credite to my ſpeeches, not ſeeming a poſſible thing, that where all vertues are laid vp, pitie ſhould there be wanting, in whom I aſſure you, was no more ſhewe of mercie, then ſigne of heat in ſnow: Whereat if I tooke any greefe, wiſhing the Shepherd ſo much good, for the reaſon that I haue alleadged, thou maieſt (faire Nymph) conieƈture. But I promiſe you now, that I haue no occaſion to complaine, for loue hath as well paied me for the offence, which then by her crueltie ſhe gaue me, that I may iuſtly complaine of too great pitie, which ſhe vſed towards him, ſince being ſuch, it hath beene too cruell for me in this behalfe. And for this time I will ceaſe, as well for that I wearie my ſelfe and you, as alſo for that *Felicia* and the reſt come in very good time: who comming neere vnto them, *Feliſmena* ſaide. Lay thy hand of puniſhment vpon me Lady *Felicia*, for I confeſſe I deſerue it, affirming that thy comming hath made me ſorie, & hereof I know well who is in fault. The ſame all the reſt ſaid. Say you ſo (ſaid *Felicia*) Then I ſweare to morrow you ſhall be all puniſhed for it. With this they went to ſupper and to reſt. If I ſhould ſet downe in order the braue daunces and ſongs, that after ſupper were plaied and ſung, it would be an endleſſe peece of worke. *The end of the fourth booke.*

The fifth Booke of the ſecond Part of Diana of George of Montemayor.

THe next day in the morning the three Nymphes, that were reſcued by the Shepherdes, being there when the *Sauages* ranne vpon them, deſirous to giue them all the pleaſure and contentment they could, tolde them all what *Crimine* had diſcourſed vnto them before, euen vnto that very point, where *Crimine* by *Felicias* and their comming was interrupted, which made *Syrenus* to ſay. Did *Feliſmena* then ſay it grieued her for this, bicauſe

Felicia

Felicia came? Not for any other thing, saide the Nymphes. God neuer helpe me (saide *Seluagia*) if euer I goe one foote from *Crimine*, before she haue made an end of her historie, and I hope *Syluanus*, and *Syrenus* will doe the like. We meane no lesse said they. Dinner being done, Lord *Felix*, *Felismena*, and the Nymphes desirous to knowe the rest of that which *Crimine* had begun the day before, consulted togither to get her out of the companie she was in. Which sage *Felicia* perceiuing, and what they went about, bad Lord *Felix* be content, and told them that she would doe the best to fulfill their desires. A little while after, she went from thence to passe away the time with *Parisides* and *Crimine*, and left *Stela* with them all, to tell out the rest, bicause *Crimine* could not tell that which followed, so well as *Stela*, whereof *Felicia* informed Lord *Felix*. When dinner was done, *Delicius* went as he was woont to walke vp and downe in the woods, spending those miserable daies in sorrowfull thoughts and teares. So that *Felicia*, *Parisides*, and *Crimine* being gone, Lord *Felix*, *Felismena*, the Nymphes, and the Shepherdes remained with faire *Stela*, to whome *Felismena* began thus to say. From that very instant (most excellent virgine) when first thou didst discouer to vs thy vermillion and snow white face, we cleerely knew, that for singular beautie thou didst get the prize and honour amongst the fairest whersoeuer, and till yesterday that *Crimine* shewed the hardnes of thy hart, we had not knowen, that thy exceeding crueltie deserued the palme and victorie amongst all mortall women. Renowned Ladie, said *Stela* (cutting her off) I thinke it will not greeue thee, if I answere thy needelesse wordes after a rude sort, since thou wilt giue me that but in wordes, which thou hast deserued in deede, I speake it concerning thy more rare beautie. For, as for being cruell, I denie not but that I haue deserued a reward, though I am now more worthie of a greater, for being on the contrarie so pitifull as thou seest. Thereof (said *Felismena*) we know the first, and of the seconde being ignorant, doe vs therefore the fauour to rid vs out of this false opinion of thee. All of them with one voice likewise charged her with the same demaund. For many respects, said *Stela*, I cannot (woorthy companie) denie your earnest requests, for one, bicause I was commaunded thereunto by sage *Felicia*, to whom I owe all obedience and respect of dutie: for another, to fulfill your commaunds, which I will not disobey: and for the third, bicause I take a pleasure in recounting mine owne passions, to trie if with the greese which I shall haue in telling them, death will deliuer me once from them; which though for this respect I chiefly desire, yet life is pleasant to me, onely for no more, but to enioy the sight of my yoong Shepherdes, to whom (mine honour reserued) I haue sacrificed my deerest libertie. Other reasons I omit that mooue me to satisfie your mindes. And now bicause you are informed to that point where my deere friend *Crimine* left, from that I will take my beginning and proceede vnto the present estate that we are now in, aduising you by the way, that I durst neuer open my mouth with such boldnes to tell you of my loues, if of mine owne part there had euer beene the lest staine or thought of impuritie in them. The which thing affirmed as well by *Crimine*, as by that which I will rehearse, shall soone appeere. And as I will also tell you (which my companion could not, but that which she did openly see) what I did, and spake with my selfe alone, so cannot I report vnto you what she or the Shepherdes did, or spake, when they were by themselues alone. And if I shall tell you any thing that I haue not seene, it shall be after their owne report to me. Giue eare therefore, for now I begin.

Crimine could scarce pronounce the words of the song written in the tree, and recited by her, for pitie of *Delicius* (which we knew well by the tenor of it to be his

his) for if they had held out longer, she could not haue made an end of them, but hauing read them, she said. Woe is me, how different are they in mind that are so like in face (for now you know how *Crimine* died for the loue of *Parthenius*, and how she had told me it) *Delicius* burnes in loue, and *Parthenius* is cold in the same. Me thinks it were good, that both of them should loue like faithfull companions, or that *Stela* and I like good friends should hate. O *Stela* thou mightest well agree with *Parthenius*, who in condition of cruelty is so like vnto thee, and shouldest forsake *Delicius*, so like to me. I assure you Gentlemen, that the pitifull verses that *Delicius* wrote in the tree, penetrated deepely into my soule, but the words that were fixed in *Crimines* sorrowful breast, mooued me without comparison to more ruth. The perswasions that *Crimine* oftentimes vsed to me, to induce me to loue *Delicius* were of great force, but this last was so strong, that it wrought more effectually with me then al the rest. *Delicius* his singular parts, and the rare deserts of *Parthenius* were of great worth with me, by noting how worthie they were to be beloued; but the iealousie I had of *Crimine*, perceiuing how glad she was to be beloued of either of them was more forcible in my minde. O loue, loue, how iustly do they paint thee like a blind boy, thy conditions being no other! For a boy with a broken pate, that will not suffer his head to be bound vp in a clout, but seeing the same tyed to another boies head, cries out for it: So was it with me and *Crimine*. I reiected the loue of the Shepherds, but knowing that *Crimine* loued them, I died for their loue, and wept in my inwarde soule that *Crimine* was so much deuoted to them. But marke my dissimulation, for to that, which shee saide I aunswered thus. To this last (my sweete friende) which thou hast alleaged (for as much as toucheth mee) thou maiest well agree, not onely with *Delicius*, but with his friend, if thou wilt. This is not well (saide *Crimine*) that thou hast yet so much libertie to graunt me such leaue, but in the end, I am well content to take it: for I loue not *Delicius* so little, that I would do him such iniury, neither do I see him so enclined to yeeld to my loue again. And I see no reason (said I) why I should not giue thee leaue or any body else in this respect: let vs leaue this (said she) & go if thou thinkest good whither we were determined. Come on (said I) let vs go whither we must, not whither we should, for the sooner we go, the sooner we shal come back again. Being therfore come to our wonted place, we found the Shepherds merrie for the hope they had to see me, wherein I deceiued not my selfe, for if it was not so, I am then sure I was well deceiued, though somwhat sorrowful also for my long staying. We therefore comming before the faire Shepherds, a certaine feare possessed both their bodies, no otherwise then if some fearefull and ghastly thing had suddenly appeered before their sight, so that it caused a notable trembling in euery part of them. *Crimine* went on sixe steps before (it might be to bid *Delicius* take courage and a good hart) and afterwards spake out aloud to them saying. By force (my friends) I bring this my companion hither to establish a louing peace betweene you and her. *Delicius* would haue answered, but *Crimine* fearing least his loue woulde haue made a fault in something, cut him off, following her speech thus. For confirmation whereof, there is nothing more requisite, but that without remembrance of that which is past, we returne againe to our former pastimes. Truth it is, that I will not disswade *Delicius* from asking her pardon, whom he hath mooued to anger, and her I beseech by the faith of our friendship not to denie the same. Then saide *Delicius* by and by, his eies full of teares, and his knees on the ground, not onely for the offence committed, but if in any thing I shall heereafter offend her, with all humilitie I aske her forgiuenes. If so

for

for nought (ſaide I) a fault ſhould be ſolde, it would be held but for a ſport and paſtime in lieu of ſatisfying your wils, to giue occaſion of anger, howſoeuer by redeeming it onely with pardon craued and obtained. So that truſt not to this Shepherd: for the ſecond ſhall not be forgiuen thee ſo good cheape. Wouldſt thou haue him liue ſo preciſely faire *Stela*, (ſaid *Parthenius*) and in ſuch continual feare, that he dare not onely ſpeake, nor ſo much as breath for feare of offending thee? I coulde not chooſe but laugh at *Parthenius* words, and at the countenance wherewith he ſpake them: To the which I anſwered thus. Gracious thou art in ſooth iolly Shepherd, that art ſo ready to helpe thy companion, I do not meane it ſo extreamely, as thou ſaieſt, he vnderſtands me well enough: I imagine as much ſaid *Parthenius*, but am not ignorant, that thou art rigorous, and that in this ſort we are both in an ill caſe, if for ſpeaking perhaps or doing a light thing ignorantly, one ſhoulde not be pardoned. If ſo ſmall faults are ſo heynouſly puniſhed, howe can the greater eſcape vncorrected? Wherefore ſet downe this lawe (if thou wilt at the leaſt be accounted iuſt) that the puniſhment exceede not the fault, putting the fault and the puniſhment in an equall ballance of moderation: We are more bound to our Gods for mercy, which they ſhew vs, then for their iuſtice, whereby but a little they profite themſelues. Tell me then faire *Stela* (as the Gods preſerue thee ſtill in thy ſingular and rare beautie) if euery time that men offende, high *Ioue* ſhoulde ſende downe his thunderbolts, howe manie doſt thou thinke ſhoulde hee finde vnarmed? I impute it not Gentlemen, to any pride, arrogancie, or neceſſitie of mine owne part, if lying, ſometimes I ſay (faire *Stela*) which are formall words of Shepherds, and commonly vſed of them, which beſides (although I might well leaue vnſpoken) yet could it not be well ſuffred, bicauſe they are not without myſterie. It is well (ſaid *Doria*) let it be as thou wilt, and tell on, for we will not ſtay our ſelues vpon ſo apparant a matter as this. I anſwered *Parthenius* (ſaid *Stela.*) That the errour committed is well manifeſted, but after what ſort ſhall the ignorance thou ſpeakeſt of be cleere vnto me? But I ſee thee *Parthenius* ſo free in thy ſpeeches, and bitter in thy reprehenſions, that I ſhall be forced with my will, yea, and for very feare, to do ſomething for thee. *Parthenius* without more adoe humbled himſelfe with *Delictus*, who was all this while at my feete, for of purpoſe I would not bid him riſe, deſirous to ſee them both equally yeeld themſelues vnto me, bicauſe I equally loued them both, and being in this ſort, he ſaid. If it be then ſo, I beſeech thee pardon him, ſince he craues it on thee with ſo great humilitie. I am content (ſaid I) and taking them both by the hands, I lifted them vp, which when I had done, *Crimine* ſaid. Tell me *Parthenius* how fals it out, thou art not with thy friend *Gorphoroſt* to day? *Parthenius* anſwered, bicauſe I knew faire *Stela* would come hither to day. And not bicauſe I came, ſaid *Crimine*? Thou haſt no cauſe to aske me this queſtion (gracious Nymphe) anſwered *Parthenius*, ſince thou art aſſured, I would do it no leſſe for thine, but onely bicauſe faire *Stelas* preſence was ſo much deſired, by reaſon of theſe paſſed diſcontents. One thing I haue marked, ſaid *Crimine*, whereof I ſhould not be a little aſhamed, if there were any other heere beſides *Stela*, that thou doſt call her euermore (faire) and me (gracious.) Thou maiſt vrge me ſo farre ſaide he, that I may confeſſe my ſelfe ouercommed. Friend *Crimine*, ſaid I, their faults cannot take away the due praiſe of thy beautie, ſo that if thine were deemed by right and indifferent iudges, it ſhould euer haue the prize and ſuperioritie. And whom ſaid *Crimine* ſhall we appoint for ſuch iudges? My ſelfe ſaid I, and thoſe, whom thou wilt beſides, that are of better iudgement and skill, then theſe Shepherdes. Why, what ſaieſt thou,

ſaid

ſaid *Crimine*? I anſwered, that which I ſaid. This ſufficeth me, ſaid *Crimine*, and now I care not a whit for that they ſhall ſay, ſince the ſentence is giuen with a better vow and voice in my fauour. In theſe and other ieſtes (which I omit to tell you, bicauſe I know you are deſirous to heare the other ſong) we ſpent a pretie time, wherein, after we had ſung ſome merie and ioyfull ditties, we heard the ſound, that the Nymph our watch woman gaue, to hie vs home, becauſe *Gorphoroſt* was comming downe the hils beneath; whereupon with the greateſt haſte we could, we hied vs away before he began to paſſe ouer the riuer: Who by chaunce eſpying vs, with humble requeſts began to perſwade vs not to flie away, ſince it was not his mind to offend vs in any thing: To whoſe bootleſſe ſpeeches, hating him for mine own part as much as I loued the Shepherds, I would not abide to liſten; though *Crimine* requeſted me to ſtay a pretie way off, to ſee what he would ſay, and if offring to come neere vs, he would not go backe, with warning him to the contrarie, we might then be gone, and ſaue our ſelues, being in ſo ſure a place as then we were. But I, that had no deſire to condeſcend to *Crimines* requeſt, with my company entred no ſooner into our riuer, when *Gorphoroſt* came on the other ſide where my deere Shepherds were. To whom he ſaide. *Parthenius* (which of you two ſoeuer he be) although by thee, your likenes was ſo fully made knowen vnto me; yet I thought it was not ſo great, that it might trouble mee from knowing thee againe. Nowe I confeſſe, that I cannot tell, which of you two is *Parthenius*. Speake therefore to mee both of you, and by your voice I ſhall diſcerne that, which by your countenaunce and apparell I cannot. Then they ſaide both togither: I am *Parthenius*. If I had not ſeene you both mooue your lippes (ſaide *Gorphoroſt*) I woulde haue thought it had beene but one voice. Do me therefore this pleaſure to ſpeake each one by himſelfe, and then by that meanes I ſhall knowe you. *Delicius* ſpeaking firſt ſaid. I am *Parthenius*, doſt thou not know me? *Gorphoroſt* ſaid yes, and that very wel. Then ſpake *Parthenius*, and ſaid. I am *Parthenius*, doſt thou not know me? Now, ſaid *Gorphoroſt* I know not thee, nor the other. But which of both ſoeuer thou beeſt, for the friendſhip betweene thee and me, I pray thee ſing thoſe verſes, which thou didſt ſing the firſt time I ſawe thee, for I neuer remembred to demand it ſooner at thy hands, and when I heard thee firſt ſing it, I could not vnderſtand them well, being both ſo farre aſunder. *Parthenius*, who (as you knowe) deſired to giue him all the content he could, taking out his Rebecke, began to ſing this Sonnet which he had made of purpoſe, bicauſe with patience he might ſuffer the diſdaine that I did beare him.

A Sonnet.

IF teares we ſpill by louing, and bereaue not
Our harts of troubles, which for loue we faine not,
Dainties they are of loue, which we obtaine not,
Dainties they are of loue, which we conceiue not:
If that by louing paſſions we deſire not,
And ſighes for loue, wherewith we doe complaine all,
Dainties they are of loue, which we diſdaine all,
Dainties they are of lone, which we require not.
The falſe ſuſpects to be of all eſchewed,
The ielouſies of euery Miſtreſſe mooued,
Dainties they are of loue not well aduiſed:
To faine not, without why, not to be loued,

To

To thinke not, without cauſe, not to be viewed,
Dainties they are of loue of all deſpiſed.

O how glad would I haue beene, ſaid *Syluanus*, to haue heard this Sonnet, when I poured out ſo many vaine teares, and had ſo many diſfauours of ingratefull *Diana*. What comfort couldſt thou haue had, ſaide *Syrenus*, ſince his purpoſe and intent doth maruellouſly import, that they are the pleaſures and ioyes of loue, to faine (without any cauſe thereof) that they are not loued, ſo that to vnderſtand, that they are not loued (hauing good cauſe to beleeue it) they ſhould be no ſweetes nor dainties of loue. Whereupon perceiuing ſo cleerely that *Diana* did not loue thee, thou ſhouldſt haue had but ſmall comfort by this Sonnet. I perceiued well enough, anſwered *Syluanus*, that I was deſpiſed, but yet for all that, would not conceiue, that I knew ſo much. It is well ſaide (ſaide *Doria*) talke no more of times that are gone and paſt, ſince both of you are content with this, that is preſent. And thou faire *Stela* for the loue of vs all proceede in thy ſweet diſcourſe. In many other ſongs (ſaid *Stela*) they paſſed away a good time with fierce *Gorphoroſt*: and now that *Titan* went downe to viſite the other earth, he tooke his leaue of them, requeſting *Parthenius* to come and viſite him ſometimes, promiſing him, that when he came to paſſe ouer the riuer, he woulde not faile to come and helpe him ouer. That night I ſlept not ſoundly in my bed, nor with much reſt, for ſo manie imaginations of things that I had paſſed the day before, & of many other more, ran vp and down in my troubled fantaſies, that I could take no reſt at all. For I thought of the goodly behauiour, graces, and beautie, and perſonage of the two Shepherds, each thing in them ſeeming to me (being not men of flockes as I ſuppoſed) more woorthie of greater things then my ſelfe. The ſorrowfull wordes of *Delicius* ſong written in the tree, filled me full of pitie, and the frantike iealouſie that (rooted in my hart) I had of *Crimine* for *Parthenius* ſake, ſtung me mortally. On the one ſide I endeuoured not to loue, and was vnwilling on the other, that any ſhould loue them beſides my ſelfe. In the trouble of which conſiderations hauing a good while turmoyled my wearied ſpirits, at the very point when faire *Aurora* began to awake, a profound ſleepe began to take more holde on me, then in the whole night before. I dreamed, but will not tell you what, bicauſe I deſire to forget it: let it ſuffice, that th'extreme fear of ſo horrible a dream awaking me, eaſed me in ſom ſort. Seeing my ſelfe free from that danger, as if my bed had beene in fault, the onely cauſe of my ſorrowe, and full of ſtinging vipers, and fierie flames, with a ſudden feare I lept out of it. At the noiſe whereof *Crimine*, who lay with me, awaked, and enquiring the cauſe of my ſurfault, I anſwered her, that it was nothing but a ſtarte in a fearefull and vnacquainted dreame: which ſhould not be a ſmall one (ſaid *Crimine*) ſince (my friend) it hath altered thee ſo much, that there is no colour left in thy face, but ſuch as in dead & pale bodies; and thine eies ſwelling with teares, not yet fully aſcended vp to iſſue foorth, ſeeme to burſt, for the great force and deſire they haue to weepe. It was ſo ſaid I, for I would haue thought they had opened my breſt. *Crimine* with a gracious ſmile (who is no leſſe in all ſhe doth) began to ieſt a little with me, and vnlacing my bodie, & looking into my breſt, ſaid. Truely thy dreame hath not ſhewed thee any thing contrary to the truth, for it is open, and hath beene to receiue into it there all poſſibilitie of beautie. And yet if thou wilt giue me leaue, I will tell thee more. She had little neede to aske me leaue, that tooke it of her-ſelfe ſo frankly to tell me what ſhee did. But tell me what thou wilt (ſaide I.) Although thy breſt, ſaid ſhe is open, yet hath *Delicius* his more open to receiue thee in. But rather thine

ſaide I, to locke vp *Parthenius* in it. That would not greeue me, ſaid ſhe, if this might be truely affirmed of thee and him: but knoweſt thou what is come into my minde, that we ſpent too ſhort time yeſterday in ſeeking out the reſt of the ſong, that was written in the tree: Why, what remained, ſaid I? This would I know ſaide *Crimine*. Doſt thou not remember that the laſt verſe of it ſaid, that bicauſe that tree was not able to containe any more, he went to write it in ſome other tree. It is true indeed, ſaid I. Now haſt thou come, ſaid *Doria*, to the point, which we all deſired to know: but *Stela* ſaid on, As thou loueſt thy ſelfe therefore (ſaid *Crimine*) let vs goe a little ſooner to day, and we will ſeeke out the place, where he wrote the reſt, and to reade againe that, which we found yeſterday. Let it be as thou pleaſe, ſaid I. And ſo with this determination we went betimes to the place where we had beene the day before, and began againe to read the ſong, that we had read, but not without manie teares, where by and by not far from thence, we found out a great Sicamour, whoſe tender and white barke ſerued him for paper, for this which he wrote in it.

Ah well away how firme and ſuer ar
Torments, and paines in each true louers hart:
For when I thought, that I did wander far,
And changed place, this fierce and amorous war,
And wounding greeſe would from my ſoule depart.
Yet now in fine by proofe too well I knowe,
That greeſe, and ſorrowes, abſence doth not kill,
As ſome doe ſay; but makes them more to growe:
And wit ſo deerely bought with double woe,
Is bought (I needes muſt ſay) againſt my will.

I goe from place to place, and neuer yet
My haunting greeſe, and cares doe goe away:
I am ſo diuers in my wandring wit,
That in one place I neuer reſt, nor ſit,
Yet ſtill the ſame are ſworne with me to ſtay.
My fainting legs my drooping bodie beares
From place to place, and yet fierce paine ſuſtaines,
It is ſo ſeaſoned with my ſwelling teares,
That ſince my Life of late my loue forſweares,
All comforts that I offer, it diſdaines.

My cruell paine, wherewith my life is ſpent,
I would contemne, and would but little make,
If that my Miſtreſſe would in minde conſent,
That I ſhould beare this ceaſeleſſe puniſhment
Onely for her for her moſt ſweeteſt ſake.
But that which makes ſo wide, and deepe a tent
Of greeſe within my hart, and makes it die,
As often as I thinke how ſhe is bent,
Is, that to that ſhe neuer will relent,
Where remedie, nor any helpe doth lie.

After that loue so strong and firme a fort
Had built within my brest, vnto his minde,
Louing, a death I rather would support,
Then now to liue after another sort,
Or for my selfe in libertie to finde.
For speedie death I knowe must be my fate
With such a life, as now I doe endure,
With mine owne handes to end this hard debate,
To cruell death I will set ope the gate,
And in my brest will lodge it most secure.

Who doubts that if but once she came to knowe
My greeuous paines and passions which I feele,
But that to me some pitie she would showe,
Though in her brest, where pitie yet may growe,
She had a hart harder then any steele.
Who doubtes, if that she did but knowe the smart,
Her louer feeles, his plaintes and endlesse mone,
But that she would with milde and gentle hart
Pitie his case, although she had each part
Of it, as hard as craggie Dimond stone.

Orpheus, when descended into hell
For faire Euridice his wife, and past
The triple-headed-dog, that did not yell
Nor barke, the Fiends that in Auernum dwell,
Made not so milde, at his sweete sound agast,
As my tormenting passions, and my paine
Would mooue the hardest hart to heauinesse,
And euery hart in all the world againe,
And not without great reason, nor in vaine,
But that of my most cruell Shepherdesse.

Ah woe how haue I thus deluded beene?
How haue I liu'd deceiued in this art?
Since that so simply I did ouerweene,
That there could be no difference betweene
Her fairest face, and her most cruell hart.
What man betwixt the cope of heauen and hell
Is there of wit so simple and so slender,
That could but thinke, or once imagine well,
That such a hard, and cruell hart could dwell
In such a daintie bodie and so tender?

What humane wit (O greefe that I doe see it)
Would euer thinke that crueltie possest
Her hart, or such a Tygresse hart to be yet
Placed in her, whose outward shew to me yet

Should

Should promise peace, and in so milde a brest?
Who would haue thought (it almost was in vaine)
That from her toong, distilling honie drops,
So fierce an answere should proceede againe,
And wordes she vttered with so great disdaine,
Bittrer to me then gall, or wildest hops.

And, that I am deceiued in this ground
Of my faire Nymph, I ioy with all my hart:
Bicause I would not thinke, there could be found
In so great good a thing, that should redound
To so great ill, and to so bad a part.
It shall be therefore best for me ywisse
Not to suspect in her so foule a crime,
That she is hard, or that she cruell is,
But my mishap, that euer went amisse
Euen from my birth-day to this very time.

Bicause my paines should neuer be aboue
My ioies, and care before my sweete content
Should come: I am most constant in my loue,
Sans widowhood, like to the turtle doue,
That losse of her companion doth lament.
In liuing, and in louing too amaine,
I thinke I goe beyond her euery howre,
But yet I am not like to her againe,
In that I did not first a sweete obtaine,
Before I tasted of a bitter sowre.

All that my wofull minde should recreate,
The water, that is christall pure and cleere,
I cannot choose, nor otherwise but hate,
Bicause I would not see so bad a state,
And such a hapless body wander heere.
Like as the snake, or adder that doth bite
I flie, with hastie foote, and doe not stay
In any place, where greene may giue delight,
For this doth leese his hew, and vigour quite.
Where hope begins to faile and to decay.

If musing all alone by chaunce I stay
Vpon my greefe, that smallest ioy denies,
And see some spring or fountaine in the way
I flie, and softly to my selfe I say,
Let that suffice, that runneth fro mine eies.
And if in taking some poore little pleasure
(If pleasure in a hapless state I take)
And view the greene, the countries hope and treasure,

I flie, and say, that hope of death must measure
My minde with ioy, that doth my pleasures make.

According to my life in great disgrace,
And miseries, euen from my mothers wombe,
I thinke (and as I am in such a case)
That if I follow death with happie pace,
Death will not yet vnto my succour come.
I thinke sometimes (alas weake is my might)
To giue my selfe some comfort and some rest,
But they doe flie from me by day and night,
In me (poore wretch) they can take no delight,
And so my paines doe double in my brest.

It wearies me (for greefe doth euer range)
To be so long together in a place:
Yet my vnwearied greefes doe neuer change
Their place, but still my seldome ioies in strange
And cruell manner from my brest doe chace:
Heere stay my song, and tell the world my smart,
And let this tree with thee haue neuer end,
For with me shall my haunting greefe depart,
For it will neuer leaue my wofull hart,
Like to a trustie good and faithfull friend.

Lord *Felix*, as soone as *Stela* had made an ende of the song, turned him to *Polydora*, saying. Art thou now satisfied? So much said she, that for a little I would not sticke to say that it is better then the first. But knowest thou, what I thinke of it said *Syrenus*, That the first is finer & pretier, & this more sententious & witty, & with this I am pleased: and it came finely in when he said (& very wel) that first the ill came to him before any good, since without widow-hood he suffered like griefe to the Turtle Doue; for he esteemed it but a meane sorrow to be a widower, bicause it was a signe of sometime enioying the thing he loued. But it seemed a most greeuous thing vnto him, not hauing at any time the possession of the thing he loued, to be depriued of it. Truely said *Felismena*, thou art much beholding to him *Stela*, being so hard vnto him as thou wert, to cleere thee of all fault; and that none might be laid vpon thee, he said: Thou wert not cruell, onely attributing his disgrace to his ill fortune. But in one thing (said *Doria*) he shewed his infinite loue, more then in any thing else, when he said, he rested not in any place. I might well haue noted something said *Syluanus*, but that I would not hinder so pleasant a discourse. Tell on therefore faire *Stela*, as the Gods graunt thee thine owne desires. Hauing made an end of reading this, that was in the Sicamour (said *Stela* prosecuting her tale) neither of vs could speake for a good while, *Crimine*, for pitie, and I, for greefe. But afterwards *Crimine* said. Dost thou thinke *Stela*, that I had not reason to helpe thy great need? What had become now of *Delicius*, if thy rigour and hardnes had lasted till this time? That which is now (I answered) and if any other thing had happened, I would not haue greatly cared. Say not so (said *Crimine*) for therein thou dost offend thy self. After this we went to the accustomed place to the Shepherdes, bicause we thought

it was no time. And being there in their ſweete and gracious company, my companion ſaid. I am euer, when I am with you my friendly Shepherds, not a little troubled in minde. They asked why ſo. Bicauſe to know you diſtinctly ſaide ſhe, ſome outward token and ſigne muſt be apparant, whereby I may know how to make a difference betweene you: whereas otherwiſe, I am as much deceiued, and know as little as they that haue frequented your companie leſſe then I; for if I turne but my head, I returne to the ſelfe ſame doubt, if (happily) in the meane time you haue chaunged places. For the cleering whereof, and for the friendſhip that is betweene vs, I pray thee, *Stela*, giue one of them a token, whereby we may know how to be aſſured of either of them, and not need to be troubled any more with this doubt. If thou haſt then ſo great a deſire (ſaid I) what needeſt thou require this at my hands, but that thou maiſt do it as well as I. Thou knoweſt now ſaid *Crimine*, that it was firſt demanded of thee, and if it had not beene, it might ſuffice, that I requeſt it againe of thee. I deny not this ſaid I, but aſſure thee that of this great likenes and deceit, which troubles thy minde ſo much, I take great pleaſure. And it was ſo indeed: for as I loued them in equall ſort; ſo my deſire was to haue them, not onely like in their exteriour ſhewes, but all one in their interiour ſoules. I ſay as touching my ſelfe (ſo that I knew it) bicauſe I was then far from knowing the loue that *Parthenius* did ſecretly beare me, and not onely deſired (as I ſaid) to haue them ſtill like to one another, but that in truth they had beene both one. It muſt not euer be to thy liking (ſaid *Crimine*) for it muſt ſometimes pleaſe mine a little. Let it be as thou wilt, ſaide I; and chooſe ſince it makes ſo much for thee. Good Lord (ſaide *Crimine*) how frowarde art thou *Stela*? Heereafter I will not requeſt thee to doe any thing, I will be gone, and tarie thou heere if thou wilt; if not, doe what thou wilt, for I knowe not nowe to what ende it will come. Staie, ſtaie, ſaide I: Goe not away, and bee not ſo angrie, for all ſhall bee done to thine owne deſire. In faith if it were not for theſe yoong Shepherdes ſakes (ſaide *Crimine*) I thinke thou ſhouldeſt ſee me no more heere. If then the matter be ſo, ſaid I, harke but one worde that I ſhall ſay vnto thee, and taking her aſide I ſaide vnto her. I would not by any meanes in the world giue more fauour to one then to the other, by giuing one a ſigne and the other none, leſt his wings (to whom I giue it) growe bigger then the others. Thou muſt therefore either giue me ſome time to thinke of it, or elſe counſell me how I muſt doe it. The wings to ſerue thee (ſhe anſwered) are now growen in *Delicius*, ſo that to him onely thou maieſt giue thy fauour; for as *Parthenius* will not care for it ſo much at thy handes, ſo it likes me beſt that thou giueſt him none at all. *Crimine* thought not by ſpeaking theſe wordes, that ſhe did cut me to the very harr, but God knowes how much I felt them, yet diſſembling the matter the beſt I could, I anſwered. Though it likes thee not, yet will I giue to *Parthenius* his difference, as well as thy ſelfe, and I was not then in ieſt. But when doſt thou meane, ſaide ſhe, to make this difference betweene them? To morrow I anſwered. Shepherdes, ſaide *Crimine* alowde, turning to them, The difference that *Stela* will giue you with her owne hands, and the meanes how we ſhould know you, is deferred no further then to morrow. When it ſhall pleaſe her, ſaid they, for no other thing durſt they ſpeake. Being come thither the next day, I ſaid vnto them. My friends Shepherdes (for this name I cannot denie you, as long as your deſires reach not beyonde that, which is lawfull) although I haue beene vrged by my welbeloued friend to giue you ſome token of difference with mine owne hands, wherby we may come to the better knowledge of you both; yet of mine owne free will, by leauing her requeſt aſide, I meane

to

to doe it. I deferred it yeſterday to this preſent hower, to thinke on it the better, and in what manner I ſhould giue it you without ſhewing any particular affection more to one then to the other; and as with equall loue I am ſoundly affected to you both, ſo was your great likeneſſe moſt agreeable to my minde. But as that which is iuſt and due muſt not be denied, ſo will I in ſuch ſort giue you the markes of your difference, to ridde our ſelues out of doubt, and hold al others ſtill in it. And therewithal, you are not your ſelues (I thinke) able to iudge, when I know not my ſelfe, whether of you ſhall haue the greater fauour (if it deſerues ſuch a name) and bicauſe you may know, that partially I decline no more to one part then to another, vntill I haue made the ſame, I will not haue you make your ſelues knowen vnto me by worde nor ſigne, by diſcouering to me which is which, but that the lot may fall to whom it ſhal; and none refuſe or gainſay that which I ſhall now do, vnleſſe he will refuſe and hazard my good will from hencefoorth. When I had ſaid thus, I tooke out of my boſome a little greene ribband, and put it with a bodkin in one of their coates neere to his hart; and then I went to the other, and clipping from him with a fine paire of Syſſers which I brought of purpoſe with me, a peece of darke greene lace from that part, where I had put the greene ribband in the other, I ſowed it on mine owne left ſide not farre from the ſecret ſeate of both their loues: Whereby I meant to giue them to vnderſtande, that to the one I gaue hope, and from the other I tooke torment. Which being done I ſaide. Nowe may you declare to whom I haue giuen the greene ribband, and from whom I tooke the little peece of lace. Then it was euident, that to *Delicius* I gaue the firſt, and tooke the ſecond from *Parthenius*. Nowe that they had declared their names, and were knowne vnto vs, *Delicius* being glad and ioyfull for the gift giuen him by mine owne hand, with a certaine kind of merines ſaide. Now doth the cauſe come to my remembrance (faire *Stela*) why *Crimine* hath beene ſo importunate with thee to make a difference betweene vs: O how glad would I be to know this, ſaid I, bicauſe I could neuer get it out of her. If thou wilt craue leaue and pardon of her (ſaide he) for me to tell it, I would quickly giue thee this contentment. Bicauſe ſhe may haue it (ſaide *Crimine*) it pleaſeth me to graunt it, though it were to my coſt. Thou muſt then knowe ſaide *Delicius*, that though it hath beene the greateſt fauour, that we haue receiued at this preſent (as a gift of thine owne hands) yet that which was done to *Parthenius* in compariſon of this was moſt ſingular and great, being of greater qualitie in that kinde. And this it was, that when thou ſhewedſt ſuch rigour to me, *Parthenius*, to ſee mee in ſuch an agonie (as gracious *Crimine* thou knoweſt) was ſo much diſmaied, that he was in no leſſe danger then my ſelfe. For as I ſpake not a worde, but lying in ſuch a pitious trance, wherein he equally bare me companie, at laſt comming to my ſelfe againe, and turning my head aſide to a certaine crie that *Crimine* gaue, I ſawe her embrace *Parthenius* (a happie extaſie for him, ſince it was the occaſion of ſo ſweete a fauour done him) and holde his head face to face in her owne lappe. If any other thing paſſed betweene them, aske it of her, for I could ſee no more by reaſon of my late diſmaied ſences, not then perfectly reſtored. What thinkeſt thou of this faire *Stela*, what a ſoueraigne pitie was this? This he ſpake with a gracious ſmile, and had no ſooner made an end of telling it, when a vermillion bluſh teinted al our faces, though it proceeded of different cauſes. It made *Crimine* bluſh with a decent ſhamefaſtenes, mingled with ioy of ſo delightfull a remembrance. It made *Parthenius* bluſh for greefe and anger at the paſſed act; and me for iealouſie, incorporated with the offence of ſo vnworthie a deede againſt my loue. So that *Delicius*, thinking to make it but a

ieſt,

ieſt, and to delight vs with it, found that it was in good earneſt, and filled vs full of ſorrow, and from that hower *Parthenius* and I liked not ſo well of *Crimine*, though we made her not know ſo much; for ſhe was the meanes whereby we all three met and talked togither. Truth it is that now I haue forſaken the ill will that I did beare her, for diuers and ſundry good turnes, which I receiued of her; and ſeeing what great reaſon there is to loue them (as euery faire Nymph ſhoulde likewiſe doe) for mine own part I giue her leaue & frank conſent to loue them as much as ſhe will: as alſo, bicauſe I ſee her not beloued of them, or (at the leaſt) not ſo much as my ſelfe, although in very truth (had they as perfect knowledge of her deſerts as they might haue) they woulde neuer denie to do it. But leauing this aſide, wee paſſed awaie manie daies there, which laſted vs not ſo long as wee woulde, for the great content that then wee beganne to take in each others companie, which for mine part, I would not haue chaunged for any other mortall delight, and deſire in the whole worlde. In all which time neither Rebecke, nor Bagpipe were heard, vnleſſe it were when other Nymphes came: for when true louers are alone, ſinging (I thinke) and muſicke pleaſeth not their muſing minds ſo much as the mutuall contemplation and looking of one another; and that talking and amorous conuerſation ſhould be more pleaſant and ſweete to them, then the melodie of ſweeteſt muſicke. I cannot tell you by what meanes, but *Delicius* loue to me came to the knowledge of fierce *Gorphoroſt*, which made him beleeue no leſſe, but that I muſt needs loue him againe, ſince with meeting euerie day, we entertained the time in diſcourſe and paſtimes: whereupon being not a little enraged, he purpoſed, if *Delicius* deſiſted not from it, to execute his furie vpon him; which he had done indeed, but that he ſtaied his hands (as he ſaid) bicauſe he would not giue me any occaſion of offence, and was loth to leeſe the cõpany of *Parthenius*, & alſo bicauſe indeed he could not know him from his friend *Parthenius*, leaſt thinking to be reuenged on *Delicius*, he might hurt his friend *Parthenius*. Wherefore to cleere himſelfe of this doubt, one day as *Parthenius*, according to his woonted cuſtome, went where he was, he ſaid vnto him. I vnderſtand my friend *Parthenius*, that thy brother *Delicius* doth loue *Stela*; which thing, if it be not more bitter to me then the wilde Olife, I leaue thy iudgement, ſince ſhe is the onely Goddeſſe, to whom my ſoule is ſubiect, and I the onely man that can deſerue her. Of one thing thou maieſt be aſſured, that had it not beene for thy ſake, I would long ſince haue made him leaue ſuch follies, or elſe felt the hardnes of my ſheep-hooke. He might haue conſidered, if he had any wit, that he goes about to be a Corriuall with him, who makes no reckoning of the Gods, if there be any at all. Aduiſe him therefore to leaue that to me which is worthily mine owne; if not, tell him that by my iuſtice he ſhall be puniſhed, and not without reaſon. And bicauſe it is not my will that the great likeneſſe which is betweene you, might preiudice or harme thee; take this ſheepe-hooke, which for ranſome of a iollie yoong Shepherde, I had of a faire and gracious Shepherdeſſe, the which carrying euer in thy handes, I may knowe thee for *Parthenius*. If thou doſt meane *Gorphoroſt* (ſaide *Parthenius*) any harme to *Delicius* my deereſt brother, begin firſt with me, which ſhall I promiſe thee leaſt of both greeue me: But bicauſe thou maieſt knowe they haue not tolde thee true, I ſweare vnto thee by the Gods, whom I adore, and by her, whom I loue more then mine owne life, that *Delicius* loues *Stela* no more then I do. For her I cannot tell thee, if ſhe loue him or not (and he ſpake in truth in the one and other.) The Sheepehooke thou giueſt me, as an impious gift for ſo vile an effect, I refuſe to take, if by taking it, I thought thou

wouldeſt

wouldeſt giue it me to the intent to knowe vs one from another. But yet bicauſe I know it is not ſufficient for ſuch a purpoſe, I wil take it, bicauſe it ſhall not ſerue thee to that end that thou pretendeſt, when as *Delicius* ſhall carrie it as often as my ſelfe; for by carying it, and not carying it, thou maieſt not knowe which of vs is *Delicius*: whereby thou maieſt cleerely perceiue if his life be deere vnto me or no? *Gorphoroſt* was amazed at the great loue that *Parthenius* did beare *Delicius*, but beleeued it was not ſo great in deeds, as in words he ſhewed it: wherefore he anſwered him thus. Behold *Parthenius*, I haue warned thee nowe for the great friendſhip that is confirmed between vs: for ſurely I make more account of thee, then thou thinkeſt, bicauſe thou art onely he, by whoſe meanes I finde with imparting my greefe vnto thee, ſome eaſe in theſe my extreme paines. But if with this intent thou wilt take the Sheepehooke of me, I am not content to giue it thee, nor for the woorth of it (for I would giue thee more then this) but bicauſe none of my things ſhoulde come to *Delicius* hands. Of one thing thou maieſt be aſcertained, that loue hath taught me how to know him, and then thou ſhalt ſee, how my deſpiſed counſell ſhall auaile to ſerue him more, then his owne deceitfull opinion. With this *Parthenius* came away very ſorrowfull and full of melancholike thoughts, not knowing what was beſt to bee done in ſuch a caſe. On the one ſide, he ſawe it was dangerous for *Delicius* to be there; on the other, he knew it was impoſſible for him to abſent himſelf from me. He conceiued by that which he found in himſelfe, the irrepugnable force of *Cupid*, and conſidered (by that he knew too well) the vnbrideled furie of cruell *Gorphoroſt*. But if they were deſirous to kill him, they thought it impoſſible, vnleſſe it were by treaſon, which rather then they would haue done, they woulde firſt haue loſt a thouſand liues. That very euening at Sunne ſet, all wee fower ſitting vnder a leaſie Sallow tree, fierce *Gorphoroſt* came out of his caue, and by and by was on the top of a high rocke, that hung ouer the riuer, right ouer againſt that place, where I threw my ſelfe into it, when I fled from him. Who after hee had ſit downe a little while, and laid his ſcrip by his ſide, and his Pine tree betweene his legges that ſerued him for his Sheepehooke, ſtaffe, and weapon, he tooke a Flute out of his ſcrip, made of a hundred Baggepipes, ioyned togither with waxe. Putting it to his mouth and blowing it ſtrongly to cleere it of filth within, the hils reſounded againe, the riuers ranne backe, the wilde beaſts and fiſh were ſtroken in a feare, and the forreſts and woods thereabouts began to tremble. And a little after that, he began to ſing the moſt amorous ſong of me that euer you heard, which I promiſe you had pleaſed me well, if he had not made ſo cruell an ende of it. For with cruell compariſons, borrowed of the fieldes and Shepherds, he ſtrangely praiſed my beautie, and made me (on the contrarie) moſt cruell, by offering mee ſuch things afterwardes as hee thought fitteſt to win me moſt of all vnto him. But to ſee howe he prooued himſelfe faire being ſo fierce, it is a pleaſant ieſt. By that which moſt of all thou loueſt, ſaide *Seluagia*, I pray thee faire *Stela* recite it, if thou doſt remember it, which if it like not (perhaps) theſe Gentlemen (a thing different from their eſtate) ſhall woonderfullie delight vs, if they will do vs ſo much pleaſure to lend vs a little patience to heare it, bicauſe it is fitteſt (thou ſaieſt) for countrey Shepherds. No (ſaide Lord *Felix* and *Feliſmena*) but ſhe ſhall do vs as great a pleaſure, to ſee what ſo fierce a Shepherd could ſaie, louing this faire damſell ſo much, whom ſhe hated more. How can I denie your requeſts, ſaide *Stela*, being ſo brauely coniured? Giue therefore attentiue eare, for I promiſe you it will pleaſe you well.

Stela

STela mine onely Goddesse, and my good,
Whiter then is th'vntrodden snowie way,
And redder then the rose, but late a bud
Halfe blowen, and pluckt with deaw by breake of day:
To see more gracious then the Plane tree shape,
And sweeter then the ripe and swelling grape:
More pleasant then the shade in sommer time,
More then the sunne in winters coldest prime.

More fresh then any coole and trembling winde,
More noble then the fruit, that orchards yeelds,
More iocund then the tender kid, by kinde
When full, it skips and runs about the fields:
More flowrie then the rich and pleasant meade,
With painted flow'rs in mids of May bespred:
More soft then spotlesse downe in Cygnets brest,
More then the milke, and cheese curds yet vnprest.

More shining then cleere christall and transparent,
And finer wasted then the Cypres tree,
Straighter then is the Poplar eminent,
Placed amongst those trees that lower be
More cleere then ice, or any frozen raine
And (if in onely this thou dost disdaine,
Bicause it is with more perfection filled)
More faire then any Orchard that is tilled.

And yet with this more fierce and more vnstaied
Then Bull, that yet was neuer tam'd with yoke,
Prouder then Peacocke with her taile displaied,
Harder then old and knotty sturdie oke:
More then the rocks immooueable, and madder
Then angrie snake, or cruell trodden adder.
More furious then the swiftest streames: then thornes
More sharpe and pricking with thy singing scornes.

More deafe then is the sea, to my desires:
Then smoothest streames more full of deepe deceate,
Stronger vnto my paines then greatest fires,
More cruell then Beare, that giues the teate:
Then Sallow wand, or Osier that is weake,
If it be greene, more hard and tough to breake.
More contrarie vnto my ioy, and rest,
Then hungrie woolfe to tender lambkins brest.

And that which doth increase my cruell paine,
And doth reuiue my hot and flaming fire,
By knowing which, it hath my comforts slaine,

And hope, whereto in thought I mought aspire,
Is, that thou art not onely swifter then
The Hart pursude of hounds into his den,
But swifter then the swiftest blowing winde,
Swifter then time, then thought within the minde.

Suer I am, if well thou hadst me knowne,
(Stela my life) from me thou wouldst not flie,
Or sometimes yet from me if thou wert gone,
Thou wouldst returne without my call or crie:
And if thou didst stay there but somewhat long,
Then wouldst thou thinke thou didst thy selfe great wrong:
I knowe that this will greeue thee at the hart,
To see me passe for thee such paines and smart.

A Caue, that doth containe the better part
Of this great hill, hewen out of quarrie stone,
Serues for my rocke, the which is of such art,
That there the Sommer sunne is neuer knowne,
Nor winters cold is felt within that place,
But apples there doe hang in maruellous grace
Hard by the ground, that shade in hottest weather,
And loade the boughes, they hang so thicke together.

Clusters of grapes doe beautifie my vines,
Some golden, purple red, all faire and full,
Of part whereof I make most daintie wines;
And part of them I keepe for thee to pull:
And with thy hands most delicate and faire
Gather thou maist ripe plums by goodly paires,
Vnder the shadowes of their boughes to ease thee,
And Apricocks, and cheries if it please thee.

Heere haue I damsens, nuts, and coloured peares,
And peaches fine, that would each eie inuite:
And euery tree, and fruit this Iland beares,
All for thy seruice, pleasure, and delight:
And as my hart to please thee I haue bowed,
And so haue these the selfesame office vowed:
In Autumne (if thy husband I might bee)
Chestnuts, and Medlars I will keepe for thee.

As many flockes as heere thou dost behold,
Which in these banks I feede with mournefull song,
And many more within these hils vntold
And woods and vales estray, to me belong:
Many that lie in shades along this coast,
All which to tell were but a labour lost.

For

For pooreſt men they ſay, are woont to keepe,
The number of their cattell and their ſheepe.

The praiſes which, I vaunt vnto thee heere,
I will not thou beleeue in any ſort,
Thine eies the ſame ſhall witnes very cleere,
If ſo thou pleaſe, and not my bare report:
I durſt be bound, that if thou can'ſt to trie,
Thou wouldſt affirme I told no tale nor lie:
Since that to milke them all I am vnable,
Or eaſe their bags, truſt me, this is no fable.

I haue likewiſe ſhut vp in ſhadowed places
(All by themſelues) great ſtore of gentle lambes,
And little kids, with ſpotted skins and faces,
Of equall age new weaned from their dams:
In many other houſes large and wide
Great ſtore of wanton calues I keepe beſide,
And milke doth flowe within my caue, whereby
My cunning in this manner I doe trie.

Profit thereof in diuers ſorts I make,
Leauing the thinneſt of it to be drunke,
Some part of it within a charne I ſhake,
And beate it there a while till it be ſhrunke:
Some part againe for tender cheeſe I dreſſe,
And into that, iuice of an herbe I preſſe.
And yet ſome part whiter then Ermins skin
I turne to curdes, and put ſome creame therein.

Yet will I giue thee greater giftes then theſe
(If thou doſt reckon theſe but poore and ſmall)
Wilde boares, and goates and bucks ſhall be thy fees,
Conies, and hares, and hounds to hunt withall.
Two turtle doues I tooke out of their neſt
In bignes, colour, and in all the reſt
So like, that them hardly thou ſhalt deſcrie,
Although thou marke ſt them with narroweſt eie.

I tooke them from that tree in yonder ground,
For thee to play withall when thou art wearie;
Two little whelpe beares after this I found
And brought them home to ſport and make thee merie:
Both theſe and them I nouriſh to delight thee,
If thou but with thy comming wouldſt requite mee:
And finding them I ſaid I would reſerue them
For thee my Stela, who doſt beſt deſerue them.

Come

Come Stela then out of thy watry brooke
And see how I am staying for thee heere,
To my request vouchsafe a gracious looke,
Calling vpon thee with most heauie cheere:
Yet thy disdaine (as I hope for the best)
Will not deny my pitifull request,
When that thou know'st my wealth without compare,
My selfe of person nimble, stout and faire:

I did behold my selfe not long agoe
Within a fountaine cleerer then the skie,
I view'd my selfe from top vnto the toe,
And without doubt my person pleasd mine eie:
Your Iupiter, and euery heauenly creature
Enuies my stature, and my comely feature:
Your mightie God, to whom you sacrifice,
And honour so, whose Godhead I despise.

Behold againe what curled lockes of haire
Falling vpon my shoulders, and my face,
And goodly beard doth make me seeme so faire,
And to my person giues a manly grace.
Thinke that my body is not foule therefore,
Bicause of bristled haire it hath such store.
Foule is the tree when Autumnes course bereaues
Her boughes of fruit, of greene, and comely leaues.

How lookes the horse that hath no crest, or maine,
Nor bushie taile to grace his body foorth;
How lookes the hauke that hath no wings, nor traine,
Faire is the wooll of sheepe and mickle woorth.
The man lookes bald that hath no comely beard,
And as with sprites he had beene lately feard:
Then foule I am not with my beard, and haire,
Since with the same I am more perfect faire.

Besides all this I come of no base blood,
For God Syluanus is my noble Sire:
Thy father he shall be, if thou thinke good;
Then pitie me, and graunt me my desire:
Harke then to me, scorne not to see my paine,
Let not my sighes and teares be spent in vaine:
Onely of thee, and humbly I doe craue
Of this poore wretch some pitie now to haue.

I which doe scorne the furious thunder blowe
Of Iupiter, and other Gods despise,
Thee, Stela, for my Goddesse I doe knowe,

And come to thee with humble weeping eies:
More then his bolts thy anger makes afraid,
And pearcing eies my ſenſes haue diſmaid:
Thou doſt deſerue more honour, praiſe, and loue,
Then Iupiter, *or all the Gods aboue.*

It would not halfe ſo much haue greeu'd my hart,
That thou my loue ſo ſtrongly didſt denie
(Being ſo faire, and ſuch one as thou art)
If (as from me) from others thou didſt flie:
But ſince Delicius *(wherein thou doſt erre)*
Before ſtout Gorphoroſt *thou doſt preferre,*
His ſmall imbracements, and too far vnmeete
Thou loueſt more, then mine ſo great and ſweete.

But let him ſwim in ſeas of his delight,
And with thy fauours let him now preuaile:
If time, and place be graunted to my might,
Soone will I make him ſtrike his puffed ſaile,
Soone ſhall he feele my ſtrong and ſinewed arme,
And how it will his amorous ſenſes charme:
O greefe, that time and place doe not affoord,
To make my deede as currant as my word.

If, with my handes his tender trembling fleſh
I will diſhiuer, and in mammocks teare,
And then his bones in peeces I will threſh,
And in the forreſt, caſt them heere and there:
And dye the riuers with his blood I will,
And throwe his members from this ſteepie hill
Into thy lap, where, laughing, I will ſtand
To ſee, if there he ioyneth hand in hand.

O woe is me, that thus tormenting greefe,
And wrath doth make my toong to goe awrie:
O thoughts, that feele no hope, nor hope releeſe:
In Aetnas *flames I liue, I burne, I die:*
I burne (O greefe) and die, thou wilt not end
To ſuccour me, that am thy louing friend.
If thus thou handleſt thoſe, that languiſh for thee,
How wilt thou thoſe intreate, that doe abhor thee?

Gorphoroſt hauing caſt theſe vaine complaints into the aire, roſe vp and like a mad Bull, from whom the yoong heyfer hath beene taken away, vnable to take reſt in any place, with monſtrous skips went downe the hill along into the Iland, whoſe paſtorall ſong pleaſed vs well, and the gifts he offered to bring me to his loue, and eſpecially how he made himſelfe ſo faire, if he had not concluded it with ſo cruell menaces. Stay a little if thou loueſt me (ſaide *Syrenus*) for I cannot but note one thing

thing in this song, which hath pleased me woonderfull well. And what is it (said *Seluagia*) that makes thee interrupt so pleasant a discourse as this? I will tell you, said *Syrenus*, and promise you, it will not please you all: for it inueighed delicately against women. How so, said *Felismena*? I will tell you, answered *Syrenus*. For in how many comparisons he fitly made of white and red, gracious, and fine, he neuer made any exception, thinking thereby he greatly honored *Stela*, and that she was glad to be compared to those things: but when he said she was faire, he spake that with a certaine kind of reuerence and pardon, saying. And if thou dost not disdaine it (more faire then a tilled orchard) wherein he thought he offended her, bicause in onely being faire, he iudged, that women with their wils would admit no equalitie nor comparisons. But let them iest with you in what they will else, beautie must be a religion not timorously touched. And now passe on faire *Stela* in thy narration. Euerie one laughed at *Syrenus* words, and Lord *Felix* said. It seemes well Shepherd, thou art free, since of thy selfe thou takest leaue to say what it pleaseth thee. To take this strife from you, said *Stela*, I will tell on.

Parthenius being afraide, as well for the resolute furie wherewith hee made his threats, as also for that which he saide to him the same morning, not knowing what to do, nor how to inuent a remedie in such an exigent, oftentimes busied his wits to seeke out some one or other. But casting many doubts in such affaires, and thinking with himselfe what remedie he might finde out for *Delicius* auaile, not respecting what might befall to him, hee resolued to doe that which you shall nowe heare. Staying on a night (as he was woont) for *Gorphorost*, and being passed to the other side of the riuer with a merrie and smiling countenance, contrarie to the meaning of his minde, he saide thus vnto him. As I haue beene carefull about thy affaires, so knowe friend *Gorphorost*, that I haue perswaded thy Corriuall to leaue of his loue to *Stela*, the which not able to compasse, I haue obtained thus much of him to sweare to mee to forsake this countrey, and to absent himselfe from her. Whereupon hee onely requesteth but eight daies respite for his departure, the which he praied me in his name to craue of thee: So that thou maiest now well giue me thy Sheepehooke; for heere will I staie alone with thee in these parts, and in thy companie. *Gorphorost* being very glad to heare these newes that *Parthenius* brought him, thinking that if *Delicius* were gone out of the way, he might the better obtaine his purpose and my loue, went by and by for the sheepehooke, and hauing brought it, gaue it him. Then *Parthenius* said. Behold *Gorphorost*, since it is thy will to haue him depart, and me to staie, thou shalt sweare to mee to doe me no harme in the world; & bicause thou maist vnderstand that it is I, I haue requested the sheep-hook of thee, the which thou shalt continually see me carrie about with me: and if thou pretendest any other matter, not obseruing the lawes of holy friendship, vnfold to me thy inward thoughts, and I will also depart my selfe. O goe not hence my *Parthenius*, answered *Gorphorost*, for I swear to thee by *Stela* mine only Goddesse, that now, nor at any time hereafter, thou shalt haue no hurt at my hands, nor by my procurement. *Parthenius* satisfied with this agreement & oath, went to put that in practise, which he had purposed in his minde before (you shall hereafter see what his intent was hereby) but when he found not *Crimene*, nor me with *Delicius*, bicause we were now gone from him, he kept it till another day, when we were altogither. But as we failed not at our accustomed howers, *Parthenius* brought forth the sheepe-hooke which *Gorphorost* gaue him, the verie same that now *Delicius* hath, and which you did but lately see at the fountaine of the Laurell trees, and saide. Before I make ma-

nifeſt my determination vnto you, I will firſt haue you ſee what a faire gift *Gorphoroſt* hath giuen me, though his intent was far different from mine: But bicauſe with the reſt, you ſhal alſo heare this, looke vpon it wel, & tel me your opinions, & then I will tell you more. Then we three comming neere togither, bicauſe he had viewed it well before, looked vpon it verie earneſtly, euerie one of vs caſting our eies vpon that which pleaſed vs moſt. We would not haue left looking once and twiſe againe vpon the curious ſheepe-hooke, although we turned it not a few times about, if we had not a greater deſire to heare what *Parthenius* had promiſed to tell vs. Who, when he ſaw vs expecting what he would ſay, began thus to ſpeake vnto vs. Since the pitifull baniſhment of vs from our deere and natiue countrey is ſufficiently manifeſt vnto you (moſt ſoueraigne Nymphes) and likewiſe the cauſe of our amorous ſtaying in theſe parts, it would ſeeme but time ill ſpent and tedious to make repetition of the ſame againe. I will not ſay that my tarrying here to this preſent time hath beene onely commaunded by the requeſt of my deere *Delicius*, for that your ſweete company and ſight was ſufficient to haue forcibly detained here a worthier perſon then my ſelfe. But that which I minde to tell you is, that as to this hower my being here hath beene perhaps conuenient; ſo from this day forward my departure is needfull, and in ſuch ſort that (all affection laid aſide) you would iudge there is no other poſſible thing for our auayle. Whereof bicauſe you may not be in ſuſpence, and of my late determination, if with attention you will giue eare vnto me, the inexcuſable neceſſitie of my intended departure ſhal be cleerly known vnto you. You are not ignoraunt of the odde and inconuenient loue of fierce *Gorphoroſt* with thee faire *Stela*, nor of the euen and proportionable loue, or of the ſound (to ſay better) and perfect affection of *Delicius* with thee againe faire *Stela*. But loue that diſcouers all things, hath ſuggeſted into the fierce Shepherds eares (as by his ſong you might well perceiue) that he hath for riuall (if it may be ſo ſaide) my deere brother. If he grieued thereat, your ſelues haue heard him ſing it on the top of yonder rocke: and being in his company that ſame morning before, I heard it from his owne mouth, where he ſaid vnto me, that he purpoſed to be reuenged on him, and onely for the great loue and friendſhip he bare me, proteſted that he deferred the ſame. But now not able to ſuffer it any longer, and not knowing by what meanes to be auenged of his aduerſarie, without executing the puniſhment on me, for the great likenes betweene vs, and for auoiding the harme that might come thereof, he gaue me this ſheep-hooke, bicauſe by carrying it, he might know me from him, the which for that it was offered me for a cruell act, I then refuſed: but afterwards ſeeing his great rage, by ſtudying out a good meanes for both our auailes, I tooke it. And this was my deuiſe, I told him that *Delicius* by my counſell and perſwaſion would go his waies; ſo that he might giue me the ſheep-hooke, whereby he might know that I remained ſtill in this countrey. For which departure I craued eight daies reſpit, which he willingly graunted me. Now therefore it behooues me to go ſeeke out my Father, with whom or without him, within a certaine time I will returne hither againe, where *Delicius* in the meane time may ſtay in my place, and viſite *Gorphoroſt* in my name to diſſemble the better with him; whom before I will aduiſe, and acquainte with all that I haue paſſed with him, becauſe hee may thinke it is I. This did *Parthenius* ſaie with ill vttered wordes, for the greefe of taking his leaue of *Delicius* and mee, whome hee loued ſo much, woulde not let him frame them any better. None of vs three had then the courage, to anſwere any thing to *Parthenius* wounding wordes, for the great greefe that wee conceiued of his ſud-

den

den departure: but after wee had all helde our peace a good while, *Crimine* with watred eies (for then she had not the power to dissemble the great loue she bare him any longer) saide. It is now no time, my friend *Parthenius*, by my forced countenance to dissemble the inward paine and greefe of my hart, if hitherto by deedes and demonstrations thou wilt not vnderstand and see how much I loue thee, by wordes therefore at this present let it be cleere vnto thee, That I loue thee, and louing thee more then mine owne life, determine to goe in thy companie (at the lest with thy consent) if thou wilt not carie me with thee, or else with mine owne hands (if not with thine thou wilt not) resolue to giue me my mortall stroke of death, which shall be more glorious and acceptable to me, then giuen by my selfe when thou art gone. Then she being as it were cut off from her boldnes, with a tainted blush and a sorrowfull sigh, held her peace. To whose amorous wordes *Parthenius* wisely answered thus. *Stela* had scarce begun *Parthenius* answere, when *Felicia* with the companie she brought with her came, saying to *Felismena*. Dost thou not thinke that I haue fulfilled that which I promised thee yesterday, by comming hither to day at the woorst time? Yes indeede good Lady, saide *Felismena*. But why must we pay for that, saide *Syluanus*, which she hath eaten: bicause we must pay her something for her companie, saide *Felicia*. But more for your sakes then *Felismenas* I will be gone, for I came to no other purpose but to accomplish my word, and hereupon she went, they remaining still that were there before. Then *Stela* said.

But harke what *Parthenius* answered to *Crimines* words. I am not able to iudge, deere Nymph, if thy ill fortune be greater by hauing placed thy loue in so miserable a man; or my mishap greater, by not hauing libertie to giue thee the like againe. On the one side I would gladly satisfie thy desire, and haue on the other no power to doe it: yet I will not denie to doe thee this pleasure to carie thee with me, whereby I should not gaine little, if I thought not to doe faire *Stela*, and my brother *Delicius* an ill turne: her, by bereauing her of so sweete companion; him, by depriuing him of her, by whose meanes he hopes to be remedied, whereas thou knowest how ill it would fall out for him with thy faire companion when thou art absent. I was not a little glad to heare him with such modestie take an occasion to forsake *Crimine*, bicause my life molested with the secret iealousie I had of *Crimine*, depended (me thought) vpon his answere to her againe. And so turning to *Parthenius*, I saide. For mine owne part, good Shepherd, I thanke thee for thy good will thou hast to doe me so much honour, by not consenting to carie away with thee my friend *Crimine*: But for that which I owe her, and wherein I am bound to thee, and for the content of both, I agree thereunto, though it be to mine owne cost: wherefore denie not what she hath with such earnest affection requested. But before thou answere me to this, I must needes tell thee that (it seemes) thou hast taken more leaue, bicause thou art going away, then was reserued, by taking so boldly vpon thee to speake for thy friend *Delicius* beyond the due limits of chastitie, and common friendship, which were promised me. But I will pardon thee, as I said, bicause thou art now but a ghest, who are allowed to doe and say what they list. But yet I would faine knowe who it is that hath taken thy libertie from thee, as thou saiest, no doubt the onely impediment to make thee condescend to the amorous request of my friend *Crimine*. If thou thinkest (saide *Parthenius*) to haue me so obedient to thee as my friend *Delicius*, by satisfying all thy demaunds (pardon me faire Nymph) thou art much deceiued. This selfesame thing didst thou aske him, which cost vs all deere, how much more then hauing no cause to aske it, when it can serue thee to no purpose. One thing thou

maiſt know, that ſomething thou muſt not know. To that which thou replieſt to me of gracious *Crimine*, I haue now anſwered. *Crimine* not able to ſuffer theſe wordes any longer, with teares trickling downe her cheekes, and without ſpeaking a worde went her waies. *Delicius* went after her to comfort her, and telling her that *Parthenius* was not yet going, promiſed to requite the good turne in like manner as ſhe had done to him, by regaining *Stelas* loſt fauour: with hope whereof being ſomthing cheered vp, ſhe went her waies. And in the meane time I ſaide thus to *Parthenius*. How faine would I (*Parthenius*) not haue thee go thy waies, and as greatly deſire that *Crimines* teares would not mooue thee. For the firſt I thinke there is no remedie (ſaid he) bicauſe I deſire it more then any can imagine: and for the ſecond thou needeſt take no care, in that thou commandeſt and I muſt obey. I knowe thou wilt not go (ſaide I) without ſpeaking to me. No, anſwered *Parthenius*, for that were not poſſible. Why then God be with thee ſaid I, for I cannot leaue my companie. And with thee, faire Nymph, ſaide he. Stay a little ſaide *Feliſmena*, for I muſt needs tell thee, that (in faith) thou didſt *Delicius* great iniury by neuer fauouring him halfe ſo much, as thou didſt *Parthenius* at that time; whereupon thou wert enclined (it ſeemes) more to him, then to *Delicius*. Impatient iealouſie was the cauſe heerof, anſwered *Stela*: But harken on, for I was not heerein one whit behinde hande with *Delicius*, who deſerued much, bicauſe by a moſt amorous paſſage which enſued, he ſhewed an euident proofe of loue and humilitie: For after I had taken my leaue of *Parthenius*, and going ſomewhat in haſte to ouertake *Crimine*, I met *Delicius* by the way, comming backe from accompanying her: who when a pretie way off he eſpied me in ſuch haſte, before I came to him, ſaide. If I may not offend thee, I beſeech thee, (ſoueraigne Miſtreſſe) when thou commeſt nigh mee, not to paſſe by in ſuch haſte, bicauſe I may thinke that thou flieſt not from me, if not, thy will be done. Truelie ſaide all of them, it was highly conſidered of him, who well deſerued to be rewarded, but let vs heare what thou didſt anſwere, or do in hearing theſe words. With a ſoft and ſlowe pace, ſaide *Stela*, I came to him ſaying. Thy requeſt, being ſo reaſonable and modeſt, I cannot chuſe but grant, as all ſuch beſides, that fauour of vertue and honeſt meaning (touching thy ſelfe) I will neuer diſobey, and will not onely go ſoftly bie, but ſtaie with thee as much as thou pleaſeſt, ſo that I may conueniently ouertake *Crimine*. I ſpake all this of purpoſe, for as he iudged (perhaps) that I ſhewed *Parthenius* loue, by the words which I vttered when I departed from him, (wherein I would not haue preferred him before *Delicius*, ſince in loue and affection I did not) I therefore endeuoured to make him not imagine any ſuch matter at all. Who in his owne iudgement not able to requite ſo great a fauour, fell preſently downe on his knees (though I did the beſt I coulde to hinder him) and taking my hand betweene both his, with great humilitie kiſſed it. Maruelling at ſuch a ſudden part, and knowing that ſuch preſumption proceeded of deepe loue, with patience I ſaid vnto him. Though for this bold attempt thou deſerueſt puniſhment, yet I will not giue it thee, bicauſe I will not giue thy brother an occaſion to be offended with me, by ſaying that I can pardon nothing. *Delicius* came to himſelfe again, & ſeeing that his boldnes had put him in no ſmal hazard to leeſe me, he had ſuch a colour for ſhame and feare, that it did not a little augment his braue beautie, which I noted too well. Wherefore to encourage him, I ſaid. Art thou content? *Delicius* anſwered. O my ſweete Miſtreſſe, I, but that I cannot thanke thee ſo much as I would, and with this I will ſtaie thee no more. Both of vs being gone from one another, I made haſte after *Crimine*, and he to *Parthenius*, who paſſed many ſweete and amorous ſpeeches

ches togither vpon his friends departure, bicauſe *Delicius* would not conſent thereunto; but when he perceiued that he woulde needes go (by reaſon of the imminent danger that they were both in, if he had ſtaied longer then the time prefixed) he would not alſo agree vnto his departure without his companie: But in the end being ouercome by *Parthenius*, though much againſt his will, he yeelded to his determination. In this meane while, beleeue not Gentlemen, that we were idle on the other ſide, for we were thinking of *Parthenius* bitter departure, *Crimine* complaining ſomtimes before me of his cold affection; and ſometimes comforting herſelfe with *Delicius* promiſe, with which ſpeeches and imaginations we went to bed. The hower being now come, when all mortall creatures take reſt, and *Crimine* lying by her ſelfe ſole, and ſolitarie to her owne thoughts, what ſhe ſuffered and talked ſoftly to her ſelfe, I know not, but what I paſſed, my ſelfe can tell you. For thinking that my bedfellow was aſleepe, and the candles being put out, and alſo the ſilent darkenes of the night (a faithfull friend to thoughts and fanſies) ſeruing my minde ſo fitly, diuers and ſundrie things were repreſented to it, which being well grounded in my breaſt, I began thus to ſay to my ſelfe.

What God hath brought theſe two new Shepherds into theſe parts, to make ſuch an alteration in me? What, am not I ſhe, whom the onely thought of a man was woont to offend? What great content then doth the thinking of theſe two yoong Shepherdes giue me? Am I not ſhee, who delighted ſo much in hunting of beaſts and birds: Why do I then hunt now after thoughts and vanities? Am I not ſhe, that of mine owne free minde offered my ſelfe vp to *Dianas* ſeruice? Why with my will then muſt I become a bond-maide to *Venus*? Hence hence from me ſuch an vnſeemely fault. O pardon me *Delicius*, and *Parthenius*, for yet I cannot chooſe, but do that which you both deſerue. O Gods, what a virgin colour is in their yoong and ſweete faces, adorned with that little haire vpon their vermillion and tender cheekes, what beautie, what mildneſſe, what diſcretion? I thinke truely they muſt deſcende from ſome linage of the Gods, if they bee not ſuch themſelues, wherein my ſurmiſe (I knowe) is not vaine. The God *Hymen* not beeing hatefull to mee, I coulde perhappes ſubmit my ſelfe to this onely fault. But I beſeech the Gods, the earth may firſt ſwallowe mee vp, and *Iupiter* with his thunderbolt ſmite me to the mournfull ſhades of *Acheron*, and perpetuall night, before I violate thee (O chaſtitie) or breake thy holy bondes. The chaſte minde that euer I haue borne, ſhall accompanie me to my graue. But I know, it offends me not by thinking to which of both I ſhoulde encline, if my firme intent ſhould turn to any ſide? which of them both excels the other in diſpoſition, feature, and beautie, to loue the one more for that, and forſake the other for this I cannot diſcerne; who are ſo like, that if they themſelues beheld one another, they could not knowe the one from the other. Great is the goodnes of *Parthenius*, for euen to the hazard of his life he offered it for ſafetie of his friend. What wittie and readie anſweres for *Delicius*? What wiſedome to make my companion helpe his, and me not to forſake him, and that fierce *Gorphoroſt* might not hurt him? *Parthenius* in the end deſerued well my loue, but yet (I thinke) he goes not beyond *Delicius*, who needed not the fauour of his brother to helpe him, and could no doubt haue done no leſſe then he. And though he neuer had occaſion to ſhew the ſharpnes of his wit, his pithie wordes, and wittie anſweres (from the which he was cut off from the very beginning) yet how cleerely by all his ſweete ſongs and ditties that he made, did he manifeſt it? What verſes did he carue in the tree, or rather in my hart, how modeſt,

by

by refraining (not to offend me) to ſpeake of that, which concerned him moſt. O God, and what great reaſon haue I then to loue him ? But who beleeues not that *Parthenius*, if he had alſo loued me, would not haue done as much. Alas then for me, to whether of them ſhall I incline ? Muſt *Delicius* be deſpiſed, bicauſe he loues me, and for deſiring ſo much my loue againe ? Muſt I conſent that he die, bicauſe he deſireth to liue with me ? Muſt he be guerdoned with vnworthy death for ſo high a deſert of his great loue ? O hapleſſe *Delicius*, I would I had neuer ſeene thee, or thou not caſt thine eies vpon me ? Thou well deſerueſt my loue, if I had not vowed chaſtitie, and if my importunate deſtinies had not threatened me with marriage. But muſt *Parthenius* be reiected bicauſe he loues me not as *Delicius* doth ? For this he is more woorthie to be admitted into my loue. It imports but little that he loue mee not, ſo I loue him that hath ſo many good parts in him woorthy to be beloued. That which moſt of all forceth me to his loue, is that I cannot ſuffer with patience that *Crimine* ſhould loue him. But whither do I range in theſe wandring thoughts ? what need I take ſuch care for them, after ſo many whom I haue deſpiſed ? Why doe I thus torment my ſelfe ? Their beautie mooues me not (and yet the ſame might well do it) who are but yet boies. They themſelues mooue me not, but their yong and flouriſhing youth. But let them go hence in a good hower, now that of mine owne free will I haue counſelled them, and the rather ſince marriage is denied mee. Let them go, and ſeeke forth ſome other loues, ſince none that are wiſe will reiect them. But alas for me this leaue is too harde. With theſe laſt words, not able to paſſe on further, though many other things remained ſtill in my minde, I held my peace, my toong was ſilent, but my hart did ſtill ſpeake. And with theſe and like wordes and praiſes (poore ſoule) without knowing what I did, and rude in ſuch affaires, I loued without the ſence of loue : I conceiued the fire without ſeeing it, and nouriſhed a wound in my vaines without feeling it. Three or fower daies paſſed, in the which we went not to the Shepherds, bicauſe *Crimine* came not foorth, for ſeeing herſelfe diſdained of *Parthenius*, ſhe endeuoured to forget him by her abſence, which kindled her fire the more. So that I would haue beene now glad, that *Parthenius* had loued *Crimine* in lieu of ſeeing him and *Delicius*. For the which I many times importuned her, that we might go ſee them, by putting her in mind of the hope that *Delicius* had giuen her : but for all this ſhe forced herſelfe not to come before him. There remained now but two daies to come of the time prefixed for *Parthenius* departure, when, not able to endure ſo long an abſence, I ſpake thus vnto her. It might not a little reioice me (deere ſiſter) if we went to ſee the Shepherds, bicauſe I promiſed to ſpeake with *Parthenius* before he went. *Crimine* deſiring the ſame no leſſe then I (as I imagined) anſwered me ſaying. Thou maieſt go good friend, although I will not denie, that I deſire to ſee mine enimie. But this hapleſſe loue is ſo cruell, that I cannot chooſe in the end but tell thee the truth, that my going this time will auaile me as little (I know) as other times before. Behold thou canſt not tell *Crimine* (ſaide I) what *Delicius* hath done for thee, in recompence of the good turne he owes thee, & for the promiſe he made thee : and if this were not ſo, remember that certaine daies paſt, my ſelfe hauing leſſe occaſion and will to go, yet onely to content thee I went thither. So that thou art bounde now to performe my requeſt, when I was then ſo willing to do thy command. Thou haſt ouercommed ſaide ſhe, I will nor cannot gainſay thy forcible reaſons. Whereupon we went to the Shepherds, whom when I eſpied gone aſide (for on purpoſe they were talking very earneſtly togither) I ſaide to my companion. They ſhould now talke of ſome great matters, and it may bee

Delicius

Delicius is talking about thy affaires. Nay about thine, answered she againe. And it was true indeed. For both of them were in counsell togither, as afterwards we knew it. Being come to the Shepherds, we found such an alteration in them, that it seemed very strange to vs. What will you more, but that *Delicius* seemed to haue changed the loue that he did beare me, to bestow it on *Crimine*, when he had greatest reason to loue me. Who, at the last time when I spake to him, got more of me then euer he did before. I coulde not by any meanes know the cause of this sudden change. Truth it is, that as I had perceiued *Delicius* loue to *Crimine* to be but colde, as that I also held him for such an one, who would not change without great occasion, and not able to coniecture it by any fault of mine owne, I haue suspected, and *Crimine* thinkes no lesse, but that *Delicius* by some waies should know of *Parthenius* secret loue to me; and by fayning that he had forgot mee, it was to giue place to his deere friend in my loue. Which if it be so (as we beleeue) although we could neuer get it of him, it is (Gentlemen) one of the noblest deeds of friendship that was euer seene to this day. For in more then a whole yeere that we accompanied togither, he neuer solicited me for himselfe, but for his friende, beholding me euer with such modestie, as if we had beene both borne in one bellie. But I pray thee tell vs (said *Doria*) what meanes he vsed to shew that he did not loue thee. That I will, said *Stela*, bicause there remaines now but litle of my tale, for our long peregrination with many misfortunes that we haue passed shal be kept for some fitter time: When we were come before the Shepherds, *Delicius* shewed a certaine kinde of greater libertie and boldnes in his words, and more merrines in his countenance then he was woont to do. Whereat both of vs maruelling not a little, and asking him the cause, he answered. Times are not euer all one, nor equall *Stela*. The fire many times mollifies that which is harde. The finest plaister (be it neuer so well tempered) if it be too much charged, fals downe againe. So much water may be cast on the greatest fire, that it will put it quite out. My great loue serued me nothing at all to make thee gentle, and thy extreme disdaine hath auailed me to make me forget thee. I had grounded well mine affection on thee, but thou hast choaked it with a multitude of torments, sorrowes, & cares. Great was the flame that burned cõtinually in my breast, but thou hast quenched it with excessiue water of thy cold disfauours, & with th'abundance of my teares. So that from this day thou maiest well match thee with one, who is more vertuous, wise, & constant then I am, & who may in iust proportion bee more answerable to thee in euery thing then my selfe; for I confesse I am not sufficient for it. Yet I will not denie, but that I am now as truely, and as much deuoted to thy seruice as euer I was before, whereof thou maiest make triall, if it please thee in whatsoeuer thou wilt command mee, though in another kinde of respect then in these daies past. We were all three looking with what libertie he tooke his leaue of my loue, and maruelled more at his change. *Delicius* had tolde *Parthenius* before of his determination, but he neuer beleeued all till then, when he verily thought his companion did not loue me, bicause face to face so constantly he tolde mee it, thinking if it had beene otherwise, it had not beene possible for him to haue vsed the boldenesse nor courage by speaking to me in such sorte. At this noueltie I stoode astonished, and a certaine kind of remorse and repentance (me thought) troubled mee for handling him, and mine owne matters so ill: but dissembling it as well as I coulde, I saide. O howe glad am I to heare these good wordes Shepherd? From this time forwarde I will loue thee more then euer I did. But I know not (said *Crimine*) what I may say vnto thee friend *Delicius*, neither can I found

the

the cauſe of ſuch a ſudden alteration. Tell me if thou haſt any occaſion to complaine of *Stella*? For heere I will cauſe her to make thee amends without the conſent of ſuch a breach. The Gods be contrarie to me in all my deſires, ſaide *Delicius*, if I haue any iuſt complaint of her, but onely of my hap. And by them I ſweare vnto thee, that I do this, bicauſe I finde it moſt expedient for me. Wherefore if thou deſireſt my good, thou ſhouldſt not ſpeake to me about it. In faith *Crimine*, ſaid I, thou art verie pleaſant, how long I pray you, had you leaue to trouble your ſelfe with my matters, and ſuch as like me not at all. Bicauſe it ſhould like thee wel, ſaid *Crimine*, I ſpake it. If ſuch things liked me well, ſaid I, ſmiling, there is *Parthenius*, who hath no leſſe good parts in him to be loued then his friend, if they haue not both (perhaps) agreed togither about this matter. This did I ſpeake but in ieſt, but loue did not ieſt with me at all. I would not make this agreement, ſaid *Delicius*, if it were not for that, which I loue moſt in this life, which I wiſh thou wouldſt loue; leauing him to faile with the greateſt proſperitie in the ſeas of thy happie loue. *Delicius* laboured ſo much in the end, by ſhewing himſelfe alſo ſo appaſſionate for *Crimine* (but truely but now) that *Parthenius* diſcouered himſelfe the next day to be my open louer, and for *Delicius* his ſake had kept it ſo long cloſe, which was the cauſe (he ſaid) why he could neuer be mooued to loue *Crimine*. I had not then beene a little proud and glad, as I ſhould be now, if I had then knowen, or did now know, that I was equally beloued of them both, as I loue them both alike. *Crimine* had no end of her ioy and content, thinking that ſhe was in good earneſt beloued of *Delicius*, the which he cunningly ſhewed by words and deeds. But now ſhe is not I thinke in ſuch glorie and content, bicauſe he is as cold in her loue again, although he euer makes her ſome ſhew thereof. The laſt day of reſpit, wherein *Parthenius* was to depart, was now come, when the night before, *Delicius* ſaid to *Parthenius*. Since it is thy will (deere brother) to abſent thy ſelfe from me (a hard and heauie chaunce) it ſhall be needfull for me to goe to morrow to *Gorphoroſt*, and ſpeake to him in thy behalfe, bicauſe with the inſtructions that thou haſt giuen me I may know from henceforth how to conuerſe with him, and as thou ſhalt afterwards aduiſe me how I may entertaine his company. It may be he will keepe me till night: Thinke not therefore much if I ſtay ſo long. This agreement *Delicius* made with *Parthenius*, bicauſe he had now determined to goe and ſeeke out his parents, and to leaue *Parthenius* with me, for he neuer meant to goe ſeeke out *Gorphoroſt*, nor to ſpeake with him at all; but onely to abſent himſelfe ſecretly, as afterwards he informed vs of it. He knew, or at the leaſt ſuſpected that *Parthenius* would not conſent to haue him goe without him, and therefore thought it good to vſe this diſſimulation, bicauſe he would not haue him nor vs paſſe the hard traunce of his greeuous departure. Hereupon he went towards the riuer, and neere to the place, where he was wont to ſtay for *Gorphoroſt*, wrote this with a knife in an Elme, in letters that might be diſcerned a good way off.

My deere friende *Parthenius*, thou ſhalt feele by thy ſelfe, if thy abſence will not breede an extreme ſorrow in me; but bicauſe this is forced and neceſſarie, I thinke it beſt for thee to tarie ſtill, ſince thou haſt ſo great reaſon for it. That which I commende to thy charge (for the friendſhip betweene vs both) is to make no change of place nor of thy faire yoong Shepherdeſſe, for this ſhall be the greateſt pleaſure that thou maiſt doe me. And as for the reſt, I promiſe thee to ſeeke out my father and thy mother with all diligence, carying ſo good tokens with me as I doe of them both. Within a yeere (if the Gods ſpare me life and health) I will returne and viſit thee, with report of that which I haue done, and hath befallen vnto me. I

pray

pray thee once againe not to depart from hence. For if thou thinkeſt to ſeeke me, perhaps thou ſhalt leeſe me, bicauſe comming backe againe, I ſhall not knowe where thou art. The Sheepehooke thou ſhalt finde at the foote of this Elme hidden vnder the ſandes. The Gods remaine with thee and accompany me.

But *Crimine* and I, knowing that *Parthenius* was to goe that day away, went in the morning betimes to take our leaues of him (or to ſay more truly) for *Crimine* to intreate him in my behalfe, for ſhe had ſome ſuſpition of me, that I was affected to him) who meant not to abſent himſelfe, but that ſince they could not be there both together for the cauſes abouеſaid, one of them ſhould goe to ſome neere place thereabouts, and come thither by turnes, the one going and the other comming in courſe; and that thus by the abſence of either, *Gorphoroſt* might be deceiued by the Sheepehooke. But when we were now come before *Parthenius*, and ſawe him all alone, we asked him for *Delicius*, who tolde vs that he was gone to *Gorphoroſt* to learne to keepe him companie after he was gone. Which when *Crimine* heard, without tarying any longer ſhe went to attend her new loue, where ſhe knew *Parthenius* was accuſtomed to goe, who taried with me walking vp and downe in a little greene meadow within the forreſt. *Crimine* comming to the Elme, ſawe what *Delicius* had grauen ſo lightly in it, and reading it, not able to endure any longer with patience, ſhe began to weepe, and crie out alowde, accurſing her misfortune, and as ſhe determined to follow him, ſhe firſt thought good to tell *Parthenius* of it. But going to take out the Sheepehooke, *Gorphoroſt* from a high hill eſpied *Parthenius* and me, and how all alone hand in hand we walked vp and downe, and ſeeing him without the Sheepehooke, thought ſurely it was *Delicius*. Whereupon he began to crie out alowd, and with ſuch furie as he made the earth to ſhake, ſaying. Now haue I eſpied thee wicked Impe, which I will make thy laſt ſight and delight, and then with an incredible ſwiftnes he came downe from thence, and in an inſtant paſſed ouer the riuer. I being fearefull with the terrible voice, and warned of the Nymphes watchword got me to the riuer. *Parthenius*, fearing more the harme that might haue befallen to his friend, then his owne danger, ſtaied for him without flying away, which though he would haue done he could not, bicauſe *Gorphoroſt* was ſo neere. *Crimine* hearing the furious voice of *Gorphoroſt*, ſuſpecting what might happen, like a wiſe woman (for ſurely ſhe is no leſſe) came running to the place where ſhe had left vs, to warne *Gorphoroſt* in time that it was his friend *Parthenius*, leaſt being deceiued, he might haue done him ſome harme. And beleeue me, Gentlemen, with her maſtered wiſedome, ſhe reſtored to vs all our liues: So that ſhe came to *Parthenius* (for I was now gone) and ſtept before *Gorphoroſt*, ſaying. Stay *Gorphoroſt*, and behold him well: for this is *Parthenius*, and bicauſe thou maiſt thinke it is true, behold heere the Sheepehooke which thou didſt giue him, for ſhe had taken it out of the place where *Delicius* had hidden it. Whereupon being ſomewhat pacified, although not wholly pleaſed bicauſe he ſaw vs walke hand in hand, and not aſſured who he was, he tooke him, ſaying to *Crimine*. I will be better aduiſed who he is, and accordingly will do with him what it pleaſeth me. And ſaying thus, he tooke vp *Parthenius* vnder his arme, and ranne away with him as faſt as he could. *Parthenius* durſt not aske *Crimine* for *Delicius*, although he ſaw the Sheep-hooke, which he carried away with him that morning, bicauſe he thought he was with *Gorphoroſt*. For if he asked for him, he had then giuen him to vnderſtand that he was *Parthenius*. So that he would haue rather ſuffered, ſaying he was *Delicius* then not, leaſt any harm might haue happened to *Delicius* by confeſſing himſelfe to be *Parthenius*. With this incertainty *Gorphoroſt*

phoroſt caſt him into a darke caue, to the mouth whereof he rouled a great peece of a rocke inſteed of a doore, as afterwards we knew it. *Crimine* with that content and ſorrow as you may imagine, knowing *Delicius* was gone, and ſeeing *Parthenius* carried away in that ſort, came to our manſions to bring me newes of what had paſſed, and to tell me what ſhe had reſolued to do. When ſhe came into our withdrawing chamber, ſhe found me almoſt breathles: for I was reuoluing in my thoughts what had happened to me concerning both my loues. When I ſaw her, I roſe vp from my bed, where I had laid me downe, and going towards her (my breaſt bathed in teares, and my haire torne with my handes) I caſt mine armes about her necke, not able to ſpeake a word, but gaue a ſorrowfull ſigh, which I fetcht out from the profoundeſt part of my amorous ſoule. *Crimine* with a little more force then I had, holding faſt by me, as well as ſhe could, came to the bed, and there fell downe with me vpon it, where we lay a good while without ſpeaking or mouing. We were not ſeene in theſe trances of the other Nymphes, becauſe they were moſt of them gone to ſolace themſelues along the riuer banks. After a little time therefore, as I began againe to rent my clothes that couered my breaſt, marking my tender fleſh with my hard nailes, *Crimine*, awaked as it were out of a dreame, helde my pitileſſe (or rather more pitifull) hands. To whom at laſt I ſaid. Let my hands alone, *Crimine*, for they do no more then they are bound to do. For thinking perhaps to be pitifull, be not in lieu thereof ſo cruell vnto me. Let them pull out my hart to be openly knowen, for that hitherto it hath beene euer ſecret. O *Stela*, O *Parthenius*, O *Delicius*. Hearken to me, ſaid *Crimine*, if thou wilt haue me lighten thy greeſes, and augment mine owne paſſion. *Parthenius* is ſafe by my meanes, and *Delicius* loſt for thy ſake. Doſt thou affirme that to be true, ſaid I. Is *Delicius* dead? Loſt, I haue ſaid, not dead, ſaid *Crimine*? For what doſt thou call loſt, ſaide I? To me (anſwered ſhe) for thy ſake, becauſe to leaue *Parthenius* to thee, he hath taken that iourney in hand, which *Parthenius* was about to do, to ſeeke out his parents. Then ſomewhat appeaſed, I asked her farther, how ſhe knew it, which ſhe told me in order as it was; affirming afterwards how ſhe had reſolued to follow *Delicius*. Haſt thou ſuch courage, ſaid I, as that thou dareſt alone take vpon thee ſuch a dangerous iourney. I will not goe alone, ſaid ſhe, for loue ſhall accompanie me which is afraide of nothing. Being ſtung with the pricke of iealouſie, and not able to ſuffer, that ſhe ſhould goe alone with one whom I loued more then my ſelfe, I ſaid. Since thou haſt ſo good a defence with thee, I will alſo accompany thee. But let vs firſt (I beſeech thee) endeuour to know, what is become of *Parthenius*; for if he be dead, I will not liue, nor come before *Delicius* with ſuch vnfortunate newes, being aſſured that whoſoeuer ſhall firſt aduertiſe him thereof, ſhall giue him no leſſe then death. Whom we ſhould rather informe (as ſoone as might be) if he were priſoner, to ſeeke out ſome meanes to deliuer him from thence, which counſell we thought was the beſt. We remained therefore in this determination, and ſuch was our good hap, that walking the ſecond day vp and downe the riuer bankes, at the narroweſt place of it there came a ſtrong and luſtie Shepherdeſſe with a ſling in her hand, and being right ouer againſt vs, did fling ouer to our ſide a certaine thing like a round ball, and then running away as faſt as ſhee could, got her into the Iland before her. We not coniecturing what that might meane, and deſirous to know what it was, went to take it vp, that ran trendling in the meadow before vs. When we had it into our hands, we ſaw it was a peece of linnen tyed vp faſt togither, and within it a round ſtone, which we thought was put in, leaſt with the lightnes of the linnen, it had fallen into the riuer. This peece of linnen was

written

written all ouer, and I thinke with the iuice of Mulberies, for it seemed he wanted inke and paper, looking vpon the letter we knew it to be the hande of *Parthenius*, wherby he willed vs to be of good comfort, & told vs the order of his imprisonment, and how by the tokens which he gaue *Gorphoroſt*, he was now sufficiently resolued, that he was not *Delicius*, and that he vsed him verie well, but would not dimisse him, bicause he kept him for a baite for *Delicius*, knowing that it might auaile him for the great friendship that was betweene them; and also bicause if he did let him goe, he might take *Delicius* (if afterwards he met him) for *Parthenius*, of whom he might not be deceiued if he kept him still in his caue. And therefore because *Delicius* might not come in sight by any meanes, said, that he would take some order himselfe for his owne deliuerie. With these doubtfull newes, and happie aduenture we went to seeke out *Delicius*. And truely if we had not carryed that peece of linnen cloth written by *Parthenius* owne hand to him, the griefe of the imprisonment of his deere brother had made an end of him by reason of the great sorrow that he felt thereof, as yet he doth, as you daily see.

Behold heere therefore Gentlemen, what you desired to know of the Shepherd and vs, and for what cause we go vp and downe in his company. And the reason why my father woulde haue killed him, I suspect to be this, That the Nymphes our fellowes (seeing vs all fower waiting at one time) tolde him (perhaps) that the Shepherds had carried vs away with them: So that we founde out this yoong Shepherd with whom we go, and the infinite troubles that we haue suffered, and must still endure, vntill we see *Parthenius* so well beloued of vs all three. Wherefore I pray you do me this fauour, to request no more of me at this time, nor howe we founde him out, vntill with more ioy we be altogither, if our misfortunes shall haue an ende, as sage *Felicia* hath promised vs: for now you see what content one takes in recounting of aduersities, that are gone and past, when she is free from them; and contrarie what greefe, when we still suffer them. Of purpose (saide *Felismena*) wee tooke fit time for our discourses, bicause we might haue had opportunitie to know all. But bicause thy will is to the contrarie, wee will not gainsay it, to satisfie our owne. Whereupon with this that *Stela* told them, they knewe what great reason *Delicius*, *Stela*, and *Crimine* had to be sorrowfull, who were partly no lesse for pittie of these fower vnfortunate louers. The night being come, they went in, and after they had supped they went all to take their rest, they at the least that were capable of it.

The end of the fifth booke.

The sixth Booke of the second Part of Diana of George of Montemayor.

ALl that companie comming foorth, (except *Felicia*, and *Parisiles* with some Nymphes that tarried still praying in the Temple) in a cleere morning, the day was but a little spent, when the aire changed on a sudden with such thunders and stormie tempestes, that what with feare of the lightning, and with the water that seemed to threaten them, they were nowe going in againe, when they heard a Shepherd singing a farre off, and who (they thought) was comming towards them. And hearing him, they saide. It

seems he cares but litle for the iniury of the weather. They all agreed to stay for him: who not tarrying long from comming out of the wood, where his way lay, & seeing so many togither, maruelled much, and left of his singing. But they woondred more when he came nigh them, to behold his strange kind of habit. For he had on the skin of a beast called *Hiena*, tied about his middle with a great wreath of leaues like to Bryony, or the white vine, which runs winding about the bodies of trees like a snake. On his head he ware a Laurell crowne, & in his hand, in steed of his sheepehook, he caried a great bough of a figge tree. All which when they had well marked, they said vnto him. Tell vs, iolly Shepherd, is this thy common wearing? No, said he, but as I nowe vse to weare this or some such like, as the qualitie of the time shall counsell me, arming my selfe euer against the iniuries of it. And therefore I clad me thus, as at this present you see me, bicause I would not be smitten with the furious lightning, nor thũderclap, which the vertue of any one of these doth maruellously resist, & manie other things that came not so soone to my hands. We are glad to know it, saide they; but bicause the rigour of this day warnes vs to put our selues vnder couert, do vs this pleasure (Shepherd) to come in with vs here to *Dianas* temple. The good report & fame of this house, & your noble company shal carie me in, although in such a time as this, by the aduise of a cunning and expert Shepherd that dwels amongst vs, it is not safe to be in statelie and high buildings. Why so, saide Lord *Felix*? Bicause he saide (answered the Shepherd) that the thunderclap as it comes not right down but circularwise, encounters with that which is highest, & therfore alights for the most part on high places, as vpon towers & castles: Whereas on the contrarie, if there be any in the field, (vnlesse it smite vpon his bodie) it can do no harme; but he, that in high and loftie houses lodgeth (though the thunderclap smite him not) may be killed or wounded with the stones, timber, or some other thing that may fall from thence. And may also be burned or choaked with the smoke of the fire, that is kindled in the wood, all which by experience haue beene often seene. But bicause of good will you inuite me, to do that which you requeste me, I will go in, although I was determined to lay me downe and sleepe, if I had found out some fit place for the purpose, bicause the thunderclap spareth those (they say) that are asleepe. Thou wilt liue too long said *Seluagia*, since with so many defences thou dost arme thy self. Heereof thou maiest be ascertained, said the Shepherd, for there is not any, who desires his life and health more then I do. So me thinkes, said *Seluagia*, and the cause of it must be, that thou art not in loue. Naie, rather the contrarie (said the Shepherd) which my song did euen now speake of. Dost thou loue then saide *Seluagia*? I loue said he with the greatest blisse and ioy as thou hast euer heard of. Not onely heard, but seene said *Seluegia*. For they are before thee. And this do I say, said he. And I that, said she. Leaue of these speeches said Lord *Felix*, and let vs go in. And do vs so much pleasure, good Shepherd, to tell vs by the way if thou beest in loue. I am (said he). Are these loues thine own, said Lord *Felix*? They are mine (said he) & none others. I say not so, said Lord *Felix*, but if they be properly of thee thy selfe. I haue not so many good parts, said the Shepherd, to be enamoured of my selfe: and yet there is not any (I thinke) that loues me, as much as I do my selfe. But leauing this aside, I loue, as much as possiblie I may, a most faire yoong Shepherdesse. Thy loue is not perfect said Lord *Felix*, bicause thou saiest, there is none whom thou loueste as much as thy selfe. Why doth this hinder it (said the Shepherd,) that it is not perfect? Why not, said Lord *Felix*? Then by this I vnderstand (said the Shepherd) that there is none that loues in this degree: But rather beleeue the contrarie, saide Lord

Felix,

Felix, for heere thou seest some, who woulde gladly hazard their heades for them whom they loue. This is an easie thing, saide the Shepherd, to saie it. And easier said Lord *Felix* to do it. I promise you sir, saide the Shepherd, if death knocked at your dore, and if it were in your election to go with it your selfe, or to sende your loue, that it might be seene what I say. But rather that which I affirme, saide Lord *Felix*. I thinke it a hard matter, saide the Shepherd. With these demands and answers they came to the Temple, where they rested themselues, and feasted that new guest, who was well entertained of the sage *Felicia*, bicause she knew him woorthie of it. After they had made an end of their great dinner, all of them requested him to sing the song, that he came singing when he left it off at their sight. He saide, he was well content, and glad if they woulde lende an eare vnto it, not for his voice, which was not woorth it, but for the matter which deserued any good whatsoeuer: But requesting, that some instrument might play to him, bicause his song might be the better set foorth, *Doria* by *Felicias* command, tooke a Harpe, and tuning it to the highest note that he would sing, the rest being all attentiue to him, he began thus.

LOuers, record my memorie, and name,
For one that is more happie then the rest:
And solemnize my conquest, and my fame,
Which I haue got in being onely blest:
Extoll my glorie to the loftie sunne,
Which with this famous triumph I haue wonne,
To be the happiest man, that hath beene borne,
Of all, that haue to loue allegeance sworne.

What louer yet was found vnto this howre
(Though in his loue most fauour'd he had beene)
Of greese that had not tasted yet some sowre,
And had not felt some paine, and sorrowes seene?
Or who hath with such sweete his loue endured,
(Though of his Mistresse he were most assured,
And though she loued him with truest hart)
That felt not yet a little iealous smart?

Amongst all these, I onely am exempted
From sorrowes, troubles, from mishaps and paines:
With both handes full I liue in ioies contented:
And more if I did tell, yet more remaines:
Secure I am, that in my happy brest
Vile iealousie shall neuer build her nest:
And that I may with greese be neuer paid,
A strong and firme foundation I haue laid.

Nothing in all the world shall breake this chaine
(If cruell death doth spare me with her dart)
And yet if loue in sepulcher remaine,
Death shall not there dissolue it in my hart:
See then how that most strong it needes must be,

Since to my will I wrought the same in me.
And for you may not say that I doe mooue it
With blazons, harke with reasons I will prooue i

Who to himselfe could be so inhumane
(Vnlesse he were deprived of his wit)
That swimming in a pleasant Ocean
Of ioies, would wish for greefe, not finding it.
Such ioies I taste, as neuer more I could,
My loue admits no sadnes, though I would:
For (yet admit) that I would now procure it,
My loue is such, that it will not endure it.

I haue good fortune at mine owne commaund,
Since I haue fauours at mine owne free will:
My loue to her, her loue to me is pawn'd,
Which fortunes spite and time shall neuer spill.
But now if ought with greefe my minde may mooue,
It is, to haue Corriuals in my loue:
But they my ioy, and glorie doe augment,
For more they are, the more is my content.

If any care for these Corriuals dooe
(These faithfull louers) in my brest remaine,
Then see how that with earnest suites I wooe,
And seeke them for my Shepherdesse againe:
And (truly) if it lay within my power,
A thousand I would send her euery hower:
But since I am so rude, and but a clowne,
I cannot set her golden praises downe.

If that with all the faire one should resort,
Shewing her vertues, and each goodly grace:
Little should then my homely praise import,
Hauing the world at her commaund and trace:
For (saying naught) her praise she better would
Her selfe disclose, though I said all I could:
And how much more, since I want skill, and art,
Of her to blazon foorth the meanest part.

But now behold how far from that aboue
I haue estraied (my promise and intent)
My promise was, with reasons now to prooue,
That crosse, nor care my ioies could not preuent.
I know not, if by rashnes, or aduice,
It was my thought, that did my toong entice?
For when I thinke to praise my Shepherdesse,
Then straight my toong doth in her fauour presse.

It

It takes no heede, and hath but ſmall remorce,
To whom, what, where, how oft, why, how and when
Her praiſes be, nor of her little force,
Nor vertues of this faireſt one: But then,
All in a heate, her praiſe begins to babble,
And I to ſtay ſuch furie far vnable:
For thouſand times I ſharply chide the ſame,
But more I chide, the more it is to blame.

Counſell I giue it, and with counſell threate,
That neuer it preſume to meddle heere,
By telling it, it is too baſe a ſeate
For her high praiſe, that neuer had her peere:
But ſhameleſſe it replies: let this not greeue thee,
And boldly ſaies: T'is true I doe beleeue thee.
For I confeſſe I neuer did ſuffice,
But ſuch a want I hope my will ſupplies.

As to a foole, ſeeing her follies ſuch,
Sometimes I yeeld at length, to leaue the raine:
If then my Nymph ſo baſely it doth touch,
It doth deſerue no puniſhment, nor paine:
For howſoere ſhe praiſe her: In the end
I feare not, that my loue it will offend:
But to returne fro whence my toong did run,
Breefly I will conclude what I begun.

Another Cupid *raignes within my breſt,*
Then Venus *ſonne that blinde, and franticke boy:*
Diuers his works, intent and intereſt,
His faſhions, ſportes, his pleaſure and his ioy
No ſlightes, deceites, nor woes he doth inſpire,
He burnes not like to that vnſeemely fire:
From reaſon, will my loue cannot entice,
Since that it is not placed in this vice.

For beautie I loue not my Shepherdeſſe
(Although ſhe may be lou'd for paſſing faire)
Beautie in her the leſt part doth poſſeſſe,
(Though hers doth make all others to deſpaire)
For mildnes, wiſedome, and for vertues ſake,
This zealous loue I firſt did vndertake:
And ſo my loue is honeſt, chaſte, and ſure,
Not wanton, fleſhly, filthie, nor vnpure.

I wiſh my flockes greene graſſe may neuer finde,
Nor cleereſt ſprings, their burning thirſt to ſlake,
Nor ſhades enioy in heate, nor cooleſt winde,

And that they may no profit to me make,
That March may come with rigour, to their harme,
And sheds and shelter want to keepe them warme,
If euer any wicked thought had past
My loue, but what was honest, cleene, and chaste.

The Iuniper oile may neuer helpe my flockes,
With lothsome mangie being ouerrun,
Milke fail my sheepe, decay my countrie stockes
And little kid by hunger be vndone:
And let my nasty lay him downe to sleepe,
So that the woolfe doth kill him, and my sheepe,
If in my loue I euer had inuention
Of wickednes, bad thought, or bad intention.

But thinke not that my loue so chaste and pure,
Without the staine of vaine and wanton thought,
And louing so sincerely, and so sure,
From vertue of mine owne proceedeth not:
Onely from her alone it is proceeding,
That no foule thought doth suffer to be breeding:
Dishonest motions in a fleshly soule
Her modest sight most brauely doth controule.

For plainly, and not vainly, I suspect,
That if some boldface yonker did bewray
His wanton loue, or did to her detect
His thoughts, that did from honestie estray,
In looking on her onely, I durst sweare,
His wordes would freeze within his mouth for feare,
And that he could not onely speake for shame,
But neuer durst againe presume the same.

If in this song I purposed to touch
Her honestie, and vertues to explaine,
I knowe I am not worthy for so much,
When thousand bookes cannot the same containe:
And more, that once I somewhat sung, and saide
Before, and that my voice was then afraide,
For being so base: Now must it erre, as lately,
Since that her praise is growne more high and stately.

Then louing, as you see, with such successe,
I doe not feare disfauours any whit,
Musing alone on my faire Shepherdesse,
Fauours doe come by heapes, my minde to fit,
And so of her I neuer beg, nor craue them,
But in this sort continually I haue them:

As many as my handes can hold and borrow,
Wherefore I liue in ioy deuoid of ſorrow.

Louing in this ſame ſort, there is no feare
Of iealouſie, that's either true or fained:
A riuall heere ſweete companie doth beare,
And all that in chaſte loue in one are chained:
Yet name of Riuall fits not well this place,
Since chaſtitie together all imbrace:
Nor different mindes we can be ſaid to carie,
Since our intents in no one point doe varie.

Come then all you that loue, come by and by,
Leaue euery one his Shepherdeſſe, and loue,
Come loue my Shepherdeſſe, and for her die
In that that's pure, and commeth from aboue:
And you ſhall ſee how that your fortunes far
It dignifies, to loue this radiant ſtar
Of vertue, and the time you ſhall auerre
Ill ſpent, that is not ſpent in louing her.

They could not hold their laughter at the Shepherds admonition, to whom *Syluanus* ſaid. By my faith, friend Shepherd, thou commeſt too late with thy counſell. For to leaue of that, which we haue already for this yoong Shepherdeſſe, I thinke there is no remedie: And if thou termeſt this time loſt, we are not ſorie for it a whit. I would you were better aduiſed, ſaid the Shepherd, but I doe but my dutie. It is well, ſaid *Felicia*, that you (my ſonnes) are content with your lots, and he with his good fortune: of one thing I aſſure you (leauing aſide your loue, bicauſe we will make no compariſons) that this Shepherd loueth (and with the greateſt reaſon in the world) a ſoueraigne yoong Shepherdeſſe, endowed with many gifts and perfections, the leſt whereof in her (as he ſaid in his ſong) is peregrine beautie. And his loue to her is ſo infinite and pure, as he alſo ſaid, that though he be many times in her preſence, yet neuer any wanton thought turned his minde awrie. Which in truth proceedes from her excellent and ſingular vertue. And ſo no man (I thinke) hath gone beyonde him in purer loue then he, as by his ſong you might well perceiue. With what greater purity, ſaid *Syrenus*, could any Shepherd loue his Shepherdeſſe, then I did *Diana*? Indeede it was very great, ſaid *Felicia*; but in the ende thou didſt preſume to tell her of thy loue. It is true, ſaid *Syrenus*: why then behold, ſaid *Felicia*, how far the loue of this yoong Shepherde extendes, that he durſt neuer manifeſt this ſound and perfect affection to his Shepherdeſſe, thinking by doing ſo, he ſhould greatly offend her honour. Then let him tell vs (ſaid Lord *Felix*) if thou thinkeſt it good, reuerend Ladie, ſome part of his chaſte loues, which thou commendeſt ſo much, bicauſe we may paſſe away, with ſomething, this gloomie euening. To this the Shepherd anſwered. It would content me greatly to ſpend this cloudie euening in ſo ioyfull a diſcourſe, if I were able to end it. But now in my ſong if you be remembred, I told you that I had another time ſung of her, and that for her great perfections and deſertes, I came very ſhort of her due praiſe. Being therefore ſomwhat afraid, I am determined to hold my peace, & the rather bicauſe I haue no longer time

to

to ſtay, for I am going to ſeeke out a pretie fawne, which my Shepherdeſſe makes no ſmall account of: So that I muſt be forced to depart, ſooner then I would, from ſuch an honorable companie. Take no care for that, ſaid *Felicia*, for I haue taken order for it. But *Delicius* mooued with a certaine deſire to know, or rather with a ſecret inſtinct and motion from aboue, ſaid. If by entreatie I might obtaine at thy hands (fortunate Shepherd) to tell vs ſome curious things, ſuch as thou didſt touching thy habit, and who did firſt ſhew them thee, I ſhould thinke my ſelfe much bound to thee. More queſtions yet, ſaid *Felicia*: What doſt thou meane? Gracious yoong Shepherd, anſwered the Shepherd, thoſe, and many more I learned in the fertill fields, which the great riuer *Duerus* with his criſtalline fluents doth water in the Countie of *Saint Stephen*, of a famous Shepherd that came thither from forraine parts, to whoſe skill and knowledge, it ſeemed, nature it ſelfe with all her ſecrecies was ſubiect. If I ſhould tell you of his graces, his vertues, and courteous behauiour, as to me it would be impoſſible, ſo to you it would be tedious, not being able to make an end. We all know (for it cannot otherwiſe be) that he is no Shepherd, although he faines it by his habit. Of one thing I can aſſure you, that with whom ſoeuer he conuerſeth, with great affection he winnes the ſame vnto him. O what great profit do we and our flockes receiue by his companie with vs? We, by eaſing vs of our continuall labours by his induſtrie; our flockes, by healing their common diſeaſes. If there were any gadding goat that eſtraying from his company, did put vs to trouble in ſeeking him, by cutting his beard, he made him keep ſtill with the flock. If the Ram, which for guide of the reſt we choſe out for the ſtouteſt, we could not make gentle, he made more milde then a lambe, by making holes thorow his hornes hard by his eares. If at any time we wanted tinder, lint, or a ſteele to ſmite fire with at our neede, he procured vs light, with rubbing two drie Laurell ſtickes the one againſt the other, or with the Mulberie ſticke againſt the Iuie, and a great deale better with the Laurell ſticke againſt the Iuie, which being rubbed verie well, with caſting the duſt of brimeſtone vpon them, with great facilitie he got out fire. To inſtruct vs, and ſometimes to be merrie with vs, he vſed many pretie ieſtes amongſt vs: for he would ſecretly hang vpon the rackes in our ſheepe-folds, and other places the head or taile of a woolfe, by meanes whereof, not onely the leſſer flockes, as our lambes, ſheep, durſt not once take a mouthfull of fodder laid there before them, but alſo the greater, as Oxen, Horſes, and the reſt would ſtand and eat nothing. We being ignorant of the cauſe thereof, thought the cattell had ſome diſeaſe, and he perceiuing vs to be greeued for it, tooke them away againe, but ſo priuily that we might not ſee him. Whereupon the cattell falling to their woonted feeding, we helde it for a woonder, ſeeing them on the ſudden ſo whole againe. When we were in the fields, miſdoubting nothing, and our goats feeding apace, he would ſecretly put an herbe into one of their mouths called *Eringius*, wherewith he made not that Goat alone ſtiffe and num, and not to feed; but all the reſt in company of that, to leaue of feeding. We maruelling thereat, and not able to make them feed, asked ſome remedie of him for it. Who faining then to make ſome characters vpon the Goat, into whoſe mouth he had put the herbe (bicauſe we might thinke it proceeded of his owne vertue) tooke it out of her mouth, and then did ſhe, and all the reſt feed apace. Theſe prettie deceits he vſed in all things to make vs woonder at him the more, and bicauſe we might not vnderſtand that it was not the naturall virtue of thoſe things. The maſter Goat, whom we call the leader of the reſt, he tooke out of the flocke by the beard, and in an inſtant, the whole flocke, ſtanding like ſenceleſſe

things

things forget their foode, vntill he let him goe againe. I omit other infinite deceits, which we thought impoſſible to be done by naturall meanes, bicauſe he made no mention of them (though he ſhewed me their ſecrets) for that they were not things belonging to Shepherdes. And many of theſe I haue forgotten. He made monſtruoſities in the trees, & corne, preſeruing them from that which might hurt them, and haſtening their fruite, yea, and chaunging their nature. Hee deliuered the trees from any kinde of canker, and worme, and the corne from tempeſtes, and the birdes that came to deuoure it, with a certaine thing that he put in ſeede, he tooke them with his handes. He euer prouided vs with good ſtore of fiſh out of that famous riuer, wherein, with caſting the roule of Hartwoort, beaten and mingled with lyme or chalke, to the which paſte the fiſh comming with all their force, and by taſting of the baite, did ſwim a pretie while as if they had beene dead, with their bellies aboue the water. And it was a ſtrange thing to ſee, howe ſoone they came to the nets that he had laid for them; for I thinke hee did caſt in the ſeedes of roſes, muſtard-ſeede, and weſell foote. I remember not what herbe he tooke in his hand, but putting it into the water, the fiſh did ſwim aboue. It were an endles peece of worke to tell you of the inſtructions, which hee gaue vs to take heede from what paſtures wee ſhoulde keepe our flockes, and what we ſhould ſeeke out. But to ſee with what ſecuritie he ſlept in places where were great ſtore of ſnakes, adders, and vipers, and other venemous and ſtinging ſerpents, it was a maruellous and ſtrange thing, enuironing onely himſelfe with Oken boughes, from the ſhadowes of which trees, we ſee by experience theſe vermine euer to flie. And other things he did in our preſence, bicauſe we ſhould ſee the hatred they had with this tree, for he made halfe a circle of fire, and another halfe circle of theſe boughes, and in the middes of it did caſt a viper, the which not able to come out, but by the fire or the boughes, to auoide theſe, came to the fire. Hee did eate the deade fleſh of a woolfe, for he ſaide, and ſo we found it indeed, that it was more ſauorie then any other fleſh: but he did not cloth himſelfe with their skins, nor haire, bicauſe he ſaid, they bred lice. He told vs of certaine howers, & times, and taught vs the nature of diuers things. By the moone he prognoſticated the ſcarcitie or plentie of all that moneth. By the Sallow tree, white Poplar, Oliue tree, and others the Solſticies ſhewing to our eies, how they turned their leaues vp and downe in euery one of them, whether it were winter or ſommer. The howers of the day, with the beames that he marked in the ground. Them of the night with certaine little tables that he made. The highth of the ſun, by an herbe of a blue colour. The fuls and wanes of the Moone, by the Antes and dores. For the Antes betweene the Moones take their reſt, and in the full, labour night and day. And that which made mee to maruell moſt about this matter (bicauſe, being ſo common a thing, I neuer marked it ſo much, thinking there was not any thing in them worthy the noting) was that the dore, a little creature, ſo vile, and common, had ſuch an inſtinct, that if we looke into it well, it ſhewes vs cleerely the coniunction of the Moone and Sunne. For rolling vp and downe a little ball which ſhe makes of oxe dung, ſhe faſhions it in a round figure, and buries it in a ditch, or little pit that ſhe makes, where eight and twentie daies ſhe keepes it ſecret, while the Moone is paſſing towards the Sunne; and then opening it, (by that teaching vs the coniunction of the Sunne and the Moone,) ſhe takes foorth her yoong ones, and knowes no other waies of generation. And with this pardon me, if I haue wearied you. If you deſire to know any more, another day, if we be al togither, I wil tell you the little, that I haue noted and gathered of that great ſtore, which that learned

Shepherd

Shepherd bestowed among vs. They all said, they were glad to heare, and desired greatly that he woulde passe on farther. By that which I haue nowe heard of thee, (said *Syrenus*) and by that which not many daies since I heard of a Shpeherd called *Firmius*, if thou knowest him, who now keeps our sheep, this wise Shepherd is called *Coryneus*. By that which now I heare of thee, and not long since haue heard, saide the Shepherd, thou shouldst be either forgotten *Syrenus*, or despised *Syluanus*. *Firmius* I know very well: for he is one of my greatest friends I euer had or shall haue, and it is true, that this is the learned Shepherds name, of whom I spake. I confesse, saide *Syrenus*, that I am the man forgotten, and nowe it greeues me not much, although it made me once sorrowfull. But bicause *Firmius* tolde mee manie things woorthy to be remembred, and by that which thou hast nowe tolde vs of his friendship, and acquaintance, I gesse thy name is *Partheus*. It is so, saide he. I knowe not, saide *Seluagia*, how thou hast made so large an account of *Coryneus*, leauing his yoong Shepherdesse called *Dinia*, bicause *Firmius* tolde vs she was passing faire, wise, and vertuous. Ah Shepherdesse, I dare not name her with my vnwoorthie mouth, for if I would go about to set foorth her praises, I thinke I should but diminish them, since there is no iudgement, nor conceite able to vnfolde the least perfection in her: Let it suffice you to know, that she is a yoong Shepherdesse, whom I reuerence for her singular vertues. And if I should speake of euery thing, I would not omit a daughter to them both, but yet twelue yeeres of age, that in beautie, vertue and discretion is the right type and figure of her parents; to whom the fawne, that is lost, belongs, and whom I loue so much, that I dare not come before her sight, vnles I bring it with me, or know at the least where it is. And so, bicause I know what cõtent I shal giue my Shepherdesse, for that which the yong Shepherdesse shal haue, I know not what I were best to do to finde it out, to present it to her with mine owne hands. And it is not without good cause indeede that she loues it so much, bicause you would say the Gods had endowed it with vnderstãding to serue *Luztea*, (for so is this most faire yoong Shepherdesse called.) Tell me *Partheus*, said *Syrenus*, how long is it since thou didst see thy friend *Firmius*? For if thou desirest to see him, I can soone leade thee to him, where he is. I thanke thee (said *Partheus*) for thy good will. It is not yet a moneth since I last sawe him, the thing that I desire most in the world, and truely it greeued me to see him in such a case as he was in, bicause I thinke the loue of the ingratefull Shepherdesse *Diana* will make an ende of his life: for his owne greefe, thinking it not sufficient to make him leade such a sorrowfull life, hath conspired with a forrain greefe to raise vp a great corrival against him, a iolly yoong Shepherd, wise, and rich, called *Faustus*. What is it possible, said *Syluanus*, that *Faustus* loues *Diana*? It is so, answered *Partheus*, and that not a little. Indeed he tolde vs, said *Seluagia*, when we were comming hither, that he desired to see *Diana* for the great report of her beautie: And nowe hee hath seene it, saide *Partheus*, and I thinke, will not praise the good market he made. I warned him well before, said *Syrenus*. But these Shepherds moue me to pitie them, for I know by experience in what troubles *Diana* will put them, and how ill they will deliuer themselues againe. *Syrenus* and *Syluanus* would haue asked him, how *Firmius* did, when two Nymphes came in bringing with them the little faune. Which when *Partheus* saw, he rose vp ioyfully to go to it, which fauned on him with skipping and leaping vpon his breast and licked his face. *Partheus* began to speake verie louingly to it, as if it vnderstood him. All of them reioyced to see it; for besides, that it was a most faire one, it was so finely set out, that it inuited all eies to behold it. And bicause it would be too long

to

to recount the fables and hiſtories, that were wrote in a little ſaddle cloth, and collar it had on, I will not ſpeake of it; but onely that in the collar which was the fineſt of all the reſt, there was a poſie that ſaid thus:

To Luztea *faire I do belong, this collar can auouch it,*
Let no man therefore be ſo bold, without her leaue to touch it.

But *Pariſiles* hauing read it, ſaid. The Miſtreſſe of it hath a great opinion (it ſeemes) and confidence of her ſelfe, thinking it is enough for her to ſay (bicauſe it is hers) that no bodie ſhould touch it. Say not ſo (ſaid *Partheus*) for there is nothing in *Luztea* woorthie of reprehenſion: whereas it is well knowen, that ſhe may ſay ſo, and the rather that ſhe did not put it on her ſelfe: for I would willingly tell you, why ſhe ſuffered it to weare this collar, but that it is not now time to know it. And none againe ſhould be blamed in abſence; and ſince you are alſo ignorant of the cauſe, it were better (me thinkes) by your fauour, that you held your peace. This is no place ſaid *Felicia*, ſtepping in betweene them, for ſuch words as theſe are. If I haue (Ladie *Felicia*) in any thing offended, ſaid *Partheus*, I craue pardon of thee, and of this reuerend old man, deſiring you to hold me excuſed for anſwering in her behalfe, to whom I am ſo much bound, not enduring that any thing ſhould be ſpoken in her diſgrace any waies. I promiſe thee Shepherd, ſaide *Pariſiles*, I neuer ment any ſuch matter, but to approoue the vertues and deſerts, that thou haſt reported of her; for the opinion, which I ſpake of is, that ſince ſhe woulde do no hurt to any, ſhe alſo thought that none ſhould offer any to her, & for this cauſe ſhe would ſhew by the poſie, that it was her own. It is wel, ſaid *Felicia*, but leauing this aſide, giue attentiue eare to that, which for the profit and pleaſure of you all, I will haue you do to morrow morning. I know well *Partheus*, it will be no pleaſure for thee to ſtaie heere vntill the next daies light, bicauſe thou wouldeſt gladly ſee thy Shepherdeſſe, for the good newes thou carrieſt with thee. But bicauſe thy ſtaying heere ſhall be for her profit, and her husbands, I hope thou wilt not thinke it greeuous, nor too long: And bicauſe thou maiſt vnderſtand it ſo, know, that by my means this faune was loſt, by ſtraying ſo far beyond his woonted faſhion, and let this ſuffice thee. It is expedient therefore (for let not any gainſay what I ſhall ordaine or thinke conuenient) that thou *Partheus* carrie with thee to *Coryneus* and to his Shepherdeſſe, this yoong Shepherd (pointing to *Delicius*) and ſhalt deliuer him a letter from me, which I will write this night, and he ſhall take order for that, which I purpoſe to do. It is needfull for thee *Syrenus*, to accompanie them to thy fieldes, for that way doth his lie, bicauſe there are newe matters in hand. When ſhe had ſaid thus after ſupper, & paſſed a little of the night in their woonted paſtimes, they went to bed, though *Crimine* and *Stela* coulde not ſleepe all that night for greeſe of *Delicius* departure. And it was to be thought, that he ſlept as little as they, for it greeued him to depart and leaue ſo good companie, wherein he tooke the greateſt ioy in the worlde, but he coulde not chuſe, but obey *Felicias* pleaſure, for the great hope and truſt he had in her. The morning therefore being come, before the three Shepherds tooke their leaue, *Felicia* gaue *Syrenus* a certaine potion to make him by litle & litle leeſe the contempt forgetfulnes that he had of *Diana*, and *Delicius* a letter to carrie to *Coryneus*, admoniſhing him to call himſelfe by the name of *Caulius*, and to tell him nothing of his owne matters, nor aske him any queſtions concerning the ſame, bicauſe it was not good for him, vntill he came thither againe. The contents of the letter were theſe.

To

TO thee (noble *Diſteus*) *Felicia*, ſeruant and miniſter in the Temple of chaſte *Diana*, ſends all the health I may. The Gods haue determined to make a period of thy infinite troubles, and to augment thine honor and eſtate, and haue deyned to humble themſelues without any merit of mine, to make a mediatrix for thee. It is therefore requiſite, that with as much expedition as thou canſt, thou be heere with thy deere ſpouſe *Dardanea*, accompanied with thy louing nurſe *Palua*, and thy faire daughter *Luztea*. This yoong Shepherd the bearer hereof ſhall beare thee companie, and is one, who ſhall beſt pleaſe thee. Be not deſirous to enquire more of him, then he will tel thee of his own accord. I wil be no longer, bicauſe I hope very ſhortly to ſee thee: And as for theſe wordes, I doubt not, but thou wilt credit, and alſo her, that could write vnto thee, and the reſt, ſo right by their owne names. This being done, the three Shepherds went their waies, hauing taken their leaue of all the reſt. Then that very night *Felicia* in preſence of them all began to ſpeake in this ſort to Lord *Felix*, and his wife, *Syluanus*, and his Shepherdeſſe. I know well Gentlemen, and my ſonnes, that I withhold you more then is conuenient from going to your owne houſes: but bicauſe it hath fallen out ſo to all the reſt, as afterwards you ſhall ſee, and bicauſe you may know the Shepherd that I haue ſent for, and ſee the ſucceſſe of his comming hither, and of *Pariſiles*, *Stela*, *Crimine*, and their Shepherds, I haue deferred it, ſince it ſhall not be any long time with the ſoueraigne wils aboue. All fower anſwered, that what, or howſoeuer ſhe diſpoſed of them, they tooke it for no ſmall fauour. A little after that, Lord *Felix*, and *Feliſmena*, came to *Felicia*, ſaying. Bicauſe it is alreadie manifeſt vnto vs (moſt ſage Ladie) that nothing is hid from thy wiſedome and knowledge, we pray thee to reſolue vs in this (which troubles vs not a little) bicauſe we do not know it. *Delicius*, and his companie theſe few daies paſt told vs as it were by peecemeale parts, the abrupt proceſſe of their liues and loues from their infancie vnto the preſent eſtate they are now in; and though we know not who they are, it skils not much, and we care not greatly for it in reſpect of the earneſt deſire we haue to know the cauſe why *Delicius* did forſake (if it be ſo) faire *Stelas* loue, who loued her ſo much as he did, and at that time when he had receiued moſt fauour of her. Whereof (as it ſeemed) *Stela* was either ignorant, or elſe would not tell it. Bicauſe I know you will keepe the cauſe ſecret (ſaid *Felicia*) that mooued *Delicius* to do it, I will tell it you. You muſt therefore know, that he left not of to loue her, but fained to do it (as he yet verie finely diſſembles the ſame) vnderſtanding how his deere friend *Parthenius* loued her (by ſhewing thereby the greateſt part of friendſhip) he gaue place to his friends affection, and reſolued to go without her himſelfe. A ſtrange example of friendſhip ſaid they all, although, it ſeemes, it was no leſſe due to *Parthenius*. But Ladie, we alſo ſuſpecting this, as *Stela* doth no leſſe, are deſious to know, how he knew it, for by her diſcourſe we could not gather it, conſidering how he did ſo well diſſemble it. I will tell you ſaid *Felicia*. You muſt remember well (as *Stela* told you) that for the rigorous anſwer that *Parthenius* gaue to *Crimine*, when ſhe manifeſted her loue vnto him, ſhe determined not to goe where the Shepherds were, to proue if abſence could worke that in her, which it did in many: by reaſon whereof ſome daies paſſed on, in which they were not viſited of them, bicauſe (without *Crimine*) *Stela* durſt not aduenture, but for ſhamefaſtnes left of to goe to their woonted ſports. In theſe ſo ſorrowfull daies for *Delicius*, *Parthenius*, and *Stela*, and *Crimine*, in the which theſe fower did not ſee one another, as manie times they were wont to do, there came ſome Nymphes to keepe the Shep-

herds

herds companie, and to passe away the time with them; but they took no pleasure in their cõpany, although outwardly they dissembled it, as by singing, playing on their instruments, & other pastimes. From the which sports *Parthenius* on a time faining a little busines, that he had to go into the wood, went from that company, and entring into the thickest of it, in a secret place a good way off sat him downe, where musing vpon many matters, and seeing how needfull it was for him to depart from his Mistresse, by reason of the menaces of cruell *Gorphorost* against *Delicius*, as it was told you, he was many times about to kill himselfe, but would not put it in practise, onely bicause he knew *Delicius* would follow him therein; as also for that, the future blisse and hope of seeing his Mistres any more would haue ended. Being therefore a greater while there, then was needfull for the cause of his absence, from his friend, *Delicius* asked leaue of the Nymphes to go see why *Parthenius* staied so long. And so seeking and finding him, he came to him, where he lay flat vpon his bellie with his mouth to the grounde, who seeing him in this sort, and thinking hee was asleepe, came so softly to him, that *Parthenius* could not perceiue him; and in verie truth, being in such extreme greefe of minde and deepe imaginations as hee was, though he had come as fast, and as loud as he could, I thinke, he had not heard him. As these two were therefore thus togither, and *Parthenius* now & then speaking to himselfe, thinking that no body heard him, he vttered such lamentable wordes and complaints of himselfe and of his hard fortune, that *Delicius* knew by and by he was a true-louer of *Stela*, and that for his sake hee dissembled the same so much: when *Delicius* perceiued this, he went softly from thence againe, bicause he would not be seene of *Parthenius*, the better to do that which he had now determined. Whereby he might shew that in his loue and friendship to *Parthenius*, he had no lesse integritie and degree then *Parthenius* in his, or to endeuour (at the least) to be euen with it. And so without speaking or doing any thing, he went backe to the Nymphes, saying, that he coulde not finde him, but hoped he wouldenot be long away. After a good while *Parthenius* came (to all their thinkings) very ioyfull, which made *Delicius* not a little to maruell, knowing in what a miserable plight he had left him; wherupon he gathered, it was but a fayned gladnes, bicause hee might not suspect his greefe. From this point therefore, *Delicius* by little and little (bicause he would not be suspected doing it on the sudden) began to shew himself very cold in *Stelas* loue, being merrier then he was wont to be, & saying it was needlesse to passe sorrowes and greefes for one, that made no account of them, nor cared a whit for him: which (he said) he cleerely perceiued, since so many daies she staied without comming to see him; and that he had done a great deale better, if hee had employed his loue on *Crimine*, then on her, of whom (perhaps) hee might haue beene rewarded: so that with this he shewed, that he made no great account of *Stela*, and to beare no small affection to *Crimine*. But for all this *Parthenius* would neuer declare his loue, for he rather suspected that this was but a deuise to trie if hee loued *Stela*, then once thought that *Delicius* knewe it, the which hee imagined not at all. But as *Delicius* coulde not by these meanes bring the truth out of *Parthenius* to light, by forcing himselfe as much as he coulde, he sung and plaied many merrie things, like a man free from loue, and without speaking any thing of *Stela*, which was different from his wonted custome, which he did not onely put in practise, but determined to doe more if they met togither, as he did indeed, when face to face he told *Stela* that hee loued her not. And behold heere, what you desired to know. We are satisfied, said Lord *Felix*, and truely it was a great part of friendship betweene them both. But

TO thee (noble *Diſteus*) *Felicia*, ſeruant and miniſter in the Temple of chaſte *Diana*, ſends all the health I may. The Gods haue determined to make a period of thy infinite troubles, and to augment thine honor and eſtate, and haue deyned to humble themſelues without any merit of mine, to make a mediatrix for thee. It is therefore requiſite, that with as much expedition as thou canſt, thou be heere with thy deere ſpouſe *Dardauea*, accompanied with thy louing nurſe *Palua*, and thy faire daughter *Laztea*. This yoong Shepherd the bearer hereof ſhall beare thee companie, and is one, who ſhall beſt pleaſe thee. Be not deſirous to enquire more of him, then he will tel thee of his own accord I wil be no longer, bicauſe I hope very ſhortly to ſee thee: And as for theſe wordes, I doubt not, but thou wilt credit, and alſo her, that could write vnto thee, and the reſt, ſo right by their owne names. This being donie, the three Shepherds went their waies, hauing taken their leaue of all the reſt. Then that very night *Felicia* in preſence of them all began to ſpeake in this ſort to Lord *Felix*, and his wife, *Syluanus*, and his Shepherdeſſe. I know well Gentlemen, and my ſonnes, that I withhold you more then is conuenient from going to your owne houſes: but bicauſe it hath fallen out ſo to all the reſt, as afterwards you ſhall ſee, and bicauſe you may know the Shepherd that I haue ſent for, and ſee the ſucceſſe of his comming hither, and of *Pariſiles*, *Stela*, *Crimine*, and their Shepherds, I haue deferred it, ſince it ſhall not be any long time with the ſoueraigne wils aboue. All fower anſwered, that what, or howſoeuer ſhe diſpoſed of them, they tooke it for no ſmall fauour. A little after that, Lord *Felix*, and *Feliſmena*, came to *Felicia*, ſaying. Bicauſe it is alreadie manifeſt vnto vs (moſt ſage Ladie) that nothing is hid from thy wiſedome and knowledge, we pray thee to reſolue vs in this (which troubles vs not a little) bicauſe we do not know it. *Delicius*, and his companie theſe few daies paſt told vs as it were by peecemeale parts, the abrupt proceſſe of their liues and loues from their infancie vnto the preſent eſtate they are now in; and though we know not who they are, it skils not much, and we care not greatly for it in reſpect of the earneſt deſire we haue to know the cauſe why *Delicius* did forſake (if it be ſo) faire *Stelas* loue, who loued her ſo much as he did, and at that time when he had receiued moſt fauour of her. Whereof (as it ſeemed) *Stela* was either ignorant, or elſe would not tell it. Bicauſe I know you will keepe the cauſe ſecret (ſaid *Felicia*) that mooued *Delicius* to do it, I will tell it you. You muſt therefore know, that he left not of to loue her, but fained to do it (as he yet verie finely diſſembles the ſame) vnderſtanding how his deere friend *Parthenius* loued her (by ſhewing thereby the greateſt part of friendſhip) he gaue place to his friends affection, and reſolued to go without her himſelfe. A ſtrange example of friendſhip ſaid they all, although, it ſeemes, it was no leſſe due to *Parthenius*. But Ladie, we alſo ſuſpecting this, as *Stela* doth no leſſe, are deſious to know, how he knew it, for by her diſcourſe we could not gather it, conſidering how he did ſo well diſſemble it. I will tell you ſaid *Felicia*. You muſt remember well (as *Stela* told you) that for the rigorous anſwer that *Parthenius* gaue to *Crimine*, when ſhe manifeſted her loue vnto him, ſhe determined not to goe where the Shepherds were, to proque if abſence could worke that in her, which it did in many: by reaſon whereof ſome daies paſſed on, in which they were not viſited of them, bicauſe (without *Crimine*) *Stela* durſt not aduenture, but for ſhamefaſtnes left of to goe to their woonted ſports. In theſe ſo ſorrowfull daies for *Delicius*, *Parthenius*, and *Stela*, and *Crimine*, in the which theſe fower did not ſee one another, as manie times they were wont to do, there came ſome Nymphes to keepe the Shep-

herds

herds companie, and to passe away the time with them, but they took no pleasure in their cõpany, although outwardly they dissembled it, as by singing, playing on their instruments, & other pastimes. From the which sports *Parthenius* on a time faining a little busines, that he had to go into the wood, went from that company, and entring into the thickest of it, in a secret place a good way off sat him downe, where musing vpon many matters, and seeing how needfull it was for him to depart from his Mistresse, by reason of the menaces of cruell *Corphorost* against *Delicius*, as it was told you, he was many times about to kill himselfe, but would not put it in practise, onely bicause he knew *Delicius* would follow him therein; as also for that, the future blisse and hope of seeing his Mistres any more would haue ended. Being therefore a greater while there, then was needfull for the cause of his absence, from his friend, *Delicius* asked leaue of the Nymphes to go see why *Parthenius* staied so long. And so seeking and finding him, he came to him, where he lay flat vpon his bellie with his mouth to the grounde, who seeing him in this sort, and thinking hee was asleepe, came so softly to him, that *Parthenius* could not perceiue him; and in verie truth, being in such extreme greefe of minde and deepe imaginations as hee was, though he had come as fast, and as loud as he could, I thinke, he had not heard him. As these two were therefore thus togither, and *Parthenius* now & then speaking to himselfe, thinking that no body heard him, he vttered such lamentable wordes and complaints of himselfe and of his hard fortune, that *Delicius* knew by and by he was a true-louer of *Stela*, and that for his sake hee dissembled the same so much: when *Delicius* perceiued this, he went softly from thence againe, bicause he would not be seene of *Parthenius*, the better to do that which he had now determined. Whereby he might shew that in his loue and friendship to *Parthenius*, he had no lesse integritie and degree then *Parthenius* in his, or to endeuour (at the least) to be euen with it. And so without speaking or doing any thing, he went backe to the Nymphes, saying, that he coulde not finde him, but hoped he woulde not be long away. After a good while *Parthenius* came (to all their thinkings) very ioyfull, which made *Delicius* not a little to maruell, knowing in what a miserable plight he had left him; wherupon he gathered, it was but a fayned gladnes, bicause hee might not suspect his greefe. From this point therefore, *Delicius* by little and little (bicause he would not be suspected doing it on the sudden) began to shew himself very cold in *Stelas* loue, being merrier then he was wont to be, & saying it was needlesse to passe sorrowes and greefes for one, that made no account of them, nor cared a whit for him: which (he said) he cleerely perceiued, since so many daies she staied without comming to see him; and that he had done a great deale better, if hee had employed his loue on *Crimine*, then on her, of whom (perhaps) hee might haue beene rewarded: so that with this he shewed, that he made no great account of *Stela*, and to beare no small affection to *Crimine*. But for all this *Parthenius* would neuer declare his loue, for he rather suspected that this was but a deuise to trie if hee loued *Stela*, then once thought that *Delicius* knewe it, the which hee imagined not at all. But as *Delicius* coulde not by these meanes bring the truth out of *Parthenius* to light, by forcing himselfe as much as he coulde, he sung and plaied many merrie things, like a man free from loue, and without speaking any thing of *Stela*, which was different from his wonted custome, which he did not onely put in practise, but determined to doe more if they met togither, as he did indeed, when face to face he told *Stela* that hee loued her not. And behold heere, what you desired to know. We are satisfied, said Lord *Felix*, and truely it was a great part of friendship betweene them both. But

yet you shall see and heare said *Felicia*, of many other proofes of their mutuall loue. With these, and many other speeches Lord *Felix*, *Felismena*, *Syluanus*, and *Seluagia* passed that time meerely away, while *Felicia* staied them there: *Parisiles*, *Stela*, and *Crimine* with a meane content, for the hope they had of their remedies to come.

But it shall not be amisse, that, leauing these Gentlemen heere, we go on with the three Shepherds, which went where *Diana* was, if you will, that we beginne to helpe *Syrenus*, who now with his potion that *Felicia* had giuen him, began to feele a tendernes of loue, entring in by the passage of the late passed obliuion, and a certain discontentment of *Firmius* and *Faustus* loues, that followed the same. Whereupon *Syrenus*, musing with himselfe, saide to *Partheus*. By that yoong Shepherdesse, which hath so great power ouer thee (bicause with some thing we may lighten the wearines of our way) I pray thee tell this yoong Shepherd and me something (if thou knowest) of that, which passed betweene *Faustus*, and *Firmius* with *Diana*. Although it must be to mine owne greefe (said *Partheus*) bicause I shall reduce to my memorie a part of the troubles, which so great a friend of mine as *Firmius* is, passed, yet (to pleasure you heerein) it lies not in my power (gentle Shepherdes) not to obey you.

Hauing intelligence from the place, where he was, that in the fieldes of *Leon* my *Firmius* had made his abode, I went (leauing on a sudden the presence of my soueraigne Shepherdesse for certaine daies) to visite him, and the very same daie I came thither, found him sitting vnder the shade of a high Sicamour, in companie of the faire Shepherdesse *Diana*. To whom, bicause she had not beene well at ease, by reason of a conceit she tooke in leesing a paper that *Firmius* had giuen her, he song this Sonnet.

IF that a small occasion had the power,
To make thee leese thy rosie hew and colour,
Diana, say, how fals it out this hower,
That all my woes to pitie make thee duller?

Hath now a little peece of paper made thee
So milde, and gentle in so short a morrow,
And cannot yet my greatest loue perswade thee,
To make thee take compassion of my sorrow?

How of my selfe am I my selfe ashamed,
That thou shouldst reckon of so short a writing,
Which cannot iudge, nor vnderstand thy graces?
And yet thou wilt not bend thee to requiting
Of that, that's written in my hart inflamed,
And which hath alwaies suffred thy disgraces.

I, that behinde other trees hard by, was harkening vnto him, would not interrupt their pleasant conuersation with my abrupt presence: but there wanted not a meanes, that immediately hindred the same. For *Faustus* going vp and downe to seeke *Diana* (for now he knew she was gone to the field) by chance he light vpon the place, where they were; who with the greefe he had to see her so fortunate in beautie, as vnfortunate by marriage, came singing this old dittie.

A

A faire maide wedde to prying iealousie, &c.

The which he had scarce begun, when hee espied *Diana* and *Firmius* togither. Which sight (if it greeued him not) I leaue to your iudgements. But as the beginnings are hurtfull to a louer to amend them, by dissembling notwithstanding his greefe, he came and saluted them. *Diana* by and by caused him to sit downe by her on the other side. But before I passe any farther, you must knowe that *Diana*, to discharge herselfe a little of the great passion that made her complaine of her discontent, of purpose bestowed fauours on both, though small ones; which maner of hers did arise of a desire she had in this sort to passe away, and forget her afflicted life. *Faustus* (as I told you but now) with the desire onely to see that beautie so much blazed by fame, going from his owne fieldes came to those where *Diana* kept. With whom he spent some daies in good companie very freely (especially for her part) for as it seemed, he was in loue with another yoong Shepherdesse in his owne countrie. *Diana* liked well of his discretion and wisedome, and therefore loued him a little, as *Firmius* no lesse for the like good parts in him. So that to see which of them excelled each other, she set them many times togither in contention, to trie them both in discourse and song. Wherein each of them to please her, as of their owne selues also willing to the same, studied for nothing else. Whereupon arose a certaine kinde of emulation betweene them, not bicause they hated one another, but bicause one endeuoured to excell the other before the faire Shepherdesse. Whereupon it came into their heads, that there passed not one day, nor yet I thinke there is anie, wherein they striue not either in wrestling, pitching of the barre, singing, dauncing, and in other things, which we Shepherds make account of, appointing euer iudges to crowne the Conquerour; but the one neuer went so smoothly away with the victory, that the other went cleerly without it: for *Firmius* was neuer conqueror, nor *Faustus* conquered; nor *Faustus* conqueror, nor *Firmius* conquered. Of this emulation and corriualitie, there were none, but tooke great delight to see it, and especially *Diana* aboue the rest; who to make them contend the more, on a day, after certaine talke that had passed betweene *Faustus* and her, smiling alone to her selfe, she said vnto him. As thou speakest (me thinkes Shepherd) with great libertie and boldnes; so are thy words full of suttletie and dissimulation. O that I might see thee one day so far in loue with me, that thou mightest once pay me this ouermuch libertie. From this hower therefore *Faustus* began to loue *Diana*, and leese his libertie: whereof he had now verie little or none at all, when he came to the place where *Diana* and *Firmius* were. But returning to this point (bicause as I was not present at the other, I cannot tell it you) as he was set downe, *Diana* said vnto him. Do vs this pleasure Shepherd, to sing that againe which thou camest singing. Who without more adoe tooke out his Rebecke, and began thus.

A Faire maide wed to prying iealousie,
One of the fair'st as euer I did see:
If that thou wilt a secret louer take,
(Sweete life) doe not my secret loue forsake.

Eclipsed was our Sunne,
And faire Aurora *darkned to vs quite,*

Our morning star was done,
And Shepherdes star lost cleane out of our sight,
When that thou didst thy faith in wedlocke plight:
Dame nature made thee faire,
And ill did careleſſe fortune marrie thee,
And pitie, with deſpaire
It was, that this thy hapleſſe hap ſhould be,
A faire maide wed to prying iealouſie.

Our eies are not ſo bold
To view the ſunne, that flies with radiant wing,
Vnleſſe that we doe hold
A glaſſe before them, or ſome other thing:
Then wiſely this to paſſe did Fortune bring,
To couer thee with ſuch a vaile:
For heeretofore, when any viewed thee,
Thy ſight made his to faile:
For (ſooth) thou art; thy beautie telleth me,
One of the fair'ſt as euer I did ſee.

Thy graces to obſcure,
With ſuch a froward husband, and ſo baſe,
She meant thereby, moſt ſure
That Cupids *force, and loue thou ſhouldſt imbrace:*
For t'is a force to loue, no woondrous caſe.
Then care no more for kinne,
And doubt no more, for feare thou muſt forſake,
To loue thou muſt beginne,
And from hencefoorth this queſtion neuer make,
If that thou ſhould'ſt a ſecret louer take?

Of force it doth behooue
That thou ſhould'ſt be belou'd: and that againe
(Faire Muſtreſſe) thou ſhouldſt loue:
For to what end, what purpoſe, and what gaine,
Should ſuch perfections ſerue? as now in vaine.
My loue is of ſuch art,
That (of it ſelfe) it well deſerues to take
In thy ſweete loue a part:
Then for no Shepherd, that his loue doth make,
(Sweete Life) doe not my ſecret loue forſake.

Firmius, becauſe he would not leaue of his accuſtomed contention, tooke his Rebecke, and ſung thus.

IF that the gentle winde
Doth mooue the leaues with pleaſant ſound,
If that the kid, behinde

Is left, that cannot finde
Her dam, runs bleating vp and downe:
The Baggepipe, reede, or flute,
Onely with ayre if that they touched bee,
With pitie all ſalute,
And full of loue doe brute
Thy name, and ſound, Diana, *ſeeing thee,*
A faire maide wed to prying iealouſie.

The fierce and ſauage beaſtes
(Beyond their kinde and nature yet)
With piteous voice and breſt,
In mountaines without reſt
The ſelfeſame ſong doe not forget:
If that they ſtaid at (Faire)
And had not paſſed to prying (Iealouſie)
With plaintes of ſuch deſpaire,
As moou'd the gentle aire
To teares: The ſong that they did ſing ſhould be
One of the fair'ſt as euer I did ſee.

Miſhap, and fortunes play,
Ill did they place in beauties breſt:
For ſince ſo much to ſay
There was of beauties ſway,
They had done well to leaue the reſt.
They had ynough to doe,
If in her praiſe their wits they did awake:
But yet ſo muſt they too,
And all thy loue that woo,
Thee not too coy, nor too too proud to make,
If that thou wilt a ſecret louer take.

For if thou hadſt but knowne
The beautie, that they heere doe touch,
Thou wouldſt then loue alone
Thy ſelfe, nor any one,
Onely thy ſelfe accounting much.
But if thou doſt conceaue
This beautie, that I will not publike make,
And meanſt not to bereaue
The world of it, but leaue
The ſame to ſome (which neuer peere did take)
Sweete Life doe not my ſecret loue forſake.

Diana, bicauſe ſhe would haue them ſing more, when *Firmius* had made an ende, ſaid. Shepherd, I will conſider of this matter vpon condition thou wilt tell me, for what cauſe thou doeſt publiſh it ſo much by words, that thou loueſt me, when as thy

deedes shew thy small affection. As *Firmius* did aske her how she knew it, she answered him. If thy loue *Firmius* extends so farre as thou saiest, thou wouldest come to see me oftner; it greeues me in the end, of the fauor that not long since I did thee. *Firmius* not suffring *Diana* to passe any farther, being as it were halfe madde with himselfe, for these cruell words, in that she greeued and repented her of her fauour done him, tooke his Rebecke and sung this Sonnet.

Faire Shepherdesse, what hast with greefe to fill me,
And how long dost thou purpose to destroy me,
When wilt thou make an end with woundes to noy me,
Not stretching foorth thy cruell hand to kill me?
Tell me the cause, why dost thou so much will me
To visit thee, and with such words dost ioy me?
That to my death I rather would imploy me,
Then by such present pangs and greefes to spill me.
Woe to my soule, since this doth cause thy sorrow,
That such a little fauour thou hast done me,
Little it is, in sooth, if it be peased
With all my teares, that neuer yet haue ceased
To fall, that to my death haue almost woon me:
They great, this small, those giue I, this I borrow.

Firmius had scarce done, when *Faustus* asked *Diana*, how she knew that his loue to her was so small. Who answered. In that, hoping to enioy thee inflamed in my loue, thou complainest to no purpose of a few teares thou hast spilt for my sake, as if these were not as incident and requisite for loue, as pasture for sheepe, and oyle for the lamp. To which wordes *Faustus* taking vp his Rebecke did thus answere her.

Thou dost desire (My life) *as thou dost say,*
To see me in thy loues inflam'd (at best)
And yet an vncouth meanes thou dost suggest,
Which is, to giue me care from day to day:
Dost thou not see the fier to decay,
Waxe cold, and quench't, within my louing brest
With swelling teares, which trickle without rest
Out of mine eies, to see thy hard delay?
The meade with raine her goodly greene redeemes,
The oile doth in the lampe the flame maintaine,
And loue with teares augmented is no lesse:
But loue, the lampe, and meadow (as it seemes)
If that too much of these they doe containe,
Is spent, is quench't, and drowned in excesse.

As *Faustus* had thus made an ende, *Firmius* said (for all that I coulde not then heare, he tolde me afterwards) we are well content *Diana*, that thou delightest thy selfe with our sorrowes (since thou wilt take no pleasure in any of our other things) if thy sweete voice in lieu of that, might sound in our desired eares with some happie song. *Diana* excused herselfe, requesting them to pardon her, saying she coulde

not

not therein pleasure them, since she wanted so much her owne content of minde. They endeuouring to comfort her, gaue her some hope, saying, that in the end sorrowes and griefes are not perpetuall, and that she should remember that common song that saith.

Continuall griefe and sorrow neuer wanteth, &c.

Bicause therefore you may see (said *Diana*) how ill this saying is vnderstoode, tune your Bagpipe with your Rebecke, and walking towards our flockes, bicause it is now time to gather them vp, although I thought not to doe it, yet will I sing as well as I can vpon this theame, and you shall take the tune of the song, as of a woman so much tuned in miseries and mishappes as nothing more. *Firmius* and *Faustus* made no delay: And then *Diana* like a desperate woman, with a mournfull and sorrowfull voice began thus, taking for her first verse that, which they had alreadie alleaged for her comfort.

COntinuall greefe and sorrow neuer wanteth,
Where feeding hope continues, not decaying:
But euermore despaire, that greefe recanteth,
From former course of minde doth cause estraying.

The glosse.

Riuers arise and run into the seas,
And waters without number day by day,
And yet the same seeme neuer to decay,
But new doe spring, and run and doe increase.
So endlesse woes arise and multiplie,
Redoubled one vpon anothers head:
(For one in truth is with another fed)
Still doe they come and yet they neuer die.
For since their fertill rootes each moment planteth,
Continuall greefe and sorrow neuer wanteth.

Torments of minde and vilest miseries
Are sworne to dwell within a hapless soule,
And there her ioies and pleasures doe controule,
As to my selfe my sweete content denies:
Then let not any Louer thinke to gaine
The meanest thing, that liues in any hope,
But liuing so, to fall into a scope,
And wander in a world of greefe and paine:
For miseries, men say, continue staying,
Where feeding hope continues not decaying.

Who knowes it not, Alas I knowe it well,
That if a wofull soule is hoping still,
She seldome doth enioy her mind and will,
But that her hope must euer be her hell:

So

So of this hope, that flatters me, I finde,
And doe confesse, that with the same I liue,
But still in feare, and therefore I would giue
It for despaire, to ease my doubtfull minde:
I wish not this false hope, my iotes that scanteth,
But euermore despaire, that greefe recanteth.

If any whit of goodnes euer came
By vile despaire, it comes to me in prime:
And it could neuer come in better time,
Then to be hoping still to haue the same:
The wisest and most prudent man at last,
Wanting the good, that long he doth attend,
(Which, nourished by hope, he did suspend)
Seeing the time, that fed his hope, is past,
And all his ioy, by hope that is decaying,
From former course of minde doth cause estraying.

The Shepherds importuned *Diana* to proceed in her song, or else, if it pleased her, to take some new matter, for it was to be thought, that *Dianas* song pleased them wel: but they could not obtaine it at her hands, for she rather requested them to sing something whilest they were going towardes their flockes. *Firmius* then remembring that which a little before she had told him, that he loued her not so much as he might, began thus to tune his voice.

Faire Shepherdesse, I can no more,
But faine I would
Loue thee more, if that I could.

As this made also for *Faustus* purpose for the same cause, he likewise sung to the same effect. And so *Firmius* and *Faustus* sung by turnes, and answered one another, as followeth.

Firmius.

Of mine owne selfe I doe complaine,
And not for louing thee so much,
But that indeede my power is such,
That my true loue it doth restraine,
And onely this doth giue me paine:
For faine I would
Loue her more, if that I could.

Faustus.

Thou dost deserue, who doth not see
To be belou'd a great deale more:
But yet thou shalt not finde such store
Of loue in others as in mee:
For all I haue I giue to thee.
Yet faine I would
Loue thee more, if that I could.

Firmius

Firmius.

O trie no other Shepherd ſwaine,
And care not other loues to prooue:
Who though they giue thee all their loue,
Thou canſt not ſuch as mine obtaine:
And would'ſt thou haue in loue more gaine?
O yet I would
Loue thee more, if that I could.

Fauſtus.

Impoſsible it is (my friend)
That any one ſhould me excell
In loue, whoſe loue I will refell,
If that with me he will contend:
My loue no equall hath, nor end.
And yet I would
Loue her more, if that I could.

Firmius.

Behold how loue my ſoule hath charm'd
Since firſt thy beauties I did ſee,
(Which is but little yet to mee)
My freeſt ſenſes I haue harm'd
(To loue thee) leauing them vnarm'd:
And yet I would
Loue thee more, if that I could.

Fauſtus.

I euer gaue and giue thee ſtill
Such ſtore of loue, as loue hath lent me;
And therefore well thou maiſt content thee,
That loue doth ſo enrich my fill:
But now behold my chiefeſt will,
That faine I would
Loue thee more, if that I could.

They would not (I thinke) haue made an ende ſo ſoone for want of copie of their theame, but that *Diana* went away from *Firmius*, bicauſe her ſheepe were in one place, and his in another. *Fauſtus* went with her, who had nothing elſe to doe, but walke vp and downe thoſe fields in corriualitie with *Firmius*, and waiting on *Diana*, and ſtaying to ſee when ſhe would come foorth to them. If *Fauſtus*, accompanying *Diana*, did any thing or ſing, I know not, for ſeeing my *Firmius* all alone, I made haſte to him. I will not tell you, what ioy we both felt, what embracing & courteous & louing ſpeeches paſſed between two ſuch deer friends, meeting ſo ioyfully togither. *Partheus* went proſecuting his tale, when they heard a voice not farre from the place where they were, & as they thought to haue gon thither, *Syrenus* ſaid. Here abouts we found the Shepherd *Fauſtus*; and truely if that which he now ſings, be no leſſe commendable and delightfull, then that, which he then ſung, it would not greeue

greeue vs to ſtay heere a little, and lend him a gentle eare. But approching neere, bicauſe the ſong went verie low, for that it was mournfull, and full of lamentation, they ſaw it was a Shepherdeſſe, who eſpying them againe, held her peace. They came to her, and ſaluting each other, prayed her courteouſly, not to leaue of her ſinging. You may better ſay ſorrowing, ſaid *Cardenia*, for this was her name. Be it as thou wilt, ſaid *Delicius*, and ouercome vs by entitling it as pleaſeth thee, and let vs ouercome thee in doing that which we requeſt thee. In being conquered by ſuch braue yoong Shepherds, as you are (anſwered *Cardenia*) I ſhall carrie away the victorie. If I brought not ſo much companie with me (ſaid *Partheus*) thy ſelfe being all alone, Shepherdeſſe, I would endeuour, that with thine anſwers thou ſhouldeſt not get the palme ſo ſoone: But bicauſe thou maiſt aduantage thy ſelfe with ſaying, that I tooke courage by the countenance which I bring with me, I will hold my peace. Whereupon doſt thou repoſe ſuch aſſurance, ſaid *Syrenus*, laughing, that we would fauour thee, and not take this faire Shepherdeſſe her part? Let theſe amorous ieſtes ceaſe for a while, ſaid *Delicius*. And gracious Shepherdeſſe, deny not I pray thee our requeſtes. Becauſe I would not be thought worthie of reprehenſion, anſwered *Cardenia*, by denying that which ſuch iolly and faire Shepherds haue requeſted of me, I will enforce my ſelfe to it. And becauſe my ſorrow (not my ſong) you may better vnderſtand,

Know that it is not long ſince that *Fauſtus* a Shepherd rich in ſheep, and more in the treaſures of nature, and good graces (whom the heauens fauour) did once loue me. Who in verie deed I thinke, went neuer about to deceiue me, although he hath now opened the doore of obliuion to his former loue: bicauſe I am informed (accurſed be theſe ill newes) that he is caught in the loue of deceitfull *Diana*, whom (for my ill, and his owne) he went to ſee: and yet I feare that *Diana*, though ſhe be ſo full of guiles and ſiittleties with others, cannot preuaile with them by entertaining my *Fauſtus*, bicauſe he goes beyond her in deceit, and alſo bicauſe I haue ſuch an affiance of my hard and cruell fortune, that *Diana* (onely for my harme) will be inforced to leeſe her wonted faſhions. Theſe words greeued *Syrenus* to the hart, who now by little and little began to renew his old decayed loue. And this is my griefe, ſaid *Cardenia*, that the more I procure to lay his ingratitude before mine eies, the more doth his loue penetrate my ſoule. Wherefore hearken to that which you requeſted of me, and which I came ſinging all alone complaining of my iniurious *Fauſtus*.

FAuſtus *in faith thou nill deſerue*
A Shepherds name, or keeping ſheepe,
Since thou ſo ill thy faith doſt keepe.

O that in paſſed time of late
My ſelfe had paſt with that as faſt,
Then of this time I had no taſt,
Hauing enioyed ſo ſweete a fate,
Once was I in a happie ſtate,
Which want, mine eies in teares muſt ſteepe,
Since thou ſo ill thy faith doſt keepe.

Ioyfull I was, and well content,
Bicauſe I ſawe (vnto my will)

Thy

Thy loue ſo well thou didſt fulfill,
Which anſwer'd mine in ſweete accent:
But now I ſmell thy falſe intent,
Which is, with ſutletie becleepe,
Since thou ſo ill thy faith doſt keepe.

Thy faith and more thy ſolemne othe
Then to me firmely didſt thou giue
Not to forget me, while I liue:
But now thou haſt committed both
Vnto the windes, that alſo loth
Their little woorth abroad to ſweepe,
Since thou ſo ill thy faith doſt keepe.

If thou doſt thinke that to beguile
Her that doth loue, it is a glorie,
Alas I cannot be but ſorie:
With thouſand ſuch thou maiſt defile
Thy credit, and triumph each while
Of all that heere doe feede their ſheepe,
Since thou ſo ill thy faith doſt keepe.

Behold my matchleſſe loue moſt deere,
And marke thy ſelfe, and who thou art,
For if thou wilt, with guilefull hart
Thou maiſt deceiue a thouſand heere:
Then greater doth my loue appeere,
Then thy diſloyaltie ſo deepe,
Since thou ſo ill thy faith doſt keepe.

Muſing I am, both night and day,
And ſundrie waies my fancies mooue,
How that I might forget thy loue:
And then vnto my ſelfe I ſay,
That ſince thou doſt me ſo betray,
My loue ſhall in oblition ſleepe,
Since thou ſo ill thy faith doſt keepe.

But at the time when I decree
To practiſe it, then loue doth more
Renew his forces then before:
So that if loue abounde in mee,
And that the ſame doth want in thee,
What ſhall I doe, ſhall not I weepe?
When thou ſo ill thy faith doſt keepe.

A remedie, and very ſhort
In th'end to take I will not feare,
Which ſhall be leſſe for me to beare,

Then thus to liue in such a sort,
And death it is, mine onely port,
To which my sliuer'd barke doth creepe,
Since thou so ill thy faith dost keepe.

Her syllables were not so many which she pronounced by singing, as her teares which she powred foorth by weeping. The which by little and little she wiped away with a christalline hand, which made the Shepherds not a little to maruell, when they sawe it, wherefore *Syrenus* saide. If thou hadst not told vs any thing (faire and forlorne Shepherdesse) thy soueraigne hand had beene enough to haue made me knowe thee. O that they were cut off, answered *Cardenia*, since they were the cause of my miserable happe. All of them being mooued to compassion of her sorrow, sometimes accompanying her with teares, and sometimes helping her with their comforts, at last *Syrenus* saide vnto her. It is not possible but *Faustus*, if he knew thy firmnes and constant loue, woulde mollifie his hart, and take pitie on thee, when aboue all things thou deseruest to bee loued, though hee had as much in him as a man might haue. Speake not of his deserts, saide *Cardenia*, for in them he hath not his equall, and as to the first thou speakest of, that if he knew in what estate I were, he would haue had some compassion on me, I answer thee, that since he went hence, I enformed him in what paine I remained for his absence. And being ignorant of that which now (to mine owne harme) I know, bicause he promised to come backe againe, as a woman ioyfull to heare such an answer, I sent him this Sonnet.

THe rest is sweete to him that wearied is,
Succour and aide poore wretches wish for fast:
The doome of death from him, that now is cast
With fauour to reuoke, is thought a blisse:
The shade in chiefest heate is not amisse,
Pleasant of sheepe and Shepherdes to be past:
The water ioies the meade, with drynesse waste:
The frozen ground with ioy the sunne doth kisse:
But yet the glorie, ioy, and sweete content,
The wish of wishes, when the Shepherdesse
Staies for her louer, these doe far exceede.
Toong hold thy peace, and thought tell my intent,
How great a lightening hope is in distresse
Vnto the brest, that louing flames doth breede.

Not long after, seeing his tarrying there was longer then I desired, I wrote this other vnto him.

NOw doe I knowe at last (though to my smart)
How far the greefe of absence doth extend,
But that this knowledge neuer any friend
Of mine may learne, and wish with all my hart:
Thus haue I liu'd deceiued with this art,
Esteeming small of presence in the end:
But woe is me that proofe doth now commend,
And tels me cleere of this erronius part:

Come

Come Faustus *then, with speede and stay no more,*
For staying woundes my soule and euery sense,
Longer thy absence I cannot endure:
Marke well what they were woont to say of yore,
That by and by a hope, and confidence
After an absence doth succeede most sure.

A little while after that the bitter newes of his vniust change came to my knowledge, being mad with the extreme passion of loue, I wrote him this letter & Sonnet.

FAustus, *if thou wilt reade from me*
These fewe and simple lines,
By them most cleerely thou shalt see,
How little should accounted bee
Thy fained wordes and signes.
For noting well thy deedes vnkinde,
Shepherd, thou must not scan
That euer it came to my minde,
To praise thy faith like to the winde,
Or for a constant man.

For this in thee shall so be found,
As smoke blowne in the aire,
Or like quicksiluer turning round,
Or as a house built on the ground
Of sandes that doe impaire.
To firmenesse thou art contrarie,
More slipp'rie then the Eele,
Changing as weather-cocke on hie,
Or the Camelion on the die,
Or fortunes turning wheele.

Who would beleeue thou wert so free,
To blaze me thus each howre:
My Shepherdesse, thou liu'st in mee,
My soule doth onely dwell in thee,
And euery vitall powre.
Pale Atropos *my vitail string*
Shall cut, and life offend,
The streames shal first turne to their spring,
The world shall end, and euery thing,
Before my loue shall end.

This loue that thou didst promise me
Shepherd, where is it found?
The word and faith I had of thee,
O tell me now, where may they be,
Or where may they resound?
Too soone thou didst the title gaine
Of giuer of vaine wordes,
Too soone my loue thou didst obtaine,
Too soone thou lou'st Diana *in vaine,*
That naught but scornes affoordes.

But one thing now I will thee tell,
That much thy patience moues:
That, though Diana *doth excell*
In beautie, yet she keepes not well
Her faith, nor loyall prooues.
Thou then hast chosen, each one saith,
Thine equall and a shrowe,
For if thou hast vndone thy faith,
Her loue and louer she betraieth,
So like to like will goe.

If now this letter, which I send
Will anger thee: Before
Remember (Faustus *yet my friend,*)
That if these speeches doe offend,
Thy deedes doe hurt me more.
Then let each one of vs amend,
Thou deedes, I wordes so spent,
For I confesse I blame my pen,
Doe thou as much, so in the end
Thy deedes thou doe repent.

FAustus, *it needes must be a woondrous ease,*
And such a deede as one would not conceaue,
A simple soule so slily to deceaue,
Who quickly did thy faith and loue imbrace:
Thy firmnesse she had tride a little space,

And so she thought the same thou woulast not leaue,
Which made her still vnto thy liking cleaue,
Bicause she thought it free from double face:
If of this conquest (Shepherd) thou dost boast,
With thousand such in time thou maist be crowned,
If thousand times thou meanst to vndermine,
If high renowne is got for credit lost,
Onely of me a subiect thou shalt finde
With guiles to be a thousand times propouned.

To any of these I neuer had an answer, wherupon I think he neuer made account of them, and of the last especially, bicause he had now quite forgotten me when that came. Of one thing I will aduise thee, saide *Syrenus*, if thou wilt take it at my handes. This thou maiest be sure of, said *Cardenia*, for I thinke there is none, that would not wish to haue som remedy of her ils, if there were any meanes for them. The meanes said *Syrenus*, are easie enough for thee, that haste such libertie, as I vnderstoode by *Faustus*. And it is to accompanie vs to the place where he is, bicause our waies lie thereby. For I cannot beleeue, but thy presence wil make him, with crauing pardon, acknowledge his fault. This counsell *Syrenus* gaue her, to remooue such a block out of his way, as *Faustus* was. All of them liked his aduise well, but *Cardenia* best of all, and therefore answered thus. It is therefore needfull for you (my friendes) if you will shew me so much friendship, and vse this pitie towards me to tarry for me, if it please you, while I take some order for certaine kine, which I keepe harde by heere, and commit them to the keeping of a Shepherd, that (certes) loues me more then *Faustus*, who, I hope, will take the charge vpon him with a good will. But I must in no hand tell him whither I go, bicause with patience he cannot endure it: wherefore I will faine that I go to some other place. In the meane time I will giue you such entertainment as my poore abilitie can affoord, though not good enough for your deserts. Vpon this request they determined to staie, and she went to seeke out the Shepherd, whom she found out by and by, for she knewe where he was commonly woont to feed. *Carisus*, for this was the Shepherds name, seeing *Cardenia* comming to him contrarie to her wonted custome, went with no little ioy to meete her, and saluting her, saide thus vnto her. What noueltie is this, my deerest Shepherdesse, from whence comes so much good, that this happie soule of mine deigneth to come to visite this miserable bodie of hers? *Cardenia*, who would rather haue heard those words in *Faustus* mouth, then of *Carisus*, interrupted him, saying. Necessitie, which, to leaue my kine in thy keeping, while I goe hard by to see a kinswoman of mine, bringes me to seeke out such a Shepherd, that they may not feele my absence, and as I put no greater trust in any for this matter then in thee, I come to knowe if thou wilt take this charge vpon thee. *Carisus* putting some strings on his Rebecke, that he had in his hand, and tuning voice to this that followes, answered *Cardenias* request thus, taking for his ground (bicause it made so fit for his purpose) that common *Castillian* countrey dance, that saieth in Spanish.

GVarda mi las vaccas
Carillo, por tu fe,
Besa mi primero,
Yo te las guardaré.

I pray thee keepe my kine for mee
Carillio, wilt thou? Tell.
First let me haue a kisse of thee,
And I will keepe them well.

If

If to my charge or them to keepe
Thou dost commend thy kine, or sheepe,
For this I doe suffice:
Because in this I haue beene bred:
But for so much as I haue fed,
By viewing thee, mine eies,
Command not me to keepe thy beast,
Because my selfe I can keepe lest.

How can I keepe, I pray thee tell,
Thy kye, my selfe that cannot well
Defend, nor please thy kinde,
As long as I haue serued thee?
But if thou wilt giue vnto mee
A kisse to please my minde,
I aske no more for all my paine,
And I will keepe them very faine.

For thee, the gift is not so great
That I doe aske, to keepe thy neate,
But vnto me it is
A guerdon, that shall make me liue:
Disdaine not then to lend, or giue
So small a gift as this.
But if to it thou canst not frame,
Then giue me leaue to take the same.

But if thou dost (my sweete) denie
To recompence me by and by,
Thy promise shall relent me,
Hereafter some reward to finde:
Behold how I doe please my minde,
And fauours doe content me,
That though thou speak'st it but in iest,
I meane to take it at the best.

Behold how much loue workes in mee,
And how ill recompenc't of thee,
That with the shadow of
Thy happy fauours (though delaide)
I thinke my selfe right well appaide,
Although they proue a scoffe.
Then pitie me, that haue forgot
My selfe for thee, that carest not.

O in extreme thou art most faire,
And in extreme vniust despaire
Thy crueltie maintaines:

O that thou wert so pitifull
Vnto these torments that doe pull
My soule with senseless paines,
As thou shew'st in that face of thine,
Where pitie and milde grace should shine.

If that thy faire and sweetest face
Assureth me both peace and grace,
Thy hard and cruell hart,
Which in that white brest thou dost beare,
Doth make me tremble yet for feare
Thou wilt not end my smart:
In contraries of such a kinde,
Tell me what succour shall I finde?

If then yoong Shepherdesse thou craue
A herdsman for thy beast to haue,
With grace thou maist restore
Thy Shepherd from his barren loue:
For neuer other shalt thou prooue,
That seekes to please thee more,
And who, to serue thy turne, will neuer shunne
The nipping frost, and beames of parching sunne.

Cardenia that was musing more in her minde of the loue she bare to *Faustus*, then that she heard by *Carisus* song, after a while that she had leaned her hand vpon her sheepehooke, said. But what dost thou say to my demand? But what saiest thou, said *Carisus*, to that which I craue of thee? What craueſt thou said *Cardenia*, for truely I gaue no attentiue eare vnto thee, I was thinking so much of my departure. Is this the reward answered *Carisus*, that I looked for at thy hands, for keeping thy kine? Yet do what thou wilt, and go whither thou wilt, for in the end I cannot chuse (as euer more I do) but obey thy command, and thinke my selfe sufficiently appaide (if thou wilt not condescend to any other thing) that with thine owne mouth thou hast made me the herdesman of thy kine: for since I haue passed so many troubles for thy sake without any guerdon, I will also passe away this greefe without any further denial, so that thou receiuest contentment hereby; and this shal be enough for the reward which I expect, wherein I finde no small ioy and contentment. I thanke thee *Carisus*, said *Cardenia*, for thy good will: I pray God giue thee more rest then I haue at this present hower. And with this, bicause I go to set other things in order, I take my leaue of thee: thou shalt finde my kine to morrow in the place where thou knowest they are commonly wont to be. When she had dispatched this businesse, she went to the Shepherds, that were neerer to her, then she was aware of; for when she went from them, they followed her to see what passed betweene them, whereat they tooke no small delight, and laughed not a little when *Carisus* said in his song, that if she was ashamed to giue him a kisse, he would with her leaue take it himselfe. Hauing therefore prepared all things necessarie for her iourney, shee went her waies next day in the morning in the companie of those three yoong Shepherds, whom we will now leaue, since they knowe (without vs) howe to finde out this way,

way, ſo often troden by *Syrenus*, comming backe againe to ſage *Felicias* pallace.

Where they were all very glad with the comming of *Danteus* and *Duarda* the Portingall Shepherds, who came out of their countrey to do their dutie to *Felicia*, and to thanke her, that by her fauour and good meanes *Duarda* had pardoned *Danteus* for the offence he had committed againſt her, by ſeeing him ſo penitent from his hart; who brought a wandring pilgrim with them, that had beſtowed many daies in vaine, in ſeeking out his Maſter and Miſtres. Whom as *Danteus* and *Duarda* had met very much afflicted, after telling them part of his long trauell, they requeſted to go with them thither, where if in any place he might hope for remedie and newes, he could not chuſe but haue it at her hands, that neuer denied it to anie, that had need thereof. *Danteus*, *Duarda*, and the Pilgrime called *Placindus*, were receiued by *Felicia* and the reſt with great ioy, making diuers ſports, daunces, plaies, and paſtimes for their comming. From the which *Stela*, and *Crimine* were euer abſent, who could not be merrie for the abſence of their beloued Shepherds: *Pariſiles* was ſeldome or neuer in theſe ſports, for commonly he came not out of the Temple, where daily he made his ſacrifices and oriſons. *Felicia* knowing that the ende of all thoſe luckleſſe Shepherds and vnknowne Shepherdeſſes misfortunes was neere at hand (for *Crimine*, and *Stela* returned againe to their paſtorall habite, bicauſe they would not haue *Parthenius* (if he came) find them in gorgeous and feſtiuall attyre, he being clad in ſorrowes and cares) tooke *Pariſiles*, *Stela*, and *Crimine*, on a day when dinner was done by the hands, and ſpake thus vnto them. Now Fortune beginnes to ſmile vpon you, *Pariſiles*, and my daughters, and will nowe lift you vp to her triumphant chariot, and deſiſt not to carrie you in it, vntill ſhe hath placed you higher then you may imagine. Happie was the hower wherin you ſaw the yong Shepherds *Parthenius* and *Delicius*, and happy that time, when firſt they ſawe you, for that you by them, and they by you ſhall enioy a ſupreme and ioyfull eſtate. And bicauſe you may know who theſe yoong fortunate Shepherds are, preſuppoſed they are the ſonnes of *Corineus* and *Dinia*, of whom *Parthenius* began to tell you ſo many ſtrange things: The right name of this Shepherd, & Shepherdeſſe is *Diſteus* & *Dardanea*. Who theſe be, you ſhal by & by know of this Pilgrim their ſeruant, who hath ſought for them many yeres togither, beſides many others that haue made the ſame iourney; amongſt the which, the yong Prince of *Aeolia* wandreth vp & down ſeeking out *Delicius* and *Parthenius*, for the which no meane ioy ſhall befall to all: So that whatſoeuer you ſhall heare of *Diſteus* and *Dardanea*, you muſt know that they are theſe Shepherds, whoſe counterfeit names are theſe aforeſaid, and parents to *Delicius* and *Parthenius*. And I aſſure you, that if you three thinke that you haue deſerued the crowne of vnfortunate and hapleſſe weights, *Diſteus* and *Dardanea*, & their company may preſume, that the palme of diſaſtrous men ſhould not be denyed them. But bicauſe you may know who they are, and for what cauſe wandring from their countrey they paſſe away their life in ſo poore an eſtate, tarie for me heere, and I will bring you one hither, who ſhall tell you all the whole matter, which I promiſe you, though it touch you, will not make you a little glad to heare the ſtrange diſcourſe thereof. *Pariſiles* therefore, *Stela*, and *Crimine*, remayning there all alone (you may now imagine, if deſirous to ſee him, that ſhould tell that, which ſo faine they would haue knowen eſpecially *Stela*, and *Crimine*, that without compariſon cared not to know any other matter then this) *Felicia* ſent a Nymph to call *Placindus* to her, who was now gone to view the ſumptuous Palace, who being come before her, ſhe ſaide thus vnto him. O worthie example of a loyall ſeruant, doubt not but that thy good

deeds (though lately) ſhall be rewarded by the higheſt, aſſuring thy ſelfe that the deferring thereof ſhall more augment the requitall: For otherwiſe if good deeds were not requited by ſome waies, we might haue iuſt occaſion to complaine of his diuine power: I ſay by ſome meanes, as touching that he hath promiſed vs, bicauſe otherwiſe he oweth vs nothing, but we are rather perpetually obliged to his diuine eſſence, not onely that he hath made vs rationall creatures (the higheſt eſtate in nature) when it lies in his celeſtiall power to faſhion vs to that, which is accounted the loweſt & moſt ſeruile in the world: vnto the likenes whereof though he might haue made vs, who was beſides no leſſe able to leaue vs without being, which is the greateſt infelicitie, next after eternall damnation. But leauing this aſide, as well bicauſe larger time then that we haue, were neceſſarie for it; as alſo bicauſe the place doth not require it, I will (according to this) tell thee in briefe, that heere in this houſe thou haſt made an end of thy great iourney, finding in the ſame that which thou couldſt not find in ſo manie countries. Here ſhall thy trauels end, and all the troubles of theſe Gentlemen, and with greater proſperitie you ſhall returne to your deſired heauen. Here you ſhall ſhortly ſee how many of you wander vp and downe like baniſhed men, and more then you thinke of. In concluſion, in a few daies thou ſhalt ſee in this Temple of chaſte *Diana* thy louing Lord and Ladie, and thy deer Aunt. *Placindus*, at ſo ioyfull newes, breaking off ſo ſweete a ſpeech, and not knowing how to requte her, proſtrate vpon the ground, kiſſed her hands. *Felicia* tooke him vp againe, ſaying. It is therefore needfull for thee (as a thing that concernes thy Lord and Ladie) to tell the beginning of their baniſhment, and the cauſe of thy long trauell, to two faire Nymphes and a reuerend old man, whom thou ſhalt finde attending thy comming in a great broad court before the Palace hall. *Placindus* to obey the ſage *Felicias* commaund, without any anſwer went to the place, where ſhe appointed him. She that now had cauſed Lord *Felix*, *Feliſmena*, *Syluanus*, and *Seluagia*, *Danteus* and *Duarda*, and the Nymphes to be all togither whiles ſhe was ſpeaking to *Placindus*, being gone to them, ſaid. Follow you me all. None then refuſing, went after her, and came where *Placindus*, *Stela*, and *Crimine* were iuſt at that time that *Placindus* began to tell his diſcourſe. To whom *Felicia* ſaid. Becauſe thou maiſt not want an auditorie for ſo noble a tale, behold my ſelfe that comes with my companie to take part of it: Wherefore let vs all ſit downe, and thou *Placindus* without any more courteſies, do that, which I did of late requeſt thee.

The end of the ſixth booke.

The ſeuenth Booke of the ſecond Part of Diana of George of Montemayor.

THey were all now ſilent and ſet downe in order, when *Placindus*, being placed in the middes, began thus to ſay.

Of the deſcent and famous pedegree of *Eolus* king of *Aeolia*, (whom afterwards they called the God of the windes, and of whom that countrey tooke the name) ſprung out two illuſtrous houſes. Of the one a moſt mightie man called *Sagaſtes* was cheefe: The other a vertuous yoong Gentleman called *Diſteus*, made moſt famous; who, though in poſſeſſions and reuenewes he was not

equall

equall to the other; yet in vertue, wherewith his minde was bountifully enriched, farre ſurpaſſed him. Betweene theſe two houſes was an ancient quarrell and emulation, by reaſon that neither of them would allow any equalitie, both ſtill contending for ſuperioritie, which to him that deſires to beare rule and command is a great and heauie burden. Truth it is, that in the time of theſe two principall men, *Diſteus* his partialitie went ſomewhat by the woorſe, bicauſe king *Rotindus* that then reigned, fauoured not a little the contrarie part, onely for that *Sagaſtes* reſembled him ſo much in his bad conditions and diſorder of life. For both of them were proude, cruell, libidinous, enimies to vertue, and imbracers of all kinde of vice, whereunto *Diſteus* was a mortall enimie: So that the king with continuall fauours enriched *Sagaſtes*, and fauoured his followers, and with perpetuall hatred procured to impouerish *Diſteus*, and perſecute his friends. There were but fewe in the whole kingdome that for feare did not whatſoeuer *Sagaſtes* commanded, though they hated him in their mindes, and none that by their good wils would haue denied to fulfill *Diſteus* pleaſure in all things, who loued him deerely in their ſecret harts. So that they obeied *Sagaſtes* openly for reſpect of the king, and loued *Diſteus* ſecretly for his owne deſerts: Who yet with vertuous and ſincere loue was not a little enamoured of *Dardanea Sagaſtes* ſiſter, a yoong gentlewoman paſſing faire and rich, ſhe being alſo adorned with all thoſe gifts of nature, and minde, which onely enſtall that noble ſexe in immortal praiſes. For in her did euerie vertue ſhine as in their proper place. Her loue likewiſe to him was chaſte and pure, being onely grounded vpon *Diſteus* his noble vertues, and ſingular goodnes, that was then the common ſubiect of euery mouth; whoſe loue though in her chaſte breaſt it was with all kind of honeſt affection entertained, yet might his comely perſonage & goodly features haue well procured a wanton thought in the moſt modeſt minde. This noble Ladie had been married but three moneths to a knight of her own houſe (but in many degrees remooued) (called *Fenubius*) when *Atropos* before his iuſt time did cut off his vital thread, and in the flower of her age made her a yoong widow. Who bearing no ſmall affection to *Diſteus* when ſhe was a maide, would faine haue married him; but neither by words nor ſignes durſt once declare the leſt thought thereof vnto him, bicauſe ſhe would not for all the world tranſgreſſe the due limits of her honor and vertues reputation; as alſo bicauſe ſhe thought it impoſſible to conclude a marriage in two ſuch contrarie houſes: Whereupon without more adoe ſhe was conſtrained to take ſuch a husband, as her brother did giue her (for her parents died when ſhe was but eight yeeres old) with whom ſhe liued ſo content (or at the leaſt fained it) as if ſhe had neuer thought of any other matter, a thing no leſſe beſeeming ſo braue a perſonage, as ſhe a moſt worthie example for them that take this honorable eſtate vpon them. *Dardanea* being therefore a widow, it fell out that *Sagaſtes* vpon a ſmall occaſion did (to her great griefe) put away her ſteward, who had beene an auncient ſeruitor, and well eſteemed of her parents, denying to pay him that, which was his due for his late ſeruice. In regard whereof, and for his other deſerts, this noble Gentlewoman did not onely ſatisfie *Anſilardus* (for ſo he was called) but alſo beſtowed bountifull rewards vpon him, excuſing her ſelfe to him and ſaying, that his departure was much againſt her will. There was not one in all the citie of *Sagaſtes* partie, that would giue him entertainment, bicauſe they would not offend ſo mightie a man: the which *Anſilardus* perceiuing, and how vniuſtly he was reiected, he laboured to be with *Diſteus*, whoſe fauour, bicauſe he deſerued no leſſe, as alſo bicauſe it was an honor to *Diſteus* to releeue *Sagaſtes* old ſeruants, he ſoone obtained. Though

yet

yet on the sudden so vnaduisedly he entertained him not, without first taking his word and faith of a Gentleman, not to go from him againe, vpon no wrong, nor iniurie offered him. The which thing *Disteus* thought good not to forget, bicause he might not (after he was placed with him) once offer to forsake him, thinking the disgrace that resulted to him by such a departure would be greater, then the honour that he got by receiuing him. All this and more with solemne oath did *Anfilardus* auow; of whose word, as also of himselfe (bicause he knew him well) *Disteus* made no small reckoning. The which to accomplish, *Anfilardus* neuer failed, though he had beene often molested to the contrarie. But before he came to dweil with *Disteus*, he forgot not to aske *Dardanea* leaue, bicause he would not giue her any occasion of discontent, if perhaps (by meanes thereof) she felt any at all. But she consented the more willingly thereunto, when she vnderstood, that he was to be entertayned by *Disteus*: For as her brother could not choose but be offended thereat, so she therefore hoped, that he would worke the meanes to place him with her againe: But *Anfilardus* told her not of the faith and promise that he had giuen *Disteus* for his aboade and true seruice, which if she had vnderstood, she would not (doubtlesse) haue giuen him any such leaue, knowing that *Anfilardus* would not do any thing repugnant to his word and promise. It greeued not *Sagastes* a little to heare what the steward had done, knowing, that only he himself deserued blame for it; but more, when he perceiued that neither faire entreaties, nor fierce threats could reclaime him to *Dardaneas* seruice. Who therefore perceiuing the remedie thereof impossible, bethought himselfe of one more preiudiciall to him then any other, which was by giftes, and faire promises (or for that which afterwards fell out) to entice from *Disteus*, the woman whom he most tenderly loued, a nurse of his (for from the teate she had nursed him and brought him vp) and an Aunte of mine called *Palna*, to bestowe her on *Dardanea* in lieu and recompence of her late departed stewarde: of which reuenge hee was so proud in minde (for hee had soone brought it to passe) that he thought he had done *Disteus* the greatest iniurie he coulde, by bereauing him of his nurse, and besides wounded his minde with greater greefe, then the ioy that he conceiued at *Anfilardus* comming, whose fact made none to maruell much, knowing well what great occasion he had to doe it. But mine Auntes departure filled euery one full of woonder, thinking that she had no iust cause to make her blameless, but that she was a woman, bicause *Disteus* (as they all knew) rewarded euerie one so well, that there was not the meanest in his house, whom he iniuried, and gratified not, especially *Palna*, whom he loued aboue al the rest, and honored as his mother, neuer knowing her by any other name. Which thing greeued him so much, that it made him almost besides his wits: for first he would haue thought, that al the world woulde haue left him, before mine Aunt woulde haue forsaken him. *Disteus* therefore being very sadde and pensiue, and sometimes complayning of his Aunt, *Anfilardus* came vnto him and began thus to say. If my person had not beene exchanged (my good Lord and Master) for so deere a price, I had then great reason to be glad and vaunt, that I am the seruant to so woorthie a gentleman: but considering that in the cause of my gladnes the effect of your sadnes doth consist, let my ioy be drowned with your discontent, and euer remaine so colde, that it may seeme rather dead, then liue without the sight of your wished good. I woulde it had pleased the immortall Gods, that I had neuer enioyed the perfect knowledge of your goodnes, bicause you might not then haue tried the vnkindnes of ingratefull *Palna*. I was maruelling at vnstable fortune, that so on a sudden deined to giue me

so

ſo ſweete a potion: but bicauſe ſhe woulde not haue me fall from the common opinion that I euer had of her, ſhe by and by diſtempered it with a bitter taſte. Onely one thing comforts me, and ioyes my thoughts, that you (my Lord) ſhal know what difference there is betweene a man and woman, though I wiſh you had not tried it by this example. And though in truth you haue reaſon to bee ſorrie for *Palnas* change, yet you haue no cauſe to maruell at it, in that ſhe is a woman, which name the ancient writers, Philoſophers, Poets, and Painters did not vainely impoſe to Fortune. Pardon me (good ſir) if I am ſo bold with one, whom you loue ſo well, ſince I haue iuſt occaſion to do it, by reaſon of the great and greeuous charge that ſhe hath left me. For if I was then bound of mine owne ſelfe to obey you to my power, now by her occaſion I am conſtrained to ſerue you more then my forces can well attaine to. And if I being placed in your ſeruice, ſhee had remained ſtill, the little that I could do, might (perhaps) haue ſeemed ſomething; but ſhe going awaie for my cauſe (but not thorow my fault) for all that euer I can do, I ſhall be yet obliged to more, being exchanged for her, whom you ſo greatly loued. And the worſt of all is, that if any thing (which not by my will, but by ſome negligence I may commit) ſhall be open to the popular eie, it will be a common by-worde in all the citie, That it was a good exchange of *Palna* for *Anſilardus*. Wherefore I beſeech you my good Lord, that omitting this, you woulde accept of my good will, which is ſufficient enough, if in my deedes there ſhall be any defect, and that my fault, which muſt needes proceed from my ſmall abilitie or ignorance, be not attributed but to the one or other. To this did *Diſteus* anſwer thus. As I neither can nor will denie (*Anſilardus*) that I haue not greatly felt the ingratitude of my mother (*Palna* my nurſe I meane) by not thinking of that mutabilitie, which (thou ſaieſt) is naturally incident to women, by reaſon of the loue that I did alwaies beare her, and doe yet (to ſpeake the truth) which is not ſo little, that in ſo ſhort a time I may ſo eaſily forget the great iniurie, which I haue receiued at her vnkinde hands: So muſt I needs confeſſe, that it is a great lightening to my hart, that it was done for thy ſake, of whom I hope it ſhall be well conſidered, ſince the greater part thereof is alreadie requited with the good will, which at this preſent thou haſt diſcouered, though thy workes alſo haue ſeemed of no leſſe effect: both which (when opportunitie ſhall ſerue) I will not hereafter forget to reward. The beginning whereof ſhall be this, That I promiſe thee (bicauſe I perceiue how heauily thou takeſt the great greefe which I haue felt for her abſence) and ſweare neuer to ſhew my ſelfe agreeued for it in thy preſence, although (perhaps) I be in minde, nor in thy abſence to impart it to any but to my ſelfe. They being in theſe ſpeeches, I came to *Diſteus* houſe, and ſpeaking with one of his men, willed him to tell his Maſter, how I was come with a letter from mine Aunt vnto him. The page did my errant, and as *Diſteus* was in ſuſpence whether he might receiue it or no, *Anſilardus* ſaide vnto him: Sir, ſend for the meſſenger in, for by this you ſhall the more ſignifie your goodnes, hearing with one countenance the iuſt and culpable perſon, and not do *Palna* ſo much glorie as to make her know, that her abſence hath greeued you very much. *Diſteus* liked his counſell well, and thereupon commanded me to come in. With thy good leaue (Lady *Felicia*) and of all the reſt, ſaid *Pariſiles*, I would aske how being without, you might heare theſe ſpeeches betweene them within. From hencefoorth anſwered *Placindus*, you muſt vnderſtand, that we tolde one another all the matters that paſſed, and with this aduertiſement I will proceed. In the end I came in, where *Diſteus* and *Anſilardus* were, and doing my dutie, began thus to ſpeake. Your nurſe *Palna* with her remembred

dutie

dutie to you (my Lord) doth moſt humblie beſeech you to reade this letter which ſhe ſends you. *Diſteus* tooke the letter, and diſſembling his greefe, as *Anſilardus* had counſelled him, ſaid: If thine Aunt doth write to me to the ende to excuſe herſelfe, ſhe needed not haue taken theſe paines, for ſhe might haue done heerein according to her owne minde, as in that, which ſhall like me beſt, I will do to mine own will and pleaſure. Thou ſhalt tell her that I will reade it, wherein, if there be anie thing for me to do for her, I will heereafter bethinke me of it. I not perceiuing this kinde of diſſimulation, maruelled not a little to ſee how ſoone he had ſhaken off the loue that he bare to mine aunt. Truth it is, that as I was then ignorant of that, which afterwards ſucceeded, ſo I eſteemed his coye anſwere for a point of wiſedome, and was no leſſe aſhamed at that ſhe had done. With this anſwer I went my waies and they remained all alone. *Anſilardus* praiſed not a little his fained anſwere, & commended his wiſe dome, in that he would not call her mother, as he was wont to do, nor name her by her owne name, in token of contempt. But *Diſteus* opening the letter, ſaw it ſaid thus.

Palnas *letter to* Diſteus.

Palna thy mother from thy milke, and from the loue of her inward ſoule, to thee her louing Sonne *Diſteus* ſendeth greeting. Bicauſe as I know thou wouldeſt condemne me for a verie foole, if I went about to ſhew, that I had iuſt cauſe to forſake thee, that wert mine onely comfort, and to whom I am ſo much bound; ſo will I not excuſe my ſelfe heerein, which if I ſhould do, and ſay, that I am not worthie of reprehenſion, I might then ſeeme in a manner to charge thee therewith, ſince ſomething muſt be attributed to ſo great a chaunge. But if any fault be committed, I am content that it be onely imputed to me; for it ſhall greeue me leſſe, that the whole world ſhould condemne me for it, then that any ſhould ſuſpect the leaſt defect in thee that might be. Wherefore let this onely ſerue to entreate thee by the amorous milke, that thou haſt ſucked out of my breaſt, to haue ſo much patience, vntill the ſucceſſe ſhall manifeſt the cauſe hereof; which to the end I will paſſe with the ill opinion that the world hath on me for leauing thee, to an effect that ſhall reſult to thy profit, whereby thou ſhalt affirme thy ſelfe ſatisfied, and me acquited (with thee at the leaſt) whereas for the reſt it ſhall not greatly skill. I know well thou wilt obiect & ſay, That if there were any hidden thing, whereby I might haue procured thy content, I had no reaſon to conceale it from thee. I anſwer, bicauſe I knew thou wouldeſt by no meanes giue me leaue to depart, I would not tell thee of my purpoſe, vntill (ſeeing the good ſucceſſe of it) thou mighteſt know my great loue to thee, ſince (without making thee priuie) I haue enterprized ſo great and difficult a matter. And now bicauſe I haue ſpoken more, then I thought, I will conclude with this, That I am in good health, and not a little glad, that my good Fortune brought me to *Dardaneas* ſeruice, whoſe beautie and golden vertues are the woonder of our age.

When *Diſteus* had read the letter ſoftly to himſelf (for he would not read it aloud, before he had viewed the contents of it) he ſaid to *Anſilardus*. I would haue read this letter vnto thee *Anſilardus*, if I had thought it would haue made thee glad or ſorrie; and alſo bicauſe it is ſo obſcurely written, that I can ſcarce vnderſtand one clauſe thereof. The contents of it perſwade me not to be carefull, nor trouble my wits by inquiring out the cauſe of her departure, vntill time doth manifeſt it, when as then (ſhe ſaieth) ſhe ſhall be as free from fault, as I from complaint. With this alſo ſhe

writes

writes me, that she is content with *Dardaneas* seruice; for proofe whereof, she extols her highly with onely two wordes, saying: That she is the woonder of our age. She that is of such excellent beautie (saide *Anfilardus*) enchased with all precious gems of vertue, deserues no lesse, assuring you Sir, that *Palna* (if with so much truth she iustifies that which she hath done, as she hath reason for that she hath spoken) may be blameles and excused to all the worlde: wherein I must needes say she hath beene wise (hauing no good discharge and excuse of her fault) by putting you in a doubtfull loue and hope of a thing you knowe not, to the ende that in (the meane while) you might forget and ouerpasse your anger by such thoughts, and that she might not neede heereafter to excuse her-selse. I told thee not long since (saide *Disteus*) that though I feele *Palnas* absence very neere, yet I must dissemble it with thee; by meanes whereof, happe good or ill, I will still shewe one semblant, prouided that I know the cause of it, for indeed I could neuer perswade my selfe, that this was no more but a dreame, since I had euer so great confidence in her loue and fidelitie: Whereupon I thinke some iust cause must needes mooue her to doe it for my behoofe and benefit, as she writes vnto me, which (though it were not so) I will not (*Anfilardus*) otherwise conceiue nor imagine. In that which toucheth the fauour you do me (said *Anfilardus*) by imparting to me the contents of the letter, I am bound to kisse your handes: And in the rest, as in this, you shew (my Lord) your selfe what you are, and maintaine the title of your noble minde. In these and like speeches they spent a pretie time, though *Disteus* sometimes altered his talke, asking him of *Dardaneas* qualities, beautie, and wit; for he tooke a great delight to heare, that so many good parts in so high a degree were iointly found in one woman: which *Anfilardus* did so brauely set forth, as one that knew them well, and to whom he was so much bound, that the eloquence of the golden mouthed Lord of *Ithaca* had beene needlesse there. All which was to cast an amorous and secret powder into *Disteus* soule, that he might thereafter haue been set on fire. On the other side, mine Aunt *Palna* with great respect of dutie and discretion discourst sometimes vnto *Dardanea* (but with far fet circumstances) of *Disteus* his honorable disposition and noble vertues, which she so wisely insinuated, as if she meant nothing lesse then to praise him. *Disteus* now gaue leaue to his imaginations, to be only imploied in *Dardaneas* beauty, so that he loued melancholy & sadnes, & abandoned all sports & publick places. He now delighted only in solitarines, & not only the company of strangers, but of his own friends & seruāts was troublesom vnto him, who neuer suspected that any amorous thought had so forcibly raigned in him: but rather attributed this alteratiō to the greef that he had for *Palnas* absēce, which if they had not beleeued, they wuld not haue left to aske him the cause therof, though it had bin but in vaine, when he himself did scarce know it. *Disteus* spent som daies in these considerations, wherein his fansies being not meanly occupied, he vsed these words. O God, how needlesse is it for thee (my mother) to tell me what reason thou hadst to leaue me for this excellent Ladie. O ten times art thou happie, that hast before thee (as often as thou wilt) the cleerest mirrour of our times. Onely heerein, from this day foorth, I will not cease to blame thee, for leauing me so late, if any fit occasion had beene offered thee to defend thee with the shield of *Dardaneas* bountie and beautie, for both which all mortall men are bound to serue and obey her. Thou hast soone performed thy word, that at length I should see thy iust cause. Pardon therefore (good mother) my errour by reproouing thee, although the same (if thou dost marke it well) was not my fault, but the great loue, that I did euer beare thee. But wretch

that

that I am, what haue I done by not anſwering thy wiſe and louing letter, and thriſe vnhappy mee, if thy nephew returned the ſharpe anſwere from the venemous mouth of thy vnwoorthy ſonne? Ah then thou ſhalt haue more reaſon to deteſt the vnfruitfull milke thou gaueſt him, then he had to condemne thee for thy iuſt departure, and with greater cauſe to curſe the vngratefull nouriture that thou haſt beſtowed on him, then he hath now to blame thy forced abſence. O *Diſteus*, inconſiderate youth, how raſh wert thou in anſwering *Palna* thy graue and wiſe mother, and how ill haſt thou deſerued to aduantage thy ſelfe by her gentlenes and helpe. And thus, thinking he had done a hainous offence by not anſwering her, in haſte he called for inke and paper, and going about to write, he was a good while in ſuſpence, and knew not how to begin: for faine he would haue ſhewed her how willing he was not onely to forgiue her, but alſo to haue craued pardon of her, both which he durſt not doe, neither was it wiſedome, before *Palna* had cleerely made her iuſtification. And therefore he wrote in ſuch ſort, that my Aunt might take no offence thereat, and did what became him, the tenour whereof was this.

Diſteus *his letter to* Palna.

BIcauſe thou maiſt haue no defence, whereby thou maiſt not be bound to ſhew that innocencie (which thou ſaieſt thou haſt) and maiſt alſo vnderſtand, how I haue better plaied the part of an humble ſonne, then thou of a louing mother, I haue ſtrained my ſelfe to take pen in hand to anſwere thee. By and by after I had read thy letter, I would haue ſetled my ſelfe to this taske, wherein I had ſo many contraries of (I) and (no) that not knowing what to determine, or to which of both to adhere, I haue till now ſuſpended it. If the loue I beare thee, did ſollicite me to do it; the anger thou gaueſt me did forbid it. If the faith which euer thou foundeſt in me did admoniſh me thereof; the diſloyaltie, that then I ſawe in thee, did diſſwade me from it. If my good minde towards thee did force an (I) thy impietie to me did forge a (No.) So that if I was bound by the one, I was reſtrained by the other: wherupō in this doubtfull pretence, not knowing what way to chooſe, that which perſwaded me to write had beene ouercomed, if the deſire that I had to heare of thy excuſe, and the weightie hope (I know not whereof) thou gaueſt me, had not ſuccoured & helpt it, which did driue me from the doubt I had, and forced me to write vnto thee, though I muſt needs confeſſe, that, albeit I read thy letter neuer ſo well, yet I know not how to anſwer it, ſince in no clauſe therein I find good conſtruction: for that which ſeemed moſt cleere, was moſt obſcure; where, in manner of a conſolatorie letter thou telleſt me, That thou art well, and content in minde, as if my comfort depended thereon: Whereas thou hadſt pleaſed me better by affirming the contrarie, bicauſe by being diſcontent, thou mighteſt repent thee, and by repentance amend, and by amendment, come backe againe vnto me. But with that, which in proofe of thy content thou ſaieſt, *That thou art with* Dardanea, *&c.* thou pleaſeſt me as little. For what haue I to do with any thing touching her, whereof thou doſt write vnto me: So that I muſt either affirme, that I vnderſtand it not, or thinke it was not to the purpoſe, which ſhall be a greater inconuenience then the firſt, ſince it muſt redound to condemne thee for a foole (a thing far vnwoorthie thy ſelfe) if with this chaunge thou doſt not lay fault vpon fault. The Gods take account of the intent thou hadſt to leaue me: And as for other greetings in the beginning heereof, or requeſtes in the end I will not giue thee, vntill I heare of thy excuſe, if thou haſt any at all.

After

After he had written this letter, he causèd me to be sought out in all haste, and, being come before him, requested me to carie it foorthwith to mine Aunt. The ioy was not small that shee receiued with the letter that came to her from her sonne *Disteus*, although it was to her confusion and shame: For she that doth perfectly loue, desires (though it be to her owne harme) to see the things of her beloued; but she was a great deale gladder, when she sawe with what mildnesse and humanitie it was written. The solitarie life that *Disteus* (as I told you) did so much loue and leade, was now growen to such a seconde nature, that all companie was irkesome vnto him, but onely *Anfilardus*, as well for that it was represented to his thoughtes, that he had beene *Dardaneas* seruant, as also bicause he euer answered sincerely to his purpose, by telling him continually of her soueraigne graces. This kinde of sadde and priuate life of *Disteus* came to the eares of his beloued *Palna*, which greeued her not a little, thinking that it was onely for her absence: for remedie whereof she wrote him a letter, wherein she accused him of want of faith, since he fulfilled not his promise, which was, Not to entertaine nor make any shew of greefe, vntill he knewe the cause of her departure; and requested him by all possible meanes to shake off all that sadnes, by the exercise of his person in armes and courtly sports, as he was woont to do. *Disteus* answered her again, protesting with solemne oath that he was rather glad she was with *Dardanea*, from whence (he said) the cause of his sollitarines did not proceed; but that, without knowing the reason thereof, he found himselfe more altered in minde then he was wont to be, after he had receiued her first letter, and had heard her name *Dardanea*; & that on the one side he delighted in hearing it, and on the other (not knowing the cause) trembled when he heard it: in the end he requested her, if she woulde euer doe him any pleasure, to work the meanes that he might see *Dardanea*, for though he had seen her when she was a maide, yet was it not as it should be, according to the great and renowned fame that now was bruted of her. All this that he wrote to her, was her great ioy, seeing how he drew towards the end, that she pretended: but it troubled hir mind not a little to thinke how she might satisfie *Disteus* (though it was her only desire to shew him faire *Dardanea*) bicause she found no fit opportunity by reason of her regular modestie and priuate life. The daily care and studie that both of them had to bring this to effect, discouered a secret way to put both their desires in practise, which was, that on a night (whereon they had agreed bicause it might bee the more secret) if any fit occasion or opportunitie were offered, mine Aunte shoulde send for me, as though she had some busines for me; and that *Disteus* in my apparell should go in my steede, whereof they both aduised me, feining that it was onely to goe see mine Aunt, who woulde not yet trust me with such secret affaires. Mine Aunt staied certaine daies, before she tooke this busines in hand, though opportunitie was many times offered, and deferred the time so long, that he began to complaine on her, and thought that all were but words and promises (for hee that with earnest desire is attending that whereon his minde doth euer runne, doth hardly beleeue any thing) though indeede it was not so: who (pondering the matter well) should haue rather considered, that some great obstacle occurred in her minde concerning the performance of his request, which made such a stop in the meanes and furtherance of it, that holding her for a great while in suspence, she knewe not what to do. And this it was, that if *Disteus* on the sudden had seene faire *Dardanea*, the first sight of that excellent beautie, & the extreme ioy thereof might haue causèd some sudden alteration and traunce in him, to haue made *Dardanea* suspect something:

which mine Aunt would not for all the worlde had hapned, leaſt her Miſtres might haue taken ſome diſpleaſure at them both, which thing made not a little for their good beginning. But as mine Aunt was very diſcreet and wiſe, ſo did ſhe obuiate this doubt with a ſudden remedie; for to preuent any ſuch extreme paſſion, that by ſuch a ſight and ioy he might haue had, ſhe thought to moderate it with ſome preſent thought of no leſſe greeſe and ſorrow. And thus it was, that now performing that that was agreed vpon betweene them, he ſhould come when the night began to waxe ſomewhat darke in my apparell; but ſending for him in my name, ſhe fained that it was to go for a Chirurgian to heale *Dardaneas* arme, the which by opening a great cheſt, the lidde by chance fell downe on, and bruſed very much. The greeſe that he conceiued by theſe heauie newes, was ſo great, that he would now haue changed the ioy that he expected by *Dardaneas* ſight, in lieu that this miſchance had not happened vnto her. For he felt it ſo ſenſibly, that he had almoſt no hart to goe, but yet encouraged himſelfe, leaſt I might haue perceiued it: and ſo hiding his greeſe the beſt he could, he left off his garments, and putting on mine, went ſtraight to *Dardaneas* houſe. Where, without knocking at the doore (for ſo he was willed to doe) he went vp (as I was woont) into a broad chamber that was next to *Dardaneas* withdrawing chamber, where he no ſooner knocked, but a waiting maide comming to the doore, but not to the place where he ſtoode, went backe againe, and told mine Aunt that I was there, who willed her to bid me come in, for ſo had hir Miſtreſſe commaunded, and true it was indeed. Becauſe you may therefore vnderſtand wherein *Dardanea* would haue imployed me, you muſt know, that *Sagaſtes* her brother was in loue with a yoong Gentlewoman well deſcended and rich enough (called *Marthea*) but ſhe requited him not with like againe, for his bad conditions and intolerable pride; and alſo becauſe ſhee was more affected to another Gentleman, though not ſo rich nor ſo highly borne in reſpect of him; but one that was vertuous, noble, and valiant, and of whom ſhe was truely beloued and ſerued againe. But yet for all this ſhe ſhewed *Sagaſtes* a good countenance in recompence of the great and continual ſeruices that he had done hir: *For how much doth not intereſt & gifts preuaile, which are the onely tamers of affections?* So that being glad to be ſerued by ſo mightie a man, and becauſe it is the faſhion of women to glorie in themſelues by ſeeing men howſoeuer (they care not) appaſſionate for them, ſhe gaue him as many ſuperficiall fauours as he deſired, and more indeed, then her honour required. Wherein *Sagaſtes* taking no little pride, beleeued that ſhe loued him from her verie hart. The which opinion confirming in his breaſt with this alſo, That he was in fauour with the King, of great authoritie in the citie, and more nobly borne, and richer then her parents; thought that at the verie inſtant when he purpoſed to demaund her for his wife, he ſhould not haue any deniall: Whereupon he did aske her Fathers good will, who thanked him for his, and for his part gaue his conſent, but alleaging that it was not amiſſe to leaue ſome part to his wife and daughter. Whereat *Sagaſtes* like a proud and diſdainfull man by his angrie countenance ſhewed ſome impatience, who would not haue had the matter deferred any longer. But the loue that he bare *Marthea*, did ſo bridle it, that (contrarie to his naturall and woonted inclination) it pacified him well at that time: And therefore anſwered, that it was well remembred. This marriage pleaſed *Martheas* mother well, to ſee her daughter ſo highly aduanced (a propertie moſt naturall to the ambitious and couetous mindes of women) but diſliked *Marthea* altogither, for that which is aboueſaid. Who anſwered them, that as ſhe was their daughter, and thereby bound to obey their commaund;

maund; ſo they ſhould haue good regard to that they did, & for ſo weightie a matter as this, craue ſome time and reſpit of *Sagaſtes*, wherein they might determine with due conſideration what was beſt to be done, and that then ſhe would giue them her anſwer of the matter. And bicauſe *Sagaſtes* in the meane time might not thinke himſelfe diſgraced while they were concluding this matter, to tell him that ſhe was reſolued firſt to make an end of certaine Pilgrimages and deuotions, which ſhe had of late begun, and ſo in the meane time to feed him with hope, whereby he might not thinke himſelfe agreeued for ſtaying ſo long. This reſpit of time *Marthea* took to trie, if in the end ſhe could diſpoſe her thoughts to loue *Sagaſtes*, and forget her beloued *Beldaniſus* (for ſo was the Gentleman called, who ſerued her, and whom ſhe loued.) And *Sagaſtes* was well content, ſince that her parents had left the concluſion of the matter to *Marthea*, in whom he had placed his libertie. She with the conſent of her parents (not giuing him to vnderſtand any ſuch matter) ſpake vnto him, as often as he would, but fayning that ſhe did it by ſtealth. But as *Sagaſtes* euerie day, & more by night walked vp and downe before her doore, *Beldaniſus* could not chooſe but perceiue it *(for what doth not a true louer ſuſpect and finde out)* and this he ſurmiſed by the cold affection that *Marthea* had ſhewed him of late. Whereupon wrath and iealouſie ſeiſing vpon his hart at once, he reſolued to be well reuenged of him, though it coſt him his life; and therefore certaine nights togither lay in ſecret waite for him, accompanied with his brother and three of his coſins, all three ſufficient men to defend him in any broile. And though ſometimes they met him, yet they durſt not aſſault him, not for feare, but bicauſe there was euer ſo much people in the ſtreetes, that if they had killed or wounded him, they had ſuffered (if it had beene knowen) no leſſe then cruell death: So that they onely attended fit time and opportunitie to do it to their owne ſafetie. By ſome of *Sagaſtes* ſeruants, it came to faire *Dardaneas* eares, that her brother vſed not to ſtay at home in the nights, whereupon incited with deſire and feare, ſhe would faine know whither he went: And talking with mine Aunt *Palma* her nurſe about this matter, thought that there were no better meanes to know it, then by my ſecret diligence to ſpie him out. *Dardanea* therefore for this purpoſe commaunded mine Aunt to ſend for me: and bicauſe *Diſteus* might haue a ſight of *Dardanea*, ſhe cauſed him to come thither in my name. I left you (if I remember) when they bad me come in, or elſe *Diſteus* (to ſay better) diſguiſed like me. Mine Aunt being well aduiſed in euerie thing ſhe tooke in hand, a little before *Diſteus* came in, as if ſhe had nothing to doe, did ſet the candle before her Miſtreſſe for two cauſes: The one, by the oppoſite brightnes of the light, to dazle *Dardaneas* eies, bicauſe ſhee might not knowe *Diſteus*; and the other, to ſhewe *Diſteus* the more light whereby hee might beholde *Dardanea* better. Hee was nowe come in (and if ioyfull to ſee her, or ſorrowfull for her miſhap I knowe not) when the bright reflexion of her faire face ſmit againſt his greedie eies, wherewith he was not onely amazed, but knew that her beautie was greater then the report that was ſpred abroad of it, and that Fame had iniuried her by publiſhing it leſſe, then it was indeede: which not onely hee (in fauour of his affection) but any other (free from like paſſion) might eaſily haue iudged. And without all doubt he had beene in danger of ſome ſudden extaſie, if his minde had not ſtill run on her miſchance, that mine Aunt had feyned: who, thinking that he had now ſeen her enough, which ſo much he deſired, came to him ſpeaking ſomewhat aloude, to hold him ſtill in that opinion, ſaying. *Placindus*, my Lady muſt employ you about her buſines, and therefore commands thee to go thy waies: And ſo of purpoſe ſhe came

to *Diſteus*, to ſpeake with him alone. In good faith (ſaide *Pariſiles*) the comming of *Palna* to *Diſteus* was very pretie, for I was nowe halfe ſorrie with my ſelfe, not knowing what *Palna* would haue ſaid, when he ſpake aloud, that both might haue heard. For *Dardanea* knew that ſhe would ſend him to ſpie out *Sagaſtes*, and *Diſteus* vnderſtood that it was to go for a Chirurgian. And ſo with great diſcretion ſhe ſpake that out aloud, which anſwered both their intents, in that he was ſent to goe his waies, and ſo to deceiue them both by theſe means. *Dardanea*, bicauſe ſhe might not know, that it was *Diſteus*; and *Diſteus*, bicauſe he might not then ſmell out the deceit that *Palna* vſed with him, by making him beleeue, that *Dardanea* was hurt: but ſhe came to him (hauing told him that *Dardanea* bad him go his waies) fit to the purpoſe, for then if he had paſſed further, his ſpeech might haue marred all the matter, and diſcouered the fine deceit. Truly (ſaid Lord *Felix*) ſhe muſt needs be wiſe in al things, and well ſhe manifeſted the ſame by ſetting the candle before *Dardanea*. For theſe fauourable notes, Gentlemen, which by the way you haue gathered of mine Aunt, to confirme them (ſaide *Placindus*) I giue you my word, that ſhe was accounted for ſuch an one; and bicauſe I am her kinſman, I hold my peace, concerning that which might be ſpoken more in her praiſe, and alſo bicauſe by the proceſſe of my tale you ſhall ſee it. To proceede therefore: As ſhe came neere to *Diſteus*, turning to *Dardanea*, ſhe ſaid, Do you command him any other ſeruice, and I will tel it him: No, ſaid *Dardanea*, but he ſhall do me a pleaſure if heerein he doe his diligence. Mine Aunt then tooke *Diſteus* by the hande to bring him foorth, whereat hee ſeemed to make ſome ſmall reſiſtance, vnlooſing his hand from hers, as though he woulde haue put on his cloake that fell downe: which when mine Aunt perceiued, with an angrie countenance, ſhe ſaide ſoftly vnto him. You ſhall come no more hither I promiſe you. Who hearing her ſharpe threatning, with the teares in his eies, anſwered. Pardon (good mother) the body, that is loath to depart from the ſoule: whereupon they went out, and mine Aunt went talking with him, and asked him, if he was nowe cleered of the fault, that ſhe made by her departure. Whereunto he anſwered not a word, for by contemplating of that ſoueraigne beautie, he was ſo much diſtraught in minde, that he heard not what ſhe ſaid. But afterwardes being come to himſelfe againe, with a profound ſigh he ſaid. O what ſhall become of thee *Diſteus*: wherewith he helde his peace. She blamed him for this ſpeech, and reproued him for that he had done, telling him plainly, that theſe were not the meanes to deliuer him from his paſſions. Some ſpeeches being paſt betweene them, ſhe opened vnto him the whole deceit, which ſhe had fayned of her Miſtreſſe breaking off her arme, and why ſhe did it, and telling him all, euen to that point, when I, or rather he, was ſent foorth, ſhe ſaid. You muſt now therefore, bicauſe my miſtreſſe *Dardanea* commands this to be done, go by and by to your lodging, and giue my coſin his garments, and tell him what I ſaid to you, that *Dardanea* doth pray him (not making mention of any other matter) and I cammaund him to goe about his errant with all diligence. But *Diſteus* aunſwered, God neuer graunt, that another fulfill that which was commaunded me. In mine owne perſon I will doe that, which my Miſtreſſe commaunded mee, being but diſguiſed and counterfeit: Doe as you thinke good, ſaide mine Aunt, but in ſuch ſort that it may bee thought that my nephew did it. Leaue that to me, ſaid he, and take you care for the reſt: And with this they tooke their leaue of one another. He went ſtraight to his houſe, where he found me waiting for him, and ſaid vnto me. Heere thou maieſt ſafely ſtay *Placindus* this night, for I will go walke a little vp and downe the citie, and weare thy garments:

ments: And though thine Aunt commands thee to goe of an errant, which ſhe gaue me in charge to tell thee, bicauſe my waie lies thereabouts, I will my ſelfe do it. And bicauſe thou maieſt not be found with my garments on, if any come to ſeeke me, thou ſhalt locke thy ſelfe in: for I will bid my ſeruants (if any aske for me) ſaie that I am a ſleepe, and open the dore to no bodie, vnleſſe hee ſay he is *Placindus*, bicauſe when I come they may then let mee in. With this aduiſe that hee gaue me, he went into an inward chamber and tooke a buckler, and a good broad ſword, (that many daies ſince was hung vp againſt the wall, bicauſe it was ſomewhat too heauie for his hand, though now *Dardaneas* loue had added more ſtrength & force to his arme) & did put on a ſhirt of maile, & a good head-peece. Being thus armed, he went to looke when *Sagaſtes* came forth, and in this ſort went, leaſt in the night any harme might haue hapned vnto him. When hee came to *Sagaſtes* houſe, hee heard a tuning of certaine inſtruments, for it fell out that hee went that night to beſtowe ſome muſicke on his Miſtres *Marthea*. After a little while that he had ſtaied there (which might be about eleuen of the clocke) he heard them comming downe; and bicauſe he would not be ſeene, as though hee ſtoode there to watch them, hee paſſed ouer the ſtreete, going his waies. *Sagaſtes* had ſo great a preſumption of the authoritie and countenance, that he had by the kings fauour in the citie, that hee thought none durſt offend him; and therefore went accompanied but onely with a page that caried his rapier, and the muſicions weapons. *Diſteus* (leaſt by the brightnes of the Moone he might haue beene deſcried) followed aloofe off to *Martheas* houſe, where all of them ſtaying, one of the muſicions began to ſounde a cornet aloud, I thinke, to awake the people and to call vp *Marthea*; and after that euery one playing on his ſeuerall inſtrument, as on a Lute, a Harpe, a Recorder, a Bandora and others with ſuch concent and melodie, that it ſeemed (as in their ſong they ſaid) to ſtaie the courſe of the night. To which melodious notes not long after a boye with a paſſing ſweete voice, did ſing this Dittie, which *Sagaſtes* cauſed to be made for his owne purpoſe.

LEt the ſilence of the night
At my will her dutie ſhowe:
Harken to me euery Wight,
Or be ſtill, or ſpeake but lowe:
Let no watching dog with ſpight
Barke at any to or fro,
Nor the Cocke (of Titan *bright*
The foreteller) once to crowe.
Let no prying gooſe excite
All the flocke to ſqueake a rowe:
Let the windes retaine their might,
Or a little while not blowe:
Whilſt thy eare I doe inuite
On this ditty to beſtowe.
In the which I will recite
Thy deſerts, which euer growe:
Nor thy beauties ſo bedight,
Fairer then the roſe or ſnowe.
Nor how with thy grace (of right)
Thou doſt conquer others ſoe:
Nor thy vertues exquiſite,
Which no wight deſerues to knowe.
For into ſeas infinite
With ſmall barke it were to goe,
And that labyrinth ſans light,
Wherein Theſeus *they did throwe.*
I not hauing in this plight
Threed as he (his guide from woe)
I will onely ſing and write
How in happines I flowe,
That thy ſeruant I doe hight,
Praiſing Fortune *and Loues bowe:*
Thanking him, that ſo did ſmite:
She, bicauſe ſhe was not ſlowe
In her throne my paines to quite:
Loue, for (like a friendly foe)
Wounding thee with golden flight:
And for ſhooting many moe
Into my ſoule, whoſe paines ſhal ſeeme but ſlight,
If with thy grace their woũds thou wilt requite.

Sagastes would haue the dittie make mention of this last point, bicause as *Marthea* gaue him to vnderstand no lesse, so he beleeued not any thing to the contrarie. This song being ended, he began to doe that he promised, which was to praise God *Cupid* and *Fortune*, with so great delight of the hearers, as the end of the first had taken it away from them. But their beginning (as it was told me) was not without the vnpleasant iarring of their discording instruments. I beleeue it well (said Lord *Felix*) that this discord was not any whit pleasant to them there when the recitall thereof heere is displeasant to mine eares: and therefore I pray thee, without any more circumstances, tell vs what was sung besides, for I doe greatly desire to heare how he praised *Fortune*, an apter subiect of blame, then fit to be praised. If it be your pleasures (said *Placindus*) giue eare to my words, and note the meaning of it, for this is the song.

HE *that doth* Fortune *blame,*
And of God Cupid *speaketh ill.*
Full little knowes he that his will
Is subiect to the same:
And that he doth procure his proper shame,
Held for a foole, and one of simple skill.

Who speakes he knowes not what,
Is thought to be a very Sot:
For good of them who speaketh not?
And I suspect that that
Same simple one, doth lay a formall plat
To be reputed for an Idiot.

He knowes not Fortunes *might,*
Nor knowes the mightie God of Loue:
She rules beneath, and he aboue;
For she doth sit by right
Amongst the Goddesses with shining light;
And he amongst the Gods his might doth proue.

The Boy I will omit,
Since that his great and mighty name
Giues him great praise and woorthy fame,
Being (who knowes not it)
The God of Loue, *whose praise I will forgit,*
To sing of Fortune *that most noble dame.*

The foole on Fortune *railes,*
Bicause she neuer doth repose,
The first and highest sphere, and those
Adioyning, neuer failes
In that, which all the world so much auailes,
I meane in motions which they neuer lose.

In their perpetuall course.
Their essence and foundation lies,
And in their motions neuer dies:
Our life from them their source
Doth take, and vnto death should haue recourse,
And cease, if they should cease to moue the skies.

They vse to paint her blinde,
Bicause the highest, and the lowe
She reares, and after downe doth throwe,
Respecting not the kinde
Of persons, nor the merits of the minde:
The King she doth not from the Collier knowe.

Fortune *heerein they take*
For a great Goddesse (and with right)
For Goddesses doe not requite
With partiall hand, and makes
No difference of persons for their sakes,
And partially doe neuer vse their might.

They call her also mad,
Bicause her works they doe not knowe,
Nor any path, where she doth goe,
But all her waies so bad:
That to exempt themselues they would be glad
From them, for feare of their ensuing woe.

But such are made indeede,
That make a reason so vnfit,
For when did euer humane wit
Knowe what the Gods decreed?
Or how they meant with power to proceede,
Or their intents? which men could neuer hit.

It fitteth not my song
To deigne to answere with direction
Men of such wit and small perfection:
That offer her such wrong;
For Fortune doth onely to those belong
That haue the vse of reason and election.

The Ancient otherwise
Did thinke, for they did make of her
A Goddesse, and they did not erre:
To whom sweete sacrifize,
And temples in her name they did deuise:
As in their bookes they doe no lesse auerre.

When

When this ſong in the praiſe of *Fortune* was ended, then in diſpraiſe of time (for now as I tolde you the anſwere of his marriage was deferred for one moneth, and euery ſhort hower ſeemed a long yeere vnto him) he ſung this Sonnet. But I will goe on with my diſcourſe, and will not tell it you, bicauſe I ſhall but trouble you (I thinke) with recitall of it, as it hath done me by ſeeing it ſo imperfect, and not ended. In faith thou art too extreme in thy opinions (ſaid Lord *Felix*) and though I had diuers occaſions offered me to aske thee many queſtions, yet I haue held my peace vnto the end, bicauſe thou mighteſt proceede without interruption, and it ſeemes of purpoſe thou ſeekeſt many digreſſions to depriue vs of that, wherein we take no ſmall delight. Then doe vs ſo great a pleaſure, as to tell vs the ſong that was begun, and why it was not ended, and heere we will endeuour (if we can) to ſupplie the wants of it. Since you offer me ſo faire (ſaid *Placindus*) I will tell it you, but I thinke it will be ſomewhat hard for you. Then lend a patient eare to the vnhappie Sonnet, which I thinke will not pleaſe you ſo well.

All you that haue vnworthily complained
Of Loue, *and* Fortune, *each a mighty powre:*
On Time, *that doth your ſweete contents deuowre*
Turne them: For more heereby is to be gained.
For time is falſe: For if content vnfained
It giueth thee, t paſſeth in an howre;
But ſtill it ſtaies if it begins to lowre.
It comes not wiſht for, nor doth ſtay obtained:
Time *hath no friend in any thing created,*
For euery thing it waſteth and conſumeth,
And doth not ſpare ſo much as any body &c.

The Boy was yet redoubling the foote of the laſt verſe, when *Beldaniſus*, who ſerued *Martha*, came ſuddenly vpon *Sagaſtes*, and marred all the muſicke, hauing left his brother and three of his coſins in reareward to helpe him, if any came foorth in *Sagaſtes* defence. *Diſteus* that now, &c.

Stay a little (ſaid Lord *Felix*) for it ſhall not be amiſſe (with leaue of this good company) that I cut off the thread of this diſcourſe, when as ſo often it hath beene broken off. And before I forget it, declare vnto me but halfe of one of thoſe verſes aboue, that begins thus:

It fitteth not my ſong, &c.

The meaning whereof I doe not vnderſtand no more then the words. To anſwer your demaund Lord *Felix* (ſaid *Placindus*) it is requiſite I had beene brought vp in the Academies of the Grecian Philoſophers, and (as it is in prouerbe) in the Peripateticke ſchooles. But ſince you will ſo faine knowe the expoſition of it, I will ſhew it you written with his owne hand, that made the verſes, who at my requeſt did it, and I carrie it alwaies about me, bicauſe I like it well. And heere it is. But will you heare me reade it vnto you, or reade it your ſelfe? Thou haſt wiſely asked me this queſtion (ſaid Lord *Felix*) for of this point I haue ſeene diuers good conceites, and from whence the cauſe proceedes I knowe not, but let it goe: For of conceites and opinions (they ſay) there is no diſputing. But I take more pleaſure to reade it my ſelfe, to ſtay and ſtudie vpon that which likes me beſt, and to vnderſtand it the better. Read it therefore aloude (ſaid *Placindus*) that euerie one may vnderſtand it,

and

and that I may tell you when you muſt leaue. I read it, ſaid Lord *Felix*, and therefore giue attentiue eare, for thus it ſaith.

It fitteth not my ſong
To deigne to anſwer with direction
Men of ſuch wit and ſmall perfection,
That offer her ſuch wrong:
For Fortune doth onely to thoſe belong
That haue the vſe of reaſon and election.

For declaration whereof we muſt preſuppoſe the learning and opinions of the Peripatetickes, That *Fortune* is an accidentall cauſe, which doth ſeldome happen, and comes onely to them that worke by election, ordained to ſome end. It woulde be too long a labour to expound euery particular part heereof, and tell how it is vnderſtood, and if it be diſtinguiſhed from the fower cauſes, which the Philoſophers doe aſſigne; and if it be not diſtinguiſhed (bicauſe then there ſhould be fiue) to which of the fower it is reduced; and what difference there is betweene *Chaunce*, *Fortune* and *Fate*, and many other things touching this ſubiect. But to fulfill our purpoſe, it ſufficeth to vnderſtand: That if one did dig, or turne vp the ground to ſowe, or burie ſome thing, and digging did finde ſome treaſure, this digging ſhould be termed Fortunate, which was the cauſe of finding the treaſure. And it is called the Accidentall cauſe, bicauſe that digging was not ordained to finde treaſure, but to burie a dead thing. For if it had beene knowne that it was there, and he had digged to that end, it could not be termed *Fortune*. It came to one that vſed election; for it lay in his choice to digge, which he might haue left vndone if he would, conſidering beſides howe finding of treaſure doth ſeldome happen. It muſt be called good *Fortune*, if the effect be good, as finding of treaſure; ill, if the effect be naught, as when he found treaſure, he found a viper that bit him. It may be called great, if the effect be great; little, if the effect be little. Whereupon it may be gathered for our purpoſe or intent (for they vſe all in one ſignification for this preſent diſputation) that it may be called *Fortune*. So that in fooles and children, that haue no reaſon, there is no *Fortune*. Whereupon you ſhall vnderſtand, that if the ſtone, whereof they make the aulters, or the woode, whereof they make the ſtatues of the Gods, they poetically call Fortunate, it is by a figure called *Metaphora*, or likenes, that thoſe ſtones and woode hath in reſpect of others with fortunate men, and thoſe which are not. But there is one thing to be noted, that inſenſible things participate of *Fortune* paſſiuely, as obiects, by meanes whereof men are fortunate.

Giue it me againe (ſaid *Placindus* to Lord *Felix*) for you go too far, that which is read is ſufficient for the vnderſtanding of the foreſaid verſes. Truely (ſaid *Pariſiles*) it is learnedly handled, and I thinke that the point which Lord *Felix* deſired to know, is ſufficiently vnderſtoode, and that he cleerely ſhewed it by that which he read, conſidering the obſcuritie of the matter. I am ſatisfied (ſaid Lord *Felix*) but I ſhould take great pleaſure, if now the ſence of the verſe (taken with the intent) were quadrant to my minde. I am content (ſaid *Placindus*) to teil it. Hauing ſaid in the beginning (if you remember) that whoſoeuer ſpeaketh ill of *Fortune* was a foole, anſwering to his reaſons, he prooues himſelfe to haue no reaſon, whereupon that it is inferred in that ſtaffe which you aske, that ſince they haue no reaſon at that time, when one entreates of *Fortune*, it is not meete to talke with them, nor they to med-

dle

dle with things of *Fortune, Since Fortune onely commeth to him that hath reason.* Nowe that I am resolued(said Lord *Felix*)returne to your Historie againe. You made an end in telling how *Beldanisus* had interrupted the musicke, leauing his brother and cosens in the retegard: I brake it off at this worde *Disteus that now*. And since I interrupted your continued discourse, it is reason that I helpe you to knit it, and reduce you to it againe. Well then from that place I will begin, said *Placindus*.

Disteus, that now had come somewhat neere, desirous to taste of that dainty musicke, euen then when he saw violent hands laid on *Sagastes* (although he hated him mortally, yet to do his Lady *Dardanea* seruice) he ranne in, and stept betweene *Beldanisus* and *Sagastes* (for he had now also drawne his sword) saying. Keepe out Lord *Sagastes*, and receiue this small peece of seruice for my Mistres *Dardanea* your sisters sake. *Beldanisus* was so wroth to see *Sagastes* taken away, that like an angrie Beare despoiled of her yoong ones, with enraged furie he ran vpon *Disteus*, to wreake his anger wholly vpon him; and thinking he had beene but of small courage, and partly incensed with violent despite and choler, without any feare he ranne within him, and lifting vp his sworde with all his strength did manfully discharge it vpon him. But *Disteus* like a stout and couragious Gentleman, knowing it was no time to dally when he sawe such a furious blowe comming, before it was discharged, by closing with him tooke it vpon his buckler, wherewith he thumped him so strongly on the brest, that he felled him to the ground; where, hauing knocked his head by the terrible fall, he lay senceles for a space, and was not able to rise vp againe. *Sagastes* and his page would haue come in to helpe *Disteus*, but that *Beldanisus* brother, and his cosens seeing swordes drawne in *Sagastes* fauour, two of them fell vpon *Disteus*, thinking it had beene *Sagastes*, with intent to haue made but a short peece of worke of it, bicause they could not stay long about that busines (for so the fower had concluded betweene them) and the other two fell vpon *Sagastes* and his page, whom they thought to be *Sagastes* men. But it fell out cleane contrarie, and in vaine came they in so soone, for *Disteus* had now smitten *Beldanisus* to the grounde, where his brother seeing him lie, without a worde, thought verily that he was slaine. Wherefore determining either to die, or to reuenge his death, with one of his cosens he assailed *Disteus*: who without any signe of feare or cowardise manfully receiued them both. But yet he sawe himselfe narrowly beset, bicause they were both hardy youths; besides that the wrath and desire of reuenge, to see *Beldanisus* on the ground, made them desperate. But they were not able to controll *Disteus* his courage, nor to abate his strength and dexteritie, that had by this time wearied them, and ended their liues, if they had not bin wel armed with defences. But when at his pleasure he lifted vp his good sworde to smite one of them, he did so hardly entreate them, that they thought it best not to come within his reach, wherewith he had nowe broken their maile, and wounded them lightly in some places. The two cosens made *Sagastes* and his page flie before them, and had killed them, if they thought *Sagastes* had beene there, being also ignorant in what case *Beldanisus* and his cosens were. But nowe when *Disteus* had brought them to an ill passe, *Beldanisus* came to himselfe againe, (for he had no other harme, but that onely by the blowe in his head he had lost his sence) and knowing what a great shame and dishonour it was vnto him, and seeing besides how valiantly the man that came in betweene them, had behaued himselfe with two of them, he fell fiercely vpon him, of purpose to take iust reuenge of him, assailing him more aduisedly then before. *Disteus* though he sawe himselfe encountred by three, did not yet loose his manly courage, but as if the effray had but then

begun,

begun, wounded them cruelly, not escaping himselfe without some small wounds & cuts in his garments, bicause their swordes did not cut like his, nor their armes had the strength as his had; the cheefest cause whereof was, that *Disteus* did not let them wound him at their pleasure: albeit one of the cosins did put him to much trouble: For as two of them did set him well a worke, he with a long tucke did thrust at him mortall stocados, whereupon *Disteus* thinking that all the victory consisted by ouercomming him, he endeuoured to close with him; for he perceiued wel, that if he had thrust but one to his minde, it had beene ynough for him. But the other two perceiuing his intent, preuented him of his purpose; whereupon the other in the meane time reached him a desperate thrust, the which with a ready eie auoyding, he requited with such a sturdie blowe, that he felled him to the ground: And to *Beldanisus*, who had wounded him in the shoulder, without any pause at all he gaue an ouerthwart blowe on the left arme, that he cut the maile from his sleeue, and the flesh to the bone. With these two blowes they were put in such a feare, that they thought it best to giue backe, studying rather to defend themselues, then offend or hurt their enemie. *Disteus* seeing the victorie in his hands, did not cease to plie them still in such sort, that he made them by one and one retire. But now by this time there was much people gathered togither, to part the effray, though by the darknes of the night one knew not another. Whereupon *Disteus*, taking vp his cloke, that he had cast downe, got himselfe out of the prease: and *Sagastes* to seeke the man out, that had helped him so well in that encounter, cared not to pursue his enemies, so that they escaped then away vnknowen, without getting any thing of their purpose. *Disteus* perceiuing, that with so great desire they sought him, to doe his feate the better, and that which hereafter you shall heare, came to *Sagastes* page, and putting a corner of his handkercher in his mouth, bicause he would not be knowen by his speech, said vnto him. Let not thy Master take any care to knowe who I am, for to morrow I will goe my selfe to kisse his handes. The page went with this errant, but *Sagastes* not content therewith, would haue gone himselfe to haue spoken with him, if the page had not disswaded him, saying. Sir, it is no reason to molest him, that hath done you no lesse a good turne, then the sauing of your life. It seemes he would not now be willingly knowne, let him therefore alone and trouble him not, since he hath giuen you his word to come to morrow and visit you. Thou saiest well (saide *Sagastes*) and till then I shall not be quiet in minde: for it hath put me in a great wonder and confusion to knowe who he might be, that so valiantly defended himselfe against three; but in a greater, when I call to minde the wordes that he spake, when he stept in to helpe me, That I should take it for a peece of seruice due to my sister and his Mistresse *Dardanea*. For they were such, that (had I not knowen *Dardanea* well) would haue put me in a great suspicion and iealousie of her. And besides this, it comes also to my minde that if he be wounded (for he could not otherwise escape) it shall be ill beseeming me, if I doe not the best I can to procure his health and reuenge, although by the last he hath sufficiently acquited himselfe. Go tell him therefore from me what my desire and good will is towardes him, and that (before he be gone in haste to helpe himselfe) I will not depart from this place. The page went, and being come to *Disteus* spake thus vnto him. Sir, whosoeuer you be, my Lord *Sagastes* doth kisse your hands, and by me giues you to vnderstand, that he praies the Gods may graunt him but the lest occasion and opportunity to serue you in any thing he may, and to requite the great good turne, which he hath this night receiued at your hands; who would haue come in person himselfe to thanke you, but

that

that he vnderſtands it is your deſire to cõceale your ſelfe. He is alſo no leſſe deſirous to know who you are, but he is loth to intreat you to any thing againſt your will, leſt perhaps, you would deny to do that you ſhal think good, although you haue forced him to be euer bound vnto you. But for all this he would vrge and oblige you to fulfill your promiſe, to ſee him to morrow according to your word. He praies you moreouer to looke wel to your ſelfe, if you be wounded, and to take ſome ſpeedy order for your ſafetie, ſaying, that vntill he ſee you go hence, he will not depart from the place where he is. Tell thy Lord, anſwered *Diſteus*, that if I haue done any thing for him, it was no more but a due debt which I owe him, onely for that he is brother to my Miſtreſſe *Dardanea*: and bicauſe he may not be greeued in minde by not knowing who I am, tell him that I am *Placindus*, nephew to *Palna*, free from wounds, and I muſt needs ſtay here all alone about certaine buſines that I haue agreed vpon, and that therefore he may depart, ſince I am greeued in nothing, wherein his care may preuaile me, aſſuring him that to morrow I will ſtand to my word and promiſe. The Page maruelled much that I had ſo valiantly helped his Lord and him, and as he eſteemed me in his mind for a tall man: ſo thought me to be ill brought vp by giuing him ſo rude an anſwere. For *Diſteus* of purpoſe would not anſwere him with more humanitie, though he could do it well, bicauſe there was no cauſe as I told you to vſe him well, but onely that he was brother to her, that was his onely ioy. But the page thinking it proceeded of ignorãce & want of good education, mended (I think) the matter with his Lord touching my homely anſwer. *Sagaſtes* woondred (and not without great reaſon) when he heard that it was I, that had ſo manfully taken his part, and with that falſe opinion which from that time he had of my valour, he went home, thinking ſtil it was I, by whom he receiued ſo great a benefit. *Diſteus* alſo when he ſaw *Sagaſtes* gone, went home to his own houſe, where he found me with fear for his long tarying, & carefully attending his returne. But when I ſaw him ſo ill entreated, I began to chaunge colour, thinking he had beene hurt, and therefore ſaid vnto him. What meanes this Sir? How come you home in this ſort? Trouble not thy ſelfe, ſaid *Diſteus*, for I haue no hurt: and now that thou haſt ſeene, how in thy apparell (becauſe I would not be knowen in *Dardaneas* houſe) I went to ſee thine Aunt and my mother: So I alſo told thee that thine Aunt was to ſend thee of an errant, the which bicauſe it lay in my way, I would alſo diſpatch. The errant therefore that *Dardanea* did will thee to do was this: But giue good eare, and looſe not a word of that, which I will tell thee, bicauſe it behooues thee much, and alſo bicauſe we may not both be taken in a lye. I ſay *Dardanea* requeſted thee to goe watch her brother, who (as it was told her) was accuſtomed to goe night by night out of his houſe, and to ſee whither he went. But it fell out, that this night my ſelfe doing that, which was committed to thy charge, after a good while that *Sagaſtes* came foorth, I followed him, and after this he told me particularly all the ſucceſſe, as you haue now heard, and ſomewhat more. When I heard of the ſingular fauour and helpe that *Diſteus* had done to *Sagaſtes*, I was aſtoniſhed to ſee that with ſo great zeale and courage he had ſuccoured him, who was his mortall enemie, and therefore ſaide vnto him. You haue filled me Sir full of woonder, for it is beyond all ſence and conceit that you ſhould be mooued to put your life in danger for one, that would bereaue you of yours. Stay (ſaid *Diſteus*) and hearken how the matter fals out, & thou ſhalt know the whole cauſe, whereby thou ſhalt vnderſtand how much thou art beholding vnto me. Thou muſt therfore know that to heare the muſick the better (as I told thee) I came ſomwhat neere, thinking that by wearing thy apparell, I might not haue been knowen,

knowen, and bicauſe *Dardanea* might not thinke of thee the worſe, that being preſent there, thou didſt not helpe her brother in ſo great danger, I thought good not for any loue I bare him (whom I would rather haue purſued to death, then to defende him from it) but for thy ſake *Placindus*, to put my perſon in hazard. And therefore bicauſe it might bee thought, that thou wert the man that came to helpe him, when I ſtept in before him, I ſaide: Accept this ſmall token of good will Lord *Sagaſtes* for my Miſtreſſe *Dardaneas* ſake, your vertuous ſiſter. And now therefore that thou knoweſt how al hath hapned, and that I charged thee not to forget the leaſt part thereof, giue eare to the end, whereunto this particular diſcourſe of mine is adreſſed. To morrowe thou ſhalt goe to my mother and carrie her a letter from me, and tell her what thou haſt done, touching that buſines which ſhe had giuen thee in charge, wherein all the whole matter ſhall conſiſt. Firſt, bicauſe ſhe may aduiſe thee howe to behaue thy ſelfe with *Dardanea*, and with anie other that perhaps may aske thee howe this matter paſſed. Secondly, bicauſe ſhe may ſet downe ſome good order for that which is needfull to be done. After this, thou ſhalt go and ſpeake with *Sagaſtes*, to ſtand to thy word (or rather mine to ſaie better) where, (as thine Aunt ſhall inſtruct thee, and as I haue aduiſed thee) thou ſhalt ſpeake vnto him. Thou ſhalt alſo carrie this ſword with thee, bicauſe I thinke he will aske for it, for the good proofe that it made on the rapiers and daggers there. If he would know where thou hadſt it, tell him that when thine Aunt was with me, I gaue it thee, and ſo I am ſure hee will beſtow ſome ſuites of apparell on thee in recompence of thine which were ſpoiled and defaced in his defence. But thou muſt do me ſo much pleaſure, not to take them at his hands, but rather tell him, that thou careſt not for any other recompence, then that thou didſt it for *Dardaneas* ſeruice, being Miſtres to thine Aunt. In doing whereof, thou ſhalt not onelie binde me, to beſtow this, and more on thee, but alſo her (when ſhe ſhall know howe thou didſt aduenture thy life for her ſake) to requite this good turne, and euer hereafter to make more account of thy manhood and fidelitie: And, by denying to take any reward at *Sagaſtes* hands, oblige her moreouer to thine Aunt. The next daie in the morning I carried the letter that *Diſteus* had written that night to mine Aunt, and told her all that had paſſed.

As *Placindus* went on thus telling the pleaſant diſcourſe of *Diſteus* and *Dardaneas* loues, they all bent their eares to a certaine noiſe that a horſe and his Maſter made, he to take him that ran vp and downe without his bridle, and the horſe vnwilling to be caught, bicauſe he liked his libertie better. Which when *Placindus* ſaw, with a merrie countenance he aroſe, and ſaid. I beſeech you ſage Lady, and noble companie, pardon me, for it ſhall ill become me if I goe not to helpe that Gentleman to get his horſe againe. And without more adoe he went and left them all laughing, and ſomewhat greeued to ſee how abruptly he left them for ſo ſmall a matter. To whom *Felicia* ſpake thus. Thinke it not a ſmall occaſion that hath made him leaue you thus, for it ſhould ill beſeeme him indeede (as he well conſidered no leſſe) if he did not helpe him, that ran after his horſe, bicauſe he is a great friend to *Diſteus*, called *Martandrus*, who as you muſt knowe went out long ſince in company of *Delicius* and *Parthenius*, to ſeeke out *Diſteus* and *Dardanea*: wherefore you ſhould be the rather glad of his comming at this time, bicauſe better then *Placindus* he can tell you out the reſt of theſe loues that *Placindus* hath begun. If it be ſo, ſaid Lorde *Felix*, and the Shepherdes, it ſhall not be likewiſe amiſſe for vs all to helpe him. And ſo riſing vp, they helped *Martandrus* to get his horſe againe. But *Martandrus*, who

knew not *Placindus* before he had his horse in his hand, when now *Placindus* came to salute him, he most louingly then imbraced him, and forgetting his passed trouble for ioy to see *Placindus*, he cast his armes about his necke, and let his horse goe whither he would againe. In this sort they were a good while not able to vtter a word, when in the end, they being both desirous to be informed of one another, if they knew any thing of them, whom they went seeking vp and downe, *Felicia* came to them saying. *Martandrus* come with me, for heere you shall haue newes of whatsoeuer you desire to knowe. *Martandrus* for this respect, but for the maiestie and authoritie which he noted in her graue person, and for that she had called him by his owne name, as also vnderstanding what she was by that which you shall heare, framed this answere. The generall fame of your singular wisedome (most renowned Lady *Felicia*) which in all the world is so far extended, after a long time (spent in vaine) hath brought me to this place to be directed by your wisedome, in what vnknowen part of the world I might finde out *Disteus* and *Dardanea*, since so many of vs with lost labour haue trauelled in all forren countries and troden euery path, that, I thinke, there are no meanes left to attaine to our desired purpose, if by your helpe in these so iust cares and trauels we be not fauoured. The which heereafter shall not be wanting, said *Felicia*, when fitter opportunitie shall serue; in the meane while aduising you to take your rest, and not to trouble your selues to seeke them any more, whose long desired presence with others, whom perhaps you thinke not of, you shall (as soone as possible it may be) see heere in this Pallace to the generall ioy and content of all. While they were in these and such like speeches, the Shepherdes went once againe to take vp the horse, and *Placindus* went for the bridle, where *Martandrus* told him it lay, and then they went where all the rest of the companie were. Which when *Martandrus* had seene, he maruelled very much, especially when he sawe *Stela* of so rare and incomparable beautie in so simple and poore a habit; for albeit *Felismena*, *Crimine*, the Shepherdes and the Nymphes tooke great pitie of her poore estate, yet they came not neere her in beautie: And *Martandrus* eies were not deceiued with the aduantage of the gorgeous apparell, wherewith *Felismena* and the Nymphes were not meanely adorned. *Crimine* and *Stela* vnderstanding by *Felicia* that *Delicius* and *Parthenius* were sonnes to *Disteus* and *Dardanea*, and that *Martandrus* went to seeke them out, and what a great friend he was to them both, did sometimes cast their amorous eies vpon him, who with a little opinion of himselfe, thinking that after another sort he seemed gracious in that faire Shepherdesses eies (for he made not so great reckoning of *Crimine*) was somewhat proud, and began to feele some little passion of loue, which had beene greater if he had not abated it with thinking of her base estate. *Felicia* passing away a little time in talke, saide. But now it shall not be amisse to giue this Gentleman leaue to goe rest him, and bicause he may knowe, that we are all desirous to doe him what pleasure we can, we will goe beare him companie. *Martandrus* kissed her handes for this princely fauour: And so they went towardes *Dianas* Temple, and to *Felicias* stately Pallace, where with all kinde of noble entertainment for certaine daies he rested. *Stela*, and *Crimine* being no lesse desirous then all the rest, did humbly beseech Lady *Felicia* to request *Martandrus* to make an ende of that sweete tale, which *Placindus* had begun. *Felicia* considering their iust request, one day after dinner tolde *Martandrus*, how desirous those Gentlemen, Nymphes, Shepherdes, and Shepherdesses were to heare out the rest of the noble historie of *Disteus* and *Dardanea*, and the cause why they so earnestly desired it. Who therefore knowing at what

what place *Placindus* had left, all of them keeping great silence, began as followeth in the next booke.

The end of the seuenth booke.

The eight Booke of the second Part of Diana of George of Montemayor.

THe letter which *Disteus* had sent to *Palna* by *Placindus*, being receiued, whereby he particularly informed her of that which had hapned the night before, strange was the ioy that she conceiued for the happie aide and fauour that *Disteus* did in *Sagastes* behalfe; and that *Sagastes* vnderstood that it was *Placindus* that had so valiantly stept foorth in his defence: wherewith she went by and by to *Dardanea*, and saide thus vnto her. The neerer that one is to danger my good Ladie, the greater is the ioy when he is free from it. Happie was the hower wherein you sent *Placindus* to espie out your brother, for else an ill one had betide you, if so good a desire had beene any longer deferred. This last night was *Sagastes* borne againe to you, and more by your good remembrance and tender care, then by the course of the impartiall heauens. This night you haue deliuered *Sagastes* from death, by the desire you had to know his night-haunts, and in the end haue giuen him life by sending *Placindus* to follow him. And bicause you may be assured of the good newes I bring you (for me thinkes I see you somewhat altered) with telling you first that he is as safe and sound as your selfe, you shall vnderstand deere Mistresse, that after *Placindus* went from hence with your command, purposing to do it in the best sort he could, he thought it not amisse (whatsoeuer should happen) to be prouided for the defence of his person: and not knowing how to furnish himself with necessary weapons at such an houre, at last bethought him to request them of *Disteus*, who (though with great reason he be angry with me, hath not for al this lost his generous hart, considering also that my nephew was not in fault) did not deny to lend him the best he had. And bicause I must tel you nothing but truth, I wil not faile to tel it, though to mine own dishonor, & to my cosins ignominy it doth greatly result. You shal therefore vnderstand good Lady, that my nephew (all this she fained on purpose for that which you shall heare hereafter) putting on a priuie coate in *Disteus* presence, trembled & quaked as if his mind gaue him he should be in some dangerous fray that night. Which when *Disteus* perceiued, he frankly offered to goe and helpe him: which *Placindus* at the first would by no meanes accept, when being not a little importuned by *Disteus*, in the end he told him all the matter, saying, that in no hand he would omit to watch *Sagastes*, bicause you had commaunded him so, and I had giuen him as straight a charge thereof. Whereupon *Disteus* forced him to giue him his garments, saying, That he would go in his place and discharge him of that busines. After this she told her all that had happened, and forgot not to extoll *Disteus* his manly deedes, and how he had most valiantly acquited himselfe against his enemies, in the ende commending his wisedome, and pollicie in that he made *Sagastes* beleeue, that he was *Placindus*. The which good Ladie (said *Palna*) you must not reueale, nor otherwise make it knowen, but that your brother was aided by my nephew. If thou art glad, *Palna*, said *Dardanea*, for these, which thou termest, good newes, and which (happily to please me)

thou doſt bring me, I am not ſo: for I know not whether I may recken them in the number of good, or conſort them amongſt the ill. On the one ſide, by giuing credit to thy words, I ſee my brother free from harme (which I pray the Gods may be true) and on the other, ſee not wherein thou meaneſt to place mine honour with thy pretences, which the Gods alſo permit may not be hurtfull. It likes me well to ſee my brother in health and ſafe from wounds; but it would greeue me more to haue mine honour (only in thought) called in queſtion. I am glad to know that my brother hath beene defended in ſo great danger, but ſorrie that it was by *Diſteus*. Thou mighteſt haue pleaſed me well *Palna*, and no leſſe contented thy ſelfe, if with theſe good newes, thou hadſt onely told me that *Sagaſtes* was free from danger, and not proceeded further to tell me, by whoſe means he eſcaped it. There was no cauſe I thinke (for that which toucheth me ſo neere, will not giue me leaue to vnderſtand it otherwiſe) why *Diſteus* helpe ſhould be hidden from others, and onely made knowen to me. And bicauſe I finde the thought thereof ſo highly to offend mine honor: I will therefore not onely ſpeake of it, but, as though I had heard it in a dreame, quite forget it, commaunding thee (if now thou meaneſt not to go to thy *Diſteus* againe) neuer hereafter to open thy mouth in any thing touching this matter, or that hath but a taſte thereof, vpon paine of my highe diſpleaſure, and abridging of that good will, which I haue hitherto borne thee. And that *Placindus* beſides offer not to put foote in my houſe, or elſe not to enter in that where *Diſteus* dwels. When ſhee had ſaide thus, without tarrying any longer to heare the fained excuſe that *Palna* had alreadie prepared, in a great anger ſhee went vp to her chamber, where muſing more deepely vpon the matter, the noble vertues of *Diſteus*, and his bounteous minde was preſented to her tender thoughts, ſince for her mans ſake and in defence of his mortal enimy, he expoſed himſelfe to ſo manifeſt danger; and his approoued manhood and braue courage, whereby he got the victorie of his enimies, occurring ioyntly to her minde, and therewithall the golden praiſes which *Palna* had ſo many times inſinuated in her eares, all which ſhe knewe his generall fame did confirme, made her ſo content in minde, as that to a newe borne paſſion accompanied with ſweete ioy (but of what ſhe knewe not yet) ſhe gaue a friendly welcome. Who being in theſe milde conſiderations, *Sagaſtes* came in with *Placindus* (for aſſoone as he had ſpoken to his Aunt, he went to kiſſe *Sagaſtes* hands) to comfort her, if perhaps ſhe had knowne any thing of that which was paſt: And as he found her all alone, and very penſiue, he thought that the late danger of his life had driuen her into that ſadde and melancholike moode, whereupon he deferred not to tell her all in order what had paſſed, thinking ſhe had not knowne it. To all which ſhe gaue an attentiue eare, for ſhe tooke great pleaſure to heare him tell it. But when hee tolde any thing of *Placindus* (whom as I ſaide ſhe knew to be *Diſteus*) her colour went and came; but eſpecially when he tolde that with valiant ſpeed (when they had both drawne foorth their rapiers) he ſtept in betweene them, deſiring him to keepe out, and to accept that ſmall token of dutie and good will for the ſeruice he owed to his Miſtres *Dardanea*. The often changing of her colour in her face gaue him no occaſion of ſuſpect, who thought it rather proceeded of feare, and of thinking in what great danger he had like to beene. After a fewe ſpeeches paſt, he tooke her aſide, and charged her to gratifie *Placindus*, telling her that he would take nothing of him, and ſo hee went his waies. *Palna* was not preſent at any of theſe things, bicauſe ſhe would not be an eie ſore to her Miſtres with her preſence, vntill her anger was ſomewhat paſt, who did not for all this looſe her hope;

but

but meaning to handle the matter wisely, warned *Placindus* not to goe openly into *Disteus* house, excusing the matter to him, and that it was to no other ende, but that none might suspect, that it was he that helped *Sagastes*: And bicause *Sagastes* and *Dardanea* (if they did knowe that he resorted thither) woulde not beare him such good will as they were woont. *Palna* by no meanes would make *Disteus* priuie of *Dardaneas* answer and command, bicause she woulde not giue him so bad newes, knowing that without great greefe of minde hee coulde not suffer them. It is not needfull (Gentlemen) to tell you heere what *Sagastes* did, vntill he knew who those were that assailed him: Let it suffice that they were reconciled to *Sagastes*, who pardoned them bicause they might do the like to *Placindus*. And *Beldanisus* coulde not choose but pacifie himselfe, seeing that *Marthea* had cast him off, and was married to *Sagastes*. At whose marriage, which with sumptuous and solemne feasts and all kind of courtly sports (too long to tell) was celebrated in the Citie, *Disteus* in disguised sort was euer present: And in Tylt and Tourney (which for the greater honour thereof *Sagastes* had ordeined) got so much glory and reputation, that as his heroicall deedes and gracious demeanours were the common speeches of al the kingdome; so did the praises of his valour and prowesse importune so much *Dardaneas* eares, that she was forced to loue him a little more, especially when by some secret meanes she vnderstoode that she was the onely cause why all those tryumphs were done in honor of her loue & seruice. The which also in particular by *Disteus* countenances and shewes she not vainely gessed, although with great regard of modestie and reuerence he so behaued himselfe, that whatsoeuer he did to make his feruent passion knowne, to his discredit, nor to her dishonour did any waies redound. And now was she sorrie and wished that she had not so sharpely chidden *Palna*, bicause she might haue sometimes spoken to her of *Disteus*, and durst not go foorth to meete her in the way, bicause she woulde not acquaint her with the secrets of her hart. And needlesse it was to speake to her of it, who by secret and hidden signes conceiued more then by words *Dardanea* durst vtter. For *Palna* like a wise and suttle woman made as though she did not vnderstand that, whereof she yet doubted, least thereby she might haue fallen into some newe errour, being not fully assured of *Dardaneas* minde. And this she did to make her more gentle, and to discouer her minde more apparantly, thereby to conduct her affaires to a better end. *Disteus* in the meane time made all possible haste with *Palna* to bring him againe to the sight of his Mistres, or at least to manifest his paine vnto her, or else to giue her a letter from him. All which *Palna* considering to be somewhat hard, did choose the least, aduising him therefore to write, and promising him to finde out some way or other to conueigh his letter into *Dardaneas* handes, without any suspicion or danger at all. For the better effecting whereof she deuised (bicause *Dardanea* might not thinke that they had any conference togither, or written to one another, and also bicause she might repose more trust and haue the better opinion in her) that he should also write to her, as if that letter had beene the first, wherein hee shoulde charge her to giue *Dardanea* the other letter that he wrote vnto her, and to leaue the care of all the rest to her good endeuours, promising him to bring the matter to a good ende; but vpon such a condition, that he woulde haue a little patience, if perhaps the answere were deferred for some fewe daies. *Disteus*, as *Palna* did counsell him, did write, whose letters being receiued & come as fit to her minde as could be, she durst not (for the reason abouesaid) deliuer either of them to her Mistresse, as also bicause she would worke her purpose more sure: which was, that knowing when *Dardanea*

had moſt need of her,or at ſuch a time when ſhe leaſt thought of ſuch a matter, to withdraw her into an inner chamber next to her Miſtreſſes to read the letters, or to make as though he read them, bicauſe *Dardanea* at one time or other (ſeeing her occupied)might take occaſion to follow her,or ſet ſome to ſpie what ſhe did, thereby to come to the ſight of them: Which fell out ſo fit to her minde,as ſhe could wiſh, for as often as ſhe perceiued her to go out of her ſight, ſhe ſent her waiting maide ſecretly after her, to ſee what ſhe did: wherein ſhe was not to ſeeke, who tolde her Miſtreſſe that ſhe was writing,and bicauſe ſhe perceiued her comming, did let certaine papers fall downe by her. The deſire that *Dardanea* had to know what ſhe did write in ſo great ſecrecie, was not ſmall,and *Palnas* no leſſe to haue her ſee it. Whereupon *Dardanea* went vp and downe muſing in her minde by what meanes ſhe might ſee it. *Palna* (for this was her onely deſire)knowing her minde, did hide *Diſteus* letters,and with them another,wherein ſhe anſwered him, with deniall of his demand to giue his letters to her Miſtreſſe,and graue aduiſe to forſake that fonde minde and purpoſe;and did put them in ſuch a ſecret place,where ſhe thought they might not be eaſilie founde, to make her Miſtreſſe thinke that by no meanes ſhe woulde haue them come to any bodies hands. The more ſhe made a ſhewe to the contrary, the more did *Dardaneas* deſire encreaſe, although ſhe kept it ſecret to her ſelfe. Whereupon to come to the end of her deſſeignes, one night after they had ſupped,ſhe fained her ſelfe to be drowſie,& that ſlumbring would not let her emploie that time in any other thing;& thereupon withdrew herſelfe to take a nappe, commanding that none ſhould come in,nor make any noiſe at al,and to make ready her pallet,that lay beſide her bed,and to ſhut vp the windowes cloſe. All which being done ſhe went in, and when ſhe thought *Palna* and her waiting maides were gone backe againe to their worke,ſhe roſe vp,and opening *Palnas* chamber dore very ſoftly, ſought for the letters not ſo cloſely laid vp,but that ſhe found them out. Opening the firſt that came to her hands (which was that which *Diſteus* had ſent to *Palna)* ſhe ſawe that it ſaid thus.

Diſteus *his letter to* Palna.

Diſteus to thee *Palna* ſendeth health: After thou wentſt from me (if vniuſtly I know not) I onely conceiued one harme that thy abſence procured me, by finding my ſelfe depriued of her, whom I euer accounted for a mother, and this amongſt the reſt I alwaies thought the greateſt. But howe more dangerous it is for me to haue placed thy ſelfe with faire *Dardanea*,my hart onely knoweth. For ſeeking reaſons to condemne thee for that, which in all mens eies made thee culpable, I found out good cauſe to giue iudgement againſt my ſelfe in that,for which,I knowe not, if I deſerue to be puniſhed. I accuſed thy diſloialtie, and blamed thee for leauing me in ſuch ſort; but when I came to conſider for whom,I was not able to vtter a worde. O how many times woulde I haue forgotten this, and howe manie more haue loſt my life, not to haue thought thereof. How often did I endeuour to caſt off ſuch amorous fancies from me, thinking to quench the flame that was kindled in me;and how many times did I finde my ſelfe enwrapped therein,the fire,that had already taken full poſſeſſion of my ſoule, reuiuing it ſelfe more in me. I will ſpeake no more heereof, bicauſe all is to mine owne coſt: but by the amorous milke that I haue taken from thee, moſt humblie praie thee, and for that great portion of amity and good will which thou doſt owe me,to giue this letter to my Miſtreſſe *Dardanea*, (happie were I if ſhe would accept it.) And with this I end, hoping that either my

paſſions

passions or life will do no lesse.

Dardanea hauing now the letter in her hande that *Palna* sent to *Disteus*, she first thought it best to see what *Palna* had written to him againe in answere thereof, and when she had opened it, she saw that it said thus.

Palnas *letter to* Disteus.

TO thee *Disteus*, thy seruant *Palna* sendeth health. Thy vertuous and magnificent minde hath beene no lesse manifest vnto me by the late and passed entertainment, which thou euer gauest me, not being constrained thereunto, then by this present letter, and by writing first vnto me, not being bound to do it; whereby the bountie of thy braue minde is apparant to me, and the worthines of thy high and noble blood (from whence thou art descended) well shewen, and my base condition not made vnknowne. I speake it not for that I haue forsaken thee for my Lady *Dardanea*, for of this I will neuer aske thee forgiuenes, nor repent mee, but bicause (as I was bounde) I wrote not first vnto thee. And though I haue sufficient matter to excuse mee, yet I will not alledge it in mine owne behalfe, bicause I doe not desire to be pardoned. Thy sweete and louing letter had affoorded me no small pleasure, if it had commanded me to doe something, wherein my poore abilitie might auaile thee, though it had beene to the cost of my life. But I coulde not be but sorrie, when I sawe I could not pleasure thee, of which fonde request and ouersight, in plainer termes (if by regarde of due obedience I were not restrained) I woulde flatly reproue thee: In deniall whereof (for I will not for all the worlde doe any thing willingly, whereby I might giue my Mistresse occasion of offence) I sende thee thy letter againe which thou hast sent mee to deliuer vnto her. But bicause I may by something paie that great debt which I owe thee, I would counsell thee (if I might) to leaue of such a thought, the contrarie whereof shall be no lesse dangerous then troublesome to thee, and without any profite at all. If in any other thing thou wilt trie my good will and fidelitie, I would take it for a speciall fauour at thy hands. The Gods keepe thee in their protection.

Then she opened the letter that *Disteus* sent to her, to the graue style and iudicious conceate whereof, I praie you Gentlemen giue an attentiue eare.

Disteus *his letter to* Dardanea.

TO thee the comfort of all mortall men,
Of all men liuing the most comfortlesse,
Health (if discomfort any such can send)
If any left, doth send with happinesse.

I wish no ease of all my ceaselesse paine,
If that a thousand times when I did take
In hand to write to thee, I left againe
My pen as oft, when hand and hart did quake.

I launch't into the maine and broadest seas,
Knowing no port, nor friendly land, or coast
To saile vnto (my shaken barke to ease,
With raging waues and furious tempests tost)

For

For on the one side if I thought to write,
To make thee knowe my paine which thou hast wrought:
Thy high desertes on th'other came in sight,
To beate downe such a far vnwoorthy thought.

My wearied torments did commaund an I,
Thy soueraine highnes did forbid a No,
And that commaund with reason did denie,
Such woorthinesse and glorie it did showe.

But after this proud boldnes came in place,
Perswading me I should doe well before
To write to thee: But feare did him disgrace,
And said I should but anger thee the more.

And therefore now as feare did ouercome
Braue boldnes, and had throwne it to the ground,
And now that all my senses waxed numme
By feare, which did my feeble hope confound.

Courageously the God of Loue came in,
And said, vnwoorthy feare packe hence, away:
And come no more, for now thou shalt not win:
I doe commaund, Loue doth commaund I say.

And turning to me in this sort he saide,
As by commaund, nor gently by request,
The fire (when once it is in flames displaide)
Hides not it selfe, but makes it manifest:

Euen so it is impossible to hide
My firie flames, from being sometimes knowne,
And though I would not, yet on euery side
They issue out, that easily they are knowne.

Since then thy Nymph celestiall must knowe,
Either too soone or late thy cruell flame,
Let first thy mouth declare to her thy woe,
Then to thy hand and pen commend the same.

I answered (God wot with fainting hart)
To write to her, it is my chiefe desire;
But if she chaunce to frowne at this bold part,
O God defend my pen should cause her ire.

Thus Loue at last perceiuing what a faint
And hartlesse coward I was, in the end
He wrote to thee, by pitying of my plaint,
And in my name Loue doth this letter send.

And now bicauſe thy minde it may not moone
To anger, by receiuing of the ſame:
And if thou think'ſt thy honour I doe proue,
Knowe from a God, and from no man it came.

Euen from the God of Loue, who is a God
Of higheſt birth, whoſe power doth extend
In heauen, and earth, where he makes his abode,
Both paying tribute to him without end.

So that it is the mighty God of Loue
That erres (if that in writing he doth erre)
Againſt Loue therefore all thy anger moue,
(If this to wrath thy modeſt minde may ſtirre.)

Harke well (my deereſt Miſtreſſe) what I ſay,
That if this letter breedeth thy offence,
Be thou reueng'd of Loue, which did aſſay
To write, and not of me for this pretence.

But by the way I tell thee as a friend,
That if with Loue thou doſt begin to ſtriue,
With nature and her lawes thou doſt contend,
For making thee the faireſt one aliue.

For if ſhe haue of purpoſe giuen thee
Beautie, and grace, and in thy breſt hath fram'd
The onely patterne of gentilitie,
That beauties Paragon thou maiſt be nam'd.

And to lay vp her riches all in one,
Of all her treaſure ſhe hath now deſpoild
The world, and made it poore in leauing none,
And to make thee the onely one hath toild.

Hath ſhe not reaſon then to be offended,
If by the gemme, where ſhe her vtmoſt tride,
She would haue ſeene and knowne how far extended
Her paſſing skill, which thou doſt ſeeke to hide?

Hath ſhe not reaſon to be angrie, when
The patterne of her skill and onely one
Hides from the world and buries in a den
Her treaſures, which ſo faine ſhe would haue knowne?

For ſure I knowe, if that thou meaneſt not
To loue, thou burieſt all her partes in thee:
And doſt thou thinke, that anything is got
By flying Loue, and natures beſt decree?

And if thou think'st heerein to doe amisse,
Or hurt thy selfe by louing, yet at lest
Suffer thy selfe to be belou'd. And this
Fond error driue out of thy tender brest.

O suffer of thine owne accord and will,
For forced thou shalt be to this for euer:
While thou and I doe liue, and shalt be still
After thy death and mine, and ended neuer.

Then will me not (Dardanea) to forsake
My perfect loue, which now I haue bewraied:
For more thou dost commaund the lesse I make
Account of it, and lesse shalt be obaied.

And thinke thou art not wronged any whit,
Bicause what thou (faire Mistresse) dost commaund
Is not obaide, for heere it is not fit
Where life for loue and loue for life is pawn'd.

Leaue thou if that thou canst the same thou hast,
Yeelding to nature, what so much on thee
She hath bestowde, and change thy life that's past,
And leaue moreouer what thou meanst to be.

Then shalt thou see thy most vniust desire
Fulfill'd, and will perform'd without defect,
Although thou didst the contrarie require,
As fearing colours with some vaine suspect.

But now why should'st thou leaue a perfect being,
By taking that which more imperfect is?
As first mens eies the like was neuer seeing,
The second voide of comfort, ioy and blisse.

So that (sweete Mistresse) it becomes thee not
To anger Loue, and Nature to offend,
For thou art bound (whom they haue not forgot)
Their lawes to loue, their essence to defend.

Since that thy beauties in the world resound,
And dost in vertue hold the highest place,
And dost in knowledge and in wit abound,
In modestie, and euery other grace:

Make them illustrous then by thy requiting,
Take heede, Ingratitude is full of hate;
Hate to reuenge is euer more inuiting,
And so reuenge waites at obliuions gate.

And thinke not, that I speake these words in iest,
For to a cruell Goddesse it belongs
This vice (which all the world doth so detest)
To punish, and torment ingratefull wrongs.

And Nemesis *the angrie is her name,*
Whose vnresisted might who doth not knowe?
Equall she is and neuer but the same,
Impartially to deale with friend or foe.

Alas I would she might not finde in thee
So great a fault, as none more great then this,
Since from all other faultes thou shalt be free,
If but this fault alone thou wilt dismisse.

But thou maist say, why should thy hapless fare
Trouble my minde, or thy good please my will,
Or what haue I to doe to take such care,
Whether thy fortune fall out good or ill?

To answere this, I cannot well replie,
Let it suffice thee, that the lest suspect
Of any harme thou hast doth make me die,
And worse then death torments me in effect.

Deere Lady, then I would not haue thee proue
The cruell shaft of angrie Nemesis:
For first let each infernall power moue
Their plagues against me of eternall Dis.

But now I would be glad if thou wouldst tast
The sweete and golden flight of Cupids *powre,*
Bicause my torments, which are gone and past,
Pitie thou might'st and those I feele this howre.

For if thou knew'st my paines and pitious case,
With pitie and teares thou would'st my life deplore,
Not for my merits, which are very base,
But for my loue, which well deserueth more.

Each thing that is created heere so fit,
An equall hauing in a diuers kinde,
In such like kinde a paiment doth admit,
By measuring the debt that is behinde,

But as fell loue no equall doth containe,
In such a diuers kinde and different,
By selfe same thing it paies it selfe againe:
Loue must be paid with loue of good intent.

Then

Then ſince it is moſt euident and cleere,
That I doe prize thy loue at ſuch a rate,
Thou muſt requite my loue againe ſo deere,
If Nemeſis *ingratitude doth hate.*

But if thou doſt not purpoſe to requite
The loue, that I haue borne, and beare thee ſtill;
And with like loue to eaſe my heauie plight,
And greeuous paines for thy procuring ill:

My hands of life ſhall then vndoe the chaine,
But not of loue (by death to eaſe my death)
And ſo requite me, when no other meane
Is left, to make me ſtill enioy this breath.

For ſure if that my life be of this ſort,
My life is death, and dying is my life:
My death is ſweete, a pleaſure, ioy and ſport,
Liuing in ſuch a world of amorous ſtrife.

But now I ceaſe, my teares fall in ſuch ſtore,
And painfull ſoule for greefe can write no more.

O how wiſely haſt thou done *Martandrus* (ſaid Lord *Felix*) by warning vs to be attentiue, for this letter doth well beſeeme the perſon of a diſcreete and enamoured Gentleman, with what modeſtie and feare did he write it. And how true is that (ſaid *Dameus*) which is almoſt in the end of it, That all things in this worlde in a different kind may be paide, as graſſe with ſheepe, ſheepe with cloth, and finally all with money; but onely loue, the which, bicauſe with no other thing it hath neither equalitie nor proportion, cannot but with loue be recompenced againe. For touching my ſelfe I know, that though my Shepherdeſſe *Duarda* would giue me all that ſhe hath in the world; yet ſhe could not pay me that ſhe owes me, if ſhe denied me her loue. *Feliſmena* preuenting *Duarda* that was about to anſwere him, ſaid. Let vs leaue this for this time: And as you loue your ſelfe (Sir) tell on, bicauſe we may know what this Ladie did with ſuch a letter; for I know not what ſhe was able to anſwere againe, but to yeelde her ſelfe to his loue, whereupon I thinke ſhe durſt not take in hand to anſwere ſo wiſe reaſons. Not ſo Ladie (ſaid *Martandrus*) for I aſſure you that *Dardanea* is not ſuch an one, that the high ſence and ſtile thereof could put her to a non-plus; in proofe whereof you ſhall ſee it by her anſwere. But bicauſe we may not diſcontinue ſo ſweete a diſcourſe I will proceede.

This letter was of ſo great effect in *Dardaneas* tender hart, that now in euerie point ſhe perceiued her ſelfe yeelded to *Cupids* forces: The which her criſtalline teares that iſſued out of her cleere eies, did make ſo manifeſt, that ſhe was vnable to ſtay them, although many times in vaine ſhe laboured the contrarie. But as ſhe could not ſatisfie her ſelfe with reading it once or twiſe ouer, the more ſhe read it, the more her loue encreaſed: For knowing *Diſteus* his vertues and valour to bee great, and therewithall conſidering the qualitie of his perſon, and with what milde modeſtie and diſcretion he wrote this letter, the well conceiued words thereof were ſo forcible in her minde imprinted, that they ſtrangely diſpoſed it to entertaine

moſt

moſt louing thoughts of him that wrote them. Her kinde and tender hart was no leſſe pierced with pitie, and compaſſion when ſhe vnderſtoode in what extremities his loue conſiſted, ſince by the ſequell of his letter ſhe perceiued how abruptly he ended; whereby he manifeſted the forcible paſſion that he had in writing of his paines and ſorrowes: To all which no meane motiues in her conquered minde this moreouer occurred, that he offered to expoſe himſelfe to any danger of death for *Sagaſtes* his mortall enemie, onely to do her ſeruice, that neuer yet had ſhewed him the leaſt fauour in the world. So that loue aſſayling her on the one ſide (which till then had not notably ſignorized in her) and her honour and vertuous reputation (which ſhe had euer religiouſly obſerued) preſſing her on the other, droue her vſetled thoughts into ſuch ſuſpence, and troubled her doubtfull minde, that being ignorant what courſe to take, or what remedie to chooſe out for the beſt, ſince ſhe would neither offend this, & could not chooſe but obey that, ſhe was between two contraries ſo mightily aſſaulted, that to yeelde to one without preiudice to the other, ſhee would in a manner haue loſt her deereſt life: which ſorrowfull thoughts hiding in her ſecret breaſt, and the letters in her amorours boſome, ſhe went to her chamber, where caſting her ſelfe vpon her bed, and lying flatling vpon her pillow, thus ſhee lamented to her ſelfe.

O what ſhall become of thee *Dardanea*, being aſſailed by two ſuch oppoſite enimies! O heauenly *Diana*! O inuincible *Venus*! How haue you both with your diuine powers ſeiſed on my yeelding ſoule? How could you, being ſo great Goddeſſes, make your habitation and ſeat in ſo humble a ſubiect, and in ſo baſe and little a houſe as this is? And being ſo contrarie and capitall enimies, how haue you determined to your content, and my loſſe to deraigne a hard and mightie battel in ſuch a tender and weake field? Why will you execute your vnreſiſted forces in the feeble breaſt of a yeelded and captiue woman? Faine would I not open the gates *Diana*, whoſe name I honor to thy cõtrarie; but pardon me, ſince I haue not my wonted forces: for importunate *Venus* knowing how ſtrongly this tower of thine was defended, & being driuẽ many times from it, hath now emploied al hir force in the enterpriſe, and conqueſt of it. O noble *Diſteus*, if thy words be fained (which the Gods forbid) then is my death certaine. But why ſhould I thinke ſo when as thou art *Diſteus*, whoſe name includes all generous virtues: and I *Dardanea*, whoſe minde ſuch thoughts doth ill beſeeme. Alas poore Gentleman, how vngratefully doth *Palna* thy nurſe requite thy fauours which ſhe confeſſeth thou haſt bountifully beſtowed on her, ſince from thy firſt deſire (a matter but of ſmall conſequence) ſhe ſo bitterly repelled thee by denying to giue me a letter, which to her hands, next to my hart thou didſt ſo earneſtly commend. What wilt thou ſay, nay what ſhall I doe, ſince ſhe that was the ſoule and onely meanes, will haue nothing to do with the matter, which ſhe hir ſelfe did firſt begin. Couldſt thou not *(Diſteus)* or wert thou affraide to open thy greeſe vnto me, or was I vnable or too timorous to manifeſt my paſſion vnto thee? Tell me cruell *Palna*, what leaue hadſt thou to ſend backe againe the letter, that was onely directed to me, by not letting me once ſee it. Was it not meet thou ſhouldeſt do that, thy maſter commaunded thee, and that which was expedient for me? But alas thou art not in fault but I, and therefore will I onely take the puniſhment on my ſelfe, and excuſe thee from blame. For ſince I haue entreated thee ſo ſharply, when thou didſt ſpeake to me of *Diſteus*, and in ſuch things, which did not any waies offend my honour, thou haſt then reaſon to vſe me cruelly in that, wherein my helpe and remedie doth chiefly conſiſt.

And thus putting ſilence to her greefe, ſhe went muſing what meanes ſhe might vſe, to make *Palna* giue her the letter, whereby ſhe might haue ſome good occaſion to write vnto *Diſteus*, and in the ende reſolued to take *Palna* on the ſudden with the letters in her hand, and to ſee them againſt her will, as ſhe could not otherwiſe imagine: Whereby the meanes to anſwer him againe might be fitly offered her. This determination being put in practiſe, when *Palna* had the letters in her hand (for as I ſaide, ſhe read them many times of purpoſe to be ſeene) *Dardanea* came into her chamber, and ſhe fayning as though ſhe would hide them, *Dardanea* importuned her to ſee them, commanding her in the ende to tell her to whom, and what ſhe wrote. But ſhe that deſired nothing more, making ſome ſimple excuſes, as though ſhe were not content therewith, at laſt ſhewed them: which, when *Dardanea* ſawe, fayning that ſhe was angry with *Diſteus*, ſhe commended her that ſhe had ſo wiſely anſwered him, though it ſufficed not (as ſhe ſaid) for ſo preſumptuous and bold a part, and that ſhe woulde therefore anſwere him with another letter to ſupplie the want of hers, to warne him, not once in thought to imagine, ſpeake, or write of it againe. In the end whereof ſhe purpoſed to tell him, by what meanes the letter came to her hands, bicauſe both of them might be blameleſſe. The which thing ſhe did put immediately in practiſe, and ſo began to write: The letter being ended, ſhe read it to *Palna*, and thus it ſaid.

Dardaneas *anſwere to* Diſteus.

TO thee the moſt preſumptuous without leaue,
Counſell, not health, by theſe few lines I ſend,
That am more fearfull then thou maiſt conceaue:
If that I thought mine honour to offend
By anſwering thee, conſtraind as thou maiſt ſee,
Or anſwering not, it might the more extend,
Rather then I would thus much pleaſure thee,
Or would vouchſafe to take my pen in hand,
Firſt would I take a ſword to murder me.
Mine end is good, and doth with vertue ſtand,
And if thou doſt thinke otherwiſe then ſo,
Thou art deceiu'd as much as any man:
For if my reaſon ſoundly thou wilt knowe,
And weigh my wordes but with attentiue minde,
And note each ſentence that heerein I ſhowe:
By all the foreſaid thou ſhalt onely finde,
How I pretend to giue thee ſound aduiſe,
And holeſome counſell fit for one ſo blinde:
Which is, that thou leaue of this enterpriſe
(If that thou canſt) and flie a thought ſo vaine,
Or at the leaſt conceale it from mine eies.
I knowe not, and the ground cannot obtaine,
That made thee write to me this other day:
Nor yet from whence ſuch boldnes thou might'ſt gaine.
But now I doe remember thou didſt ſay,
That loue, not thou, thoſe louing lines did write,

Bicauſe

Bicauſe it did thy minde too much diſmay:
Fancies they are, like to the dreames by night,
Common to louers (if there any bee)
To manifeſt his childiſh toies ſo light.
Poore God of loue, thy ſeruants all agree
As many as doe waite vpon thy traine,
To lay their faultes moſt commonly in thee:
If childiſh toies I ſaide: doe not diſdaine:
For this God, whom thou doſt ſo much obay,
Is but a childe, thy wordes doe ſhew it plaine.
Thou ſeem'ſt to ſhew the ſame by wordes, I ſay,
By deedes I knowe not, nor I doe pretend
To knowe, though deedes by words thou doſt diſplay.
Which laſt of all in men I comprehend,
Which are more wordes then works in plaine effect:
In caſe this God of loue their mindes offend,
If that your harts ſo plainly could detect
That, which your mouth expreſſeth by her voice,
We ſhould not hold your loues in ſuch ſuſpect.
But truth it is, I doe no whit reioice,
For nothing it concerneth me at all,
To heare thee vaunt thee of thy loue and choice:
And that as firme as any brazen wall,
And more then rocks vpon the ſhorie ſandes,
In fortunes fauour or in fortunes thrall:
That like an Oke againſt the winde it ſtandes,
Like hardeſt Dimond to the beating ſteele,
Like Salamander in the flaming brandes.
And that againe it turneth like the wheele,
And wauers more then beames of ſhaken glaſſe,
More then the waues, that tumble ſtill and reele,
More changing then the weathercocke (Alas)
In towres, and more then Cynthia in her skie:
And more then men in loue their liues that paſſe.
This hurts me little, nor I care not I,
Wherefore it ſhall be better for thy eaſe,
Not to loue her, that doth thy loue denie.
Then ſeeke ſome other with thy loue to pleaſe
Againſt thy loue that will not ſo rebell,
And where thou maiſt ſwim in contented ſeas:
For (ſooth) thy perſon hath deſerued well
To be beloued of ſome other dame,
For many giftes in which thou doſt excell.
There is no Lady, but would wiſh the ſame,
Nor ſcorne thy loue, but euer thinke her bleſt
That ſhe might call thee by her louers name.
And ſooner ſhalt thou want (to match thy breſt)
A Lady fit (reſpecting thy deſert)

For none come neere (though yet accounted beſt)
Of purpoſe heere thy praiſes I inſert,
For thou didſt ſo much wander in my praiſe,
That onely this for thanks I doe reuert.
And wordes for wordes doe giue thee now in paiſe,
And if thou haſt extolled me much better,
So all thy giftes in euerie place I blaze,
Ingratefull thou didſt call me in thy letter,
And there the proſe was falſe and very vaine,
And therefore thou muſt yet remaine my detter.
Although it were not ſo, thou ſaidſt againe
That I was bound to loue, in being faire,
So worldling like thine argument was plaine.
But ſee how reaſon doth the ſame impaire,
For brighter doth each womans beautie ſhine,
The more ſhe ſhines in praiſe of vertues rare.
So that I ſhall make nature more diuine,
In following Dianas honeſt traine,
Then Venus ſteps, or her fond diſcipline.
To pleaſe her ſonne I euer thought it vaine,
Since him I cannot, and Diana pleaſe,
For ſhe is chaſt, diſhoneſt is his chaine.
To ſerue Apollos ſiſter, ſweeteſt eaſe
And greateſt honour by her loue is got.
Who ſerues fond loue is drown'd in dolefull ſeas.
If after Venus ſonne thou art ſo hot,
And doſt intend to follow his deſires,
If ſo it pleaſe, then how maieſt thou not?
I doe not meane to loue what he requires:
And let this God euen worke with me his fil,
He neuer ſhall conſume me in his fires.
Let him not ſeeke but her, that ſeekes her ill,
Let him not wound but thoſe that loue his wounds,
Nor ſubiect thoſe that care not for his will.
But now I knowe not to what purpoſe ſoundes
Theſe reaſons, that diſſwade me to imbrace
Cupid thy God, that reaſon ſtill confoundes.
Since that vnto my will he giueth place,
And on the ſame his liking doth depend,
Reaſon in me his colours doe deface.
T'is therefore reaſon, to the which I tend,
And great it is, ſince it doth ſatisfie
My minde, and doth the ſame ſo well defend.
Thou writ'ſt, that if to loue thee I denie,
That I would ſuffer thee to loue me yet,
Againſt my will for loue yet wilt thou die.
A pretie meanes procoeding from thy wit,
To pray me not thy deere loue to preuent,

Yet will I nill I thou to practiſe it.
I greeue I cannot hinder this intent,
But if (in fine) perforce vnto my paine
Thou wilt loue me, perforce I muſt conſent.
If that from being lou'd, I could remaine,
(As from all loue) in faith I neuer would
Haue left it to thy chooſing to abſtaine.
For he that lou'd me with ſuch rigour ſhould
Be puniſh't, that he ſhould haue thence no ſoule
To loue me, if his loue preuent I could.
But Ile doe that which no man ſhall controule,
Which is that none preſume to manifeſt
His loue to me ſo wanton and ſo bolde.
Let therefore puniſhment thy minde ſuggeſt,
To mooue this fancie from thy idle minde,
A fancie firſt conceiu'd within thy breſt,
Of no good ground where hope thou canſt not finde:
Hope is exil'd where honour taketh place;
Honour is deere to women of my kinde:
Virgins I meane, and liuing in the face
Of all the world with honour and renowne.
Which if it be but ſtaind, each other grace
She hath, with no recou'rie falleth downe.
If then theſe few perſwaſions cannot make
Thee change thy minde, nor now this preſent frowne,
Nor trembling hands, which now for anger ſhake
By writing of theſe lines with little reſt,
Nor feare of puniſhment make thee forſake
This fond conceit, nurc'd vainly in thy breſt,
When thou maiſt neuer hope to haue a day;
Then let mine honour mooue thee (at the leſt)
To make thee hide this fier (if you may)
Wherewith thou ſaiſt thy breſt is ſo inflam'd:
Marke this, and let thy wits not ſo eſtray.
If that thou ſaiſt, that hardly is reclam'd
The fire of loue, and hardly hid againe;
To tell it Palna *leſſe thou ſhalt be blam'd.*
But ſince thy hope incertaine is and vaine,
And all thy harmes moſt ſure, then ope the dore
(To helpe thee) to oblition and diſdaine.
And thus I end in hope to heare no more.

Martandrus interrupting *Feliſmena* that would haue praiſed the letter, and haue noted ſome things in it, proſecuted his tale thus. *Dardanea* hauing made an end of reading the letter, was not yet ſo quiet in minde, but that ſhe gaue true tokens of that which remained in her breſt. Whereupon, and by the gentle and milde words in her letter, *Palna* vnderſtanding how fitly it made for her purpoſe, did finely diſſemble the matter, and praiſed her for anſwering his letter ſo well, harping ſtill vpon

that ſtring, that ſhe was obliged to her honour and good name. But bicauſe the ſeuere ſtile of the letter might not daunt *Diſteus*, ſhe ſecretly ſent him another, wherein ſhe aduiſed him what he had to do, after ſo good a beginning: which might be gathered by ſome wordes of the anſwere: for prooſe whereof, hee might perceiue that ſhe had written no auſtere and ſharpe letter, wherein if any bitternes had eſcaped her pen vnawares, ſhe did ſtraight moderate it with a hidden temper of mildenes. Aduiſing him beſides to note, that when ſhe warned him to ſurceaſe his loue vnto her, ſhe ſaide vnto him (if thou canſt) correcting her-ſelfe in a matter, that made ſo greatly for her owne minde; and to conſider how greatly theſe affaires did trouble her, who was continually thinking on them, and that ſhe was not perſwaded that he loued her from his hart; but aboue all things, to take heede howe much it ſtoode him in hand to keepe this ſecrecie, which ſhe committed vnto him. *Palna* moreouer perſwaded him to hope well, ſince *Dardanea* tooke delight in hearing theſe affaires, whereof ſhe made her her onely ſecretarie. Finally not to be tedious to you with ſo long a diſcourſe, a few daies after *Palna* vſed ſo great diligence, that ſhe got that out of *Dardanea*, which ſhe kept ſo ſecret in her breaſt; but could neuer winne her to ſpeake with *Diſteus*, vnleſſe he would firſt promiſe and ſweare to marie her, which was ſo ioyfull newes to him, who thought he wanted nothing more to make him the happieſt man aliue. So that this being done, *Dardanea* (though at the firſt ſhe made it ſomewhat coy) gaue him leaue to come to her houſe, where they inioyed a little while each others company in ſweete and pleaſant conuerſation, with all reſpect of reuerence and modeſtie that was requiſite in ſuch a caſe: At the ende whereof (the pleaſanter the biginning was, more bitter was the ſequell, ſince at the firſt loue ſeldome affoords one little pleaſure without diſtempering it in the end with ſorrowe and care) it fell out that *Diſteus* hauing gone verie early to *Dardanea*, and *Palna* not remembring to ſhut the doore after him, they lay togither in one bed which was made readie for them in a faire and large Summer chamber beneath, where they had before ſometimes lyen togither: For *Palna* (when *Diſteus* was come in) was warned to ſhut a certaine doore, which was a paſſage into all the houſe, bicauſe no maide nor ſeruant might come downe and goe thorow that way. But as ſhe remembred not alſo to ſhut the ſtreete doore, which they thought was ſafe enough, *Sagaſtes* by chance came in ſuſpecting leaſt of all any ſuch matter. *Diſteus* perceiuing a greater noiſe in the chamber then a womans treading could make, couered himſelfe the beſt he could with the clothes of the bed. If *Dardanea* was not altered by ſeeing her brother (iudge you Gentlemen) though then it ſtoode her in hand to diſſemble it. *Sagaſtes* ſat him downe in a chaire at the beds feete, and asked her what the matter was that ſhe went to bed ſo ſoone. Who anſwered that ſhee was not well at eaſe, and was therefore minded to take ſome Phiſicke. *Sagaſtes* hearing this, would haue beene gone, but turning his face (for now he was on that ſide of the bed where his ſiſter lay) and ſeeing a little ſtirring in the bed, asked her who was a bed with her. *Dardanea* anſwered it was her Neece (for ſhe kept a little child of one of hir gentlewomen, the which (bicauſe ſhe loued it well) ſhe called her Neece:) but *Sagaſtes* thinking it was more then a childes ſtirring, did thruſt vp his hands betweene the ſheetes to feele the feete, *Diſteus* as ſoftly as he could drawing them vp. But as *Sagaſtes* thruſt vp his arme ſo far, that *Diſteus* knew he could not keep himſelf any longer hidden, with both his hands he lifted vp the clothes of the bed, and caſt them ſo happily on *Sagaſtes*, that they couered him all ouer, and therewithall leaping out of the bed, as though he would haue laid hands on him, *Dardanea* made him

ſignes

ſignes to be gone. *Diſteus* followed her counſell, who being in his ſhirt ranne out a pace, whom *Sagaſtes* (after he had vnfolded himſelfe from the clothes) laying his hand on his rapier followed with might and maine not knowing him. *Diſteus* by darke and ſecret places thought to conuay himſelfe away, but as the night was ſomwhat cleere, he could not: So that what way ſoeuer he went *Sagaſtes*, followed him. And if he was ſometimes out of his ſight as in ſome narrow and by lanes, the people told him which way he went. *Diſteus* therefore running in this ſort, and *Sagaſtes* after him, he tooke a houſe, becauſe he woulde not be knowen of the people that made a great clamour to ſee a man run away in his ſhirt, and another following him with a naked rapier in his hand. Scarce had he recouered the houſe, when *Sagaſtes* came to the very doore. But *Diſteus* kept him out by ſhutting of a doore at the ſtaires foote, & ſought ſomething to defend himſelfe being naked; yea, and to hurt his enimie if he could. *Sagaſtes* laboured to burſt the doore in peeces to come in, & cried out ſo loud to them within, to open him the doore, that if they did not, he would ſo cruelly puniſh them, that they ſhoulde know what it was to harbour an vnknowen theefe, of whoſe fact he made them no leſſe guiltie then the principall: Wherupon the Maſter of the houſe that by this time was come to ſee what a noiſe there was, (fearing *Sagaſtes* threates) came to lay hands on his gueſt & to deliuer him into *Sagaſtes* hands. But perceiuing it was *Diſteus*, whom all the citie and countrey ſo much loued, he fell downe on his knees, beſeeching him to conuey him ſelfe out of a windowe at the backſide of the houſe, bicauſe he durſt not but open his doore to *Sagaſtes*; and therfore gaue him an old cloake and a ſworde, for he had no time to giue him any more. *Diſteus* by this counſell which he held for good, and by neceſſitie, as the caſe required, being forced to fulfill his friendes requeſt, yeelding him great thankes for his curteſie, went out. *Sagaſtes* was melting in his owne heate and anger, that they would not open the doore, and ſwearing he woulde kill as many as he founde in the houſe. Whereat the Maſter of the ſame, (after he had ſhewed *Diſteus* the waie to eſcape) feyning as though he had not knowne what the matter was, came downe, and asking who knocked, opened the dore. *Sagaſtes* cauſed him ſtraight to be taken and bound, and ſearching euery corner of the houſe, but not finding him, whom hee ſought, came to him againe, ſwearing by the life of the king, that if he told him not where the man was, or who he was that came into his houſe, hee woulde preſently hange him vp at his owne doore. At which words the good man being afraide, told him (as he heard) that it was *Diſteus*. *Sagaſtes* did eaſily beleeue it, for hee thought none durſt haue beene ſo bold to iniurie him in ſuch ſort but onely he: So that ſeeing he had eſcaped him, without ſtaying any more, he went to *Diſteus* houſe with a great number of people following him. But no ſooner did *Sagaſtes* runne out of his ſiſters houſe to follow *Diſteus*, but ſhe locked her doore and told *Palna* what had hapned, requeſting her beſt and ſpeedie aduiſe in that matter, and to bethinke her of ſome remedie, that was beſt for them. *Palna* at theſe vnexpected newes was in ſuch a maze and confuſion, that ſhe could not anſwer her a word: But weighing the danger that *Diſteus* was in, and loue encouraging her (for ſhee accounted him as her ſonne) ſhe anſwered. Do you deere Miſtreſſe what you thinke good; for I meane in euery perill to follow my ſonne *Diſteus*, for whom I ſhall arme my ſelfe with no leſſe courage and conſtancie to ſuffer greefe and ſorrow, then I did to giue him contentment and pleaſure, ſo that in fewe wordes my reſolution is to know what is become of him: For if his perſon (which the Gods forbid) hath ſuffred any harme, I will not enioy mine, nor liue in this worlde without his companie. Wherefore you muſt par-

don

don me (good Lady) for laying all feare aſide, I will either die or know what is become of my beloued *Diſteus*. It greeues me that I am forced to leaue you in ſuch a traunce and extremitie all alone,& in a time of ſo great neede,but deere Lady there lies no more in my power to perform. *Dardanea* with more teares & ſighes,then wel ordered reaſons ſaid. Time will not giue me leaue to anſwer to that which thou haſt ſpoken,nor to make thee knowe my minde, and whether the loue which I beare to *Diſteus* my louing husband and al my ioy,be of leſſe weight then thine towards him, who was thy nurſe childe and all thy comfort. It woulde greeue me thou ſhouldſt haue ſuch an opinion of me, if I knewe not to manifeſt it by and by. For this thou maiſt at leaſt beleeue of me, that ſince for the greateſt I had courage enough; for the leſſer, I will haue no leſſe. Lady, ſaid *Palna*, heere is but little time,as you ſaide, to vſe many words, & therefore determine what you meane to put in practiſe, for I will do all that you command me,vpon condition that it be not to forſake my ſonne. I will not command thee any ſuch thing (anſwered *Dardanea*) but that which I haue determined to do,is that as well for the great loue I owe vnto my louing Lord (for without him I will not liue) as for the feare I haue of my brother, I wil not ſtay heere. Then if it be ſo (ſaid *Palna*) I thinke it beſt for me to carrie *Diſteus* ſome garments,& for you to get the beſt iewels you haue togither, and then for vs both to goe to my Nephewes houſe: for we being eſcaped and hidden, we ſhall not onely preuent this preſent danger; but time and mature conſideration ſhall diſcouer to vs what courſe is beſt to be taken. Whereupon putting this in practiſe, they went to *Placindus* houſe: To whom diſcloſing the foreſaide loues (for to that time they were knowne to none but *Palna*) and telling what hapned the ſame night, they praied him to goe and enquire what was done. *Sagaſtes* vnderſtanding it was *Diſteus* as I tolde you, went to ſeeke him at his owne houſe, where finding the doore open, knewe he was not come,and therefore ſtaied for him there vntill he came. But when he had awaited there a good while in vaine, he ſuſpected he had taken ſome of his friends houſes, and therefore went home againe to his ſiſters lodging, vowing to be well reuenged of *Diſteus*; though he would faine haue that night ſatisfied his vnruly anger, which was not a little augmented, when hee founde neither *Dardanea* nor *Palna*, maruelling verie much to ſee howe quiet all his ſiſters ſeruants were, and howe ſtrange they made it all, when *Sagaſtes* demaunded the matter of them. *Diſteus* that was going home to his houſe, when hee ſawe a farre off a great number of people before his doore, it made him thinke (as it was true indeed) that *Sagaſtes* was waiting for him, whereupon he went to my houſe; whereby he made me knowe what great affiance he had in my friendſhip, which I accounted no ſmall credit vnto me. I doubt not Gentlemen, but any (that hath beene attentiue to my tale) will aske me, how *Sagaſtes* came firſt to his enemies houſe, ſince *Diſteus* went before out of the mans houſe,which he was conſtrayned to take for refuge. Whereunto it may be eaſily anſwered, that *Diſteus* going (as you know) almoſt naked, and therefore leauing the open and common ſtreetes to goe about by lanes and ſecret places, came later then *Sagaſtes*. But when *Diſteus* vnlooked for came into my houſe, without calling,but ſhutting the doore after him,leaſt any had followed him, he came into my ſtudy: And his hap was ſo good that he found me al alone. I did not a little woonder to ſee him in ſuch ſort, and therefore demaunded the cauſe of his comming & in ſuch a manner. Who anſwered me that he had no time for ſo large a report,but prayed me to giue him ſome apparell,and a horſe,and what elſe was needfull for him, which I onely denied him not, but alſo preparing my ſelfe to beare him

company

company, he would in no wise let me, for he meant to conceale (vntill he could no longer) his secret loue and affection from me. He therefore being apparelled, and furnished with the best offensiue and defensiue weapons he could choose out, went to helpe *Dardanea*, least her harebraine brother in his furie might haue laide violent hands vpon her, or else to die in the quarrell, before she should suffer any harme at all. Going therefore about this matter, he met with *Placindus*, that was comming to seeke him out, by his Aunts commaundement, whom he asked if he knew any thing. *Placindus* told him, how he should finde *Dardanea* and *Palna* in his house, and that he should goe thither quickly, bicause *Dardanea* was the most sorrowfullest woman in the world for his danger. *Disteus* went thither out of hand: but knowing that place to be nothing so conuenient and secret, as their present necessitie required, bicause (by missing *Palna*) *Sagastes* would out of hand come thither; he brought them to my house, willing *Placindus* to lye still and take his rest, bicause he might thereby make them beleeue, that he knew nothing of the matter. All three might come secretly to my house, bicause as siths that was not farre from *Placindus* lodging, so were they both out of the concurse of people and walke of neighbours; and also bicause *Sagastes* was gone to the King to complaine of the iniurie that *Disteus* had done him, whom he requested to commaund a search to be made in all suspected houses that were thought most fit to harbour him, and *Dardanea* and *Palna*. The King not only granted hereunto (for as you know he desired to haue the least occasion, whereby he might throw downe *Disteus* partie, to pleasure *Sagastes*) but tooke this matter vpon him as his owne, and sware to behead *Disteus*, and as many as were culpable, and euerie one that afterwards helpt him And therefore (to fauour him the more) made *Sagastes* himselfe iudge in his owne cause, bicause he might take the greater reuenge at his own pleasure. Who, when he saw so good a means for his desire, without more ado beset *Disteus* house with a priuy watch, hauing first searched it all thorow, where missing him, he went straight to seeke out his sister. They emploied all diligence and labour they thought needfull to bring their purpose to effect; but my house they ouerslipt, bicause as it was not pliable enough to *Disteus* his partie, nor I my selfe held for his friend, so was I free from all suspicion that I kept him. But when they could not finde him, he commaunded a proclamation to be made, that euery one vpon paine of his head, that harboured them, or knew where they were, should bring them foorth: and afterwards apprehended *Anfilardus* and *Placindus*, and as many as they suspected could tel of them, threatning them to cruel torments, yea, and putting some in practise, though all in vaine to their purpose. It could not choose but kill *Disteus* his hart to see the ruine of his house, and the imprisonment of his friends and familie, who did neuertheless comfort himselfe not a little, bicause it was for his Lady and Mistresse sake, whom he had nowe in happie possession, the which thing he forgot not by many sweete and louing words to manifest vnto her: who could not for all this be comforted, (though she made him not priuie to her inward greefe) when she thought of the vniust and ill name (a thing that greeued her more then death) that was spred abroad of that, which she esteemed more then life, and when she entred into consideration and feare of the imminent danger wherein her beloued husband was, by meanes of the great searching and awaites that *Sagastes* had laide in all places to finde them out: Wherefore taking him aside, she saide thus vnto him. I know well my Lord, that my Fortune would not leaue me without some sorrowfull occurrent in so sweete an estate, nor to doe lesse with me then euer turne most bitterly against the pretence of my

content.

content. It greeues me to ſee thee take and taſte ſome part of my ſorrow, wherein yet I do comfort my ſelfe againe, that I ſhall not be the laſt in offring vp my life for the leaſt danger for thy ſake, ſince I was the firſt in ſacrificing my ſoule to thy will, obteſting almightie God that as I had no force with my feeble iudgment to gainſay thy deſire, I had alſo ſufficient valour with my life to deliuer thee from theſe moſt wrongfull turmoyles. I ſee thee heere in great extremities (for mine owne I account but ſmall) and therefore my opinion concurring with my deſire is, that ſince for many daies we are neither ſafe heere, nor in any other part of the kingdome are like to be no leſſe, thou wouldſt reſolue to conuey vs into any place, where wee might in more ſafety ouerpaſſe this cruell ſtorme of Fortune, aſſuring thee my deere Lord, that if I ſawe thee free from danger, I would not take care for the reſt. I might well paſſe ouer this new bond, my ſweeteſt Lady anſwered *Diſteus*, with many more already paſt, wherein after that I was thine, thou haſt ſo much obliged me, ſince I was neuer able yet to diſcharge them, the which (vnleſſe the vnſpeakable loue which I haue borne thee, and wherein I meane to die doth not with fauour come in part of their account and ſatisfaction) muſt ſtill remaine (the more my greefe) in their former force, when as the diſproportion of my ſmall abilitie can neuer counteruaile their encreaſing value. I haue remembred and weighed that with my ſelfe, which thou didſt command me, but would not hitherto tell thee ſo much, fearing to giue thee any occaſion of ſorrow by abſenting thy ſelfe from thy friends and kinſfolkes, and from thy houſe, and quiet reſt, to carie thee to ſome vncouth place amongſt ſtrangers to liue in pouertie and vnreſt. If you regard this my Lord, ſaide *Dardanea*, you do alſo forſake this and much more. But admit I leaue all this, and you nothing at all, in not leauing you, I might well thinke I left nothing at all. No more of this ſaid *Diſteus*, but were it not for feare of thy trouble and harme, I woulde deſire no other heauen in this world then to haue thee continually in my preſence: But let vs make my mother priuie of it, who will counſell vs as ſhe hath done, what is beſt for vs, and direct vs in all our matters. They therefore calling *Palna* vnto them, and telling her their mindes, ſhe ſaide. And knowe yee my good ſonne and daughter, that *Martandrus* and I were alſo talking of the ſame matter, who is no leſſe troubled in minde, fearing there will be a ſearch made in his houſe, whereby great harme may befall vs, and no good to him at all. I would not tell you of it, bicauſe you might not thinke he did it for any feare that concerned him. When ſhe had ſaid thus, ſhe called me before them, and *Diſteus* began to ſay thus vnto me. If I knewe thee not to be a faithfull friend of *Martandrus*, I would not haue put the weight of ſo great affaires in thy truſt and ſecrecie, nor omit with words (ſince I cannot with deedes) to gratifie that which thou haſt done for me. But as I haue experimented, and doe yet trie the contrarie, I hope, thou wilt not blame me, if I make not ſome outwarde and apparant ſhewe of thankes for it: But for the preſent remedie of our dangerous eſtate, wee are determined to flie the furie of our king with the abſence of our perſons; for which eſcape we craue not onely thy aduiſe, but aſſiſtance, and how it may be done without our diſcouerie. Concerning that ſuppoſed debt (ſaide I) which you my good Lord confeſſe you owe me, I will not anſwer you, but only touching that, which you haue committed to my charge, ſince it hath pleaſed you to make mine the greater, by hauing amongſt all others, choſen me out for your onely friende, which I eſteeme more then all that I did euer for you in my whole life, all which were it ten times more, is nothing in reſpect of this fauourable truſt which you repoſe in me. As for the reſt let euery one of vs thinke what we haue to do, and how to

take

take the beſt courſe. Al fower of vs therfore laying our heads togither in counſel, after a great while euery one hauing told his opinion, as mine was thought the beſt, ſo was it allowed & choſen, which was, That ſince *Sagaſtes* had placed watchmē in the citie gates, & eſpecially by night, that none might paſſe, vnles he were knowne what he was, the beſt way to get out was, that I ſhould cauſe three cartes to come that euening from my farme (for they knew I had a Farme but three miles out of the city) to bring certaine prouiſion from thence for my houſe, & other things, though I had no need of them: So that the cartes might come thither at Sunſet, & go emptie backe againe the ſame night when it began to waxe darke, bicauſe ſeeing them to go home againe without any thing, they might not ſuſpect our drift, and yet (though they had looked narrowly into the Carts) might as little haue ſuſpected any ſuch matter; for vnder them I had deuiſed to binde certaine great ſackes at length, with their mouthes open, in each a peece euerie one to put themſelues, and to ſend the Carters after they had vnladen (bicauſe they might not be priuie to it) to ſome place or other, while in the meane time I diſpatched our ſecret affaires, hauing made meanes before in my Farme that it might not be knowen of any: All which was done in ſuch ſort, that there was not as much as any ſuſpition of the matter. The ſame night that I carried them to my Farme, we all went to counſell what way we might beſt deuiſe for three of them to go out of the kingdome to ſome ſolitarie place, where they might not be purſued, and liue vnknowen. And our concluſion was, that *Diſteus* ſhould take one of thoſe Carts, and make himſelfe a Carter, and *Dardanea* and *Palna* in poore apparell goe out of the kingdome, and in the beſt manner they could, in habits cleane different from their eſtates paſſe into *Tynacria*, and that from that place, where they made their aboade, write to me of their ſucceſſe. Still did *Sagaſtes* ſet watch and ward in euerie place (for it was his chiefeſt deſire to catch *Diſteus*) that none of them might eſcape, whoſe cruell purpoſe yet (and not without reaſon) the furie of his anger did chaunge. For as he knew that all men loued *Diſteus*, and that all his friends (if without iuſt cauſe he apprehended and puniſhed him) would diſcouer themſelues and bandie againſt him, and by theſe meanes (perhaps) draw himſelfe into great danger: So was he not a little content to ſee the head of the contrarie ſide taken away, and his capital enimie abſent, whereby he thought to do well enough with the reſt. But yet he knew not that his ſiſter was likewiſe gone with him, but thought ſhe was in ſome of her kinsfolkes houſes. So that *Diſteus* being abſent, *Sagaſtes* might confiſcate his goods and condemne him for a traitour, ſince he appeered not at the Kings call, by whoſe commaund *Sagaſtes* ſeiſed indeed vpon all *Diſteus* lands and his Siſters goods, which were not a fewe. Heere is no time to tell you, Gentlemen, of the teares, that were ſpent betweene me and my noble gueſts at their departure: But that *Diſteus* prayed me by my ſelfe or by my friends to helpe *Anſilardus* and *Placindus* the beſt I could, and to get them out of priſon, for this was the onely thing (he ſaid) that did trouble him. So that they being gone from me, and I from them in body, *Diſteus* went, as I told you, to *Tynacria*, where (as afterwards I vnderſtoode) buying a little flocke of ſheepe to diſſemble his noble condition with this baſe eſtate, they were ſome daies there, perhaps with more harts eaſe then in *Eolia*, bicauſe they enioyed there, without any feare and danger, their ſweete contents, and were well beloued and reuerenced of all the Shepherds thereabouts, who endeuoured to do them all the pleaſure they could; ſometimes with rurall ſports and games; other times with dances and paſtorall muſicke. To all which *Diſteus* ſo well applyed himſelfe, that in a ſhort time he farre excelled

them

them all. And ſo for this reſpect, as for his affabilitie and mildnes, by knowing how to conuerſe with all, that Shepherd thought himſelfe vnhappie, that had not ſome priuate friendſhip with *Coryneus* (for ſo he named himſelfe after he had changed his habit:) and *Dardanea* that named her ſelfe *Dinia*, was no leſſe acceptable to all the Shepherdeſſes, and *Palna* called *Corynea*, like her ſonne, was reuerenced of them all. When all three went from me, *Dardanea* was gone two moneths with childe: but what God ſent her, or what became of the childe ſhe brought foorth, I know not, for they had not dwelt a whole yeere in that countrey, when they went away for what cauſe, or whither, I alſo know not. The cauſe whereof (conſidering the time wherein they went away) I ſuſpect was this. That in this meane while King *Rotyndus* married with the Kings ſiſter of that Prouince where they were; whoſe wifes brother a little while after being dead, an vncle of hers (called *Syniſtius*) aſpired to the kingdome, as Competitor with her. For the which cauſe *Rotyndus* making warre againſt him, with little loſſe of his men got the victorie, whereupon a peace was concluded betweene them; and the gouernment of the kingdome, by the interceſſion of *Agenesta* his niece (for ſo was the Queene called) giuen frankly to *Syniſtius*. So that *Diſteus* as ſoone as the noyſe of this warre was bruted abroad, went as I conieƈture (becauſe he would not be knowen) from that countrey with his pettie family. From which time I could neuer heare more of them, though manie daies haue paſſed ſince *Anſilardus* and *Placindus* went out to ſeeke them: And omitting mine own trauels (Gentlemen) and manie troubles that I paſſed in the like enterpriſe, becauſe they make not any whit to the purpoſe of your demaund, I will onely tell you, how theeſe two ſeruants of theirs went out ſo ſoone, being (as I told you before) impriſoned, and I ſo late, being, as you haue alſo heard, at libertie. When King *Rotyndus* married his Queene, in ioy of the feaſt, all the priſoners were let goe, amongſt whom *Anſilardus* and *Placindus* came out, and ſixe moneths after (to make *Sagaſtes* ſuſpect it the leſſe) by venturing their liues (for vpon paine of death it was commanded that none ſhould goe ſeeke out *Diſteus*) they went to the place, where I told them they were. At which place when they could not find them, they cõcluded, by ſeuering themſelues to ſeeke them out, appointing to meete at that place a yeere after, to know how they had ſped; and becauſe the one might not goe that way, or take in hand that the other did. Whereof as of all things elſe, though they for the ſpace of ſixe yeeres from time to time informed me; yet I know not how nor by what ſiniſter meanes it came to paſſe, that in more then twelue yeeres after, the end of the foreſaid time expired, I neuer heard any newes of them, nor of their maſter. Whereat being greatly greeued in minde I endeuoured to ſeeke out ſome good meanes (or rather fained occaſion) to go about the ſame errant, whereunto by the Kings moſt ſtreight edict I could neuer directly accommodate my ſelf, in regard of which iourney, if hope might haue perſwaded mè to finde them out, I would not haue neglected both that, and all paines abroad and affaires at home whatſoeuer. But being in this impatient deſire, two braue yoong youths (moſt highly fauoured of *Agenestor* Prince of *Eolia*, with whom they were both brought vp) were alſo determined to ſeeke out their parents, knowing that thoſe were not the ſame, for whom they had till then taken them. Theſe yoong Gentlemen *Delicius* and *Parthenius* (for ſo they were called) leauing aſide how much for their rare giftes and virtues they deſerued the loue of all, of purpoſe I endeuoured to make my ſpecial friends to this effect, that as they were in great fauour with the King and Queene, by their meanes and interceſſion to the Prince, I might finde ſuch fauour with them all, that if *Diſteus* and his

companie

companie were perhaps found out they might get their pardon, and be restored againe to their former estates and reputation, which we thought might easily be obtained, since King *Rotyndus*, by the good examples of his virtuous Queene *Agenesta* (whom God preserue for many yeeres) & by her holy life & conuersation, had almost now forsaken his old cõditions. Wherby (gentlemen) we may note, how the good examples of a vertuous wife, doe oftentimes worke to amend and correct the lewde disposition of a vitious husband: And therefore it is saide, that the wife is the mirrour of the husband, and the woman to the man, bicause the man looking into her, as into a cleere glasse, may frame his life and minde to her modestie and semblance: And contrarie, the man is the womans glasse for the selfesame cause and reason. Wherefore *Rotindus* loued not now *Sagastes* so well, as in times past, and liked lesse his lewde conditions, which sauoured nothing of vertue, whereon if any humane thought or action be not grounded, it is not durable any long time: for as vice is nothing, being the priuation of vertue, so is that of no stabilitie and permanence which is grounded vpon it. The fame of *Delicius* and *Parthenius* departure, and the end thereof was in a few daies spred ouer all the citie, whereat though most were sorie, yet some, who enuied their deserued fauour (for noble vertue is euer accompanied with base enuie) were not wanting that ioyed to see that day. This fit occasion therefore for the effecting of that which you shall heare offering it selfe to my semblable desseignes, comming vnto them, I vsed these wordes. As I cannot be sorie, Gentlemen, and my deere friends, for your departure, since it is a thing that concernes you so much: So am I not a little glad, that it hath so happily fallen out for my determinations, if in this iourney my poore companie (for onely yours heerein I desired) shall not be any waies troublesome vnto you: And bicause you may knowe the forcible cause that mooues me heereunto, I will (vpon that fidelitie and trust, which with all men, but especially with me you haue alwaies vsed) most frankly tell it you. As it is not vnknowen to you (I thinke) what great friendship hath been betweene *Distens* and me, and (for my part) shall euer be while my soule shall rule this earthly body: So must you know againe, that I concealed and kept him close, vntill I found out the meanes to put him in some safetie of his life; and (not content with this) would (if he had giuen me leaue, or if it had not beene preiudiciall to his secret departure) haue accompanied him to the extremest danger of mine owne: since which time I haue had a great desire to seeke him out, the which for two causes I haue left of: The one, bicause two of his seruants, who had no little care of that busines, haue many daies since gone from hence to seeke him out. The other depending of this, bicause it behooued me to remaine here still to procure his pardon, and leaue (if he had beene found) to come to his owne againe. When *Anfilardus* and *Placindus* went hence, there was an agreement betweene vs, that they should aduise me of all they knew; the which thing being not performed certaine daies after, I coniecture that they are either dead, or not at libertie. With this hope (or to terme it better despaire) I haue (though meanly) to this point fed my thoughts: The which being of late so mightily increased; and Fortune presenting to my desires so good an occasion for my secret departure; and occasion taking away all suspicion that I goe to seeke *Distens*, but onely to accompanie you, tels me, that there remaines nothing elsse, but your fauourable acceptance of my companie into yours, onely to passe out of the citie, and afterwardes if it please you, to diuide our selues, or doe as likes you best. To this (like discreete and aduised youthes, being faithfull to me their friend, and loyall to *Rotindus* their king) they answered thus. As *Distens*

and *Dardaneas* misfortunes (although we know them not) (*Martandrus*) haue not a little (as yet they doe) moſt iuſtly greeued vs, for their rare vertues and goodnes, that thorow out this kingdome we haue alwaies heard of them; ſo if our ſeruice might in any thing auaile either you or them, we would moſt willingly ſhew the arguments of our good will, which couets nothing elſe but fit meanes, to make ſome triall thereof; yet not denying that ſmall ſeruice wherein our ſlender abilities doe conſiſt, prouided, we doe not any thing in priuate or publike againſt that, wherein we are bound to our ſoueraine Lord the king, without whoſe countenance and woonted fauour we are no bodie. But we haue thought of a better and more conuenient way, whereby more then your requeſt ſhall be performed, and wherein we will not faile in our duties to our king, nor to you, nor in friendſhips holy lawes. And it is, That as the yoong Prince (as it is well knowen vnto you) doth not meanely loue vs: and is not wel content (by as much as I can perceiue by him) with thoſe extremities which are done to this Gentleman; ſo by theſe, as alſo by the Queenes meanes I hope, to get leaue of the king for you not onely to depart in our companie, but to ſeeke them out, aſſuring your ſelfe, that after they are found all ſhall be well ynough: for though we come not ſo ſoone againe, yet we will leaue a ſupplication in his behalfe with the Queene and the yoong Prince; which fauour if we cannot obtaine, we will furthermore ſo handle the matter, that you, nor any elſe ſhall take no harme or blame for this. For by committing the matter into the Queene and Princes handes, we wil trauel & take ſuch paines therein, as though from vs & from no other, it only came. Do Gentlemen (ſaid I againe) as it pleaſe you beſt, and herewithall beleeue me that (for their ſakes) I would not be ſorie for any harme that might redound to me, ſo that it might fall out to their good. They are much beholding to you (ſaide they) but I more bound to them, ſaide I. In the ende, after a few daies they got leaue to ſeeke whom they would, the which being bruted ouer all the citie gaue no ſmall content to *Diſteus* his friendes. And thus without ſtaying any longer, I went with *Delicius* and *Parthenius* out of *Eolia*, all three of vs prouiding neceſſaries for ſo vncertaine and long a iourney, wherein (after a while diuiding our ſelues) ſuch hath my fortune been, that in two yeeres ſpace ſince I went out, I neuer heard any newes of them, but onely thoſe which *Placindus* (when I found him heere) hath tolde me of *Delicius*, and the beſt of the Ladie *Felicia*; that hath aſſured me, that ſhortly I ſhall ſee them all here, whereof I haue no doubt, ſince ſhe hath ſaide it. That which hath happened to me in ſo long a trauell, and the troubles that I paſſed, as well for that I account them light for ſo good a cauſe as this, and that by the fauours of the Gods, I ſhall ſoone enioy their wiſhed companie, as alſo for that which you commanded me to do, it makes ſo ſmall to the purpoſe, that I will with your good leaue omit to report. So that Sir (ſpeaking to Don *Felix*) you plainely ſee, who *Corineus*, *Dinia*, and *Corinea* are, and the cauſe of their exile, and of our long iourney. And pardon me if I haue beene too long, ſince your demaund required no leſſe.

Pariſiles and all the reſt yeelding him great thankes for that he had told them, anſwered him, that the fault was rather greater, by making ſo ſhort an end to ſo pleaſant a hiſtorie, and that he did not prolong it with recitall of his trauels and aduentures, which befell to him in ſeeking out *Diſteus*. Let it not trouble you now (ſaide *Felicia*) for not onely this, but the ſucceſſe of *Diſteus* life and his miſhaps and theirs that did participate his company and fortunes in this iourney, with thoſe occurrents that befell to *Placindus* in his trauels, and that which hapned to others that went out to ſeeke *Parthenius* and *Delicius*, ſhall haue their fit time, wherein you ſhall take

take no ſmall delight to heare them. With this hope (ſaid Lord *Felix*) we will content vs, although it will be later, then we deſire. Whereupon returning now to the Temple, and eight daies being paſt, *Felicia* ſaid to *Syluanus* and *Seluagia*. It is nowe time my ſonne & daughter, that the friendſhip, which to this hower you haue borne *Syrenus*, be ſhowen: and becauſe you may know, & that it may be made manifeſt vnto you, what great need he hath both of his friends and of you, you muſt vnderſtand, that when you ſhall come to your fieldes, you ſhall finde many Shepherds doing their laſt duties to *Delius* as this day dead, who (as I told you) was many daies ſince very ſicke. And as of purpoſe I ſent *Syrenus* before now, by vertue of a new drinke, which at his departure I gaue him, to rekindle that quenched flame of *Dianas* loue in his breſt (a thing no leſſe conuenient to his weale then conſonant to my will) ſo would I not, that in the meane time, while he was with vs, the two foreſaide Shepherds (being not a little enamoured of her, and not woorthie to be caſt off) ſhould be preferred before him, both which haue beene, and are yet not a little entred into her good liking. Now therefore is the time, wherein he needeth moſt of all your help, and no leſſe requiſite for you to go finde him out; aſſuring you, that it will not a little greeue you to ſee *Syrenus* matched with ſuch dangerous corriuals as theſe two Shepherds are. *Syluanus* and *Seluagia* (though *Delius* death did a little greeue them) forgot not moſt humbly to thanke *Felicia*, not onely for her good will, and friendlie aduiſe, but alſo for the approoued affection and deſire ſhe had to helpe their beloued friend *Syrenus*; And thereupon ſaid vnto her. We cannot but obey your command (good Lady) although we would be faine heere, when *Coryneus* and his companie comes. Well well (anſwered *Felicia*) this Shepherd is not ſo nigh, nor cannot come back ſo ſoon, nor you ſo far off, but that you may be certified when they are to come. Since it is then ſo (ſaid Lord *Felix*) with your leaue (good Lady) I will take *Feliſmena* with me, and accompanie theſe Shepherds, in whoſe amorous ſtrife and riualitie which you but euen nowe ſpake of, I ſhall take no ſmall pleaſure and delight. The ſame affirmed *Martandrus*, *Placindus*, *Danteus*, and *Duarda* with one voice. If it pleaſe you ſo (ſaid *Felicia*) on Gods name let it be: but it behooues you (Gentlemen) and thee faire *Feliſmena* no leſſe, leaſt the baſhfull Shepherds eſtrange themſelues from your companie, to borrowe for a while their paſtorall habite, and condition: the which being no ſooner agreed vpon, but put in practiſe, they went to *Syluanus*, charging him to carie all in remembrance that paſſed betweene the corriuals, the better to report it afterwards, when they ſhould meete all togither.

Whoſoeuer therefore is deſirous to ſee the funerall of *Delius*, the riualitie of *Syrenus*, *Firmius*, and *Fauſtus*, and be at all their meetings, and takes any pleaſure to know who *Stela* is, and woulde faine knowe what her troubles, and thoſe of *Crimine*, *Delicius* and *Parthenius*, haue beene, and to what ende they came, as alſo the loue of *Agenestor*, prince of *Eolia* and of *Luſtea* daughter to *Diſteus* and *Dardanea*, let him attende me in the third part of this worke, which ſhall come to light out of hande.

La vita il fin, e'l di loda la ſera.

THE FIRST PART OF ENAMOVRED DIANA, made by *Gaſpar Gil Polo*.

To the moſt noble and vertuous Lady.

Doña Maria de Auſtria
y fuentes.

IF you were (my ſingular good Lady) that heauenly muſe and diuine fire from whence this little creature hath borrowed life and light, being moſt happie that it was borne vnder ſuch a conſtellation, whoſe beames and influence haue guided and indued it with thoſe perfections, which now it preſumeth by vertues thereof to poſſeſſe: Reaſon and dutie then it were to offer vp vnto your woorthines all the ſeruice it may, and humbly to craue of the ſame, That ſince now it commeth abroad to euery ones view, it may in the forhead carie the imprinted golden character and warrant of your noble and renowned name: wherewith being protected, it feareth not any malignant ſpirit that may bite it. And little though this be which my zealous and dutifull affection, which I haue euer borne to you and your honorable houſe (from whence many gallant perſonages, and rare and learned wits haue ſprung out) can preſent to ſuch great bountie and vertue, the which nature hauing placed in a moſt beautifull and chriſtalline figure, in euery part ſpread foorth their beames with loue and admiration: Yet reſpecting the minde of him that offers it, and the good will wherewith like bookes haue beene receiued by Kings and great Lordes, I hope faire Lady, you will not condemne me of too much preſumption by dedicating this vnto your high patrocinie, when as the affiance which I haue in your gentle Graces, noble minde and ſweete perfections inforceth me heereunto, the which duly to be recommended and recounted, require a finer wit and fitter place. Which if at any time heereafter my happy fortune ſhall grant me, in nothing elſe ſo iuſtly it ſhal be imploied, then in the deſerued praiſe and ſeruice of your Ladiſhip, whoſe illuſtrous perſon and houſe our Lord defend and proſper many yeeres with increaſe of all happineſſe. From VALENCIA the ninth of Februarie 1564.

The first Booke of *Enamoured* DIANA.

AFter that appassionate *Syrenus* by the vertue of the mightie liquor which sage *Felicia* had giuen him, was now deliuered out of *Cupids* handes, Loue (working after his accustomed maner) wounded anewe the hart of careleſſe *Diana*, reuiuing in her breſt forgotten loues, bicause ſhe ſhould be captiue to one that was free, and liue tormented for the loue of one, who from the ſame was moſt exempted: her greefe being thereby the more augmented, when it occurred to her thoughts that the ſmall regard that in times paſt ſhe had of *Syrenus*, was now an occaſion of his forgetfulnes, & of that great contempt that he did beare her. She was not only with theſe griefs, but with many more ſo fiercely aſſaulted, that neither the holy bonde of matrimonie, nor the reynes of ſeemely ſhame and modeſtie were able to ſtaie or mitigate the furie of her immoderate loue, nor remedie the ſharpnes of her cruell torments, vntill with lamentable complaints, and pitifull teares ſhe mollified the hardeſt rockes, and ſauage beaſts. Wherefore being by chance on a ſommers day at the fountaine of the Sicamours, about that time when the Sunne was eleuated to the Meridian point, and there calling to minde the great content, that in that very place ſhe had many times receiued of her beloued *Syrenus*, and counting her paſſed delights with her preſent greefes, and knowing that the beginning of her ſorrowes, and the fault was onely in herſelfe, ſhe conceiued thereof ſuch greefe and anguiſh of minde, and was with ſuch dangerous affrightes ſurſaulted, that euen then ſhe thought deſired death would haue made an end of all her troubles. But after ſhe had recouered ſome ſmall vigour, yet the force of her paſſion, & the violence wherewith loue reigned in her breſt, was neuertheleſſe ſo great, that it compelled her to publiſh her torments to the ſimple birdes, which from the greene boughes were liſtening to her, and to the branchie trees that ſeemed to take compaſſion of her greefe, and to the cleere fountaine, that with the ſolemne murmur of the Chriſtalline waters accorded with the notes of her dolefull ſong: And ſo to the ſound of a ſweete Baggepipe, which commonly ſhe caried about her, ſhe began to ſing theſe verſes following.

LOng haue I felt a ſilent paine of ſorrow,
Cruell, by that my ſenſes it importunes
To ſuch extremes, that I am forc't to borrow
This laſt releeſe againſt my heauie fortunes,
To publiſh them vnto the windes, that ſtay them
Thorow out the world with pitie to conuay them.

Then gentle Aire, performe this due of pitie,
Let euery region know my greeuous anguiſh,
Breath out my paines, and tell in euery citie
The life of her, that in Loues want doth languiſh:
Forgotten of a Shepherd that diſdaines her,
Who once did die euen for like loue that paines her.

O that this ill (aeath to my vitall powers,)
Hardly maintain'd amids these cruell fashions,
Springs of my late oblivion and those howers,
Which I bestow'd, and thought not of his passions:
And that the fault, that heertofore did blame me.
Causeth my paine, and with my paine doth shame me.

Hart breake in two for greefe when thought assailes thee
Of those fell torments which thou once didst lend him,
Thou lou'st him now, but little it preuailes thee
To pardon that, wherewith thou didst offend him.
Who cried once for that which now I crie for,
And died once for that which now I die for.

These present greefes of passions that confound me
With ceaselesse paine, torment not in such measure,
As thoughts of my late crueltie doe wound me,
Or when I thinke, I lost so deere a treasure:
For they are heauen, to thinke that now I prize him,
And these are hell, to thinke I did despise him.

For if my little loue (more fitly named
Iniurious hate) (whereof I now repent me)
Were not in fault (alas too lately blamed)
Of all these present greefes, that thus torment me;
Then with complaints I would not cease t'importune
Vngentle loue, and raile on cruell Fortune.

But I so proude for my admired beautie
That flattred me, of sense was so bereaued,
That careless of my fault, and forced dutie
I owde to Loue, I neuer once perceaued,
That Loue did take reuengement at his pleasure,
And Fortune change without all meane or measure.

But Loues reuenge wrought neuer such a woonder,
Nor to so great despaire did euer driue one,
As thus on euery side to breake asunder,
And ruinate a hope that might reuiue one:
And Fortune in her change made neuer any
So great, as from one life to deathes so many.

Syrenus then, how art thou now assured
Of thy reuenge, which thou hast deepely taken
In my disgrace, which I my selfe procured:
That since of late my loue thou hast forsaken,
No remedie for any greefe is left me,
That of my wonted comfort hath bereft me.

For heeretofore as thou hast euen, and morrow,
Seene me disdaine thy sight with so small reason,
So maist thou now take pleasure in my sorrow,
And with thy scornes my feeble comforts season:
For now to loue me, lies not in thy power,
Though I must loue thee till my dying hower.

So far from Cupids *force thy haps haue blest thee,*
And in thy libertie thou tak'st such glorie,
That (gentle Shepherd) I doe not request thee
To cure mine ill (which cannot make thee sorie)
But to beguile these paines by Loue ordained,
With one poore fauour, though it were but fained:

And though mine ils, which thou art not contented
To remedie, nor dost pretend to cease them,
When to thy careless thoughts they are presented,
Whose hot reuenge haue vowed to increase them:
Yet turne thine eies, and see how mine are flowing
With riuolets of teares, that still are growing.

Behold my ruine, and my life decaied,
My little hope, which in despaire I borrow,
My teares, my sighes, my senses all dismaied,
Though not to take compassion of my sorrow,
Yet see how with them all I am affreighted,
In thy reuenge to be the more delighted.

For though with greefe, wherewith I still am calling
To mollifie thy hart, and haue no power,
Nor that my teares, which euermore are falling,
Cannot excuse my death one little hower,
Then will I die for loue of thee, and neuer
Enioy this breath without I loue thee euer.

Enamoured *Diana* had not so soone made an end of her delightfull musicke, if on the sudden she had not beene interrupted by a certaine Shepherdesse, which behinde a tuft of Hasels was hearkening vnto her: Who therefore espying her, gaue a pause to her sweete voice by cutting off the substance of her song, and was not a little greeued (which by a naturall blush that tainted her faire face, might easily be coniectured) that her song was heard, and her griefe vnknowen; especially perceiuing the same Shepherdesse to be a stranger and neue seene in those parts before. But she, who from a far off had heard so sweete a sound, with silent steps drew neere to enioy such daintie melodie; and vnderstanding the cause of her dolorous song, made on the sudden so goodly a shewe of her excellent beautie before her, as the Nocturnall Moone is woont to doe, when with her shining beames it pearseth and ouercomes the foggie thicknes of the darke clouds. But seeing *Diana* to be somewhat troubled in minde at her sight, with a merrie countenance, she thus began to say vnto her.

I haue not a little (faire Shepherdesse) with my interrupting presence (which to small purpose hath thus disturbed thee) offended the great content, which I had to heare thee; but the desire I haue to know thee, and to giue thee some lightning for thy griefe, that causeth thee so pitifully to moane, may serue (if it please thee) for my excuse, and make me blameless heerein. For the which griefe, though it is bootelesse, as some say, to seeke any comfort; yet by a free will and reasons deuoide of passion there may be sufficient remedies applyed. Dissemble not therefore with me thy sorrowes, and thinke it not much to tell me thy name, and the cause of thy sad complaints, since for this I will make no lesse account of thy perfections, nor iudge thy deserts to be of lesse value.

Diana hearing these words, stoode a while without answering her againe, hauing her eies fastened on the rare beautie of that Shepherdesse, and her minde occupied in a doubtfull construction of that, which she should answere to her gentle offers and louing words, and in the end answered her thus againe.

If the great pleasure, which I take in beholding thee (vnknowen Shepherdesse, and curteous without compare) and the comfort, which thy sweete words do promise me, might finde any small kinde of confidence or hope in my afflicted hart, I would then beleeue that thou wert able to remedie my sorrowes, and would not doubt to manifest my paines vnto thee. But my griefe is of such tenour, that when it begins to molest me, it seiseth in such sort on my heart, that it stops vp all the passages against remedie: Yet know (Gentle Shepherdesse) that I am called *Diana*, knowen too well in all the fields and villages hereabouts; and so let it content thee to knowe my name, and not to enquire further of sorrowes, since thou shalt profit thee no more, then to make thy selfe compassionate and condolent for my tender yeeres, seeing them oppressed with so many cares and troubles.

Thus are they deluded (answered the Shepherdesse) that make themselues slaues to fonde Loue, who but beginning to serue him, are become so much his vassals, that they desire not to be free, and thinke it impossible to be manumitted from his seruitude. If loue be thy greefe (as by thy song I am sure it is) then know (faire Shepherdesse) that in this infirmitie I haue no small experience: For I my selfe haue beene manie yeeres a captiue in like bondage, but now am free; blinde I was, but now haue found out the way of truth: I haue passed in the amorous Ocean manie dangerous stormes and tempests, and now am safely arriued in the secure hauen of content and rest: And though thy paine be neuer so great; yet hath not mine, I dare boldly say, beene lesse: And since for the same I found out a happie remedie, banish not hope from thy minde, shut not vp thine eies from the truth, nor thine eares from the substance of my words.

Are they words (said *Diana*) that shall be spent to remedie my loue, whose workes exceed the compasse and helpe of wordes. But yet for all this faine would I know thy name, and the cause that hath brought thee into our fields; the which if thou wilt vouchsafe to tell me, shall so greatly comfort me, that I will for a while suspend the complaints that I haue begun, a thing perhaps which may not a little auaile for the lightning of my griefe.

My name (said the Shepherdesse) is *Alcida*: but the rest which thou demandest of me, the compassion which I haue of thy voluntarie greefe, will not suffer me to declare, before thou hast embraced my wholsome remedies, though (perhaps) vnsauerie to thy distempered taste.

Euery comfort, said *Diana*, shall be most gratefull to me that commeth from thy

thy hands, which neuertheleſſe is not able to roote out the ſtrong loue in my breſt, nor to remooue it from thence, without carying my hart with it burſt in a thouſand peeces: And though it might, yet I woulde not liue without, bicauſe I woulde not leaue to loue him, who being once forgotten of me tooke ſo ſudden and extreme a reuenge of my vniuſt crueltie.

Nay then (ſaid *Alcida*) thou giueſt me no little hope and confidence of thy recouerie, ſince now thou loueſt him, whom thou haſt heeretofore hated, hauing learned thereby the pathway to obliuion, and acquainted thy will with contempt, and the more, ſince betweene theſe two extremes loue and hate there is a meane, which thou muſt embrace and follow.

To this *Diana* replied and ſaid. Thy counſell (faire Shepherdeſſe) contents me very well, but I thinke it not ſure enough for my ſafetie, nor the beſt in common reaſon for my auaile. For if my will were put betweene loue and hate, I ſhoulde ſooner yeelde to loue then to hate; bicauſe being neerer to it, mightie *Cupid* with greater force woulde aſſaile, and ouercome me.

To this *Alcida* anſwered. Do not honor him ſo much, who deſerues it ſo little, calling him mightie, who may be ſo eaſily ouercommed, eſpecially by thoſe that chooſe out the meane abouesaid: for therein doth vertue conſiſt, and where that is, all harts are armed with force and conſtancie againſt loue.

Thou mighteſt better terme thoſe harts cruell, harde, vntamed, and rebellious, ſaid *Diana*, which pretend to repugne their proper nature, and to reſiſt the inuincible force of loue. And yet when they haue oppugned it as much as they liſt, in the end they haue little cauſe to bragge of their ſtoutnes, and leſſe helpe to defende them with their fooliſh hardines. For the power of loue ouercomes the ſtrongeſt holdes, and makes moſt way thorow, where it is moſt reſiſted: of whoſe maruels and memorable deedes my beloued *Syrenus* did on a day ſing in this verie place, at that time when his remembrance was ſo ſweete, as now moſt bitter to my ſoule. The which Sonnet, and all his other Ditties, which he then made and ſung, I well remember, hauing euer a great care not to forget them for certaine cauſes, which perſwaded me to regiſter the words and deeds of my deereſt *Syrenus* in perpetuall memory: But this which intreats of the mightie force of Loue, ſaith thus.

THat mighty Loue, though blinde of both his eies,
Doth hit the Center of the wounded hart:
And though a boy yet Mars *he foiles with dart,*
Awaking him, where in his net he lies:
And that his flames doe freeze me in ſuch wiſe,
That from my ſoule a feare doth neuer ſtart
Moſt baſe and vile: yet to the higheſt part
(Strengthned by land and ſea) of heauen it flies.
That he, whom Loue doth wound or priſoner take,
Liues in his greefes, and with his giues content:
This is his might that many woonder at.
And that the ſoule which greateſt paine doth ſhake,
If that it doth but thinke of Loues torment,
The feare of ſuch a thought forgetteth that.

No doubt, ſaid *Alcida*, but the forces of loue are well extolled: But I would rather haue beleeued *Syrenus*, if after hauing publiſhed the furie of *Cupids* arrowes

to

to be so great, and after hauing commended the hardnes of his chaines, he had not also found out the meanes to set himselfe at libertie: And so I maruell that thou wilt so lightly giue credit to him, who makes not his word and deed all one. For it is very cleere, that the Songs and Sonnets are a kinde of a vaine and superfluous praises, whereby louers sell their ils for dangerous things, when that so easily of captiues they become free, and fall from a burning desire to a secure obliuion. And if louers feele passions, it proceedeth of their owne will, and not of loue, which is not but a thing imagined of men; a thing neither in heauen, nor earth, but in his hart, that entertaines it: whose power (if any he haue) onely by the default of those he vsurpes, who of their owne accord suffer themselues to be ouercommed, offering him their harts for tribute, and putting their libertie into his hands. But bicause *Syrenus* Sonnet may not so easily passe without an answere, giue eare to this, which as it seemes was made in countermaund of that; and long agoe it is, since I heard a Shepherd called *Aurelius*, sing it in the fields of *Sebetho*, and as I remember, thus it said.

Loue is not blinde, but I, which fondly guide
My will to tread the path of amorous paine:
Loue is no childe, but I, which all in vaine,
Hope, feare, and laugh, and weepe on euery side:
Madnes to say, that flames are Cupids *pride,*
For my desire his fier doth containe,
His wings my thoughts most high and soueraine,
And that vaine hope, wherein my ioies abide:
Loue hath no chaines nor shaftes of such intent,
To take and wound the whole and freest minde,
Whose power (then we giue him) is no more,
For loue's a tale, that Poets did inuent,
A dreame of fooles, an idoll vaine and blinde:
See then how blacke a God doe we adore?

Dost thou therefore thinke *Diana*, that any one endued but with reasonable vnderstanding, will trust to things in the ayre as thou dost? What reason hast thou so truely to worship a thing so vntruly and false, as the supposed God of loue is, who is fained by fond and vaine heads, followed by dishonest mindes, and nourished in the braines of idle wantons? These are they, who gaue to Loue that name which makes him so famous thorow out all the world. For seeing how fonde men for louing well did suffer so many sursaults, feares, cares, iealousies, changes, and other infinite passions, they agreed to seeke out some principall and vniuersall cause, from whence, as from a fountaine all these effects should arise. And so they inuented the name of Loue, calling him a God, bicause he was of many nations and people feared, and reuerenced, and painted him in such sort, that whosoeuer sawe his figure, had great reason to abhorre his fashions. They painted him like a Boy, bicause men might not put their trust in him; Blinde, bicause they might not followe him; Armed, bicause they might feare him; with flames of fire, bicause they might not come neere him; and with wings, because they might knowe him vaine and inconstant. Thou must not vnderstande (faire Shepherdesse) that the power which men attribute to Loue is, or may be any waies his: But thou must rather beleeue, that the more they magnifie his might and valour, the more they manifest their weaknes and simplicitie. For in saying, that Loue is strong, is to affirme,

affirme, that their will is weake, by ſuffering it ſo eaſily to be ouercommed by him: To ſaie, that Loue with mightie violence doth ſhoote mortall and venemous arrowes, is to include that their harts are too ſecure & careleſſe, when that ſo willingly they offer themſelues to receiue them. To ſay, that Loue doth ſtreightly captiuate their ſoules, is to inferre, that there is want of iudgement and courage in them, when at the firſt bruntes they yeelde; nay when ſometimes without any combate they ſurrender their libertie into their enimies hands: and finally all the enterpriſes which they tell of Loue, are nothing elſe but matter of their miſeries, and arguments of their weakenes. All which force and proweſſe admit to be his, yet are they not of ſuch qualitie, that they deſerue any praiſe or honour at all. For what courage is it to take them priſoners, that are not able to defend themſelues? What hardines to aſſaile weake and impotent creatures? What valour to wounde thoſe that take no heede and thinke leaſt on him? What fortitude to kill thoſe that haue alreadie yeelded themſelues? What honour with cares to diſturbe thoſe, that are merry and ioyfull? What woorthie deede to perſecute vnfortunate men? Truely faire Shepherdeſſe, they that would ſo much extoll and glorifie this *Cupid*, and that ſo greatly to their coſt ſerue him, ſhould (for his honour) giue him better praiſes. For the beſt name that amongſt them all he gets, is to be but a cowarde in his quarrels, vaine in his pretences, liberal of troubles, and couetous in rewards. All which names, though of baſe infamie they ſauour, yet are thoſe woorſe which his affectionate ſeruants giue him, calling him fire, furie, and death, terming (Louing) no better then to burne, to deſtroy, to conſume, and to make themſelues fooles; and naming themſelues blinde, miſerable, captiues, madde, inflamed, and conſumed. From hence it comes, that generally all complaine of Loue, calling him a Tyrant, a Traytour, vnflexible, fierce and vnpitifull. All Louers verſes are full of dolour, compounded with ſighes, blotted with teares, and ſung with agonies. There ſhalt thou ſee ſuſpicions, there feares, there miſtruſtes, there iealouſies, there cares, and there all kindes of paines. There is no other ſpeech amongſt them but of deathes, chaines, darts, poyſons, flames, and other things which ſerue not but to giue torments to thoſe, that emploie their fancies in it, and feare when they call vpon it. *Herbanius* the Shepherde famous in *Andaloz'a*, was troubled too much with theſe termes when in the barke of a Poplar, with a ſharp bodkin, inſteed of his pen, in preſence of me wrote theſe verſes following.

He that in freedome iets it proude and braue,
Let him not liue too careleſſe of himſelfe:
For in an inſtant he may be a ſlaue
To mighty Loue, and ſerue that wanton elfe:
And let that hart, that yet was neuer tamed,
Feare at the laſt by him to be inflamed.

For on that ſoule that proudly doth diſdaine
His heauie lawes, and liues with loftie will,
Fierce Loue is woont t'inflict a cruell paine,
And with moſt ſharpe and dire reuenge to kill:
That who preſumes to liue without his power,
In death he liues tormented euery hower.

O Loue, that doſt condemne me to thy ſwile,

Loue

Loue, that doſt ſet ſuch mortall coles on fire,
O Loue, that thus my life thou doſt aſſaile,
Intreated ill, tormented by thine ire:
Henceforth I curſe thy chaines, thy flames, thy dart,
Wherewith thou bind'ſt, conſum'ſt, and kill'ſt my hart.

And now let vs come to *Syrenus* Sonnet, whereby he ſeemes to make men beleeue, that the imagination of Loues enterpriſes ſufficeth to ouercome the furie of the torment. For if his operations be to kill, to wound, to make blind, to burne, to conſume, to captiuate, and to torment, he ſhall neuer make me beleeue, that to imagine things of paine doth lighten the griefe, which muſt rather (as I thinke) giue greater force and feeling to the paſſion: For when it is more in imagination, it remaineth longer in his heart, and with greater paine torments it. And if that be true which *Syrenus* did ſing, I much maruell that he receiuing ſo deepe a taſte in this thought, hath now ſo eaſily changed it, by meanes of ſo cruell obliuion, not onely of loues operations, but alſo of thy beautie, which ought not for any thing in the world to be forgotten.

Alcida had ſcarce finiſhed theſe laſt words, when *Diana* lifting vp her eies (for ſhe ſuſpected ſomewhat) perceiued her husband *Delius* comming downe from the ſide of a little hill bending his ſteps towards the fountaine of the Sicamours, where they were togither: whereupon cutting off *Alcidas* diſcourſe, ſhe ſaid vnto her.

No more, gentle Shepherdeſſe, no more; for we will finde fitter time hereafter to heare out the reſt, and to anſwer thy weake and common arguments: For behold my husband is comming downe yonder hill towards vs, and therefore I thinke it beſt to turne our talke to ſome other matter, and with the tune of our inſtruments to diſſemble it: and ſo let vs begin to ſing, bicauſe when he is come neere vnto vs, he may not be diſpleaſed at the manner of our conuerſation: whereupon *Alcida* taking her Cytern, and *Diana* her Bagpipe, began to ſing as followeth.

Prouencall Rythmes.

Alcida.

While Titan *in his Coach with burning beames*
Ouer the world with ſuch great force doth ride,
That Nymphes, and their chaſte companies abide
In woods, and ſprings, and ſhallowe ſhadowed ſtreames:
And while the prating graſhopper replies
Her ſong in mourning wiſe,
Shepherdeſſe ſing
So ſweete a thing,
That th'eauens may bee
By hearing thee
Made gentle, on their owne accord to power
Vpon this meade a freſh and ſiuer ſhower.

Diana.

Whiles that the greateſt of the Planets ſtaies
Iuſt in the mids betweene the Eaſt and weſt,

And

And in the field vpon the mowers brest
With greater heate doth spread his scorching raies:
The silent noise this pleasant fountaine yeeldes,
That runs amids these fieldes,
Such musicke mooues,
As woonder prooues,
And makes so kinde
The furious winde,
That by delight thereof, their force they stay,
And come to blowe as gently as they may.

Alcida.

Your running riuers pure and christalline,
That all the yeere doe make a liuely spring,
And beautifie your banks and euery thing,
With Cowslips, Lillies, and sweete Colombine,
The cruell heate of Phœbus *come not neere*
To heate this fountaine cleere,
Nor that such sweete
Liquour, with feete
Troubled be not
Of sheepe or goat:
Nor that the teares, which faithlesse louers wast
In these fine waters neuer may be cast.

Diana.

Greene flowrie meade, where natures curious die
Hath shewen her colours diuers in their kinde,
With trees, and flowers, whereto they are combinde,
Which paintes thee foorth so faire vnto the eie:
In thee thy boughes of verdure may not knowe
The blustring windes that blowe,
Prosper, and giue
Flowers, and liue:
Not to be lost
By heate or frost:
Nor angrie heauen in furie doe not spoile,
Nor hurt so faire a meade, and fertill soile.

Alcida.

Heere from the hurly burly, and the noise
Of stately courtes sequestred, euery one
Reposedly liues by himselfe alone,
In quiet peace, in harmlesse sportes and ioies:
In shades sometimes, laide downe on Floras *pride*
Neere to some riuers side,
Where birdes doe yeeld
Sweete notes in field,

And flowers fine
Odours diuine:
And alwaies with an order souerane
The meadow laughes, the wood, the hill, and plaine.

Diana.

The noise made heere by silent gemle windes
In flowrie boughes, the leaues that softly shake,
Delighteth more, then that the people make
In great assemblies, where their sundrie kindes
Of proud demeanours, and high maiesties,
Are foolish vanities:
Their solemne feastes
Breede but vnrestes,
Their honours name
Blinde errours frame:
And all their holy wordes cleane different
From that, that in their harts was euer ment.

Alcida.

Ambition heere no snares nor nets regardes,
Nor auarice for crownes doth lay her bates:
The people heere aspire not to estates,
Nor hungers after fauours, nor rewardes:
From guile and fraude, and passion, as we see,
Their harts are euer free.
Their faith's not vaine,
But good and plaine:
Their malice small,
They iust to all,
Which makes them liue in ioy and quiet peace,
And in a meane sufficient for their ease.

Diana.

To new found worlds, nor seas, that rage and swell,
The simple Shepherd neuer sailes in vaine:
Nor to the furdest Indias, *for his gaine,*
Thousandes of leagues, and duckates there to tell:
Vnto the field he comes as well content,
With that that God *hath sent;*
As he that spendes
Rents without endes:
And liues (perdie)
As merily
As he, that hath great flockes vpon his hils,
And of good ground a thousand acres tils.

Delius from a far off heard the voice of his faire wife *Diana*, and perceiuing that another answered her, made great haste to goe see who was in her companie: wherefore

wherefore hiding himselfe behind a great Mirtle, neere to the fountaine, he listened to their singing, as one that still sought occasions of his woonted iealousie. But when he vnderstoode that their songs were far from that which he suspected, he was well pleased in minde: But yet the great desire he had to know the other, that was in companie of his wife, made him draw neere vnto the Shepherdesses; who courteously saluted him, but especially *Diana*, whom with a smiling and angelicall countenance she most sweetely entertained. And being set neere vnto them, *Alcida* saide.

I thinke my selfe *(Delius)* greatly bound to Fortune, who hath not onely fauoured me, by presenting to mine eies the excellent beautie of thy *Diana*, but also by making me knowe the man, whom she hath onely chosen, and thought most worthy to possesse so rare a gem, by yeelding her libertie so frankly into his hands; which choise no doubt (as she is wise) cannot be but deemed most high and soueraigne: So I maruell much againe, that in lieu thereof, and of that intire loue which she beares thee, thou makest so small reckoning of her, as to let her goe one step without thy company, or be a minute out of thy sight. If she be so firmely rooted in thy hart, which I may well presume, how can that loue thou owest her be so small as only to content thy selfe with her liuely figure engrauen therein, and not feede thine eies with the continuall sight of her singular beautie.

Then *Diana* (least *Delius* by his answere might haue hazarded his blunt wit and rude education) tooke him by the hand and said vnto her.

Delius hath but little reason to thinke himselfe so happie (as thou saist) to haue me for his wife, or so much in his presence, as by meanes thereof to forget his flocks, and granges, matters of more consequence, then the poore delight which he may take by viewing that beautie, which thou dost vnworthily attribute vnto me.

Do not to so small purpose (said *Alcida)* preiudicate thy comely graces, *Diana*, nor offer such iniurie to the generall voice the world hath of thy perfections, since it is no lesse beseeming a faire woman to haue some small conceit and opinion of her selfe, then a point of rash iudgement to terme her proud and arrogant, that doth moderately acknowledge the same. Therefore hold thy selfe *(Delius)* for the happiest man in the world, and with pride inioy this fauour that Fortune hath bestowed on thee, who neuer gaue, nor can giue any thing, that in felicitie may be comparable with the husband of *Diana*.

These words so sweetely deliuered by *Alcida*, and that faire face, and eies of hers, which (all the while she was talking) *Delius* both marked and gazed on, made so deepe an impression in his hart, that at the ende of her gentle and discreet words, he was so greatly enamoured of her, that, like a senceless and astonished man, he had not one word to answere her againe, onely giuing, with a new burning sigh, a manifest token of the greene wound, that *Cupid* had made in his conquered hart.

But now about this time they heard a voice, the sweetnes whereof delighted them maruellously. They gaue therefore attentiue eare vnto it, and casting their eies from whence it resounded, they saw a Shepherd comming with a wearie pace towards the fountaine, and going like one that was surcharged with griefe and anguish of minde, singing as followeth.

I Cannot be by Loues wrath more tormented,
Nor Fortune can to me be more vnstable:
There is no soule in hope so little able,

Nor hart that is with paine so much contemed:
Loue doth inforce my fainting breath, that striueth
The better to endure my hard reiection,
And yet with hope my suffrance, and affection,
And life will not consume, that yet reuiueth:
O vainest hart, sad eies, whose teares haue spent me,
Why in so long a time, and with such anguish,
End not my plaints, and spirits deadly languish?
O woes, sufficeth it not what you haue sent me?
O Loue, why dost thou thus my torments nouriſh,
And let Alcida *in her freedome flouriſh?*

The Shepherd had ſcarce ended his ſong, when *Alcida* knowing who he was, trembled like an Aſpen leaſe in euerie part of her bodie; wherefore ſhe roſe vp in great haſte to be gone before he came to them, requeſting *Delius* and *Diana* not to tell him that ſhe had beene there, ſince it was as much as her life was worth, if that Shepherd whom ſhe hated more then death, did either finde or had any knowledge of her. They promiſed her ſo to do, though verie ſorie for her ſudden and haſtie departure. *Alcida* as faſt as ſhe could hye her, recouered a thicke wood not far from the fountaine, and fled with ſuch celeritie and feare, as if ſhe had beene purſued by ſome hungrie and cruell Tygre.

Immediately after the Shepherd wearied with extreme trauell and trouble, came to that place, which Fortune (it ſeemed) condolent for his griefe, had offered him, and that cleere fountaine, and *Dianas* companie for ſome lightning of his paine: who being faint after his painfull iourney, and ſeeing the Sunne in the pride of his heat; the place verie pleaſant; the trees caſting forth coole ſhades; the graſſe freſh and greene; the fountaine cleere & criſtalline, and *Diana* paſſing faire; thought good to reſt himſelfe a while, though the earneſt care and haſte of that he went ſeeking, and the ceaſeleſſe deſire he had to finde it, gaue his wearied bodie no place of reſt, nor eaſe to his afflicted minde: The which *Diana* perceiuing, ſhewed her ſelfe as courteous towards him, as *Delius* iealous eie (who was preſent) would giue her leaue; and yet entertained the ſtrange Shepherd with ſweete words, as well for his owne deſerts, which ſhe deemed not ſmall; as alſo for that ſhe perceiued him tormented with the like griefe that ſhe was. The Shepherd cheered vp by *Dianas* friendly welcome and ſeemely fauours, of a miſerable man, thought himſelfe happie by finding out ſo good a chaunce. But they being thus togither, *Diana* by chaunce caſting her eie aſide, could not ſee her husband *Delius*, who newly ſurpriſed in *Alcidas* loue, when *Diana* tooke leaſt heed of him, and while ſhe was entertaining the newe Shepherd, purſued amaine the Shepherdeſſe that fled away, and tooke the verie ſame way with a ſtrong reſolution to follow her euen to the other part of the world. *Diana* not a little perplexed to ſee her husband wanting ſo on the ſudden, called and cried a good while togither on the name of *Delius*, but all in vaine to get an anſwere from him in the wood, or to make him leaue of his fonde purſuite, who rather running after her as faſt as he could, thought at the laſt to ſeaſe vpon his beloued *Alcida*. Whereupon when *Diana* perceiued that *Delius* appeared in no place, ſhe ſhewed her ſelfe a moſt ſorrowfull woman for him, and lamented in ſuch pitifull ſort that the Shepherd to comfort her, ſaid thus vnto her.

Afflict not thy ſelfe thus without reaſon (faire Shepherdeſſe) and beleeue not thine

thine owne imaginations ſo greatly preiudiciall to thy reſt and quiet: for the Shepherd whom thou miſſeſt, is not ſo long ſince wanting, that thou maieſt haue anie cauſe to thinke that he hath forſaken thee. Pacifie then thy ſelfe a little, for it may be that when thy backe was turned, he hauing ſome deſire to change place, ſecretly got away, vnwilling (perhaps) that we ſhoulde ſee him go for feare of ſtaying him, being inuited by the coole ſhades of thoſe greene Sicamours, and by the freſh and pleaſant winde that is gently blowing them; or elſe perhaps diſcontended for my comming hither, thinking my companie troubleſome, whereas now without it he may merrily paſſe the heate of the day away.

To this anſwered *Diana*. By theſe words (gracious Shepherd) which thy toong hath vttered, and forced cheere which thou diſſembleſt, who cannot conceiue the greefe that conſumes thy life? Thou ſheweſt well that loue is thy torment, and art accuſtomed to deceiue amorous ſuſpicions by vaine imaginations. For it is a common tricke of louers, to work their thoughts to beleeue falſe and impoſſible things, bicauſe they would not credite things that are certaine and true. Such comforts (gentle Shepherd) auaile more to quote out the ſorrow of my greefe by thee, then to remedie my paine. For I know well enough, that my husband *Delius* is fledde after a moſt faire Shepherdeſſe, who went but euen now from hence, and in regarde of the great and feruent loue wherewith he beheld her, and ſighes, which for her ſake came ſmoking from his hart, I do verily beleeue (knowing moreouer how ſtedfaſtly he performes that he imagines or takes in hand) that he will not leaue following that Shepherdeſſe, though he thinke to come neuer in my ſight againe. And that which greeues me moſt is, that I know her diſpoſition to be ſo rigorous, and her hart ſo great an enimie to Loue, that ſhe will not onely ſhew him no pitie, but with great deſpite contemneth the moſt ſoueraigne beautie, and greateſt deſerts that may be.

At theſe very wordes the ſorrowfull Shepherd thought that a mortall dart pierced his chill hart, and therefore ſaide. Vnhappie me moſt wretched Louer, what greater reaſon haue not theſe harts (not made of ſtonie flint) to be ſorrowfull for me, when thorow out the worlde I ſeeke the moſt cruell and pitileſſe Damſell that liues on earth? Ah faire Shepherdeſſe, thou haſt good cauſe to be ſorrie for thy huſband, for if ſhe whom he followes, be ſo cruelly conditioned as this, then muſt his life be in great danger.

By theſe words *Diana* cleerely perceiued, what his greefe was, and that the Shepherdeſſe that ranne away at his comming, was the very ſame, whom in ſo many parts of the worlde he had ſought. And ſo ſhe was indeede; for when ſhe began to flie from him, ſhe tooke the habite of a Shepherdeſſe, by that meanes not to be knowne nor diſcouered. But for that preſent time *Diana* diſſembled with the Shepherd, and woulde tell him nothing of the matter, to keepe her worde and promiſe which ſhe had giuen *Alcida* at her departure: And alſo bicauſe it was now a good while ſince ſhe was gone, and ranne with ſuch haſte thorow the thicke wood, that it was impoſſible for him to ouertake her. All which if ſhe ſhould tell the Shepherd, ſhe thought would ſerue for nothing elſe but to adde a freſh wounde to an old ſore, and to trouble his minde more, by giuing him ſome little hope to attaine to his purpoſe, when by no meanes he was able to obtaine it. But bicauſe ſhe deſired to know what he was, the ſumme of his loue, and the cauſe of her hate, ſhe ſaid vnto him.

Comfort thy ſelfe (Shepherd) in theſe thy complaints, and of curteſie tell me their cauſe: for to lighten them, I would be glad to know who thou art, and to heare

the ſucceſſe of thy miſhap, the report whereof will be no doubt delightfull to thee, if thou beeſt ſo true a louer as I do take thee.

He then without much entreatie, both of them ſitting downe by the cleere fountaine began thus to ſay. My greiſe is not of ſuch quality, that it may be told to al kind of people, though the good opinion I haue of thy deſerts and wiſedome, and the confidence which thy vertues and peereleſſe beautie do ſuggeſt to mee, vrge me to lay open before thee the totall ſumme of my life (if ſo it may be called) which willingly long ſince I would haue changed for death.

Know therefore faire Shepherdeſſe, that my name is *Marcelius*, and my eſtate far different from that, which my habite doth teſtifie: for I was borne in *Soldina*, the chiefeſt citie in *Vandalia*, of parents for birth and bloud renowned, and in all wealth and power abounding. In my tender yeeres I was caried to the king of *Portugalles* court, and trained vp there, where, not onely of all the chiefeſt Lords and Knights I was beloued, but eſpecially of the king himſelfe; inſomuch that I had neuer his good will and leaue to depart from thence, vntill at the laſt he committed to my gouernment a charge of certaine men of warre, which he had in the coaſt of *Africa*. There was I a long time captaine of the townes, and fortreſſes that the king had on the ſea ſide, remaining with my chiefeſt garriſon in *Ceuta*, where the originall of all my hard haps was firſt commenced. For in that towne (to my great harme) dwelled a noble and renowned Knight called *Eugerius*, who had alſo a charge by the King, and gouernment of the ſame towne, whom God (beſides that he had adorned and inriched him with the gifts of nature, and Fortune) had bleſſed with a Sonne called *Polydorus*, valiant without compare, and with two daughters, called *Alcida* and *Clenarda*, women of moſt rare and excellent beautie. *Clenarda* was verie skilfull in drawing of her bow and in ſhooting; but *Alcida* which was the eldeſt, endowed with incomparable beautie: whoſe vertues ſo inflamed my hart with burning loue, that they haue cauſed me to leade this deſperate kinde of life, which I now paſſe away, wiſhing for death, which euerie day I call vpon and attend. Her father was ſo tender and charie ouer her, that few times he ſuffered her to be out of his ſight, which thing was no ſmall impediment to the opening of my griefe and great loue I bare her, except ſometimes when it was my fortune to ſee her by an appaſſionate eie, and many ſighes (maugre my will) came forciblie out of my breſt, I ſignified my paines vnto her. At one time among the reſt, I wanted not opportunitie to write a letter vnto her, which fit occaſion by fauourable fortune granted me, I omitted not but wrote to her this letter following.

Marcelius *his letter to* Alcida.

THat maieſtie ſo princely, graue, and ſweete,
That modeſt bluſh, that gentle ſeemely grace,
Thoſe lookes ſo chaſte, and hauiour ſo diſcreete,
Thoſe golden vertues, that thou doſt imbrace
(Beſides thy beautie, which the world reſoundes
With famous name) from heauen that brought their race,
In ſuch a narrow ſtreight, with bleeding woundes
*Haue ſet my hart (*Alcida *heauenly faire)*
That euery thing my woonted reſt confoundes;
For that which breedes my loue, is my deſpaire,

And

And so restraines my soule, that faine it would
Say nought, although it cost my vitall aire.
What man of flint, that euer did behold
The burning beames that thy faire eies doe cast,
But waxed dumbe, and died with mortall cold?
Who euer sawe those beauties rare and chaste,
More perfect then the starrie skie aboue,
Or any liuing now or gone or past,
That presently felt not a feruent loue?
The cause whereof his senses so would vse,
As not to let him speake for his behoue:
So much I passe by silence, that I muse
That sad complaintes my hart doe neuer kill,
Nor breake my brest with anguish so confuse:
My ioies are none, my woes continue still,
My paine is firme, and all my hope is vaine,
I liue alas, and die in greeuous ill:
And take reuenge vpon my selfe againe,
That which I most eschew, doth take me straight:
And what I most desire, I lest obtaine:
For that, that lest behoues me, I awaite,
Not comfort for my greefe, that neuer endes,
Ioying in paine, wherewith my soule I fraight:
Yet my delight and life so far extendes,
As thought of that great distance doth abide,
That twixt thy beautie, grace, and me dependes:
For in my soule I doe conceiue a pride,
That I haue put it in so high a place:
Where constancie and hope my hart doe guide.
But yet thy gentle, and sweete Angels face
Against my soule such mortall war doe threate,
That thousand liues dare not abide the chace.
To feare me yet the passage's not so great,
Nor way so steepe, nor craggie, that shall stay
My forward steps with aanger, or deceate:
I follow then my ruine and decay,
The path of paine, and seeke not to decline
From greeuous plaints, that force me euery day.
Yet endlesse ioy my heauie hart doth shrine,
And glads my life, by wished paine oppresst:
That glories strangely in these greefes of mine.
Paine's my delight, my plaints my sport and iest,
My sighes sweete soundes, my death my glory makes,
My woundes my health, my flames my happy rest,
Nothing I see, which stirs not, and awakes
My furious torment and her endlesse wheele;
But happy fortune by the same it takes:
These ils (sweete Mistresse) for thy sake I feele,

And in these passions liue, and die tormented
With equall paine, and suffrance, well contented.
Let then a man despairing of releese,
Who to thy loue his doubtfull life assignes,
Moone thee to some compassion of his greefe,
By reading of these hart-breake written lines,
Since that he craues no helpe for all his mone,
But onely that his torment may be knowne.

This was the letter I wrote vnto her; the penning whereof, had it beene as fine, as the purpose fortunate, I would not haue changed my skil in posie for famous *Homers*. It came to *Alcidas* hands, in whose hart (when finally she knew the summe of my griefe, though at the first the contents of my letter with my too great presumption did somewhat offend her) it made deeper impressions then I imagined, or hoped for. Then I began to manifest my selfe for her open Louer, by making manie braue Iustes, and encounters at Tilt and Tourney, running of wilde Buls, and *juego de Cannas*, by celebrating for her sweete sake and seruice Moresco sportes on horsebacke in the day time, and maskes and stately dances in the night, causing consorts of sundrie musicke to delight her, and making verses, impresas, and Anagrammes of her loue and name, and many other gallant shewes and inuentions more for the space of two whole yeeres togither. At the ende whereof, *Eugerius* thought me woorthie to be his sonne in law, and by the request of some great Lords in those parts, offered me his faire daughter *Alcida* for wife. We concluded that the espousall rites should bee solemnized in the citie of *Lysbone*, bicause the king of *Portugall* might with his presence honour them: and therefore dispatching a Poste with all haste, by him we certified the king of this marriage, and requested his maiestie to giue vs leaue (hauing commended our charges and affaires to persons of trust) to celebrate it there. Whereupon the report of this solemne day was published thorow all the citie, and places farre and neere, which caused so generall a ioy, as was due to so faire a dame as *Alcida*, and to so faithfull a louer as my selfe. Vnto this passage my good fortune conducted me, thus high she reared me vp to throw me downe afterwardes headlong into the depth of miseries, wherein (wretched man) I still remaine. O transitorie good, mutable content, vading delight, and inconstant firmenes of mundaine things! What greater ioy could I haue wished for, then that I had alreadie receiued, and what greater crosse am I able to suffer then this, which I now carie about me? Oh faire Shepherdesse, entreat me no more to molest thy eares with so large and lamentable a historie, nor to pierce thy compassionate hart with recitall of my ensuing calamities. Let it content thee, that thou hast knowen my passed felicities, and desire not to search out farther my present greeses, bicause I assuredly know, that as my long and pitifull historie will be tedious to thy eares, so will my continued disgraces alter thy reposed minde.

To which *Diana* answering said. Leaue off (*Marcelius*) these excuses, for I would not desire to know the succesle of thy life, onely thereby to reioice my minde with thy contents, without sorrowing for thy calamities, but woulde rather heare euerie part of them, to bewaile them also in my pitifull hart.

How greatly woulde it please me, faire Shepherdesse (saide *Marcelius*) if the good will I beare thee did not force me to content thee in a matter of so great grief. And that which greeues me most, is that my disgraces are such, that they must needs

needs fill thy hart full of sorrow, when thou knoweſt them; for the paine that I muſt paſſe by telling them, I reckon not ſo great, but that I would willingly ſuffer it in lieu of thy contentment. But bicauſe I ſee thee ſo deſirous to heare them out, although they ſhall force me to make thee ſorrowfull; yet I will not ſeeme to leaue thy will herein vnſatisfied.

THen Shepherdeſſe, thou muſt knowe, that after my vnfortunate marriage was agreed vpon, the Kings licence being now come, her old father *Eugerius*, who was a widower, his ſonne *Polydorus*, and his two daughters *Alcida* and *Clenarda*, and the hapleſſe *Marcelius*, who is telling thee his greeuous accidents, hauing committed the charges left vs by the King to ſufficient and truſtie Gentlemen, embarked our ſelues in the port of *Ceuta* to goe by ſea to the noble citie of *Lisbone*, there to celebrate (as I ſaide) the marriage rites in preſence of the King. The great content, ioy, and pleaſure which we all had, made vs ſo blinde, that in the moſt dangerous time of the yeere, we feared not the tempeſtuous waues which did then naturally ſwel & rage, nor the furious & boyſterous winds, which in thoſe moneths with greater force & violence are commonly woont to blow: but committing our fraile barke to fickle Fortune, we launched into the deepe and dangerous ſeas, heedleſſe of their continuall chaunges, and of innumerable misfortunes incident vnto them. For we had not failed far, when angrie Fortune chaſtiſed vs for our bold attempt, bicauſe before night came on, the warie Pilot diſcouered apparant ſignes of an imminent and ſudden tempeſt. For the thicke and darke cloudes began to couer the heauens all ouer, the waues to roare and murmur, and contrarie windes to blow on euerie ſide. O what ſorrowfull and menacing ſignes, ſaid the troubled and timorous Pilot? O luckleſſe ſhip, what perils aſſaile thee, if God of his great goodnes and pitie do not ſuccour thee? He had no ſooner ſpoken theſe words, when there came a furious and violent blaſt of winde, that puffed and ſhooke the whole bodie of the ſhip, and put it in ſo great danger, that the routher was not able to gouerne it, but that toſſed vp and down by this mightie furie, it went where the force of the angrie waues and windes did driue it. The tempeſt by little and little with greater noiſe began to increaſe, and the raiſing billowes couered ouer with a ſomy froth mightily to ſwell: The skies powred downe abundance of raine with throwing out of euerie part of it fearful lightnings, & threatned the world with horrible thunders. Then might there be heard a hideous noiſe of Sea monſters, lamentable outcries of paſſengers, and flapping of the ſailes with great terrour. The winds on euerie ſide did beat againſt the ſhip, and the ſurges with terrible blowes ſhaking her vnſteadie ſides, riued and burſt aſunder the ſtrong and ſoundeſt plaunchers: Sometimes the proud billowe lifted vp vs to the skies, and by and by threw vs downe againe into deepe gulphes, the which alſo with great horrour opening themſelues, diſcouered to our fearfull eies the deepe and naked ſandes. The men and women ran on euerie ſide to prolong their enſuing and haples death; and did caſt out, ſome of them dolefull ſighs; other ſome pitifull vowes; and others plentie of ſorrowfull teares. The Pilot being appalled with ſo cruell Fortune, and his skill confounded by the countenance and terrour of the tempeſt, could now no more gouerne the tottered routher. He was alſo ignorant of the nature and beginning of the windes, and in a moment deuiſed a thouſand different things. The marriners likewiſe agaſt with the agonie of approching death, were not able to execute the Maſters commaund, nor (for ſuch lamentations, noiſe and outcries) could heare the charge & direction of their hoarſe

and

ind painfull Pilot. Some ſtrike ſaile, others turne the maine yarde; ſome make faſt againe the broken ſhrouds; others mende and calke the riuen planks; ſome ply the pompe apace, and ſome the routher; and in the end, all put their helping hands to preſerue the miſerable ſhip from ineuitable loſſe. But their painfull diligence did not helpe them, nor their vowes and teares profit them to pacifie proud *Aeolus* and *Neptunes* wrath: but rather, the more the night came on, the more the winds blew, and the ſtorme waxed greater and more violent. And now darke night being fully come, and angrie Fortune continuing ſtill her ſeuere puniſhment, the olde Father *Eugerius* being paſt all hope of helpe and remedie, looking on his children and ſon in lawe, with an appalled and altered countenance, felt ſuch great ſorrowe for the death that we had to paſſe, that his greefe and compaſſion for vs, was more bitter to our ſoules, then the thought of our proper and preſent misfortunes. For the lamenting olde man, enuironed on euery ſide with care and ſorrowe, with a pitifull voice and ſorrowfull teares, ſaid thus. Ah mutable fortune, common enimie to humane content, howe haſt thou reſerued ſo great miſhap and miſerie for my ſorrowfull olde age? O thriſe bleſſed are they, who fighting in the middes of bloudie battails, with honour die in their yoong and luſtie yeeres, bicauſe not drawing foorth their line to wearied old age, haue neuer cauſe with greefe to bewaile the vntimely death of their beloued children. O extreme ſorrow! O balefull ſucceſſe! who euer ended his daies in ſo heauie a plight as I poore diſtreſſed man, that hoping to haue comforted my naturall death, by leauing them to the worlde, that might haue ſuruiued, not onely to performe the due of my laſt obſequies, but to continue my line and memorie, muſt now (miſerable man) periſh in their deereſt companie. O my deere children, who would haue thought that my life and yours ſhould ende at one time and by one misfortune! Faine woulde I (poore ſoules) comfort you; but what can a ſorrowfull father tell you, in whoſe hart there is ſuch aboundance of greefe and want of conſolation? But comfort your ſelues my children, by arming your inuincible ſouſes with patience, and lay all the burden of your ſorrow vpon my backe, for beſides that I ſhall once die for my ſelfe, I muſt ſuffer ſo manie deaths more, as you haue liues to leeſe.

This did the olde and ſorrowfull man abruptly deliuer with ſo many teares and ſobbes, that he could ſcarce ſpeake, embracing firſt one and another, and then altogither for his laſt farewell, before the very point of danger and death was fullie come. But now to tell thee of *Alcidas* teares, and to recount the greefe that I endured for her ſake, were too difficult and long a narration. Onely one thing I will not omit to tell thee, that that which did moſt torment me, was to thinke, that the ſame life which I had offered vp for her ſeruice, ſhould now be iointly loſt with hers.

In the meane while, the forlorne and toſſed ſhip, by the force and violence of the fierce weſterne windes, which by the ſtreights of *Gibraltar*, came blowing as they were madde, ſailed with greater ſpeede then was expedient for our ſafetie, and being battered on euery ſide with the cruell blowes of enuious fortune by the ſpace of a daie and a night (vnable alſo to be guided by the skill and ceaſeleſſe labour of the marriners) ran many leagues in the long *Mediterranean* ſea, whereſoeuer the force of the waues & windes did carrie her. The next day following Fortune ſeemed a little while to waxe more calme & gentle, but on a ſudden turning againe to her acccuſtomed crueltie, ſhe droue vs into ſuch danger, that nowe we looked not for one halfe hower of life. For in the ende a fierce and mightie tempeſt came ſo ſuddenly vpon vs, that the ſhip driuen on by the force of a boiſterous blaſt, that

ſmit

ſmit her on the ſtarboord, was in ſo great danger of turning bottome vp, that ſhe had now her forepart hidden vnder the water: whereupon I vndid my Rapier from my ſide (eſpying the manifeſt and imminent danger) bicauſe it might not hinder me, and imbracing my *Alcida*, leaped with her into the Sciffe that was faſtened to the ſhip. *Clenarda*, that was a light and nimble damſell, followed vs, not forgetting to leaue her bowe and quiuer in the ſhip, which ſhe eſteemed more then any treaſure. *Polydorus* imbracing his old father *Eugerius*, had alſo leapt in with him amongſt vs, if the Pilot of the ſhip with another mariner had not beene before him: But at that very inſtant when *Polydorus* with olde *Eugerius* were next to them, preparing themſelues to leape out of the ſhip, a mighty great blaſt of winde ſmiting on the larboord, brake the cockboate from the ſhip, and droue them ſo far aſunder, that thoſe miſerable men that were in her, were conſtrained to tarrie there ſtill, from which time (vnleſſe a little while after) we loſt ſight of them, and knew not what became of the ſhip, but doe verily thinke, that it was either ſwallowed vp by thoſe cruell waues, or elſe ſmiting vpon ſome rocke or ſandes neere to the coaſt of Spaine, is miſerably caſt away. But *Alcida*, *Clenarda*, and I remaining in the little Sciffe that was guided by the induſtrie of the Pilot, and of the other mariner, went floting vp and downe a day and a night attending euery minute of an hower apparant death, without hope of remedie, and ignorant in what coaſt we were. But the next morning finding our ſelues neere to land, we made towardes it amaine. The two mariners that were very skilfull in ſwimming, went not alone to the wiſhed ſhore, but taking vs out of the boate caried vs ſafely thither. After that we were deliuered from the perils of the ſea, the mariners drew their Sciffe to lande, and viewing that coaſt where we arriued, knew that it was the Iland *Formentera*, woondering not a little that in ſo ſmall time we had run ſo many miles. But they that had ſo long and certaine experience of the caſuall effects, which outragious tempeſts are woont to cauſe, marueled in the end not much at the prepoſterous courſe of our nauigation. Now were we ſafely com to land, ſecure from the dangers of paſſed fortune, but yet ſurcharged with ſuch ſorrow for the loſſe of *Eugerius* & *Polydorus*, ſo ill intreated by greef & care, & ſo weakened by hunger & cold, that we had no leſſe ſure hope of our ſafety, nor recouery of our liues, then ioy of our paſſed perils. I paſſe ouer with ſilẽce, faire Shepherdeſſe, the great complaintes that *Alcida* & *Clenarda* made for the loſſe of their father & brother, bicauſe I wold quickly com to the period of this lacrymable hiſtorie, & to the haples ſucceſſe that befell to me ſince I came to that ſolitary Iland: For after that in the ſame I was deliuered from Fortũes crueltie, Loue enuying that poore content of mine, became my mortall foe ſo extremely, that ſorrowing to ſee me eſcaped from the tempeſt, with a new and greater greefe (when I thought my ſelfe moſt ſafe) he tormented my ſcarce reuiued ſoule. For alas, wicked loue wounded the Pilots hart (whoſe name was *Sartofano*) and ſo enamoured him on *Clenardas* beautie, that (to come to the end of his deſire, by imagining and hatching in his wicked hart a ſtrange and inopinate treaſon) he forgat the lawe of faith and friendſhip. And thus it was: That after that the two ſiſters had with bitter teares and lamentations offered vp the ſorrowfull effectes of their louing harts as obſequies to the ghoſtes of their deceaſed parents, it fell out that *Alcida*, wearied with the long greefe and troubles that ſhe had paſſed, laide her ſelfe downe vpon the ſand, and being ouercome with deepe melancholie, fell faſt aſleepe. The which when I perceiued, I ſaid to the Pilot.

My friend *Sartofano*, vnleſſe we ſeeke out ſomthing to eat, or if in ſeeking, our hard

fortune

fortune will not conduct vs where we may finde some foode, wee may make full account that we haue not saued our liues, but rather changed the manner of our death. Wherefore I pray thee, my good friend, to goe with thy fellow marriner to the first village thou canst finde in this Iland to seeke out some victuals for the sustenance of our hungrie bodies.

Whereunto *Sartofano* answered. Though Fortune hath sufficiently fauoured vs by bringing vs safe to lande, yet thinke not (*Marcelius*) to finde any thing heere to eate; this being an Iland, of townes desert, and of people inhabited: But to comfort you againe, I will tell you a remedie, how to saue our selues from dying for hunger. For, see you yonder little Iland right ouer against vs, and so neere to this? There is so great store of venison, conies, and hares, and many other wilde beasts, that in great heardes they go together without feare or danger at all. There also dwelleth a certaine Hermite, whose celle is neuer without, bread, oyle and meale. I therfore thinke it best that *Clenarda* (who is cunning in shooting, and hauing her bowe and arrowes heere so fit for the purpose) passe ouer in the boate to the Ilande to kill some of those wilde beasts, whom my fellowe and I will transport whilest you staie heere to beare *Alcida* companie: for it may fall out that we will returne before she awake, and come hither againe with good store of fresh and sauorie prouision.

Although *Clenarda* and I liked *Sartofanos* counsell well, least of all suspecting his suttle & secret treacherie, yet she would neuer consent to go into the Iland without my company, for feare of committing herselfe alone to the rude marriners; whereupon she requesting my companie, I made many excuses to staie behinde, telling her that it was not meete to leaue *Alcida* alone and sleeping in so solitarie a place: Who answered me againe, that since the distance of the place was but small, the game much, & the sea somwhat calme (for by that time that we were a litle while on lande, the tempest began to cease) we might go hunt and come againe before *Alcida* (who had not slept so long before) awaked. In the end she shewed me so many perswasions, that forgetting what I had to do in such a case, without more adoo I agreed to go with her; which thing greeued *Sartofano* to the hart, who had rather had *Clenardas* company alone for the better effecting of his wicked purpose. But yet the Traytour for all this wanted not suttletie to prosecute his diuelish pretence. For *Alcida* being left asleepe, and both of vs got into the Sciffe, and lanched into the deepe, before we came to the Iland all vnawares and vnprouided of weapons (for I had left mine in the ship, when I skipt out of it to saue my life) I was assayled by both the marriners, and vnable to helpe my selfe, bound both hand foote. *Clenarda* seeing their treason, for sudden griefe would haue lept into the sea; but she being staied by the Pilot, and carried from the place where I was to the other ende of the boate, he said thus in secret to her. Trouble not thy selfe (faire gentlewoman) to see vs so rudely entreate this Traitour, but quiet thy minde, for what is done, is all for thy seruice. For know (faire Mistresse) that this *Marcelius*, when we arriued at the desert Iland, had some priuate talke with me, and prayed me to perswade thee to goe a hunting into this Iland; and when we should be at sea, to steere the boate directly from that place, telling me, that he was greatly in loue with thee, and that he would leaue thy sister in the Ilande, onely and without impediment to enioy his pleasure of thee: And the deniall of his companie with thee to this place, which faintly he vsed, was but dissembled to colour his wicked intent the more. But I considering with my selfe what a vile and barbarous a part it was to offer violence to so singular beautie, and to so good a Ladie, to preuent this inhumanitie from thy great goodnes,

nes,euen at the verie point when he would haue committed his treaſon, reſolued to be loyall vnto thee, and ſo haue bound *Marcelius* as thou ſeeſt, with determination to leaue him in this caſe at the ſhoare of a little Iland which is neere at hand, and afterwards to returne with thee to the place where we left *Alcida*: This is the reaſon that makes me do thus, and therefore conſider well what thou meaneſt to doe. When *Clenarda* heard this ſmooth tale, which the wicked Traitour ſo cunningly had told her, ſhe beleeued it ſo truely, that preſently ſhe bare me mortall hatred, and was well pleaſed, it ſeemed, that I was carried to the place, where *Sartofano* did meane to lande me. For with a frowning countenance ſhe beheld me, and for very anger could not ſpeake a word, vntill ſhe had a pretie while reioyced in her ſecret hart to thinke of the reuenge and puniſhment, that ſhould light vpon me, not telling me one word of that braue deceit, wherewith ſhe was ſo much abuſed. All which when by her ioyfull countenance I perceiued, & that my bonds did not grieue her, it made me ſay thus vnto her. What meanes this ſiſter, doeſt thou eſteeme ſo lightly of both our paines, that ſo ſoone thou haſt ended thy complaints? Perhaps thou art in good hope to ſee me by and by at libertie to be reuenged of theſe villanous Traitours? Then like a fierce Lyoneſſe ſhe told me, that my impriſonment and bonds where for no other cauſe, but for the cruell intent I had to leaue *Alcida*, and to carrie her away, and the reſt, whereof the falſe Pilot had wickedly informed her. When I heard theſe words, I neuer felt like griefe in my life, and inſtead of laying violent hands vpon theſe Traitours, with vile and outragious words I railed vpon them; and with good proofes ſo well perſwaded her of the truth, that ſhe perceiued by and by that it was a manifeſt peece of treaſon, ſprung vp of *Sartofanos* vile and filthie loue: Whereupon ſhe made ſo great lamentation, that ſhe fell foorthwith into the pitifull diſcourſe of their deceite, which was forcible enough to haue mollified the craggie rockes we paſſed by with ruthe and compaſſion, though it wrought nothing in the hard harts of thoſe two wicked monſters. Imagine then now how the little ſciffe that floted vp and downe the wide ſeas, was in a ſmall time carried a great way from the Ilande, when vnfortunate *Alcida* awaking, and ſeeing her ſelfe all alone, and forſaken, turned her ſorrowfull eies to the maine ſea, and not finding the ſciffe, how in euerie part of the ſhoare thereabout, ſhe went ſeeking vp and downe and found no creature at all. Ah thou maiſt conceiue (faire Shepherdeſſe) what anguiſh of minde ſhe felt in theſe croſſes of vniuſt Fortune! Imagine beſides, what plenty of teares ſhe powred forth, in what extremities and wants ſhe was, how ſometimes (perhaps) ſhe would haue caſt her ſelfe into the ſea, and how often in vaine ſhe called vpon my name. But alas we were gone ſo far, that we could not heare her pitifull outcries, and might onely perceiue (how by ſhaking a white ſcarffe vp and downe in the Aire) ſhe incited vs to turne backe againe, which the wicked Traitour *Sartofano* would neuer agree to. But making the greateſt haſte away that he could, he brought vs to the Iland of *Ruiça*, where diſimbarking vs, they left me faſt bound to an anchor that was pitched in the ground. That way by chance came certaine Marriners of *Sartofanos* acquaintance, companions like him ſelfe, whom though *Clenarda* neuer ſo much informed of her eſtate, innocencie, and misfortune, yet it auailed her nothing to make them take pitie on her, but they rather gaue to the Traitour ſufficient prouiſion, who went to imbarke himſelfe againe with *Clenarda*, whom poore ſoule (at her perill) ſhe muſt needes follow; from which time hitherto I neuer ſaw nor heard any newes of them. There was I left all alone bound hand and foote, and pinched with intolerable hunger. But that which moſt of all greeued me, was *Alcidas* want and

sorrow, who was likewise left alone in the Iland *Formentera*, and in lieu thereof regarded not mine owne, which was presently remedied. For at the noise of my loude and lamentable outcries, certaine Marriners came to me, who being more pitifull then those before, gaue me some meate to stanche my extreme hunger. And at my incessant request, they armed for my sake a Fregantine, and carrying with them some store of meate and wine, with weapons, and other necessaries embarked themselues in my companie, and within a short time, with swift and speedie oares it came to the Iland of *Formentera*, where *Alcida* was left a sleepe. But for all that I could doe by seeking vp and downe in it, and hallowing in euerie place, and calling aloud on *Alcidas* name, I could neither finde her, nor by any signe perceiue that she was there. I then thought that she had desperately throwen her self into the sea, or else that she had beene deuoured of wilde beasts. But yet seeking vp and downe the plaines and shoares, and all those rockes and caues, and most secret corners of the Ilande, in a peece of a rocke, made in forme of a quarrie, I found these verses with a sharpe point of steeled knife, engrauen, which said thus.

O Sandie desart, and drie barren meade,
Thou that hast heard the sound of my lament,
O swelling seas fierce winde to changing bent,
Chang'd with my sighes, that are in sorrow bread
Hard rocke, wherein for euer may be read
My torment heerein grauen, and permanent:
Truly report my paines which you present.
For that Marcelius *heere hath left me dead,*
My sister stolne, he hath forgotten mee
His faith, his sailes, and then my hope forlorne
Commend I to the windes, and witnes yee
That loue I will not any man that's borne,
To scape those seas where calmes are neuer any,
Nor combat foes, that are so fierce and many.

I cannot tell thee (faire Shepherdesse) how deepe a wound my soule felt, when I read these letters, knowing that for anothers fault and vile deceit, and by the hard euent of cruell fortune I was so suddenly abhorred of *Aleida*: wherefore resoluing with my selfe not to leade a life repleniſhed with such woes and miseries, I woulde forthwith with one of their swordes haue pierced my heauie hart, had not one of those marriners who suspected such a thing, by maine force hindred mee from it. With comfortable words therefore they brought me backe againe halfe dead into their Fregatte, and being mooued at my importunate and pitifull praiers, for a peece of money caried me towards the coast of *Italy*, and landed me in *Gayeta* in the kingdome of Naples. Where enquiring of euery one that I knew and met, after *Alcida*, and publishing certaine tokens of her, at the last by certaine Shepherds which came thither in a ship of *Spaine*, I heard some newes of her, which ship passing by *Formentera*, found hir there al alone, & tooke her in; and that she had taken vpon her the habite of a Shepherdesse; with as strong a resolution to hide her-selfe from me, as strange to liue vnknowne in those disguised weedes. Which when I vnderstood, I also apparelled my selfe like a Shepherd, the better to finde her out, and wandring vp and downe, and seeking her thoroughout all that kingdome, coulde neuer finde her,

her, nor heare which way she was gone, vntill a long time after I vnderstoode that she knew how I had notice of her, which made her flie the farther from me, and to passe into *Spayne* in a shippe of *Genua*. Then I embarqued my selfe presently to follow her, and hither I am come into *Spayne*, where hauing troden the greatest part of it in seeking her vp and downe, haue not yet found any one, that coulde tell mee any newes of this cruell one, whom with so great greefe and trouble of minde and bodie I am continually seeking, and can neuer finde.

This is (faire Shepherdesse) the tragedie of my life, this is the cause of my death, and this the processe of al mine ils: In which so sad discourse if I haue been too tedious, the fault is thine, since my vnwilling toong, by thy importunate requestes was constrained to tell it. And that which now I craue of thee (gentle Shepherdesse) is, that thou wouldest not trouble thy selfe to applie any remedies to my sorrowe, nor comfort my cares, nor to stop the teares, which with so iust cause are due to my cordiall greefe. *Marcelius* hauing ended his sorrowfull historie, began to make a most dolefull complaint, and to sigh so forciblie, that it was great pittie to beholde him. Faine would *Diana* haue told him tidings of his *Alcida*, which was not long since in her companie; but to performe her worde, which she had promised not to discouer her vnto him, and also for that she sawe it would but haue tormented him more, by giuing him notice of her, who extremely hated him, helde her peace: And rather wished him, to comfort himselfe by entertaining an assured hope and confidence of his future gladnes, since she herselfe doubted not before it was long to see him very ioyfull in the presence of his beloued Mistresse. For if it was true (as he beleeued) that *Alcida* went wandring vp and downe in the companie of Shepherdesses and Nymphes of *Spaine*, she could not then (saide *Diana*) bee long vnhidden from him, and so she promised him to cause an enquirie and search to bee made in the strangest, remote, and solitarie places, and in the fieldes most frequented by them, but especially charging him to haue a regarde to his owne life, and promising him to performe that which she had offered. For which vnexpected curtesies, *Marcelius* yeelding her infinite thankes, would haue taken his leaue, saying, that after a fewe daies he thought to returne thither againe, and to giue her a full account of al those accidents that in seeking out *Alcida* might happen vnto him. But *Diana* staying him, saide. I will not be so great an enimie to mine owne content, to let thee goe out of my companie, but would rather (bicause I see my selfe forsaken of my husband *Delius*, as thou art of thy *Alcida*) haue thee staie and eate (if it please thee) a little of my simple cheere to refresh thy selfe, who hast (it seemes) no small need thereof. And after when the shadowes of the trees and hils waxe greater, we will both go home to our village, wherewith that rest (which continuall greefe will suffer vs to take) we will passe the night away, and in the morning betimes hasten vs towardes the Temple of chaste *Diana*, where the sage Lady *Felicia* makes her abode, whose secret wisedome will minister remedies to our painfull passions. And bicause thou maiest the better enioy the rurall conuersation and countrey plaines of the Shepherds and Shepherdesses of our fieldes, it shall be best for thee, not to change thy pastorall habite, nor to discouer thy selfe, but to name thy selfe, and in apparell and fashions liue wholly like a Shepherd. *Marcelius* being willing to do that, which *Diana* told him, did eate a little of that which she had taken out of her neat scrip, and quenched his thirst with the sauorie water of the cleere fountaine, both which were so needfull for him, as for one that trauelling all the day before, had neither eaten nor drunke: and then they went on their waies towards the village. But they had not gone foorth

many paces, when in a little thicket not farre from the path way, they heard the resounding voices of certaine Shepherds, who sweetely sung to the tune of their mery Bagpipes, and bicause *Diana* was delighted much in musick, she praied *Marcelius* to go to the place where they were, who being come neere vnto the wood, *Diana* knew the Shepherds *Taurisus* and *Berardus*, two great corriuals in her loue, and commonly wont to go togither in company, and sing in emulation the one against the other. Whereupon *Diana* and *Marcelius* not entring into the place where the Shepherds were, but yet hiding themselues behinde certaine Okes so nigh, that they might heare the sweetenes of the musicke, listened to the Shepherds songs, being not perceiued of them at all, who though they knew not the cause and effect of their songs, was so neere at hand, yet diuining (as it were) that their enimie was harkening vnto them, by cleering vp their pastorall voices, and making most delicate and different stops with them, they began to sing this Eglogue following.

Taurisus.

NOw that the sunne doth hide his golden beames
Behinde the hils, whose shadowes doe increase:
And labouring men vnyoke their wearie teames
And leaue of worke, their wearied limbs to ease:
My sheepe forsake your pastures, and attend
Vnto my fainting voice and hollow cries,
Which without stint or pause of time, I send
Disorderly vnto the careless skies:
Harke how my poore and miserable hart
Is in the deepest of a burning flame,
And how my bowels and euery inward part
Are melted with the scorching of the same:
That flame I meane and heate, wherewith my senceless soule doth trace
Th' Angelicall and peereless beautie of Dianas *face.*

Berardus.

Before the sunne in radiant Coche doth glide
Downe to the West, to leaue our Hemisphere,
And suffers not the deaw of euening tide
To fall vpon the meadowes any where,
Thou simple Sheepe that oft hast heard my voice,
And gentle lambes which all the sommer long
With merrie glee doe in these meades reioice,
Now lend a gentle eare vnto my song:
My ruthfull song and verse shall not intreate
(Though all the same within my brest I beare)
Of any flames, or coles, or burning heate:
But of that mortall cold and frozen feare,
Wherewith doth bridle and correct the senceless soule apace
Th' Angelicall and peereless beautie of Dianas *face.*

Taurisus.

When that my painefull thoughts and pensiue minde
Doe but imagine of her comely graces,

Then

Then burnes my ſoule ſo ſtrangely, that I finde
My vitall ſpirits to leaue their proper places:
Loue doth inforce this ſuffrance weake by kinde,
And hope, that's flowne away with feathered paces,
To make my flames ſtill burning in my breſt,
Which giues me not one houer of wiſhed reſt.

Berardus.

When I conſider of my baſe eſtate,
And high perfections of my Shepherdeſſe,
Then doth my hart retire with feare full gate,
And pinching froſt my timorous ſoule poſſeſſe:
Loue will I liue in hope of happineſſe,
And ſo I doe ſometimes, but fortunes hate
To quaking feare ſubiecteth euery power,
Which makes me not enioy one happy houer.

Taurisus.

In ſuch ill time, I ſawe the burning light
Of thoſe cleere ſtars, whoſe like was neuer ſeene,
That face, that grace, thoſe vertues infinite,
With which Diana *raignes as faireſt Queene:*
That my deſires are kindled by thoſe bright
And ſhining beames, that I doe neuer weene
To hope for eaſe of theſe exceſſiue flames
That burnes my ſoule, and breedes a thouſand blames.

Berardus.

In ſuch ill time I ſawe thoſe daintie handes
Of whiteſt Iuorie, fram'd for thouſand ſmartes,
And thoſe two eies, where little Cupid *ſtandes*
Wounding the freeſt mindes with mortall dartes:
That my ſmall forces with his mighty bandes
Confounded, foiled, and fearfully departes,
And then remaines ſo weakned with his ire,
That ſhiuering feare doth conquer my deſire.

Taurisus.

Didſt euer ſee a lightning from the skies
With mightie force to rend an aged Oke?
So ſtrong is that and terrible, which lies
Within my breſt, all ſmoothered in the ſmoke:
Didſt euer ſee the violent force of brookes,
That from the higheſt rocks fall headlong downe?
So proud, ſo fierce, and angrie in her lookes
Diana ſeemes, when ſhe begins to frowne:
But her pretences are too far
To make me ſad by baſe and ſeruile feare,

For greater that the dangers are,
The greater is the firmenes which I beare.

Berardus.

Didſt euer ſee the ſnowe in any hill
To lie, and melt before the ſunnie beames?
So doe I waſte with ſighes and teares diſtill
Before thoſe lights that from her beautie ſtreames:
Didſt euer ſee in any bloodie broile
Some ſimple Shepherd put to fearefull flight?
With no leſſe feare (poore man) I doe recoile,
Leauing my ſheepe (whilome my beſt delight)
And in this cold and frozen feare
I merit more, and in my trembling breſt
More comfort and content doe beare,
Then in that heate ſo bold and manifeſt.

Tauriſus.

My greefe (Berardus) which I feele, is of ſuch ſutteli Art,
That it doth trouble ſtill my ſoule and euery part conſume
Thereof, which neuer to reſiſt, durſt once preſume for feare,
But euen as gently as it may, and muſt with meare conſent
Yeeld vp her life into the hands of him that's bent to tame
The proudeſt harts: And ioyfull in his burning flame I liue:
And as they doe of comfort giue me ſtore
For more content, ſo would I wiſh for more.

Berardus.

The Gods (Tauriſus) and the heauens haue made ſo paſſing faire
This ſtar Diana, whoſe golden gleames of glittring haire and face
Doe with their lights illuminate my life, and chace away
The darkeſt cloudes, reſtoring to mine eies a day ſo bright,
That if I am beholding her the ſhining light and blaze
Of thoſe two ſtars, mine eies and ſenſes doe amaze and blinde,
That caſting them vnto the ground, my hopes I finde ſo bare,
That, though I would, not once I dare complaine
Or ſee, or ſue, or tell her of my paine.

Tauriſus.

This louely Nymph would neuer liſt
Vnto my wofull cries,
But in her rigour doth perſiſt
And from my ſuccour flies:
And pitileſſe to ſee my death would neuer turne her eies.
O cruell eies, O cruell paine,
O beautie, cruell foe:
Yet doth my faith ſo firme remaine,
That all my cares and woe

It doth encourage in such sort, and feares doth ouerthrowe,
That like a sturdie rocke it standes
Against the cruell raues
(Though fenceleſſe in the naked sandes)
Of beating windes and waues.
And how much more with conquering hand my hart she doth controule,
By so much doe I adde more heate vnto my burning soule.

Berardus.

The woods and mountaines doe not beare
Woolues of such crueltie,
Whose howling threats I feare not theare,
And yet a iealousie
Doth make my hart to quake for feare,
And yeeld most cowardly.
I am not able to defend
My weake and feeble breſt
From thousand feares, where they pretend
To build their strongeſt neſt:
And with their entrance driue away my hopes, my ioy and reſt.
There they commaund and gouerne all,
And proudly tyrannize,
And there my soule to endleſſe thrall
And bodie sacrifice.
O cruell Loue, whom cruell death muſt needes at laſt succeede,
O why with such consuming tortures die I not in deede?

Taurisus.

Neere to this Chriſtall fountaine on a day
I sawe Diana *sitting with her spouse,*
And as by chaunce I croſt the woods that way,
Espied them behinde these hasell bowes:
Dying with greefe, impatience, and deſpite
To see (which I would not haue seene) that sight.
Nothing he spake, but with his clownish hand
Did rudely touch, and claspe her round about:
(Her tender corpes, the smalleſt in this land,
Too daintie and fine for such a homely lout.)
And so he sat, and did not stir
In this vnseemely sort with her.
But when my iealous eies so base a thing espied
With mortall rage I burn'd and cruell enuie died.

Berardus.

To walke the woods in sweeteſt moneth of May
When winter hides his hoarie head for shame,
Diana with her husband on a day
The glorie of the fareſt women came.

A vaile of Lawne vpon her golden haire
With ſiluer pins enfolded euery where,
A thouſand ſportes and paſtimes did I ſee
How ſhe found out, his minde to recreate:
And as I lurk'd behinde a Poplar tree,
How louingly ſhe dallied with her mate:
Whom I did ſee reach foorth his hand
Vnto her necke as white as ſwan,
Wherewith he did vndoe her vaile and looſe her ſhining haire,
Which ſight did kill my hart with feare enwrapped in deſpaire.

The Shepherds after they made an end of ſinging, began to gather their flockes togither, that went feeding vp and downe the woode. And comming towardes the place where *Marcelius* and *Diana* were, they could not otherwiſe chuſe but ſee them, for they had no handſome ſhift to hide themſelues, although they woulde faine haue ſtept aſide. At which ioyfull and vnexpected ſight, they receiued no meane content & gladnes. And though *Berardus* was ſomwhat altered and appalled thereat, yet inflamed *Tauriſus* to ſee the cauſe of his griefe before his eies, kindled more and more his hot deſire. They curteouſly ſaluted the Shepherds, and requeſted them not to denie them their companie to the village, ſince good fortune had made them all ſo happely meete togither. *Diana*, whoſe cuſtome was neuer to be coy nor diſcurteous, was well content to do it. So that *Tauriſus* and *Berardus* praied the other Shepherds that were with them, to come after by little and little with their flockes, that they had now gathered vp togither, towards the village, whileſt they in companie of *Diana* and the other Shepherds went on before; which they willingly performed. *Tauriſus* by the way as he went, praied *Diana* to anſwere verſe for verſe to the ſong that he would ſing, which ſhe denied him not to doe, and ſo they ſung as followeth.

Tauriſus. *THe cauſe why that thou doſt denie*
To looke on me, ſweete foe impart?
Diana. *Bicauſe that doth not pleaſe the eie,*
Which doth offend and greeue the hart.
Tauriſus. *What woman is, or euer was,*
That when ſhe looketh, could be mou'd?
Diana. *She that reſolues her life to paſſe,*
Neither to loue nor to be lou'd.
Tauriſus. *There is no hart ſo fierce nor hard,*
That can ſo much torment a ſoule.
Diana. *Nor Shepherd of ſo ſmall regard,*
That reaſon will ſo much controule.
Tauriſus. *How falls it out Loue doth not kill*
Thy crueltie with ſome remorce?
Diana. *Bicauſe that Loue is but a will,*
And free will doth admit no force.
Tauriſus. *Behold what reaſon now thou haſt,*
To remedie my louing ſmart?
Diana. *The very ſame bindes me as faſt,*
To keepe ſuch danger from my hart.

Tauriſus.

Taurisus. *Why dost thou thus torment my minde,*
And to what end thy beautie keepe?
Diana. *Because thou call'st me still vnkinde,*
And pitilesse when thou dost weepe.
Taurisus. *It is because thy cruelrie*
In killing me doth neuer end:
Diana. *Nay for because I meane thereby*
My hart from sorrowes to defend.
Taurisus. *Be bold so foule I am no way*
As thou dost thinke, faire Shepherdesse:
Diana. *With this content thee, that I say,*
That I beleeue the same no lesse.
Taurisus. *What after giuing me such store*
Of passions, dost thou mocke me too?
Diana. *If answers thou wilt any more*
Goe seeke them without more adoo.

It greatly contented *Taurisus* that *Diana* sung with him, whereby though hee heard the rigorous answers of his Shepherdesse, yet he was so glad in his minde, that she deigned to answer him, that it made him forget the greefe, which by the crueltie of her wordes he might haue otherwise conceiued. But nowe timorous *Berardus* forcing his heauie hart, and casting a pittifull eie on *Diana* (not vnlike the sorrowfull Swanne, that a little before her death singes sweetely in the cleere and christall brookes) lifted vp his faint and fearefull voice, which came foorth with great paine out of his panting brest, and to the sound of his Baggepipe sung these verses following.

END now my life, with daily paines affrighted,
Since that for all that I haue wept and greeued,
My teares are not requited,
And trustie faith not any whit beleeued.
I am in such a hapelesse state of sorrowe,
That I would be content (and so relieue me)
Vniust rewardes and scornes of her to borrow,
Onely that she would credit and beleeue me.
But though my life is thus with woes despired,
And though to be most constant, neuer greeued,
My paines are not requited,
And trustie faith not any whit beleeued.

After that *Berardus* had ended his song, both the Shepherds cast their eies vpon *Marcelius*, and bicause he was vnknowne to them, they durst not entreat him to sing. But in the end bold *Taurisus* praied him to tell them his name, (and if it pleased him) to sing them a song, wherein they would thinke themselues beholding to him for either curtesie. At which words *Marcelius* looking vpon *Diana*, and making her a signe to touch her instrument, without giuing them any other answere, with one song pleased them both, and satisfied their desire. Whereupon fetching out a great sigh, he began thus.

AH ſuch an one I euer was, ſince that
My Shepherdeſſe ſo cruell I did ſee,
That now I knowe not who I am, nor what
My hap ſhall be, or ſhall become of mee.

I knowe right well that if I were a man,
Greefe had my life conſumed long agoe:
And if a ſtone, I am moſt certaine then,
That dropping teares had melted me like ſnowe.

Marcelius *is my name, who knowes not that?*
And I am hers, ſince firſt I did her ſee,
That now I knowe not who I am, nor what
My hap ſhall be, or ſhall become of mee.

Now did the light begin to giue place to darknes, and the countrey villages with their domeſticall fires began to ſmoke apace, when the Shepherds being neere to their towne made an ende of their ſinging. Euerie one went to his owne houſe, as men not meanely glad for their paſſed conuerſation: but *Diana* founde no reſt at all, eſpecially when ſhe remembred that her beloued *Syrenus* was not in the towne. She lodged *Marcelius* well in *Melibeus* houſe, couſen to *Delius*, where with great kindnes, and their beſt countrey cheere he was welcommed: and after comming home to her owne houſe, ſhe called her husbands and her owne kindred togither, and tolde them how *Delius* had forſaken her at the fountaine of the Sicamours by following a ſtrange Shepherdeſſe, that by chance came thither. At which wordes ſhe ſeemed to make ſo greeuous complaints, and indeed to be ſo ſorrie, that in the end ſhe told them all, that earely in the morning ſhe was purpoſed to go to *Dianas* Temple, to enquire of ſage *Felicia* ſome newes of her husband *Delius*. They were all well content, that ſhe ſhould go, and offered her all the fauour and helpe they could in her iourney, but the intent therof was for no other end but to ſee *Syrenus*, whom ſhe knew aſſuredly to be there. Wherefore with many thankes ſhe remained verie glad, that her determination had ſo good ſucceſſe; and ſo with hope of her future ioy, ſhe gaue ſome reſt that night to her wearied bodie, and felt in her heauie hart a touch of vnwoonted pleaſure and content.

The end of the firſt booke.

The ſecond Booke of Enamoured DIANA.

VNiuſt and lawleſſe loue is of ſuch force, that, to augment his crueltie, it hath the helpe of all things in the world, his enterpriſes being fauoured and maintained by thoſe things, which are of moſt might and valour, but eſpecially aided ſo much by Fortune, and by her mutabilities, as for beſtowing his paines and torments abroad, he needs no better friend nor furtherer. All which is verified by *Marcelius* diſgraces, ſince Fortune wrought ſo hard a conceite in his betrothed *Alcidas* breſt, that ſhe

ſhe was forced to giue credite to ſuch a ſuſpicion, that (though moſt falſe) ſhe held for an aſſured, or at leaſt an apparant ground of his inconſtancie, whereof enſued the hating of her husband, who loued her deerer then his owne life, and who in any thing had neuer offended her. Heereupon it may be gathered, how ſtrong and certaine a preſumption ought to be, to make a wiſe and diſcreete perſon giue faith and credite to it, ſince this, that had but a colour of certaintie was ſo farre indeede from the truth of the matter. But now though Loue and Fortune ſo ill entreated *Marcelius*, yet in one thing they highly pleaſured him, which was, that Loue wounded *Dianas* hart, and Fortune conducted him to the fountaine, where he found her, whereby they might go both togither to ſage *Felicias* houſe, and paſſe away his ſorrowes with leſſe annoy in her comfortable and delighfull companie. But the time being come, when the redde morning with her golden habite did ouercome the ſtarres of the paſſed night, and the birdes with their chirping noiſe gaue warning that day was come, Enamoured *Diana*, wearied with the long and tedious night, roſe vp, to walke the path of her deſired iourney: and committing the charge of her flockes to the Shepherdeſſe *Polyntia* her friend, ſhe came out of her towne accompanied onely with her rurall Baggepipe, (the deceiuer of her ſorrowes) and with her ſcrippe ſtored with ſome fewe victuals. She came downe from the ſide of a hill, which ledde from the towne to a thicke woode, where in the bottome of it ſhe ſat her downe vnderneath a rowe of greene Sicamours, attending for *Marcelius* companie, as ſhe had promiſed the night before. But in the meane time, whileſt he came not, ſhe began to tune her Baggepipe and to ſing this ſong following.

AWake a little, light of cleereſt day,
With calme aſpect, with milde and gentle grace,
Apoore ſoule to beguile in ſorrowes plight:
Stretch out that light Apollo *from thy face,*
That ioies the deſert Champians in decay,
And drieſt plants with life and ſecret might:
In this moſt pleaſant wood, that doth inuite
To ſweeteſt reſt,
Tormented thou ſhalt ſee my breſt
With carefull greefe (my heauie lot)
To ſee it ſelfe by him forgot,
Who for my ſcorne a thouſand plaintes did waſte,
The fault is Cupids *taſte,*
Who giues and takes on purpoſe diſcontent,
Where he perceiues he may the more torment.

What beaſtes with mildneſſe doe not complaints acquaint,
What ſtone by ſighes is not to ſoftnes wrought,
The which a wearied breſt doth yeeld with paine?
What Tigres, or what lions are not brought
To ruth and pitie, hearing a complaint
Which hath almoſt vndone my ſoule in twaine.
But to Syrenus *I recount in vaine*
My ſorrowfull miſhap,
Who doth as little care for that,

As

As furious windes in raging ſeas
The teares, that all to little eaſe,
The mariners with carefull hart doe ſpill:
For more they crie, the more it rageth ſtill.

Thy loue Syrenus was not fine and good,
Which in theſe fieldes to me thou didſt once beare,
When as my errour might offend it ſo:
Remember (Traitour) what thou then didſt ſweare,
Neere to the riuer ſitting in this wood:
What then doth now thy hardnes ſeeme to ſlow?
Shall not a ſmall obliuion long agoe
Be helpt by extreme loue?
And ſuch, that ſhall be far aboue
My paſſed hate, and fault before?
Then ſince I cannot loue thee more
Nor ſatisfie the ſame with greater heate;
For remedie, my death I will intreate.

Liue yet in paine, the which I feele at laſt
For thee who mak'ſt my ſorrowes leſſe appeere,
Though more it hurtes my wretched ſoule, I ſee,
Bicauſe to haue thy preſent figure heere,
Giues to her thought a ſweete delight ſometaſt,
Who paining for thy ſake doth thinke on thee.
But bend thy hart a little vnto me,
Ardent in my requeſt.
Thou ſeeſt I liue in paine oppreſt,
Suſtain'd by this deſire alone,
In all my life to heare but one
(No) if thou wilt, in that I moſt doe loue:
But from a man ſo fierce what ſhall I proue?

Tell me, the fauours how canſt thou requite
In that time paſt, Syrenus, when thy hart
Thou hadſt more tender, now in hardnes dead:
When (Traitour) for my cauſe, with enuies ſmart
A thouſand Shepherdes thou didſt kill outright:
O ioyfull time, and life that I did leade:
The vale ſhall witnes, and the pleaſant meade,
Where I of Roſes white
And ſweeteſt flowers, with delight
Braue garlands for thy head I had
Compacted, and ſometimes did adde
(Only for thy content) ſome of my haire,
Which greeuous thought my life doth now impaire.

Now free, thou doſt abhorre me, in the end,
Who, for thy ſake her ſelfe in paine conſumes:

But yet take heede of Cupids *fine deceates:*
For that proud hart, that ouermuch presumes,
From cruell loue his senses to defend,
The more he yeeldes, the more to striue he sweates:
O that thou wert so wounded in his heates,
As now my selfe I see:
But euer it is vnto mee
The best aduise, no good to craue:
For what soeuer it would haue,
Though heauen, and earth the more it doth importune,
It euer was denied by Loue, and Fortune.

My song, in pine I will no wise ingraue thee,
Nor hardned Oke, but rather will commend thee
Vnto the windes, where they will tosse and waue thee,
And to the deafe and desart Champian send thee:
Bicause my torments, of their hope deprined,
And memorie of them, which makes me sorie,
May be forgot, and neuer be reuiued,
Now that my life is tost and chiefest glorie.

The delicate voice and excellent graces of *Diana*, surmounted farre the praises of the faireſt and moſt skilfull Shepherdesses of her time. And the quauers and fine conceits wherewith so sweetely she brake her voice, and adorned her songs, made her to be the more admired: For they were so rare and singular, that they rather seemed to be fetcht from some maiesticall court, then knowen in the homely countrey. The which ought not to be so much wondred at, nor thought so strange, since Loue is able to make the simpleſt Shepherds discourse of high and learned matters, especially if it finde a liuely wit and spirit, which in those pastorall cottages is seldome wanting. But as the enamoured Shepherdesse was now ending her song, about that time that the cleere Sunne began to lessen the shadowes of the high hils, despised *Marcelius* taking his leaue of his pastorall lodging, to come to the place where he had appointed to meete *Diana*, came downe from the hill aboue, at the foote whereof she was sitting to attende him: whom when she had espied a far off, she held her peace, bicause he might not vnderstand the cause of her griefe. When *Marcelius* was come to the place where *Diana* stayed for him, he saide vnto her. The cleere light of this day (faire Shepherdesse) which with the more resplendant beames of thy shining beautie did arise, be as ioyfull and happie to thee, as to me most sorrowfull, if in thy good company I passe it not away. Truely I am ashamed to see, that my slownes hath made thee stay heere all alone so carefull for my comming; but this is not the first fault that (faire *Diana*) thou must pardon me during the time that I shall conuerse with thee. As that pardon should be vaine (answered *Diana*) where there is no fault; so thou art not to be blamed for any such small care, but rather the earneſt desire that I had to rise so early, and to come hither, where I haue passed away the time in sundrie fancies, and in thinking of the effects which belong to a troubled minde. But here is no time nor place for vs to stay, since the desire I haue to be at *Dianas* Temple is great, though the way is very short: as also for that the morning being somewhat fresh, we may before the Sunne begins to powre downe his beames

with greater heat, begin to take our iourney, the better to refresh our selues, & in the heate of the day to rest our wearied bodies. When she had saide thus, they both went on their way, crossing ouer a thicke wood that was before them, and for lightning of their iourney, began to sing that which followeth.

Marcelius.

INconstant loue and cruell, which hast lately
Setled my happy thoughts, my loue and fire,
In such a place so famous, high and stately,
Where mortall mens desarts cannot aspire:
Well hast thou shew'd thy power
By quailing of my sorrow,
To double it each hower
And make my torments greater euen and morrow:
Thou might st haue left my hart in former sadnes,
Bicause lesser harme it were to die with anguish,
Then to receiue a gladnes
So full of paine: And so by fits to languish,

Diana.

Thou must not thinke it strange, and must not woonder
That thus the mighty Boy of paine and pleasure
After one small delight, doth send a hunder
Nay thousand paines and torments without measure:
For firme repose to any
He yet did promise neuer,
But cruell deathes, and many
Sobs, sighes, and teares, complaintes and chaines for euer:
The Lybian sandes, and Aprils fairest flowers
Passe not the greefes, with which fierce loue doth murder
Each harte, and into showers
Distraines the eies: And yet proceedeth furder.

Marcelius.

Before that euer Loue my soule inflamed,
His slightes, wherein he most of all abounded,
I knew right well, wherewith mens harts he tamed
And captiues made, and after deepely wounded:
Our liues with great offences
Not onely he annoieth,
But yet our wits and senses
And soundest iudgements wholy he destroieth.
And so torments a soule, and so encumbers,
That one poore ioy it hardly doth recouer:
So by ten thousand numbers
Most greeuous thoughts surcharge a wretched louer.

Diana.

If Lones deceites and his dissembling proffers,
Wherewith he takes vs, are so knowne and tried,

Why

Why then presents the soule it selfe and offers
So easily to be taken, and applied?
If that the hart so tender
The troubles intertaineth
That Cupid *doth engender,*
Why after then laments it, and complaineth?
Reason it were in loue he should be pained,
That to his dartes doth yeeld, and is consenting
With fetters to be chained:
For ill accords vs nought but paines tormenting.

They sung this song and many more, the which hauing ended, they were nowe out of the wood, and then they began to walke ouer a pleasant and flowrie meade, which caused *Diana* to vse these words. They are no doubt maruellous and strange things, which the industrie of man hath inuented in populous and great cities, but yet those, which nature hath produced in the wide and solitarie fieldes, are more to bee admired. For who woulde not woonder at the liuely greene of this wood? and not be amazed at the beautie of this goodly meadow? For, to beholde the diuersitie of coloured flowers, and the pleasant melodie of chirping birdes, is a thing so full of content and delight, that the glorious pompe and wealth of the braueste and most famous Court is not comparable to it. There is indeed (saide *Marcelius*) in this pleasant solitude great store of content and ioy, and namely for those that are free from passions of loue, since they may lawfully, and when they list, enioy such rare sweetenes, and abundant pleasures. And I am certaine, that if Loue, (which is now so much my mortal enimy, remaining in these sequestred places) had in the village where I was of late, giuen me halfe the grief, which now I feele, my life durst neuer abide it, since with such like delights I coulde not haue mitigated the crueltie of my torment. To this *Diana* answered not a word, but putting her snowe white hande before her eies, and therewith supporting her golden head, she staied a great while very sadde and pensiue: and after sending foorth now and then a sorrowfull and paitefull sigh, said thus. Then woe is me (vnfortunate Shepherdesse) that can finde no remedie sufficient to comfort my sorrowes, when those, which take away from others a great part of their paine, doe bring to me a continuall and burning greefe. I can now (*Marcelius*) no longer hide the paine which I suffer, the force whereof, though it compels me to publish it, yet for one thing I am bound to thanke it, that it constraines me to tell it in such a time & place, where thou art onely present, since thy noble minde and experience in like passions will not (I hope) condemne it for a meere & trifling follie, especially when thou knowest the cause thereof. I am (to be plaine with thee *Marcelius*) tormented with the like greefe that thou art, and am also forgotten (as thou art) of a Shepherd called *Syrenus*, of whom in times past I was greatly beloued. For cruell Fortune, which ouerturneth humane intents, married me to *Delius* (enforced more by the hard commandement of my parents, then by mine owne will) and to my great greefe, made me a bondslaue to such a husband, the intollerable thought of whose continuall iealousie (besides the sufferance of many other greefes more) is onely sufficient to kill this miserable soule. Whose iniurious suspects I could be content yet to suffer, if I might but enioy the presence of *Syrenus*; who, taking a iust occasion by my forced marriage to forget me, forsooke our towne, (because he would not see me) and (as I vnderstande) is in

the Temple of *Diana*, whither we are now going. Whereupon thou maieſt imagine what kinde of life I leade, being alwaies troubled with the iealouſie of my husband, and tormented with the abſence of my louer. Then *Marcelius* ſaid. I cannot chuſe but pittie thy greefe, nowe I know it (gracious Shepherdeſſe) and am ſorrie that I haue not heard it till now. God grant I may neuer enioy any happie content, if I wiſh it not as well to thy hart as to mine owne. But bicauſe thou knoweſt how generall Loues arrowes are, & with what ſmall partialitie they hurt the ſtouteſt harts, and moſt free and vertuous mindes, then bluſh not to manifeſt his wrongs, ſince it ſhall neuer the more be an empeachment to thy good name, but an occaſion to make me eſteeme the better of thee. And that which comforts me heerein is, that I knowe, that the torment of thy husbandes iealouſie (a greater corſiue to the hart then the abſence of the thing beloued) will ſuffer thee to take a little reſt, ſince *Delius*, who is following the flying Shepherdeſſe, ſhall now be ſeparated from thy companie. Enioy therefore the time, and occaſion that Fortune preſents thee, and comfort thy ſelfe, for it ſhall be no ſmall eaſe vnto thee, to paſſe away the abſence of *Syrenus*, being now free from the importunous trouble of thy iealous husband. I wold not eſteem theſe iealouſies ſo hurtful to me (ſaid *Diana*) if *Syrenus* had them aſwel as *Delius*, bicauſe I would then thinke that they had their foundation and beginning of loue. For it is manifeſt, that they that loue, would be glad to be loued againe, & muſt eſteem the iealouſie of the thing beloued, to be good & lawfull, ſince it is a manifeſt token of loue, ſpringing from loue, incident to loue, & euer accõpanied with it. And for my ſelfe I am able to aſſure thee, that I neuer thought my ſelfe more in loue, then when I was a litle iealous, & neuer iudged my ſelf to be iealous, but when I was aſcertained that I was moſt in loue. To the which *Marcelius* replied thus, I neuer thought that a paſtoral plainnes was able to alledge ſuch wiſe reaſons, in ſo difficult a queſtion; whereupon I muſt needes condemne that for an olde approoued errour, that maintaines, that onely in cities and in the court the fineſt wits, and exquiſite conceits do dwell, when I finde them as well to be amongſt the thicke woodes, and in countrey and plaine cottages. Yet for all this I will gainſay thy opinion, whereby thou wouldſt ſeeme to prooue that iealouſie is the meſſenger and companion of loue, as if loue could not be where iealouſie is not ioyned with it. For though there are fewe louers but are a little iealous; yet we muſt not therefore ſay, that the Louer that is not iealous, is not a more perfect and truer louer. For he rather ſheweth (being exempt from iealouſie) what valour and force he hath in loue, and the qualitie of his deſire, which is pure and cleere, and not troubled with the miſte of iealous imaginations. Such an one was I (with modeſtie be it ſpoken) in my moſt happie and paſſed times, and ſo highly then priſed my good Fortune, that with my publike verſes I did manifeſt the ſame. And amongſt many other times that *Alcida* maruelled to ſee me ſo much in loue, and free from iealouſie, I tooke in hand on a time to write this Sonnet to her to that effect.

A Sonnet.

THey ſay Loue *ſware, he neuer would be frend,*
If mortall Iealouſie *were not in place:*
And Beautie *neuer be in any face,*
Vnleſſe that Pride *did on her thought attend:*
Theſe are two hags, which hideous hell doth ſend,
Our ſweete content to trouble, and diſgrace:

The

The one the ioy of loue to paine doth chace,
The other pitie from the hart defend.
Beautie *and* Loue *were both forsworne, by mee*
And thee, by making my vnsure estate
In ioy and happinesse so fortunate:
Bicause since first thy figure I did see
Being so Faire, *yet* Prouder *wast thou neuer*
Nor I in Loue, *that could be* Iealous *euer.*

The pleasure that my *Alcida* tooke when I rehearsed this Sonnet to her, was so great (perceiuing thereby the integritie of my loue) that a thousand times shee would sing it, knowing that I had well pleased her fansie with it. And truely (faire Shepherdesse) I hold it for a great errour, that such a horrible monster as iealousie is, should be accounted a good thing, as to say, that it is the token of Loue, and that it is not but in an enamoured hart. For by this assertion we may say, that a feauer is good, bicause it is a token of life, for it is neuer but in a body most likely to liue. But both are manifest errours, since iealousie affoords no lesse paine then a feauer: For it is a plague of the soule; a frensie disturbing the thoughts; a madnes that weakens the bodie; an anger consuming the spirits; a feare abasing the minde, and a furie that fils the will with folly. But bicause thou maist the better iudge of iealousie to be most abhominable, imagine the cause of it, and thou shalt finde that it is nothing else, but a little feare of that which is not, nor shall be, a vile contempt of ones owne deserts, and a mortall surmise, which cals the faith and sinceritie of that which is beloued, in doubt and suspition. The pangs of iealousie with words (gentle Shepherdesse) cannot be decyphered: for they are such that do infinitely exceed in quantitie and qualitie the paines, that are incident to loue. For all the rest (sauing they) may be conuerted in the end to a great sweetnes, and content. And as the burning thirst in the hottest day makes the cold and fresh fountaine water to taste more sweete and sauorie, and as the danger and garboiles in warre and sedition, make vs esteeme the more of quietnes and peace; so the torments of Loue serue vs for greater pleasure, whensoeuer any small sauour is graunted vnto vs, and when we enioy but the least content and happines. But this frantike iealousie powres such bitter poyson into mens harts, that it spoiles and driues away all delights that harbour in it. To this effect I remember that an excellent Musition in *Lisbone* did sing this Sonnet on a day before the King of *Portugall*, which said thus.

A Sonnet.

When cruell absence woundes a soule with paine,
Then thought is fed with fancies in their kinde:
For further of the good remaines, the minde
Receiues more ioy, when that it comes againe:
He that on hope his ground doth yet sustaine,
For all his greefe a remedie shall finde,
And for his paines rewardes shall be assign'd:
Or dies at lest in loue content and faine:
A thousand paines away one ioy doth chace,
And to a thousand scornes reuenge presents

The onely viewing of an Angels face:
But when a ſoule vile iealouſie torments,
Though thouſand ioyes doe afterwards ſucceede,
Yet bitter greefe and rage the ſame doth breede.

O how true was his opinion, how ſure was this concluſion? For in very truth this peſtilent iealouſie leaues not one part of the ſoule whole, nor the leaſt corner of the hart vnſearched, where any ſmall delight may hide it ſelfe. There is no cõtent in Loue, where there is no hope; and hope will neuer be there, where iealouſie is a meane betweene them both. There is no ſtedfaſt pleaſure where iealouſie is, no delight which is not conſumed with it, and no griefe but iealouſie torments vs with it. The enraged furie of poyſoned iealouſie is ſo extreme, that it grieueth the hart infected with it, to heare the praiſes of the thing beloued, and would neuer haue the perfections of that which one loueth neither ſeene nor knowen of any but of himſelfe, offering great iniurie by meanes hereof to the woorthines of that gentilitie, that holds him in captiuitie. And the iealous man doth not onely liue in this ſlauery and paine, but to her alſo whom he loueth, he giueth ſuch inceſſant griefe, that more he could not giue her, if he were her mortall enimie. Wherefore it is verie cleere, that a iealous husband (like thine) would rather haue his wife ſeeme foule and lothſome to the world, & that ſhe might be neuer ſeene, nor praiſed; no, not by the moſt virtuous and modeſt mindes. What griefe is it for the wife to haue her honeſty cõdemned by a falſe ſuſpect? What greater puniſhment, then without all reaſon to be locked vp in a ſecret corner of her houſe? What hart breake ſorrowe with auſtere words, & ſomtimes with vnſeemely deeds to be cõtinually checked? If ſhe be merie, her husband thinks her diſhoneſt; if ſhe be ſad, he imagines himſelfe lothſom in her eie; if ſhe be muſing, he iudgeth her ful of fanſies; if ſhe looke on him, he thinks ſhe deceiues him; if ſhe lookes not on him, he thinkes ſhe hates him; if ſhe vſe any daliance with him, he thinkes it to be but fained; if ſhee be graue and modeſt, he thinkes her a counterfaite; if ſhe laughes, he thinkes her to be looſe; if ſhe ſigh, he counts her naught: And in the end iealouſie conuerteth euerie thing that is poiſoned with it, to an endleſſe griefe and miſerie. Whereupon it is verie cleere, that there is no paine in the world like to this, and neuer out of hell came fouler *Harpyes* to contaminate and putrifie the ſweete and ſauourie foode of an enamoured ſoule: wherefore care not greatly *Diana* for the abſence of iealous *Delius*, for it auailes thee not a little to make thee ſuffer the paine of Loue more gently. To this *Diana* anſwered. Now am I thorowly aſcertained, that this paſſion which thou haſt ſo liuely depainted, is a moſt vgly and horrble thing, which deſerues not a place in amorous harts; and alſo beleeue, that this was the verie ſame griefe that tormented *Delius*. But I muſt tel thee by the way *(Marcelius)* that I neuer meant to defend the like grief, & that neuer it found harbour in my breſt: for as I neuer thought amiſſe of *Syrenus* worthines and deſerts; ſo was I neuer tormented with ſuch like paſſion and follie, as thou haſt told of, but I had onely a certaine kinde of feare to be reiected in reſpect of another. And in this ſuſpition I haue not beene much deceiued, for to my great griefe I haue tried *Syrenus* forgetfulnes. This feare, ſaid *Marcelius*, cãnot be properly termed iealouſie, which is rather an ordinarie paſſion in the beſt and wiſeſt louers. For it is verified, that that which I loue, I eſteeme & hold it for good, and thinke it deſerues to be beloued: which being ſo, I am afraide leaſt another might know the goodnes, and worthines of it, & ſo loue it like my ſelfe. And ſo it fals out, that a louer

is

is put betweene hope and feare. That which the one denies him, the other doth promiſe him; and when the one doth caſt him downe, the other lifts him vp againe. And in the ende, the wounds that feare makes in this contentious quarrell, hope heales againe, vntill one of the two remaines conqueror. And if it happen that feare ouercomes hope, the louer then becomes iealous; but if hope conquers feare, then the louer liues in a ioyfull and happie eſtate. But in the time of my good fortune I had euer ſo ſtrong and ſure a hope, that feare was vnable, not onely to ouercome it, but durſt neuer attempt to aſſaile it; whereby, I euer enioyed ſo great delight, that in exchange of that, I neuer cared to be troubled with cõtinual griefes. And I was ſo greatly in her fauor, that I ſuſtained my hope in ſuch firmnes, that there was no grief that came from her part, that I accepted not for a ſingular ioy, & pleaſure. I accounted her cruelties, courteſies; her diſdaines, daliances; her angrie anſwers, amiable promiſes. *Diana* and *Marcelius* going on their waies, had theſe and diuers other ſpeeches togither. And hauing paſſed ouer the greene meade in ſweete communication, and going by the ſide of a little hill, they entred into a pleaſant wood, where the thicke Sicamours did ſpread abroad freſh and coole ſhadowes. There they heard a paſſing cleere voice, which ioyned with the tune of a ſweete harpe, ſounded forth ſtrange melodie; and comming neer to hearken to it, they might perceiue, that it was the voice of a Shepherdeſſe, that ſung in maner following.

A Sonnet.

AS many ſtars as Heauen *containeth, ſtriue*
To frame my harme, and luckleſſe hap to ſhow:
*And in th'*Earth *no graſſe nor greene doth growe,*
That to my greefe may any comfort giue:
Loue *vnto feare ſubiected, euer driue*
A ſoule to coldeſt ice: O bitter woe,
That he, whom Fortune *did contrarie ſo,*
Continually with iealouſie muſt liue.
The fault I muſt (Montanus) *lay on thee,*
And all my greefe: on thee I doe complaine
(O cruell ſoule) that pitie doſt diſdaine;
For if thou hadſt but taken part with mee,
I would not care though gainſt me did conſpire
Heauen, Earth, *and* Loue, *and* Fortune *in their ire.*

After that the Shepherdeſſe had ſweetely ſung, enlarging the raines of her bitter and dolefull complaint, ſhe powred out ſuch abundance of teares, and gaue ſo many ſighes, that by them, and by the wordes ſhe ſpake, they knew that a cruell deceit of her iealous husband was the cauſe of all her greefe. But becauſe they would know better what ſhe was, and the cauſe of her paſſion, they went to the place where ſhe was, and found her ſitting al alone in the ſhadowe, which the thicke boughes made on euerie ſide vpon the fine and greene graſſe, neere to a little ſpring, which riſing out of the foote of an oke, ranne by diuers waies thorow that little woode. They curteouſly ſaluted her, and ſhe (although it greeued her that they had interrupted her lamentation, yet iudging by their countenances that they were Shepherds of good regard) was not greatly diſcontented at their comming, hoping to haue had the fruition of their good company, & therefore ſaid vnto them. To my remẽbrance

(faire

(faire Shepherd and Shepherdeſſe) I neuer receiued ſo great contentment that might be compared with this in ſeeing you now, ſince the time that I was vniuſtlie forſaken of my cruell husband; which is ſo great, that though continuall greefe compels me to ceaſeleſſe plaints, yet will I make a pauſe of them a little while to enioy your peaceable and diſcreete companie. To this *Marcelius* anſwered. I praie God I may neuer ſee my torments ceaſe, if that it greeues me not to ſee thine, and the ſame maieſt thou alſo beleeue of faire *Diana*, whom thou ſeeſt in my companie. The Shepherdeſſe hearing *Dianas* name, running vnto her, did with the greateſt gladnes that might be, embrace her, ſhewing a thouſand louing ſignes, and making the moſt on her in the world, bicauſe ſhe was deſirous long ſince to knowe her, for the great report that ſhe heard of her wiſedome and beautie. *Diana* maruelling to ſee herſelfe ſo entreated by a Shepherdeſſe, whom ſhe knewe not, requited her yet with like curteſies againe, and deſiring to know who ſhe was, ſaide vnto her. The great fauours that thou haſt done me, and the pittie which I take of thy complaints, make me deſirous to know what thou art, wherefore tell vs (faire Shepherdeſſe) thy name, and diſcourſe vnto vs the cauſe of thy greefe, bicauſe that after thou haſt tolde it, thou ſhalt ſee how our harts will helpe thee to paſſe it away, and our eies readie to bewaile it. The Shepherdeſſe then with a gracious ſpeech began to excuſe herſelfe, from telling the ſubſtance of her owne fall, yet vrged in the ende by their importunate requeſtes, ſhe ſat downe againe vpon the graſſe, and began thus to ſaie. By the report of *Seluagia* that was borne in my towne, and in thine too faire *Diana*, which is now married to the Shepherd *Syluanus*, thou haſt beene told (I thinke) of the vnfortunate name of *Iſmenia*, that is now beginning to tell her ſorrowfull tale. And I thinke that ſhe tolde thee at large when ſhe was in thy towne, howe againſt my will I deceiued her in the Temple of *Minerua* in the kingdome of *Portugall*, and how by my owne deceite I was ouertaken; then perhaps ſhe hath alſo tolde thee how I fained to loue *Montanus* her mortall enimie, to be reuenged of *Alanius*, who for the loue that he did beare her, forgot me quite, and how this fained loue with the riper knowledge of his vertues, and accompliſhments fel out at laſt ſo true, that by means of it, I ſuffer this intolerable ſorrow & greefe, which euen now I complained of. Therefore paſſing on farther in the hiſtory of my life, thou ſhalt vnderſtand, that when *Filenus* father to *Montanus* came ſometimes to my fathers houſe about certaine of his affaires, and bargaines that he had with him for flockes of ſheepe, and had eſpied me on a time, although ſomewhat aged, yet he was ſo extreemely enamoured of me, that he became almoſt out of his wits. A thouſand times a daie he wooed me, and euery hower reckoned vp to me his greefes, but all in vaine, for I would neither harken vnto him, nor regard his wordes. Yet bicauſe he was a man of more ſufficiencie, and of fewer yeeres then many other in his caſe, I did not altogither forget him, and the rather for his ſonne *Montanus* ſake, whoſe loue had made me now his captiue before. The old man knew not of the loue, that *Montanus* did beare me, for he was alwaies ſo carefull and dutifull a ſon, and ſo diſcreetly handled the matter, that the father had not any notice thereof, fearing mightilie (if it had beene knowne) his fathers diſpleaſure, and that with bitter and angrie wordes he might haue iuſtly corrected him for it. And as wiſely did the father conceale from his ſonne *Montanus* his owne follie; for, the better to chaſtiſe and amend what he thought amiſſe in his ſonne, he was very vigilant not to diſcouer his owne and greater faults. Although for all this he neuer ceaſed with continuall ſuites to ſollicite my loue, & importuned me to take him for my husband. He diſcourſed

to

to me a thousand odde matters, and made me as many great offers: he promised me many costly garments, rich iewels, and sent mee many letters, thinking by those meanes, if not to ouercome me, at least to mollifie my hard refusals. He was a Shepherd in his flourishing age no lesse commended for al youthful sports, then cunning in all pastorall exercises, one that could tell a smooth tale, and with great wisedome and discretion bring his purpose to good effect. And bicause you may the better beleeue me, I will rehearse vnto you a letter that once he wrote vnto me, the which although it altered my minde nothing, yet it greatly contented me, and thus it said.

Filenus *letter to* Ismenia.

Faire Shepherdesse, The cause was Loue,
Who (to acquaint thee with his paine)
This fault and blame in me did moue
To write to thee: But to be plaine,
Who would not be both shent and blamed,
In thy sweete loues to be inflamed?

But if my letter doe offend
Thy modest eares, as to too bold:
Then vnderstand, that in the end
The feare I haue to be controld,
My soule with paine and greefe hath fild,
And hath the same already kild.

I haue to thee ten thousand times
My torments told, wherein I liue,
Sometimes by speech sometimes by rimes,
Which first to me thy selfe didst giue,
The which no more thou dost requite,
Then mocke, vnto thy great delighte.

With open mouth thou laugh'st at mee,
And makest it thine onely game
To see me die for loue of thee:
And I doe ioy to see the same:
Although thou laugheste at my paine,
Which laughter is to me no gaine.

And so when that in me I finde
The greeuous ill, which makes me die,
I thinke (when that comes to my minde)
No remedie thou wilt apply.
Bicause to see thou wi'st thy fill,
How much my comforts thou dost kill.

A remedie thou dost disdaine:
And then my soule with hope to feede
I see it is as much in vaine,
When as it is by loue decreede,
To haue my life lie in thy hand,
And death in thy desire to stand.

I sawe thy shining beauties beames,
Faire Shepherdesse, vpon a day
Neere to great Duerus *Christall streames,*
Making the fields so fresh and gay,
And goodly banks to ioy and flourish,
The which thy beauties feedes & nourish.

And there I sawe thee leane and stand,
Among those banks not long agoe,
Vpon thy sheepehooke with thy hand,
With naked necke as white as snowe,
And to thine elbowe (seeming greeued)
With naked arme, that was vnsleeued.

Where if there had beene anyone,
That well had viewed euery part,
Admit he were as hard as stone,
And had not lou'd thee from his hart:
Reason would moue me then to say,
That he his folly did bewray.

And therefore thus when I had knowne
Thy goodly giftes, and beautie rare,
From thinking of them one by one
No time, nor rest I did not spare:
Thus I began loues force to trie,
And in his torments thus to die.

But if against me thou dost moue
Saying, It is to me a shame
Being an old man thus to loue
So yoong a maide, and so to blame:
O giue me no aduice at all,
But remedies for which I call.

For

For I will neuer thinke this part
Of mine hath made so great a crime,
By louing thee with all my hart,
As hauing lost so long a time,
Before I euer came to knowe
Thy beauties which adorne thee so.

Alas I knowe that I am olde,
And that my prime long since did fall,
Which now I wish I had not tolde:
But that which greeues me most of all,
Is that my louing paine appeeres
Not equall with so many yeeres.

Bicause since first I came into
This life, I would in all that space
Haue loued thee as now I doe,
Since first I sawe thy sweetest face,
And as I must with Cupids powre
Vnto my last and dying howre.

And let it not thy minde dismay
To see my haire so gray and white,
For it is ill to take away
The place from any, that of right
Belongs to him in any reason,
Though it comes out of time and season.

And though my valour not my hart,
And force, not will thou dost exceede,
It is not yet so iust a part
That any man should leese his meede
For being old, or be vnpaide
Bicause a souldier now decaide.

The buildings newer that they are,
And lately built in any sort,
By no proportion may compare,
For statelines and princely port,
(The which antiquitie doth showe)
With those of Rome built long agoe.

And so in things of woorthines,
Of prime or goodnes any way,
Of profit, ioy or happines,
Commonly vnto this day
They say, (and yet do say most true)
That th'old is better then the new.

Loue wise in that he went about,
Till now gaue me no sense of paine,
Bicause he sawe it did fall out,
That for the most part did remaine,
In aged men, and like to mee,
More firmnesse as we daily see.

To loue thee more then I can tell,
I am resolued till I die,
And in my firmnesse doe excell
Of all loues torments which I trie:
But olde againe and not to proue
In all my life, the sweete of loue.

Yoong youthes that most of all doe faine
Themselues to burne in Cupids heate
Are false and double, but to traine
Beleeuing women to deceate:
For when they say, That they doe die
Then doe they liue most merily.

And so their false and changing loue,
And paines alledged in the same,
And all the torments which they proue
Is but their pastime, sport and game,
It is their iest and common fashion,
It is no will, nor any passion.

Besides, Ismenia doe not feare
That I am like to one of those
Yoong louers, that doe euery wheare
Their fauours openly disclose:
For sooner they receiue not one,
But straight to many it is knowne.

For though I doe receiue at lest
Three hundred fauours one by one,
Yet in my loue I doe protest
To be as much a very stone
In hiding fauours which I gaine,
As that I am in suffring paine.

But yet as far as I can see,
Resolued as thou art in minde
To kill me with thy crueltie,
Suer I am that I shall finde
Much to endure to be reueal'd,
Little ynough to be conceal'd.

For

For now ingratefull Shepherdesse,
The greatest fauour which I misse
And faine the same would heere possesse,
Of all the rest is onely this
To die, bicause I would no more
Complaine against thee, as before.

Time onely will I thee accuse,
O time that art so great a friend
To greefes, and makest her refuse
My loue, who loues her without end.
For he that hath most part in thee
Is little woorth in loue we see.

Alas that euer I did loue
Too late a thing so passing faire,
And reason therefore that I proue
To die for her in deepe despaire:
Since when her birth day did appeere
I was not borne that very yeere.

If I had beene faire Shepherdesse,
With thee, when I was in my prime
As now thou art, then more or lesse,
I had not wanted any time,
Delights and pastimes to present thee,
Nor thy sweete fauours to content mee.

For as for playing on a Pipe,
Or Rebecke with most sweetest sound
To touch with many a daintie stripe,
And dauncing best in all the towne,
Amongst the youthes to win the prise
All in my fauour did arise.

And therefore maruell not a whit,
If that in song I doe excell
Famous Amphion, *as vnfit*
(Compar'd with me) to beare the bell,
Since that my singing hath surmounted,
Better then he was euer counted.

Of fields that goodly graine doe beare
I plowe more acres then the rest:
And all my mountaines euery where,
And plaines that are for pastures best,
With flocks of sheepe and goates I cumber,
Mark't with my mark that haue no nũber.

But now what bootes my present store
(O cruell hap) for my delight?
Or that that hath beene heeretofore?
Since now it is forgotten quite.
Nay which is more, scorn'd and despis'd,
And vnto cruell death deuis'd.

Then (sweetest foe) let this auaile
To make thy hardest hart relent,
Strike downe of pride thy puffed saile,
When to thine eies age shall present,
That in the same thy braue perfection
Shall vade, and be in times subiection.

O Shepherdesse, thou art more hard
Then sturdy rocke consum'd in time:
But yet perhaps for thy reward
When thou hast lost thy golden prime,
Then freedomes want shall be thy paine,
Wherewith thou dost me now disdaine.

Wherefore let Loue take such despite,
Reuenging one so much vnkinde,
That when all hopes forsake thee quite,
And comforts for thy troubled minde,
Then he may giue thee store of greefe,
And make despaire thy best releefe.

These and many other letters and songs he sent me; the which, if they had wrought their effect so much as my delight, he might then perhaps in his owne conceit haue thought himselfe a happie man, and I haue beene by this time an ill married wife. But there was not any thing able to blot *Montanus* image out of my hart, who apparantly also satisfied my will with like words and deeds. We passed our liues away certaine yeeres in this ioy, vntill we thought with holy marriage to accomplish our happie daies, and rest. And though *Montanus* would haue tolde his Father of it before, to haue shewed the dutie of a good sonne, yet he would not do it, when I told him, how hardly his Father would thinke of it, by reason of the doting

ting desire that he had to marrie me himselfe: Hauing therefore greater respect to the contentment of his owne life, then to the dutie he owed his Father, without making him priuie, we performed our vnluckie marriage. Which was done by the consent of my Father, in whose house there were great feastes made in solemnitie of it, besides other pastimes, as dancing, plaies, & such great sports, that the noise of them was bruted in all the countrey townes about. Whereupon the louing old man vnderstanding his own son had deceiued him of his loue, he became so incensed against vs both that he hated vs like death, & therfore would neuer after that see vs, if he could otherwise choose. On the other side there was a certaine Shepherdesse of that towne called *Felisarda*, that died almost for the loue of *Montanus*, whom (in regard of his great loue to me, and of her bad conditions and declining age) he could neuer abide: When she perceiued that *Montanus* had married me, she had almost hanged her selfe for griefe, so that by our vnfortunate marriage we got vs two mortall enimies. The wretched old dotard, because he would disinherit his sonne, purposed to marrie a yoong and faire wench, to haue had children by her. But though he was rich, yet did not any Shepherdesse of our towne loue him, *Felisarda* onely excepted, who, because she thought by these meanes to enioy the dishoneſt loue of *Montanus* (the which she bare yet fresh in memorie) married with old *Filenus*. And being now his wife, she practised diuers waies to winne *Montanus* to her loue, and especially by meanes of a maide she had, called *Sylueria*, sending him word, that if he would condiscend to her will, she would make an attonement betweene his Father and him, offering him besides many great rewards, & gifts. But she could neuer corrupt his minde, nor peruert his chaste intent: Seeing her selfe therefore so much contemned, she began to beare such mortal hatred to *Montanus*, that by and by she instigated his Father against him; and not content with this, wrought moreouer this vile piece of treachérie against him. For she in such sort ouercame *Syluerias* minde with flatterie, gifts, good cheere, and other fauours, that she was content to do whatsoeuer she commaunded, although it had beene to the preiudice of *Montanus*, whom sometimes she respected greatly, for that she had beene a long time seruant in his Fathers house. Both of them agreede secretly togither vpon that they had to doe, and vpon the hower of putting it in practise: Whereupon *Sylueria* went out of her towne, and comming to a forrest neere to the riuer *Duerus*, where *Montanus* was feeding his sheepe, she came to talke with him secretly, as though she had beene troubled much in minde about the weightiest matter in the world, saying. Ah *Montanus*, how wise wert thou in despising thy wicked Stepdames loue, though I my selfe by her importunate request did what I could to bring thee to it. But since I know what hath passed, she shall neuer make me any more the messenger of her dishoneſt lusts. I haue seene, and know certaine things by her, which touch thy Fathers credit and thine too neere, and such, that, if thou knewest them (though thy Father is so cruell to thee) in such a case thou would'st not care to leese thy life for safegard of his honour. I tell thee no more but this, because I know thee to be so wise and discreete, that I neede make no longer discourse vnto thee. *Montanus* was amazed at these wordes, suspecting by and by some dishoneſt tricke of his Stepmother: But because he would be thorowly informed of the matter, he prayed *Sylueria* to tell him all that she knew concerning that matter. The more she was entreated, the more she denied, making it verie daintie, and no lesse dangerous to discouer so secret a thing; but in the end satisfying his request, and her owne desire, she told him a notable and cunning lye, saying. Because it is a thing that so greatly toucheth thy credit, & *Filenus*

my

my Masters good name, I will therefore tell thee truely what I know, hoping that thou wilt tell none in the worlde, that this secret treacherie was discouered by me. Thou must therefore knowe, that *Felisarda* thy stepmother is working a great disgrace against thy father, with a certaine Shepherd, whose name I will not tell thee, bicause thou maiest heereafter knowe him, if thou wilt: for if thou wilt come this night, and follow me where I will leade thee, thou shalt finde the adulterer and the traytereſſe togither in *Filenus* house: for so they haue appointed, bicause *Filenus* lieth this night at a Farme he hath, by reason of some busines there, & cannot come home again before to morrow at noone. Wherfore look wel about thee, & at eleuen of the clocke at night come to mee, for I will bring thee in, where thou maiest doe that, which may turne to thine own credit, thy fathers honor, & perhaps greatly to thine owne profit by obtaying pardon at thy fathers hands. This tale *Sylueria* told so smoothly, and with such cunning dissimulation, that *Montanus* was resolued to put himselfe in the greatest danger to be reuenged of him, who shoulde offer any dishonour to his father. And so the vile and wicked *Sylueria* very glad that this deceit which *Felisarda* hatched, had so good succesſe, went home againe, where she tolde *Felisarda* her Mistresse what was agreed on betweene *Montanus* and her. Nowe had the darke night ouerspred the earth with her blacke mantell, when *Montanus* being come to the village, tooke a dagger with him which his vncle *Palemon* the Shepherd had giuen him, and iust at eleuen of the clocke went to *Filenus* his fathers house, where *Sylueria* was staying for him, as she had appointed. O wicked treason, the like neuer seene, nor heard of before! Oh trayterous wickednes, such as was neuer thought of before! She tooke him by the hand, and going very softly vp a paire of staires, ledde him to the chamber doore where *Filenus* his father, and *Felisarda* his stepdame were a bedde togither, and when she had set him there, she saide vnto him. Now thou art come to the place *Montanus*, where thou must shew that thou hast courage and no abiect minde, that is requisite in so good a cause: goe into this chamber, and there thou shalt finde thy mother a bed with the adulterer. When she had saide so, she ranne away, as fast as euer she could. *Montanus* being thus deluded with *Syluerias* falshood, gaue credite to her words, and in a furie plucking his dagger out of the sheath, brake open the chamber doore with a thrust of his foote, like a mad man with these loud exclamations rushed into it, saying: Here must thou die (traytour) by mine owne hands: now shall the strumpet *Felisardas* foule loues helpe thee nothing at all: And speaking these words, he was so wroth, that he knew not who he was that lay in the bedde, and thinking to haue slaine the adulterer, he lifted vp his arme to stabbe his Father as he lay a bedde. But yet good Fortune awoke the old man, who knowing his sonne by the light that was there, thought verily that for the austere words & vnkind disgraces, which he had done him, he came to kill him; wherefore lifting himselfe quickly out of the bedde, with holding vp his hands he saide. O my sonne! what crueltie is this that makes thee the butcher of thine owne Father? For Gods sake remember thy selfe, and spill not nowe my innocent bloud, nor ende my life before the appointed hower from aboue doth come. For if I haue heeretofore vsed any rigour against thee, heere vpon my knees I craue pardon for it, with protestation, that from hencefoorth I will entreate thee as louingly and gently as any father in the world may vse his sonne. When *Montanus* perceiued the treacherie that was wrought, and the danger that he had almost incurred, by killing his owne Father, he stoode there so astonished, that his hart and arme so failed him, whereby the dagger fell out of his hands and neuer felt it. Being

thus ſtriken in a maze, he could not vtter a worde; but aſhamed and confounded in his owne enterpriſe, he went out of the chamber, and out of the houſe wonderful ſorrie for the treacherie that *Sylueria* had buzzed into his eares, and for that which he had almoſt done, but that his fortune was the better. *Feliſarda*, who knew all the matter before, and how it would fall out, when ſhe ſaw *Montanus* come into the chamber, ſhe lept out of the bed, and ranne into another inward chamber, and locking the doore after her, ſaued her ſelfe from her ſonne in lawes furie. But when ſhe ſaw her ſelfe free from danger (for now *Montanus* was gone out of the houſe) ſhee came into the chamber againe where *Filenus* was yet ſhaking for feare, and then ſhe incenſing the Father againſt the Sonne, with loude vociferations began thus to ſay vnto him. Now *Filenus*, thou knoweſt well what kinde of Sonne thou haſt, and now canſt tell if it be not true which I haue ſo often told thee of his wicked conditions and nature. O cruell wretch! O vile Traytour *Montanus*! why doe not the heauens confound thee? Why doth not the earth ſwallow thee vp? Why do not the wilde beaſts deuour thee? Why do not men perſecute thee to death? Accurſed be thy marriage, thy diſobedience, thy loues, and thy *Iſmenia*, that hath brought thee to this barbarous crueltie, and to commit ſo horrible a ſinne. Traytour as thou art, thou doſt not puniſh *Alanius*, who to thy ſhame and diſgrace, hath too familiar companie with thy *Iſmenia* vſing her diſhoneſtly, and whom ſhe loues more then thy ſelfe; and careſt not to kill thy owne Father, who with tendernes of thy life, and credit hath euer made account of thee. Bicauſe he gaue thee good counſell, would'ſt thou therefore kill him? O woefull Father! O vnfortunate gray haires! O grieuous old age! What fault didſt thou euer commit, that thine owne ſonne ſhould kill thee for it, euen he, whom thou haſt begotten, brought vp, and for whom thou haſt paſſed a thouſand cares? Plucke vp thy hart now; leaue of thy fatherly loue; giue place to iuſtice; let him be duely puniſhed: for, if he, which perpetrated ſuch wicked crueltie, hath not his deſerued puniſhment, diſobedient ſonnes will not be afraide to do the like, nor thine owne hereafter to murder thee once againe with his owne hands. Old *Filenus* full of feare, griefe, and deſpite, hearing the ſpeech that his wife told him, and conſidering his ſonnes treaſon, tooke ſo great diſpleaſure at it, that taking vp the dagger that *Montanus* had let fall, early in the morning he went to the market place, & there aſſembling the chiefeſt men of the towne, & the Iuſtices togither, after many teares and ſobs, ſaid thus vnto them. I inuoke God for witnes (moſt worthie Shepherdes) that the diſcourſe, which I muſt tell you, torments my ſoule ſo much, that I am afraide it will flye out of my bodie before I haue told it out. Let not any therefore thinke me cruell or vnnatural, by comming to publiſh my ſonnes wickednes openly in this place, ſince it is ſo ſtrange and deteſtable, that the greateſt puniſhment that I am able to giue him, is not ſufficient for the enormitie thereof. The which for that I am vnable my ſelfe to remedie it, I will lay open before your eies, that you may ſee, how iuſt and needfull a thing it is to giue him condigne puniſhment, and to forwarne all other ſonnes by his grieuous example. Needleſſe it is to tell you, with what tender loue and affection I haue brought him vp, how carefully I haue kept him; with what diligence I haue inſtructed him in commendable qualities; what thoughts I haue ſuffered for him; what good counſell I haue giuen him, and how mildly I haue chaſtiſed him. To my great griefe he married *Iſmenia*; and bicauſe I found fault with him for it, in lieu of being reuenged of *Alanius* the Shepherd, who (as all the countrey knowes) liues diſhoneſtly with his wife *Iſmenia*, turned his anger towards me, and this night would haue done me to death. For

this

this laſt night he found the meanes to get into the chamber where I was a bed with my wife *Feliſarda*, and with this naked dagger would haue killed me: And had done it, but that God did cut off his ſtrength, and abated it in ſuch ſort, that being halfe aſtoniſhed and afraide, he went out from thence, not able to put his damnable intent in practiſe, leauing the dagger (that fell out of his hands) in the chamber. This is the true report of that which this laſt night paſſed, whereof you may be better informed by my louing wife. But bicauſe I certainly know that my ſonne *Montanus* would neuer haue committed ſo foule a deed againſt his Father, if his wife *Iſmenia* had not perſwaded him to it, I therefore beſeech you all to conſider well of this matter: Firſt, that my ſonne may be ſufficiently puniſhed for his wicked attempt; and then, that falſe *Iſmenia*, eſpecially for the treacherous counſell ſhe gaue her huſband, as alſo for her diſhoneſt loue, and life that ſhe leades with *Alanius*, may likewiſe receiue due correction. *Filenus* had ſcarce ended his tale, when there aroſe ſuch a noiſe amongſt the people, that all the towne ſeemed to haue ſuncke: And the harts of all the Shepherds and Shepherdeſſes were ſo much altered at theſe words, that they conceiued a mortall hatred againſt *Montanus*. Some ſaide, that he deſerued to be ſtoned to death; others, to be throwen into the deepeſt place of the riuer *Duerus*; others, that he ſhould be caſt forth to be deuoured of hungrie woolfes, ſo that there was not one almoſt amongſt them all, who allotted not his doome and manner of his death. It mooued them alſo not a little to deſpite to heare that which *Filenus* falſely reported concerning my life: but they were ſo incenſed with anger and hate againſt *Montanus*, and his pretenſes, that they had no leyſure to thinke of mine. When *Montanus* vnderſtoode how his Father had openly before all the towne accuſed him of this deed, and of the hurly burly and awaite, that was laide to catch him, he fell into a woonderfull deſperation. And beſides this knowing what his Father had told of me before them all, he tooke ſuch a deepe conceit and griefe thereat, that the like was neuer heard of. From hence did all my ſorrowes riſe, this was the cauſe of my perdition, and here did my painfull life begin. For my beloued *Montanus* knew that in times paſt I had loued *Alanius*, and was beloued of him againe; and imagining that old and mortified loues might oftentimes be reuiued, & ſeeing *Alanius* (whom now for his ſake I had quite forgotten) to be in loue with me as much as euer he was, by making daily ſuites to me for my loue, with thoſe kinde of paſtorall feaſts and ſports, that louers are woont to pleaſe their Shepherdeſſes withall, he vehemently ſuſpected, that the falſe report which his Father *Filenus* had told of me was true; and the more he thought of it, the more he beleeued it to be ſo indeed: In ſo much that waxing almoſt mad and deſperate for the treacherie that *Sylueria* had wrought him, and for that which he ſuſpected I had done him, he fled from the towne and countrey thereabouts, and ſince was neuer more heard of. And I then, who knew of his departure and the cauſe thereof, by the report of certaine Shepherds his friends, whom he fully acquainted with his vnfortunate eſtate, left alſo our town to ſeeke him out, and while I liue will neuer leaue ſeeking, vntill I haue found my deere husband, to acquite my ſelfe of this crime which he ſuſpectes, although I ſhoulde die by his owne handes for my labour. It is a good while ſince I haue gone vp and downe wandring and enquiring after him, and for all that I haue ſought in the cheefeſt townes, and amongſt all the Shepherdes and cottages, Fortune neuer yet gaue me any notice of my *Montanus*. The greateſt accident, that in theſe my trauels chanced vnto mee, ſince I forſooke my towne, was, that I found the traytereſſe *Sylueria*, who knowing the voluntarie exile

of *Montanus*, went vp and downe following, to tell him the plot and drift of the ſecret trecherie that ſhe had done him, and to aske him forgiuenes for it, being verie penitent that ſhe had committed ſuch abhominable wickednes. But as yet till then ſhe had not ſpoken with him, and when ſhe ſawe me, ſhe told me openly howe the matter ſtoode, which was no ſmall eaſe vnto my minde, to know the maner how we were betraied. I thought with mine owne handes to haue killed her, though I was but a weak woman, yet I did it not, bicauſe it lay in her only to helpe my greefe by confeſſing her owne wickednes. I praied her, to ſeeke out my beloued *Montanus* in all the haſte ſhe could, to certifie him of the matter, and how it ſtoode, and ſo I left her to ſeeke him out ſome other way. I came hither to day to this woode, where being inuited by the pleaſantnes of the place, I reſted mee to paſſe the heate of the day away. And ſince that Fortune (for my great comfort) hath brought you hither, and that it is now the hotteſt part of the day, I beſeech you let me enioy your gracious companie, while the heate of the ſunne ſhall laſt. *Diana* and *Marcelius* were glad to heare the hiſtorie that *Iſmenia* tolde them, and to knowe the cauſe of her greefe. It pleaſed them alſo well to heare the diſcourſe of her life, who then gaue her ſome comfort to eaſe her greefe, promiſing her all the fauour and helpe, that they might poſſiblie beſtow on her for remedie of her paine and trauels. They praied her alſo to go with them to *Felicias* pallace, bicauſe it was moſt like that there ſhe ſhould finde out ſome kind of comfort to make her glad againe. And they both thought good to paſſe the time away there, while the heate of the Sunne did laſt, as *Iſmenia* requeſted them. But bicauſe *Diana* was very skilfull in that ground, & knew very well the woods, fountaines, forreſts, and the pleaſant and ſhadowed places of it, ſhe told them, that there was not farre from thence a more delightfull and pleaſant place then that was, for it was not yet full midday: So that all three of them riſing, went a little way, and came by and by to a forreſt, where *Diana* led them, which was as pleaſant, coole, and delightful a place, as any of thoſe hils, or fieldes that euer was with fame renowned in the paſtorall *Arcadia*: There were in it faire and greene Sicamours, Sallowes, Aſhes, Byrch, and Beech trees, which round about the brinks of the chryſtalline fountaines, and in euery part thereabout, being ſoftly blowen with a coole and ſweete winde, made a pleaſant and gentle noiſe. There the aire did ſo ſweetely reſound with the tuned melodie of the little birdes, which went skipping vp and downe the greene boughes, that it cheered vp the minde with a gracious kinde of welcome. It was couered all ouer with greene and ſmall graſſe, amongſt the which were many faire and coloured flowers, which painting the place with knots in many places, did with their ſweete ſmell recreate the moſt ſorrowfull and melancholike ſpirits. There were the Hunters woont to finde Heardes of fearefull Harts, wilde Goates, and of other little beaſts, in which games and ſports they tooke no ſmall paſtime and delight. They came into this forreſt following *Diana* their guide that went in firſt, for ſhe went before to ſeeke out a little thicke groue of trees, that ſhe had marked out in that place (where ſhe was woont to reſort) to reſt and refreſh herſelfe many times. And they had not gone farre, when *Diana* comming neere to the place, that ſhe thought the moſt pleaſant of all the wood, and where ſhee minded to haue paſſed away the heate of the daie, putting her finger to her mouth, ſhe made ſignes to *Marcelius* and *Iſmenia* to come on ſoftly without making any noiſe. The reaſon was, bicauſe ſhe heard amongſt thoſe thicke trees certaine Shepherds ſinging. By their voices they ſeemed to be *Tauriſus* and *Berardus*, both extremely tormented in purſute of her loue, as it is ſaide before. But bicauſe

cauſe ſhe would be more ſure of it, ſtealing on neerer vnto them betweene certaine buſhes, ſhe was harkening to them, to ſee if ſhe knew them, and ſhe perceiued that they were the very ſame, and that they had in their companie a faire yoong gentlewoman, and a gallant and woorthie gentleman, both which (although they ſeemed to be ſomewhat troubled in minde, and wearied by much trauell) ſhewed neuertheleſſe in their geſture and diſpoſition notable tokens of valour and vertue. After ſhe had viewed who they were, ſhe went backe againe bicauſe ſhe woulde not be ſeene. And now was *Marcelius* and *Iſmenia* come, and all three togither began to ſit them downe behinde certaine Haſels, where they might not bee ſeene, but where they might diſtinctly heare the Shepherds ſongs, whoſe voices reſounding ouer all the forreſt, made a ſingular ſweete melodie, as you ſhall heare in the Booke that followeth.

The end of the ſecond Booke.

The third Booke of Enamoured DIANA.

THe treacherie and malice of an iniurious and enuying ſtepdame is commonly woont to enterpriſe ſo deteſtable acts, that it would diſcourage the ſtouteſt hart, not onely to doe them, but make it tremble to thinke of them. And that which is worſt, is, that Fortune is ſo great a friend in changing good and proſperous eſtates, that ſhe ſheweth them all the fauour ſhe may in their vniuſt attempts: for ſhe knoweth that moſt of them endeuour to ſtirre vp ſtrange nouelties, and mutinies, and to be the occaſion and meanes of much ſorrow and trouble. The crueltie of *Feliſarda* was great, when by her vile and ſuttle ſlightes ſhe made the father ſo mortally abhorre his owne ſonne, and a husband to forſake his louing wife; the one deceiued by an apparant ſhewe of loue and dutie miſconſtrued; the other by a falſe report, and with a vaine and ſimple ſuſpect ſtinged: but yet her happe was the better, that brought her malicious and wicked purpoſe to that effect, that ſhe herſelfe deſired. And I ſpeake not this, to make men thinke the woorſe of all ſuch kinde of women, but bicauſe euerie one may liue aduiſedly by taking good heed of ſuch as *Feliſarda* was, which are but fewe (I hope) ſince ſo many of that noble ſexe are the glorie of the worlde, and the lanterns of life, whoſe ſinceritie, faith, diſcretion, and vertues with golden verſes deſerue to be eternized. For proofe whereof, *Diana* and *Iſmenia* may giue ſufficient teſtimonie, Shepherdeſſes adorned with ſingular beautie, chaſtitie, and wiſedome, whoſe hiſtories do blazon foorth their infinite and woorthie praiſes. In following the diſcourſe whereof, you muſt vnderſtand, that when *Marcelius* and they were ſitting behinde the Haſels, they heard that *Tauriſus* and *Berardus* did ſing as followeth.

Berardus.

THe coole freſh winde, Tauriſus, *that inuiting vs*
Amongſt the trees, the leaues is gently ſhaking,
Our ſences ioying, and with eaſe delighting vs:
The Cotes, and Sicamours ſweete ſhadowes making:
The Criſtall fountaines, that in copious ſwelling

Doe flowe, our thirſt with ſauourie liquours ſlaking:
The coloured flower, whoſe ſweete and fragrant ſmelling
To baniſh melancholie greefes ſufficeth,
Which makes the hart from ſweete content rebelling,
His might, that all deſpiſeth,
Cannot ſubdue, nor malice, nor the brauerie,
Of that moſt cruell king, whoſe ſway doth wearie vs,
Whoſe puniſhment, and ſlauerie
Is abſolute, vniuſt, and meere imperious.
For amorous greefes, to hels of paines that ferrie vs,
No remedies haue yet beene ſalutiferous,
But ſtill the poiſon fuming
Infects my ſoule with torments moſt peſtiferous.

Tauriſus.

He that in loue is euermore conſuming,
Is neuer glad, for ſuch an euill tires him,
Liuing in greefe, in greefe his death reſuming:
Loue giues him paines, and moſt with torments fires him,
When moſt he ſeekes his paſtime and his pleaſure;
For then with furious thoughts he moſt inſpires him:
Thoſe few times when a ſoule enioies her treaſure,
Greefe doth ſucceede in place, whoſe baleſull ſouenaunce
Makes it returne to playning without meaſure:
Loue will enioy his conenants:
And whom he conquers, kils, or priſoner taketh,
He thinkes by him to get moſt famous glorie:
His priſoner now, that quaketh,
He giues to Fortune, with his Fortune ſorie,
Or ſels to greefe, whom euermore it ſhaketh,
And paints in him her dire and tragicke ſtorie,
And him thats burning in his hotteſt fires
He quite conſumes, the cruell he retires.

Berardus.

The whole man waxeth ſicke as he intreates him,
He turnes each hart from former ioy to ſadnes,
Still killing him, that liuing is, and threates him,
That is moſt free, with bonds, the ſcourge of gladnes:
Since then (my ſoule) thou knoweſt too well how cruell
This Tyrant is, be patient, and content thee,
That ſuch a place containes thy amorous fuell:
(So high a place) Take greefes, and now preſent thee
To all thoſe harmes, and paines he ſhall enure thee:
Enioy thine ill, and in thy greefes maintaine thee,
Bicauſe by how much more thou ſhalt procure thee
A meanes, to rid thy ſelfe from that that paines thee,
The more thou ſhalt enwrap thee in his briers,
And ſhalt be furdeſt from thy cheefe deſires:

Tauriſus.

Taurisus.

Loue findes in me so well disposed matter,
And such a minde to amplifie his glorie,
That mongst all those, whose mournfull flockes doe scatter
On both Hisperias *plaines, in loue so sorie,*
My daily greefes are euer more augmented:
Salt showers of teares mine eies haue euer rained:
And more, then wretched Biblis *malcontented,*
When turned to a fountaine she remained.
Strange is my good, my paine is proper to me,
Faine would I see Dianas *face, but twenty,*
And twenty deaths in seeing her vndoe me,
I die for want neere to the fount of plenty:
Her presence doth with paines and torments fill me,
Her absence doth with desperation kill me.

Berardus.

The woods doe murmur, and the meadow smileth,
And iugging nightingales are sweetely singing:
But death to thousand woes my hope exileth:

Taurisus.

The blooming trees smell sweete, that now are springing,
The grasse growes greene, with many a painted flower:
But I remaine (O woe) in sorrowes stinging:

Berardus.

My woes my wits haue slaine in such an howre,
That now I haue no power
To say by hart ten verses all along:

Taurisus.

My toong doth cleaue euen in my very song,
Wherefore (my friend) prolong
The time no more, but sing that sweetest dittie,
Which interrupted with thy sighes of pitie,
And teares, in euery citie
And countrie towne, so highly did commend thee.

Berardus.

Singing with thee, it shall no whit offend me,
But ease and pleasure lend me:
Then answer me. But now what shall I sing?

Taurisus.

Sing that that saieth. The radiant star doth bring?
Or that: Loues teares doe spring. *&c.*
Or that: I knowe not well how it doth say,

Which

Which thou ſung'ſt on a day,
Dauncing with faire Diana *on a greene.*

Berardus.

No Tigreſſe nor no lioneſſe haue beene,
But with compaſſion mooued
Of all my torments, able to deſpaire one:
But not that cruell faire one,
The fierce deuoureſſe of my life approoued.

Tauriſus.

The fierce deuoureſſe of my life approoued,
My peereleſſe Shepherdeſſe,
As fell in hart, as ſhe is faire in face:
How then in ſuch a caſe
Can I eſcape (O greefe) but die without redreſſe?

Berardus.

Can I eſcape (O greefe) but die without redreſſe
With deathes of racking paſſions?
But when I ſee Diana *faire, her ſight my griefes aſſwageth,*
Yet then my ſoule enrageth:
The more I haue to doe with loue, the leſſe I knowe his faſhions.

Tauriſus.

The more I haue to doe with loue, the leſſe I knowe his faſhions,
His ſeruants he neglecteth
And he, that flying ſeeketh to eſcape his mortall chaine,
With thriſe redoubled paine
He wounds, and with his furious plagues his wretched ſoule infecteth.

Berardus.

Faire Shepherdeſſe, whoſe face the heauenly powers
Haue graced with more beautie, then the Roſes:
And ſweeter then the purple golden flowers,
That deckes our meades and virgins breſtes with poſes:
So may the heauens powre downe in copious plentie
Vpon thy flockes their fauours moſt abounding:
And thy faire ewes, with double twins not emptie,
In numbers ſwarme, in profit ſtill redounding:
That to my ſoule, which my demerit peſters,
Thou wouldſt not ſhew ſterne lookes, nor angrie geſtures.

Tauriſus.

Faire Shepherdeſſe, that with thy neighbour dwelling,
Doſt cleere thy fieldes bedight with Daffodillies,
The driuen ſnowe in whiteneſſe far excelling,
In beautie Gilloflowres, and ſtately lillies:

So

So prosper may thy fieldes in euery season
In corne, and frut, which thou maist taste at pleasure:
Thy peares, and plums, and apricocks so geason
By handfuls maist thou pull in plentious measure:
That thou wouldst looke vpon thy swaine so sorie:
For of thy sight depends his cheefest glorie.

About this time the yoong Gentleman, and Gentlewoman that were harkening to the Shepherds songs, did cut them off, and gaue them many thankes for the delight and recreation, which with so sweete musicke they had giuen them. And after this the Gentleman turning to the Gentlewoman said. Didst thou euer (sister) in the magnificent and stately Cities heare musicke that pleased the eare, and delighted the minde like this? Truely (saide she againe) these pastorall and country songs, being full of simplicitie and plainnes, please me more, then the delicate voices set togither with curious skill, and full of newe inuentions and conceits in the braue pallaces of Kings and Princes. And when I thinke this melodie to be better then that, you must the rather beleeue it, bicause I haue been present at the best musicke that in any Citie of the world or Kings Court, was euer heard. For in that happie time, when *Marcelius* was a sutor to our sister *Alcida*, he did some nights sing to the tune of his Lute so sweetely, that if *Orpheus* made so solemne musicke, I did not maruell then if the Birdes, and Beastes did follow him, and that he brought backe his deere wife *Euridice* from darke hell. Ah *Marcelius*, where art thou nowe? Ah where art thou *Alcida*? Ah most hapleſſe woman that I am, how often doth Fortune surcharge my memorie with obiects of greefe, when she sees me enioy the least content and pleasure in the worlde? *Marcelius* heard the talke of the Gentleman and the Damosell, which were with the Shepherds behinde the shrubs and bushes, and when he perceiued that they named him and *Alcida*, he began to bee somewhat altered. He scarcely beleeued his owne eares, and was doubting with himselfe whether it was another *Marcelius* and *Alcida* whom they named. He rose vp by and by out of his place, and to cleere himselfe of all doubt, comming neerer, he knewe that they were *Polydorus* and *Clenarda*, brother and sister to *Alcida*: Whertupon he ran suddenly to them, and with open armes, and abundance of teares, somtimes embracing *Polydorus*, sometimes *Clenarda*, he stoode a great while before hee could speake for inward greefe. *Polydorus* and *Clenarda* wondring at this noueltie, could not coniecture what accident it was, bicause *Marcelius* going in a Shepherds habite, was vnknowne vnto them, vntill his sobs and teares giuing him leaue, he saide. O deere brother and sister, care not nowe for my ill fortune paste, and to come, since I am the happiest man in the world in seeing you. Ah, why is not *Alcida* in your companie? Is she perhaps hidden in any part of this thicke woode! O let me know some newes of her, if you can tell me any, to ease my cruell greefe, and to satisfie my desire! In speaking these wordes, they knewe *Marcelius*, and embracing him very affectionately, and weeping for pleasure and greefe, they saide vnto him. O happie day! O vnexpected ioy! O deere brother of our soules, what cruell Fortune hath bin the cause, that thou dost not enioy the company of *Alcida*, nor we her sight? Why dost thou dissemble thy selfe with this new habite? O cruell fortune, in the end there is not full content of any good. *Diana* and *Ismenia* on the other side, seeing that *Marcelius* had so on the sudden gone to the place where the Shepherds did sing, went after him, and founde him talking with *Polydorus* and *Clenarda*, as you

haue

haue heard. When *Taurisus* and *Berardus* saw *Diana*, the ioye, that at so sweete and sudden a sight they tooke, cannot be tolde. And so *Taurisus* shewing a maruellous kinde of gladnes in his hart, and words, said vnto her. This is no small fauour of fortune (faire *Diana*) to make her, that continually flies our companie, by vnexpected and happie chances to come so often where wee are. That is not the cause of Fortune (woorthie Shepherds) saide *Diana*, but rather bicause you are so excellent in singing & playing on your instruments: for there is no place of pleasure where you are not, and where your sweete musicke & songs are not heard. But now, since I am come hither, though ignorant of your being heere, and that the parching Sunne is now in the highest way, I shall be very glad to passe away the heate of the daie in this pleasant place, and in your good companie: and though it standes me vpon to go quickly to *Felicias* pallace, yet will I not thinke the time long to staie heere with you to take part of the coole and greene grasse, and to harken to your delightfull musicke. Prepare your selues therefore to sing and plaie, and to all kinde of honest myrth, for it will not become this place, and braue assemblie to be without such kinde of pleasure. And you Gentleman, and faire Gentlewoman, surcease your teares a while, bicause you shall haue time enough heereafter to tell to each other your Fortunes and aduentures, and to bewaile, or reioice at the ill or good successe of them. All of them liked well of *Dianas* speech, and so they sat them downe vpon the fine greene grasse rounde about the Fountaine. That was the pleasanteſt place in all the wood, and more then any of those, that were celebrated by the cleere Bagpipe of *Neapolitan Syncerus* in famous *Parthenia*. There was in this place a broad quadrant fortie paces of euerie side, and compassed about with a great number of thick trees. So that in a maner of a walled castle, they, that went to recreat themselues in it, could not go but by one way into it. It was couered all ouer with greene grasse and sweete flowers, neuer troden downe with the feete of sheepe or goates, nor mangled with their slicing teeth. In the mids thereof was a goodly cleere fountaine, which, issuing foorth at the foote of an olde Oake, rose vp fower square and deepe; not made by skilfull hand, but placed there by prouident nature to such purposes, as with the abundance of the waters it made there a delightfull meeting, which the Shepherds named the *faire Fountaine*. The brinkes of this fountaine were of white stone so euen, that none would haue thought, but that it was made with artificiall hand, if the naturall stones growing there, did not deceiue his sight, which were fastened in the ground as hard, as the craggie rocke, and flint in the wilde mountaines. The water that came out of that sweete fountaine, issuing out of two narrow pipes, did water the grasse and trees about it, making them continually to spring, and fertill, and keeping them in a pleasant and fine verdure. This *faire Fountaine* for euerie goodly pleasure about it was so much visited of the Shepherds and Shepherdesses, that there was neuer wanting about it pastorall mirth and ioy. Who likewise had it in such veneration and account, that when they came to it, they left their flockes without, bicause the cleere and sweete waters might not be troubled, nor the fine little meadow fed, nor troden downe by the hungrie and careless sheepe. About this fountaine (as I saide) they all sat downe, and taking necessarie foode out of their scrips, did eate it more sauourly, and with greater content, then the greatest Lords their varietie and number of daintie dishes. At the end of which repast, as *Marcelius* on the one side, and *Polydorus* and *Clenarda* on the other, were greatly desirous to heare, and make relation of their passed fortunes, *Marcelius* first began to say to the other two in this sort. It is great reason (brother

and

and ſiſter) that I know ſomthing of your aduentures and accidents, ſince laſt I ſaw you, bicauſe ſeeing not your Father *Eugerius*, nor your ſiſter *Alcida* in your company, it makes a great alteration in my hart, not knowing the cauſe thereof. To whom *Polydorus* anſwered.

Bicauſe this goodly place might not be iniured (me thinkes) with reports of dole and ſorrow, and that theſe Shepherds with hearing of our hard haps might not be alſo greeued, with the feweſt words (that poſſible may be) I will report the many miſeries and diſgraces that we haue receiued of Fortune.

After that I was hindered by the mariners from leaping into the ſciffe, hauing attended fit time and occaſion to haue deliuered my father *Eugerius* (being faint and halfe dead) out of the dangerous ſhip, and that of force I was conſtrained to remaine (to my great griefe) with my feareſull father in it, the ſorrowfull olde man was ouercome with ſuch bitter anguiſh and paine, as may be imagined of a louing father, who in the end of his aged yeeres, ſeeth the violent perdition of his owne life and of his louing children. He tooke no heed now to the maine blowes, which the cruell waues did beate againſt the ſhips ſides, nor to the rage of the angrie windes that did bluſter on euerie ſide, but caſting his eies to the little boate wherein thou wert *Marcelius* with *Alcida* and *Clenarda* (which at euerie flote of the hoiſting billowes ſeemed to turne ouer) the more he ſaw it going from the ſhip, the more his hart burſt in peeces. And when he loſt ſight of you, he was in danger of yeelding vp his decaied ſpirits. The ſhip driuen on by the crueltie of Fortune, went floating vp and downe the maine ſeas fiue daies togither, after that we parted; at the ende of which time, the Sunne going downe towards the Weſt, we were in ken of lande: At ſight whereof the Marriners were verie glad, as well for recouerie of their loſt hope, as alſo for knowing the coaſt whither the ſhip was driuen. For it was the moſt fertill countrey and moſt abounding in all ſorts of pleaſures, as far as the Sun doth heate with his beames: In ſo much that one of the Marriners taking a Rebecke out of a cheſt, with the which he was wont to cheere vp himſelfe in long and dangerous voiages, began to play and ſing to it in manner following.

WElcome thy friendes from ſwelling ſeas that rore
With hideous noiſe, and toſt by Neptunes *toile,*
O fortunate and faire Valencia *ſhore,*
Where nipping froſt doth neuer hurt thy ſoile,
Nor Phebus *with his woonted parching beames*
Doth burne thy meades, nor heates thy chriſtall ſtreames.

Thriſe happy he, who liuing without feare
In ſwallowing ſeas and billowes to be drownd,
Enioies thy golden beauties euery weare,
Of thy ſweete meades, greene banks, and fruitfull ground,
Thy ground bedeckt with flowres ſo fine and faire,
Maintainde with heauenly deaw and pleaſant aire.

With greater toile the ſhip doth cut the ſeas,
Then wearie plowmen doth thy gentle fieldes,
Then happy Earth, the ioy and wiſhed eaſe
Of traueled ſoules, that to thy ſuccour yeeldes,

Receiue

Receiue into thy pleaſant woods and caues,
Before the ſea doth rage in roring waues,

Receiue (I ſay) poore and diſaſtrous men
Beaten with ſtormes and almoſt caſt away,
Since now we are arriu'd within the ken
Of thy braue coaſtes, this ſeuenfold happy day:
That I may waſh in Turia, *as of late,*
Theſe waters and accurſed waues to hate.

By the Marriners ſong we knew, that the ſhoare which we went to, was in the kingdome of *Valentia*, a countrey famous throughout all the world. But whileſt he was ſinging this ſong, the ſhip blowen on by a mightie ſtrong guſt of winde, came ſo neere vnto the ſhoare, that if the ſciffe had not beene wanting, we might haue gone into it a land. But we were hailed a far off by certaine fiſher men; who ſeeing our ſayles loſt, our maſte broken, our tackling torne, and the forecaſtle ſhiuered in pieces, knew in what neede of helpe we were. Whereupon ſome of them getting in their boate, in which they went commonly a fiſhing, being readie at the ſhoare, came to vs, and with great kindnes, and trouble tooke vs all out of the ſhip. The ioy at which landing we made was ſo great, as the like may not be imagined. *Eugerius* and I gaue a thouſand thankes, and due rewards for ſo ſingular a courteſie to the fiſhermen, that of their owne accord, and without entreatie ſo louingly tooke vs into their boate: But they being men pitifull by nature, and of a ſimple and bountifull diſpoſition, cared not for our gifts, but refuſing them rather, one of them ſaide vnto vs. Thanke vs not ſo much (Gentlemen) for this kinde of ductie, conſidering that we are bound to ſuccour men in their neceſſities, accept our good will onely that inforceth vs to this ſmall piece of ſeruice. And be aſſured that at all times when like occaſion ſhall happen as this, we would be as readie as now we are to hazard our liues in it. Bicauſe no longer agoe then this morning happened a ſtranger chaunce then this, wherein if we had not employed our labours to helpe it, as now we haue done, it would haue grieued vs to death. And thus it was, that at breake of day, going out of our ſheds with our nets, and ordinarie tew to go a fiſhing, before we came to the ſea ſide, we ſaw the cloudes to waxe darke, the ſea to make a great noiſe, and the winds to riſe with great force, and twiſe we would haue turned backe againe, being halfe afeard to truſt the dangerous waues in ſo tempeſtuous a time. But yet ſome of vs thought it not amiſſe to go to the ſhoare ſide, to ſee what would become of the threatning tempeſt, and to trie, if after lowring weather and Fortune, any faire calme (as it is woont to doe) or Sunſhine would follow. But when we were come thither, we ſaw a boate ſtriuing and toſſing vp and downe the ſwelling waues, without ſayle, maſte, or oares in it, and in the ſame danger as you were. Being mooued to compaſſion, we launched one of our boates into the ſea, and leaping quickly into it without any feare of danger or Fortune, we made towards the boate that was in great perill to be caſt away, and after a little while came to it. When we were ſo neere vnto it, that we might well diſcerne thoſe that were in it, we ſaw a gentlewoman, ignorant of her Fortune and name, who with her eies ſwollen with teares, and her armes caſt abroade called vpon vs, and with pitifull and dolefull words ſaid thus vnto vs. Ah deere brothers, deliuer me I beſeech you from this danger of cruell Fortune, but helpe me, moſt earneſtly I pray you, out of theſe Trai-

tours

tours hands that come with me, who againſt all reaſon keepe me heere captiue, and by maine force would violate my deere honour. When wee heard this, with all the haſte we could make, and not without great perill, we tooke them both out of the boate, and carried them to lande. She told vs of the treaſon and deceit that they had done to her, and to a ſiſter of hers and a brother in law, which would be too long to declare. And ſhe is now at home in the company of our wiues, free from the crueltie and villanie of the two Marriners that came with her, whom we haue committed to priſon in a towne not far from hence, where after a few daies, they ſhall be duely puniſhed for their wicked treacherie. When any ſuch chaunce therefore doth befall, as this did not long ſince, who of vs all would not aduenture himſelfe in like dangers, to recouer thoſe that are in hazard of Fortune, & to do good to miſerable men? When *Eugerius* and I heard the Marriner tell this tale, our harts leapt in our breaſt for ioy, imagining, that it was one of his daughters & my ſiſter: wherefore we both tooke great comfort, knowing that we ſhould ſee anone whether our ſurmiſe was true or not? While the Marriner was recounting to vs this accident, the boate driuen by force of oares, went on ſo faſt, that at laſt we came to ſhoare. The fiſher men bare feete and bare legged lept into the water, and vpon their ſhoulders carried vs to wiſhed land. And when we were there, knowing what great neede of reſt and cheriſhing we had, one of the auncienteſt of them, taking my Father by the hand, and making ſignes to me & to the reſt to follow him, went towards his houſe, which was not far off, to refreſh and reſt vs, which was verie needfull for vs. Being come thither, we heard women ſinging within, and we had not gone in before we had heard and vnderſtoode the manner and matter of their ſongs, if the poore caſe that we were in, would haue giuen vs leaue to ſtaie without to hearken to them. But *Eugerius* & I thought euerie minute of an hower too long before we went in, to ſee what that Damoſell ſhould be, whom they had ſet free from the tempeſt and Traytours hands. We went on the ſudden into the houſe, and the women (which were the fiſher mans wife and his two faire daughters) being ſomewhat abaſhed at our ſight, left of their ſong: for they were ſweetly ſinging, while they were knitting of nets to take the ſilly fiſh, in the middeſt of whom was the Damoſell, which was knowen by and by; for it was my ſiſter *Clenarda*, which is heere preſent. The accidents that we paſſed after this, and that which ſhe eſcaped before, let her ſelfe recount, bicauſe I dare not take in hand ſo hard a taske. But there were complaints, teares, ſighes, and pleaſures intermingled with paines, ſweetenes, ſowrenes, and ſuch words and deeds as a wiſe man may eaſily coniecture. At the ende of which, my Father turning to the fiſher mans daughters, ſaid vnto them. Since I came hither (faire maides) to refreſh my ſelfe, and to take ſome eaſe of my paſſed troubles, it is not therefore reaſon that my comming ſhould interrupt and moleſt your mirth and ſinging, bicauſe they alone ſhall be ſufficient to cheere vp my ſorrowfull hart. You ſhall not want this ſeruice (ſaid the fiſher man) whileſt you are in my houſe: or elſe I will endeuour at the leaſt to procure it for you by all meanes poſſible. Let not this therefore be any part of your care, but rather to make your ſelfe ſtrong againe, with ſome good foode, for ſuch homely muſicke ſhall not be wanting at any time. Then his wife brought vs out ſome victuals, and while we were at them, one of the maids, called *Nerea*, did ſing vs this ſong.

Nereas Song.

IN those most happy fieldes and plaines,
Where Guadaljar in goodly vaines
With christall streames doth glide,
Leauing the sweete and pleasant fieldes,
Vnto the sea his tribute yeeldes
And runs with hastie tide.

Faire Galatee full of disdaine,
And ioyfull of the woes and paine
To Lycius that she gaue.
Played vpon the sands and shore,
The which the sea sometimes before
Doth wash with wallowing waue.

Gathering amongst the sandes alone
Fine shels, and many a painted stone,
As she went vp and downe:
And singing many songs so sweete,
The which the roring billowes yet
Did alter much and drowne.

Neere to the water side she hies,
And there the waues that fall and rise
She view'd with great delight;
And fled, when that they came amaine,
And sometimes could not, but was faine
To wet her feete so white.

Lycius, who had in suffring paines
No equall in those fieldes and plaines,
His torments there suspended,
Whiles that he view'd with great content
His Shepherdesse so excellent,
For beautie most commended.

But now comparing his vnrest
With all the ioy that she possest,
The Shepherd halfe decaied
With dolefull voice his sad complaints
To shores and champaines he acquaints,
And in this manner said.

O fairest Nymph, if that thou please,
Play not about the roring seas,
Although thy chiefe delight
Consist therein, yet Galatee
As thou dost Licius, so the sea
Eschew with hastie flight.

And now (sweete Nymph) leaue of to play,
For it doth greeue me day by day
To see thee on the sandes:
O doe not now torment me more,
For seeing thee vpon the shore
I feare false Neptunes hands.

And this doth fill me full of doubtes,
That I must credit these my thoughtes,
Bicause it is most cleere,
That if he die not now for thee,
He will no doubt thy louer bee
When that he sees thee heere.

And this is sure: For loue doth knowe,
Since first my soule he wounded so,
That I should neuer want
A stronger riuall, and more stoute,
Then I, who daily would seeke out
My true loue to supplant.

Leaue then the barren sands and shore,
Forsake the cliffes, come there no more,
Flie from that dangerous coast:
Take heede no monster of the sea
Surprise thee not (faire Galatee)
Where many haue beene lost.

Flie now, and see how I endure
Ten thousand greefes to see thee sure,
Bicause with double paine
Iealous I am of thy content,
And for thy dangers imminent
Great cares I doe sustaine.

In seeing thee so mery and glad,
My iealous thoughts doe make me sad,
And thinke of Europe faire,
Deceiued by a milke white bull,
As on the sea bankes she did cull
Fine flowers to dresse her haire.

And

And more, my ordinarie cares
Make me to thinke, how vnawares
Disdainfull Alnade was
Dishiuered and deuour'd by
A huge sea monster, that did lie
Hard by where he did passe.

But well away, that I dee see
Signes of no feare nor greefe in thee,
For this my sorrow knowes,
That he, thats not of loue afraide,
Can with no dangers be dismaide,
And feares not where he goes.

O then (my peereleſſe Nymph) take heede,
Leſt Cupid doe reuenge with ſpeede,
To ſee himſelfe contemned,
For being ſuch a God of might,
He will not ſuffer, but will ſmite,
When he is once offended.

Come goe with me vnto the woods,
Where euery plant ſprout foorth her buds,
And to the goodly fieldes,
Where we will ſpend the pleaſant howers,
Amongſt the faire and redolent flowers,
That nought but pleaſure yeeldes.

If waters pleaſe thee, I will bring
Thee to ſo faire and fine a ſpring,
That to be firſt in praiſe
Amongſt the reſt, thy body white
To waſh within her waters bright,
For thee it onely ſtaies.

Diſporting in this naked place,
Thou haſt no vaile to hide thy face,
Nor ſhade from parching ſunne,
Pitie it were thy beauties blaze,
Which enuious Titan feares to gaze,
By him ſhould be vndone.

Heere hear'ſt thou no melodious voice,
But ſtill a huge and feareſull noiſe
Of monſters hideous raues,
And ſeas, that rore like tumbling thunder,
Toſt with the windes, that beate aſunder
The proude and raging waues.

What ioy and pleaſure canſt thou take,
To ſee the toſſing billowes ſhake
Aſkip vpon the ſand?
And then to ſee the broken plankes,
And carcaſes in pitious rankes
Come ſwimming to the land.

Come to the frithes, and forreſts tall,
Where nature hath beene liberall
With many a pleaſant ſeate.
Come to the coole and ſweeteſt ſhades,
Where in greene pathes and open glades
We paſſe away the heate.

Flie, flie, thoſe proude and ſwelling ſeas,
Come, come and thou ſhalt ſee what eaſe
We take, and how we ſing
Ditties ſo ſweete, that in ſuſtence
We hold the rockes, and euery ſence
Of euery liuing thing.

And though that ſome be full of pitie,
Loue forceth them to ſuch a dittie,
For loue is full of paine:
Yet all the Shepherdes will I moue,
To ſing no mournefull ſongs of loue,
Onely to pleaſe thy vaine.

There maiſt thou reade in euery tree,
And euery meade that thou ſhalt ſee
The loues in knots diſguis'd
Of iolly Shepherdes, and the names
Of chiefeſt Nymphes, and countrie dames
In curious ſort deuis'd.

But it will make thee ſad, I feare,
To ſee thy name ingrauen there,
By knowing it was carued
By him, whom thou didſt euer blot
Out of thy minde, and haſt forgot,
And with diſfauours ſtarued.

And though thine anger will be ſuch,
Yet wilt thou maruell not ſo much
To ſee thy carued name,
As thou wilt woonder then to ſee,
That he doth loue and honour thee,
That there did write the ſame.

Not to be loued, and to loue,
It is a greeuous greefe to prooue:
But what a greefe or paine
Could it in thee (faire Nymph) procure,
To be beloued with loue so pure,
And not to loue againe?

But now despis'd I reckon small
Faire Galatee *my torment all*
So that thou wilt forsake
These swallowing sandes, and seas so high,
Where monsters bellow out and crie,
And daily praies doe take.

What better pastime canst thou finde
Neere to the seas of blustring winde,
Then in our woods and mountaines
To listen to the nightingales,
And gather flowers in our vales,
And bathe in christall fountaines.

I would to God thou liuedst heere,
In our faire fieldes and riuers cleere,
And for to loue them more,
I would to God thou wouldst but see
Before I should report to thee
How they excell the shore.

Bicause I know, the more I praise
These woods, meades, springs & louely laies,
The lesse thou wilt beleeue me;
And wilt not come where thou dost knowe,
That part of my content doth growe
Which most of all doth greeue me.

Poore Lycius *would haue spoken more,*
To win her from that hapless shore,
But that she bad him cease:
For with an angrie face and scoule
She turn'd vnto the wretched soule,
And bad him hold his peace.

Then went she to her sportes againe,
He to his plaintes and woonted paine:
And in the selfesame sort
He still remaines in woonted sorrow,
She in the sea bankes euen, and morrow,
Contented with her sport.

The faire maides song, and our supper ended al at one time, which being done, we demanded of *Clenarda* what had hapned vnto her since our last departure from her, who tolde vs what villanie *Sartofano* offered vnto her, in what case *Alcida* was left, of thy imprisonment, her captiuitie, and in the ende all that thou knowest at large. We bewailed bitterly our hard Fortunes, which when the Fisherman hearde, hee comforted vs vp as well as he could, and tolde vs especiallie how that in these parts there was the sage *Felicia*, whose wisedome was enough to remedie our greefes; giuing vs also notice of *Alcida*, and of thee, to the which our desires principally tended. And so passing away that night the best we coulde, assoone as morning came, leauing the marriners there that came with vs in the shippe, we three alone went our waies, and not long after came to the Temple of *Diana*, where the wise Lady *Fecia* keepes her court. We sawe there the admirable temple, the most pleasant gardens, the sumptuous pallace, there we knew the great wisedome of the most graue Ladie, and other things that filled vs so full of woonder, that wee haue scarce anie breath to tell them againe. There we sawe the fairest Nymphes, examples of chastitie, many Lordes and Ladies, Shepherds, and faire Shepherdesses, and especiallie one Shepherd named *Syrenus*, whom euery one there made great account of: To him and many more besides, did sage *Felicia* giue diuers remedies for their loues and greefes. But the pleasure, which but hitherto yet she hath done vs, is, to keepe our Father *Eugerius* in her companie, commanding vs to goe towardes these parts, and that we should not returne vntill we had found out some content or good Fortune. And for the great ioy that wee haue receiued by thy sight, I thinke wee haue good occasion to go backe againe, especially for that we haue left there our Father

all

all alone and comfortleſſe: I know well that in ſeeking out *Alcida* is no ſmall eaſe to his carefull thoughts; but bicauſe Fortune hath not theſe manie daies giuen vs any newes of her, we ſhall take the better courſe to returne backe againe, then to ſuffer our old Father to be depriued ſo long of our companie. After *Polydorus* had made an end of his diſcourſe, euery one was aſtoniſhed to heare ſuch ſtrange accidents; and after *Marcelius* had wept for *Alcida*, he made a breefe relation to *Polydorus*, and *Clenarda* of that which had happned to him ſince he ſawe them laſt. When *Diana* and *Iſmenia* heard *Polydorus* make an end of that ſorrowfull hiſtorie, they deſired to go the ſooner to *Felicias* court, the one bicauſe ſhe knew aſſuredly that *Syrenus* was there; the other, bicauſe ſhe conceiued a certaine hope (hearing of the woonderfull wiſedome of *Felicia*) to haue alſo ſome redreſſe for her greefes. Being therefore poſſeſſed with this deſire, *Diana* (although ſhe was minded to recreate herſelfe certaine howers in that pleaſant place) altered her determination, eſteeming more of *Syrenus* ſight, then of the greene hew of that goodly and fine wood. Whereupon riſing vp, ſhe ſaid to *Tauriſus* and *Berardus*. Sit yee (merrie Shepherds) ſtill, and enioy the delight and ſweetenes of this pleaſant place, for the deſire that I haue to go to *Dianas* temple, will not let me ſtay any longer here. We are right ſorie to forſake ſo delightfull a ſhede & ſo good cõpany, but we are forced to follow our Fortune in this behalf. Wilt thou be ſo diſcurteous (faire Shepherdeſſe) (ſaid *Tauriſus*) to depart ſo ſoone from our doleſull eies, and to let vs ſo ſmall a while enioy thy ſweet ſight & ſpeeches? Theſe Shepherds haue great reaſon (ſaid *Marcelius* to *Diana*) to demãd ſuch a gentle requeſt, & it is therfore as great again that their demand be not denied them in reward of their conſtant faith & true loue, which deſerues to enioy thy companie a little while in this pleaſant place, eſpecially when thou haſt time enough to be at *Dianas* temple before the Sunne wil hide his light. All of them were of his opinion, and therefore *Diana* woulde not ſeeme diſcourteous to anie of them, but ſitting down again in her place, ſhe would not rather pleaſe herſelfe, then diſpleaſe ſo braue a companie as that was. Now then louing Shepherds (ſaid *Iſmenia* to *Berardus* and *Tauriſus*) ſince faire *Diana* doth not denie vs her preſence, it is not reaſon that you denie her your ſongs. Sing iolly Shepherds, that in your ſongs & roundelaies ſhewe ſo great cunning, and ſo perfect loue, being for the one commended in al the townes and countries heereabout, and mooning the hardeſt harts with the other to loue and pitie. True (ſaide *Berardus*) all harts, ſauing *Dianas*, and began to weepe, and *Diana* to ſmile. Which when the Shepherd ſawe, to the ſweete ſound of his pipe with the ſwelled teares ſtanding in his eies, he ſung a gloſſe vpon this Dittie.

MY greeuous ſighes and ſorrowfull teares
In ſtones doe make their liuely print,
But not in thee harder then any flint.

The gloſſe.

Let not thy Graces rare,
Be with my ſeruice any whit offended,
Since that my greeuous fare,
And torments paſt, to thy deuotions tended,
Where neuer yet with greefe of thee lamented,
Nor with my ſighes thy crueltie relented.

Thy hart was neuer changed with my cries,
With which I was importunate alwaies
To wearied earth and skies:
Thought thou dost see not onely nights and daies
Spilt and consum'd with many feares,
My greeuous sighes and sorrowfull teares.

In thy conditions strange thou art,
That dost not cease with stranger deathes to kill me:
But strangest is my sorrowfull hart,
That suffring paines wherewith thou dost so fill me,
And liuing in so strange and cruell passion,
It dies not in most strange and cruell fashion.
For if an ill a little time relents,
(Although it be the hardest to sustaine)
it openeth yet some vents
To ease, and doth not giue such mortall paine:
But greefe that hath no end nor stint,
In stones doe make their liuely print.

Loue is a daintie milde, and sweet,
A gentle power, a feeling fine and tender,
So that those harmes, and paines vnmeete,
Which I doe passe, thou onely dost engender:
Onely to him his torments loue deuiseth,
That scornes his lawes, his rites, and loue despiseth.
And this is now my mortall paine and death,
That, loue (since first thy beauties I did see)
Like to my proper breath,
Wherewith I liue, hath euer beene in mee:
In me it liues, in me it makes his print,
But not in thee, harder then any flint.

Berardus song pleased *Diana* well, but perceiuing by it, that he made her hart harder then the stones, she would for her credite haue answered him againe, & therfore said. It is a merrie iest (by my life) to call her hard that is modest, and cruell, that is carefull to keepe her honestie, I woulde to God, Shepherd, my soule were no more sorrowfull, then my hart is hard. But O greefe! Fortune hath made me captiue to so iealous a husband, that I was many times constrained to shew discurtesie to gentle Shepherds in these hils, dales, and fieldes, bicause I woulde not haue added more sorrow to my troublesome life with him. And yet for all this, the knot of marriage and reason oblige me to seeke out my rude and ill conditioned husband, although I looke not for any thing else at his hands, then sorrow, care, greefe, and manie more annoies in his frowarde companie. *Taurisus* taking nowe occasion at *Dianas* complaints, which she made of her vnfortunate marriage, began to play on his Bagge-pipe, and to sing, speaking as it were to loue, and descanting vpon this common song that saieth.

The Song.

A Faire maide wed to prying iealouſie
One of the faireſt as euer I did ſee,
If that thou wilt a ſecret louer take,
Sweete life, doe not my ſecret loue forſake.

The gloſſe.

Beware good Loue, beware it is not well
To let blinde Fortune haue a greater part
In women, that in Beautie doe excell,
More then thy ſelfe, ſince ſuch an one thou art:
For Beautie being commended to thy power,
To grace the ſame,
Thou doſt thy ſelfe diſhonour euery hower,
And art to blame,
By ſuffring, that this thing ſhould euer be,
A faire maide wed to prying iealouſie.

Thou doſt but ill, ſince thou didſt euer make
Beautie thy friend, who therefore had prepared
Sorrowes for him, (that viewed her) for thy ſake,
Which otherwiſe ſhe would haue kept and ſpared:
And ſo my firmneſſe, and my faith ſo pure,
And all my paine,
A ſimple ſight did not the ſame procure,
Nor did maintaine,
But ſight of her, and it was onely ſhee
One of the faireſt as euer I did ſee.

O Loue! thou kilſt ſo many without end,
(For murdring is thy paſtime and delight)
That once I hope thy ſelfe thou ſhalt offend,
For want they ſhall on whom to worke thy ſpight.
Oh then how ſeemely ſhalt thou ſeeme to grone,
And wounded ſee
Thyſelfe with thine owne grieſes, and then thine owne
Captiue to be.
For thou at laſt thy ſelfe ſhalt not forſake,
If that thou wilt a ſecret Louer take.

Then maiſt thou giue to Louers double ſmart,
And then I will forgiue thee all the care
And amorous paines, thou didſt to me impart,
When that thy ſelfe (fond Loue) thou doſt not ſpare:
And if I blame thy deedes or do reproue thee,
Then ſhalt thou ſay,

(But to thy ſelfe) that reaſon yet did moue thee
To make away
Thy ſelfe, and for thy ſelfe thy death to take,
Sweete life do not my ſecret loue forſake.

All of them liked well of *Tauriſus* ſong, but *Iſmenia* eſpecially. For though it touched *Diana* moſt of all, bicauſe it ſpake of thoſe women that were ill married; yet the comment vpon it (which were complaints againſt loue) was common to all thoſe that were tormented with it. And therefore *Iſmenia*, who blamed *Cupid* for her paines, did not onely like of thoſe reprehenſions that *Tauriſius* gaue Loue, but ſhe herſelfe to the ſound of her Harpe, ſung a ſong to the ſame effect, which *Montanus* was woont to ſing, when he was a ſuter vnto her.

A Sonnet.

HAuing no cauſe, why in the deepeſt ſound
Of amorous ſeas my fraile barke doſt thou ſwallow?
O Loue! I'le make thy crueltie to ſound
Swifter from Eaſt to Weſt then flying ſwallow.
Though gales of windes doe bluſter in my ſterne,
Yet from the gulfe my ſhip ſhall neuer part
Of thy braue might, ſo furious and ſo ſterne,
Vntill my ſighes doe helpe to blowe apart.
If being in a ſtorme, my face I turne,
Then my deſire is weakned by thy might:
Thy force controules my force, that ſtriues in vaine:
I neuer ſhall arriue with happy turne
Into the port, and therefore, if I might,
I would let out my life in euery vaine.

Marcelius deferred not his anſwere long after them, with another ſong made to the ſame purpoſe, and of the ſame forme, ſauing that the complaintes that he made, were not onely againſt Loue, but againſt Fortune, and himſelfe.

A Sonnet.

STep after ſtep I followe death in ſight
Through euery field, and hill and troden vale,
For euerie day my ſpirits he doth cite,
And warnes my ſelfe, to ſhrowde me in his vale.
O death, that once thou wouldſt conſume this light,
That ſtill deducts my life in bliſſeleſſe bale:
Now that my hope hath paſt away ſo lgiht,
And ioies condemn'd to torments without bale.
That Goddeſſe, whoſe continuall frownes I beare,
And loue, that all my ioies aſunder teares,
And I my ſelfe, are foes vnto my hart:
She praying on me like a hungrie beare,
He chaſing me like to the wounded Hart,
And I, that doe increaſe my booteleſſe teares.

The

The desire that *Diana* had to go to *Felicias* pallace, would not suffer her to staie any longer there, nor harken to any more songs, but when *Marcelius* had ended his, she rose vp. And so did *Marcelius*, *Ismenia*, and *Clenarda*, vnderstanding *Dianas* mind, although they knew that *Felicias* house was nigh at hand, and that they had time enough to be there before night. After they had taken their leaue of *Taurisus* and *Berardus*, they went from the faire fountain that way that they came in, and walking thorow the wood at their leysure, enioying the pleasures and delights of it, at last they came out of it, and then they began to go thorow a great and wide plaine, passing goodly to behold, where they went thinking howe they might recreate their mindes with some myrth, while they were going on their waies, and euery one told his opinion concerning that matter. But *Marcelius*, who had euer the figure of *Alcida* engrauen in his hart and thoughts, tooke no greater delight nor other ioy, then to marke the sweete behauiour of *Polydorus* and *Clenarda*, and to harken to their talke. And therefore to delight himselfe fully with this desire he said. I beleeue not (faire Shepherdesses) that all your pastimes are comparable to the delight that you may haue, if *Clenarda* would discourse vnto you any of those things that she hath seene in the fieldes and bankes of *Guadalajar*. I passed that way in my peregrinations, but tooke no pleasure in those delights, bicause my minde went musing on other matters. But bicause wee haue two large howers (our iourney being but halfe an howers worke) to go to *Dianas* temple, we may therefore walke on softly, and she (if it please her) may tell vs somthing of that goodly and pleasant countrey. *Diana* and *Ismenia* seemed to be very glad, shewing by their amiable countenances, that they longed to haue her beginne, although *Diana* was very desirous to come betimes to the temple; but bicause she would not make it knowne to them, she concealed the great passions of her desire, by accommodating her will to their pleasures. *Clenarda* then entreated by *Marcelius*, following on her way, beganne to saie in this manner. Although I shall offend your daintie eares, and offer great iniurie to the worthines of the kingdome of *Valentia*, with a rude and disordered relation, to recount the ornaments, rarities, and pleasures of it; yet bicause I will in some part fulfil your gentle requestes, I will say something that I haue heard and seene therein: I will not make any particular narration of the fertilitie of the yeelding soyle, the pleasantnes of the flourishing fieldes, the beauties of the shrubby hils, the shadowes of the greene woods, the sweetenes of the cleere fountaines, the melodie of the singing birdes, the coolenes of the fresh and calme windes, the riches of the profitable flockes of sheepe and goates, the fairenes of the populous townes, the good nature of the louing people, the strangenes of the sumptuous temples, nor of many other things more, for which that countrey is famous thorow out the worlde, bicause it requireth larger time, and a better toong: But bicause you may knowe the cheefest glorie of that countrey, I will tell you that, which I heard renowned *Turia* the principall riuer of that land sing. *Polydorus* and I came on a day to his bankes, to aske the waie to *Dianas* temple of the Shepherds thereabouts, bicause they coulde best tell it in those parts, and comming to a cottage where certaine herdsmen were, wee founde them sweetely singing. We asked them that we desired to know, and they verie louingly informed vs at large of all we demanded, and afterwards tolde vs, that since we came in so good an hower, that we should not depart from thence, vntill we had heard a most sweete song, that the famous *Turia* would make not farre from thence after halfe an hower. We were well content to heare it, and so we staied to go with them. After we had staied a little while in their companie, we went vp along the

riuer

riuer bankes, vntill we came to a wide fielde, where we ſawe a great companie of Nymphes, Shepherds, and Shepherdeſſes, euery one attending when famous *Turia* would begin to ſing. Not long after we ſawe old *Turia* come out of a deepe caue, with a great pot (very curiouſly wrought) vnder his arme, his head crowned with a garland of Oke and Laurell, his armes all hairie, his white beard long and ſlimie: And ſitting downe on the grounde, leaning vpon his pot, and powring out of it abundance of chriſtalline waters, he cleered vp his hoarſe and hollow voice, and ſung as followeth.

The Song of Turia.

WAter (faire Springs, and pureſt running ſtreames)
This fortunate and moſt abundant ſoile,
Comfort the meades and trees, and pleaſant aire,
Defend the flowers from Titans *burning ſpoile,*
So with the fauour of the higheſt beames
I will maintaine my bankes ſo freſh and faire,
That theſe ſhall haue great enuie of my crowne,
The Father of flouds, Roſne, Myncius, *and* Garoune.

Whiles that you goe thus haſtening of your courſe,
Winding your ſtreames by many a crooked way,
And ioy Valencia *fieldes that ſweetely ſmell*
With ſauourie liquours in the hotteſt day:
My weake and feeble breath I will enforce
With my diuining ſpirit to foretell,
And ſing of thoſe good haps, that ſhall befall
By fauour of the heauens vnto you all.

Shepherds, and Nymphes, within theſe louely dales
Whoſe names reſound vnto th' Arcadian fieldes,
Giue eare to me: But of the painted flowers,
Nor pleaſure, that the ſprings and medowes yeeldes,
Nor woods, nor ſhades, nor warbling nightingales,
I will not ſing, nor of the countrie powers:
But of thoſe famous men and worthy peeres,
That ſhall be heere not after many yeeres.

And now I ſee two Shepherds firſt in place,
Calixtus, *and* Alexander, *whoſe fames*
Surmounting the great Ceſars *chiefe renowne,*
From Atlas *vnto* Maurus *ſounds their names:*
Whoſe liues the heauens adorning with their grace,
Shall make them both to weare a reuerend crowne:
And ſaue from loſſe with their induſtrious heede,
As many flockes as in the world doe feede.

Of whoſe illuſtrous ſtocke I ſee ariſe
That man, whoſe hart baſe feare cannot rebuke,

Well

Well knowne for armes, and many martiall feates,
The Roman Cesar, and Valencian Duke:
A minde that mounts aboue the hautie skies,
Whom yet a cruell fate with murder threates,
That that rare strength, braue hart, and noble breath
Must haue an end by rawe and bloodie death.

The same likewise must in a moment end
The glory of Don Hugo de Moncades,
With valour, good successe and happy praise,
Leauing the Moores subdued by Spanish blades:
For Charles his blood most willing he shall spend,
After the winning of a thousand daies,
And fight he shall with strong and conquering hand
Against the French and barbarous Affrican.

But ill it doth befit to talke of those,
Whom furious Mars doth kindle with his heate,
When learned lampes doe grauely come in place:
For heere they shall arise, and shine in great
And glorious blaze, as far as Europe goes:
The darkest corners shall their lights imbrace.
Viues shall liue as long as Daphnes louer
Aboue the world with golden wings doth houer.

Whose highest skill and learning shall inherit
Iohn Honorate, and clime to honours hill,
Teaching the mightie Emp'rour of our land:
The Muses with great woonder he shall fill,
Whom now (me thinkes) I see with greatest merit
Bearing a Bishops Crosier in his hand:
O that such famous Shepherds, all my sheepe
And lambes might feede, and plaines and pastures keepe.

About that time Nunnez with praise shall flourish,
Who for deepe learning in his tender yeeres,
Shall be compar'd vnto the Stagarite:
Demosthenes giues place where he appeeres
And doth declame, whose eloquence doth nourish
His owne and strangers: But O vile despite,
And most ingratefull place, whom thou shalt make
For Ebrus banks, thy countrie to forsake.

But who shall tell you of that musicall,
Which many a Poet straining foorth his voice
Along my bankes so sweetely shall resound?
Heere doe I see how all of them reioice,
With fauours that Apollo giues them all,

For

For ſinging with a ſpirit moſt profound,
They ſhall enlarge this happy countries name,
From Pole to Pole with endleſſe golden fame.

And now I ſee that man, whoſe name ſhall bee
Bruted with liuing praiſe in euery part:
Whom I may well for golden verſe compare
To Phebe, to Mars in armes and martiall art,
Anſias March, who (flowring meade) of thee,
Loue, vertue, and death, ſhall ſing with verſe moſt rare
Taking for honorable and his iuſt empreſe
To celebrate the vertues of Tereſe.

Well ſhall he ſhew himſelfe to be the ſonne
Of Peter March, who both in peace, and war,
Learned in verſe, in armes moſt mighty heere,
Shall make his countrie famous very far:
Whoſe noble linage (when that they are done)
Wherein renowned valour doth appeere,
Shall giue a Iayme, and Arnau in thoſe daies
Poets, whom heauen ſhall fauour many waies.

Giorgio del Rey with verſe moſt high and ſtately
My banks ſhall honour, and with garlands crown'd
By all my fairеſt Nymphes, that ſhall imbrace him,
His name with double ecchoes ſhall reſound:
The gentle Planets fauouring but lately
His fellow Poets, in ſuch ſort ſhall grace him,
That Italie ſhall woonder at his verſe,
And die for ſpite his ſweete ſongs to reherſe.

Now Fraunces Oliuer, that with thy voice
Lifting thee vp vnto the Azur'd heauen,
Doſt wound the ſame: And thee renown'd Figueres
Whoſe verſe ſhall be moſt pleaſant, fine and euen,
And thee Martin Garcy, that maiſt reioice,
That (mauger death) thy fame time neuer weares:
And Innocent of Cubels I doe ſee,
Who well deſerues a crowne of Laurell tree.

Shepherdes, you ſhall haue heere a man of woorth,
That with the vertue of his ſecret skill,
And herbes, ſhall helpe your languors and your ſmartes,
And mend your liues with verſes at his will:
Then Nymphes ſtrow flowers and ſweeteſt herbes powre foorth
Vnto great Iayme Royg with thankfull hartes,
Crowne him with Bay with Parſley, and with Tyme,
For famous skill in phiſicke, and in ryme.

And great Narcis Vinnols, *that to the skie*
With loftie verse did blaze his woorthy praise,
Make him a crowne of Laurell faire and greene,
Whose fame shall not (though all the world decaies)
Another for a personage most high,
Whose verse shall reach as high as may be seene:
He shall be matcht with him that loued Laura,
His name, the famous Crespi Valladaura.

Me thinkes I see an Earle most excellent,
The noble Lord surnamed of his Oliue,
Which, while the world shall last: amongst his owne
And strangers, it shall flourish and suruiue:
His comely verse shall shine most orient
With perfect light, which he deriues alone
From heate that from his Centelles *doe arise*
Shining as bright as stars in cleerest skies.

And Nymphes, when that the heauens shall ioy you all
With Iohn Fernandz, *as now but with suppose,*
There shall no place be voide in all this land,
Where sowe ye may not Lillies and fine Roses:
And thou (light fame) stretch out thy slight, and call
Thy mighty powers, and vse them heere at hand:
And giue him that surname most souerayn
Thou gauest vnto the famous Mantuan.

And now I doe behold that Poet rare,
Iayme Gaçull, *who in* Valencian *ryme*
Did shew his pregnant and his liuely wit,
Which mounted to the highest cloudes in time:
And Fenollar, *whom I well to compare*
To Tityrus *my thoughts cannot omit:*
For sounding heere his sweetest verse along
These banks, the world shall heare his solemne song.

Pinedas *songs so copious and so fine,*
Shall also make my sweete banks to resound,
By whose braue verse Pan *conquer'd needes must be,*
Tygres made gentle: and they shall rebound
His famous name, which neuer shall decline,
Vnto the highest spheares in dignitie.
I hope by him more honour to obtaine,
Then proudest Smyrna *did by* Homer *gaine.*

Behold the stated, milde, and sweetest grace,
Wherewith Vincent Ferrand, *a man most graue,*
Shall shew his highest iudgement, and his skill:

Being in his time a Poet rare and braue.
His verse shall hold king Aeolus *in his place,*
And stay my streames from running at their will,
Hearing the sweetest sound and harmonie,
Of all his verses gracious, graue, and hie.

The heauens will not, nor reason will consent,
That I should speake with humble stile and plaine
Of that choise squadron, and without compare,
Aboue mans reach an office to obtaine:
Ferran, Sans, Valdellos, *and excellent*
Cordero, *and* Blasqo *a wit most rare,*
Gaget, *more shining lights then faire Aurore,*
Of whom my spirits now shall sing no more.

When of so great a Master I doe thinke,
As excellent Borja *of* Montese,
Who shewes his valour, as his wits diuine,
As well in verse, as any high emprese:
Me thinkes, my fieldes, my riuers, and their brinks
Shall with more hap and greater glorie shine,
Then Tybur *hath, though he within her wombe*
Was borne, that built the stately towne of Rome.

And thee who of same father, place, and name,
And of the selfesame highest linage bred,
Most excellent Don Ioan, *whose surname shall*
In Pindus, *and* Parnase *be honoured.*
For euerie one to reare his verse shall frame
With pen aboue the globe celestiall.
The Muses that doe dwell in Helicone,
Make for thee there a crowne and stately throne.

The Romane people with their heroes
Was not so proud, when they did all despise,
As my most fertill soile, and I shall be
When that great Aguilon *shall once arise,*
Whom both in war, in counsell, and in peace,
In verse, and valour, his dexteritie
Shall to the highest top of honour reare,
Where Marius *yet, and* Fabius *neuer were.*

Now Seraphin Centellas *I doe see,*
Who lifting vp his high and loftie song,
And militarie art vnto the skie,
Builds for his verse a fort most sure and strong.
And shewes himselfe so braue a man to be
In courage, skill, and true nobilitie,

That now begins my ſweete content of hart,
To ſee his valour, and his great deſart.

But now I feare me that I cannot praiſe
Don Luys Milan, euen as I doe deſire,
Who ſhall in muſicke to ſuch skill attaine,
That to Orpheus wreathe he ſhall aſpire:
His vaine ſhall be ſo ſtately in his daies
In heroicke verſe, that I beleeue in vaine
That they will name before this Adamant
Cyno Pyſtoya, and Guido Caualcante.

Thou that ſhalt get ſo great a part, and taſte
Of Pegaſus fount, that mighty deaw and ſweete,
And whom the dwellers of Parnaſſus hill
Shall with a ſtandard of braue poeſie greete:
(Noble Falcon) heere words I will not waſte
In praiſing thee, for fame ſhall that fulfill:
And ſhall be carefull that thy learned name
In all the world with praiſe ſhe will proclame,

Praiſing alwaies the famous Emperour
Charles the great King, Fame makes the world to knowe him;
And though aboue the ſtars ſhe doth commend him,
Little it is to that that ſhe doth owe him,
You ſhall behold him to excell ſo fur,
With fauour that the Muſes all will lend him,
His ſurname ſhall the worlde ſo much delight,
That Heſiodes name ſhall be forgotten quite.

He that declares the ſtately Romane lawes,
He that a fine and dainte verſe compoundes,
He that the wiſe Lycurgus doth excell,
And all the Poets of Verona groundes,
Comes next in place, whoſe golden chariot drawes
Fame with her trumpe, his praiſes to foretell:
And this is Oliuer, whoſe memorie
Controules the old and neweſt hiſtorie.

Knowing faire Nymphes, your good daies to begin
Make thouſand outward ſignes of inward dioy,
For now (me thinkes) I doe behold euen then
Two famous men who ſhall their mindes imploy,
The one to war, the other ſtill to win
Saluation for the ſoules of ſinfull men.
Ciurana and Ardenol, who ſhall raiſe
Their higheſt verſe to heauen with endleſſe praiſe.

What? Will you ſee a iudgement ſharpe and ſure,
A generall skill, a graue and ſetled minde,

A liuely ſtirit, and a quicke conceate,
A ſweete conſort, poeticall and fine,
That ſauage beaſtes to mildneſſe doth enure?
Of Philip Catalan *behold the great*
Wiſedome and wit, who therefore hath no meane
A portion in the fountaine Hyppocrene.

Heere ſhall you ſee a high and loftie wit,
Who ſhall bring honour to our pleaſant fieldes,
Endowed with a braue and noble ſpright,
Cunning in all things that good letters yeeldes,
The learned Pellicer, *whoſe braine ſhall fit*
For poemes, making them his chiefe delight:
In which his skill and methode ſhall be great,
His iudgement deepe, a ſweete and quicke conceate.

Behold the man whoſe noble breſt containes
Knowledge moſt rare, and learning generall,
Orpheus *ſeemes with him to be combinde,*
Apollos *fauours on his head doe fall:*
Minerua *giues him wit in plentious vaines,*
And Mars *a noble hart and valiant minde:*
I meane Romani, *comming now addreſſed*
With all the beſt, that learning hath profeſſed.

Two ſunnes within my bankes ſhall now ariſe,
Shining as bright as Titan *in his ſphere,*
And many ſpring tides in one yeere ſhall bee,
Decking my bankes and meadowes euery where:
The hurtfull ſnowe, nor hard vntempered ice
Shall hide my plaines, nor couer any tree
When ecchoes in my woods or greenes reherſe
Vadillos *and* Pinedas *ſweeteſt verſe.*

The meetres of Artiede, *and* Clement, *ſo*
Famous ſhall be in their yoong tender yeeres,
That any thinking to excell the ſame,
But baſe to them and humble ſhall appeere:
And both amongſt the wiſeſt ſort ſhall showe
Quicke and repoſed wits with endleſſe name.
And after giue vs from their tender flowers
Fruits of more woorth amongſt more learned powers.

The fount, that makes Parnaſſus of ſuch prize,
Shall be Iohn Perez *of ſuch woorthy fame,*
That from ſwift Tana *vnto* Ganges *ſource,*
He ſhall dilate his admirable name:
To ſtay the haſtie windes he ſhall ſuffice,

And

And riuers running with most swiftest course,
Filling them all with woonder, that shall throng
To heare his verse, and graue and solemne song.

The man to whom a woorthy name is due
Of right, for his abilitie and skill,
Whom all my sacred Nymphes in time shall knowe,
And all my Shepherdes shall with praises fill
For verse most high: amongst the learned crew
His honour and his praise shall daily growe:
Almudeuar it is, whose shining wing
Vnto the stars his golden praise must bring.

In vulgar toong the famous Espinose
Shall make the historie of Naples cleere,
After he hath reuiu'd the memorie
Of the Centellas highly linag'd heere
With such a loftie style: That fame bestowes
His praise abroad, the which shall neuer die:
And make this Poet, second vnto none,
To be renown'd in worlds but lately knowne.

But now I feele a certaine ioy of minde,
That makes mine aged hart to leape apace,
But onely thinking of that great content,
That Bonauida brings into this place:
In grauest learning he shall leaue behinde
The rest, whose glorie he shall still preuent:
His fine and pithie verse, with Laurell drest,
In euery age shall sound from east to west.

Now Don Alonso comes in place, who shall
The Rebolledos surname much increase
In all the world, to raise his woorthy name
Aboue great Maro he shall neuer cease,
And seeme to haue no humane wit at all,
But singing with most loftie verse: the same,
His fine conceit, his art and vaine so high,
It seemes he shall haue robbed from the skie.

For end of this most sweete and pleasant song
And last conclusion of this generall skill,
I giue you him, by whom dame Nature shall
The Circle of the world with woonder fill:
My simple praises should but doe him wrong
And all his vertues most heroicall,
His valour, wit, nobilitie which graceth
His bountie, faith and zeale which he imbraceth.

This is Aldana *monarch of such might,*
That iointly souldiours and braue verses makes:
That (with great reason) the most famous men
As far as Phebus *with his light awakes*
Doe doubte if he be Petrarke *Tuscans light,*
Or Petrarke *he: But yet admiring then,*
To see that where fierce Mars *doth shew his face,*
Apollo *milde should haue so great a place.*

After this captaine there is none whom I
With my poore verse may honour and commend,
For next vnto the golden sunne that star
That brightest shines in darknes must depend:
And yet besides the short time doth denie,
To praise each one for poesie and war:
Farewell, farewell, for vnto you the rest
Heereafter I will sing with cleerer brest.

This was the song of the riuer *Turia*, to the which the Shepherds and Nymphes gaue great eare, as well for the sweetnes of it, as also for that the most famous men which were foretolde in it, should be afterwards in the kingdome of *Valentia*. I could tell you many other things, that I saw in those happie fields, but the trouble that you haue taken by my tediousnes will not permit me. *Marcelius* and the Shepherds maruelled much at *Clenardus* report, who hauing made an end of it, they perceiued that they were neere to *Dianas* Temple, where they began to discouer the high turrets of it, most stately reared aboue the tops of the trees. But before they came to the great Palace, they saw a faire Nymphe gathering sweete and fine flowers, whose name, and what succeeded by seeing of her, you shall know in the booke that followeth.

The end of the third Booke.

The fourth Booke of the third Part of Diana.

THe complaints that men do ordinarily attribute to Fortune are verie great, which would not be so many nor so grieuous, if they considered well the good that commeth oftentimes by her mutabilities. He that now reioyceth (hauing beene in a miserable estate before) that Fortune is changed, hath no reason to checke her, nor to call her wauering, when some contrary euent doth happen. But though she hath both in good, and in ill inconstancie incident vnto her, as part of her proper nature; yet a wise man (how much soeuer he is touched with her) should not liue with affiance in the possession of worldly felicities, nor with despaire in suffering aduersities; but should rather moderate himselfe with such wisedome, to entertaine pleasure as a thing not permanent, and griefe and sorrow as things that may haue an ende in time. Of such men God hath a particular regard, as of sorrowfull and painefull *Marcelius*, deliuering him

him from all his cares, by the meanes and helpe of the moſt wiſe Ladie *Felicia*; who, diuining (as it were) in her minde, that *Marcelius*, *Diana* and others, ſhoulde come to her Palace, cauſed in a maner that faire Nymphe to goe foorth into that ſweete meadow, to giue them certaine newes and ſignes, that ſtrange things ſhould come to paſſe, which by her diuine wiſedome ſhe did foreſee were verie expedient and neceſſarie to be done. When *Marcelius* therefore and the reſt were come to the place, where the Nymph was gathering flowers, they curteouſly ſaluted her, and ſhe them againe. She asked them whither they were going, and they ſaid to *Dianas* Temple. Then *Arethea* (for ſo was the Nymphe called) ſaid vnto them. My Ladie *Felicia*, whoſe Nymphe I am, will be verie glad of your good companie for the apparant ſignes of your good deſerts, which by your perſonages you ſeeme to teſtifie. And now ſince that the Sunne hides it ſelfe in the Weſt, I will goe backe with you thither, where you ſhall be welcomed and feaſted in the beſt ſort that may be. They gaue her moſt hartie thankes, and went with her towards the Temple, recouering great hope by the words and promiſes of the Nymphe: and although *Polydorus* and *Clenarda* had beene before in *Felicias* houſe, yet they neuer remembred that they had knowen or ſeene her before: And the reaſon was, bicauſe of the great number of Nymphes that the wiſe Ladie had euer at her commaundement, diuerſly employed in diuers parts of her Court. Therefore they asked her her name, & ſhe told them that ſhe was called *Arethea*. *Diana* asked her what newes ſhe knew in thoſe parts? And ſhe anſwered. The lateſt newes that is here, is, that not two howers ſince there came to *Felicias* houſe a ſtrange Ladie in habit of a Shepherdeſſe; the which, being ſeene by an ancient old man, that is alſo there, he knew her for his daughter; and becauſe ſhe had beene a long time wandring vp and downe the world, and thought to be dead, the ſudden ioy was ſo great that he receiued at her ſight, that it cauſed a great wonder amongſt all thoſe that were in the houſe. The olde mans name (as I remember) is *Eugenius*, and his daughters *Alcida*. *Marcelius* hearing theſe words, remained ſo ſenceleſſe with ioy and feare aſſayling him both at once, as any wiſe man may coniecture, and at laſt ſaid. O happie trauels, and fortunate troubles, which come to their ende with ſo proſperous accidents! Ah ah, and deſiring to haue paſſed on farther, his hart was ſo ouercome, and his toong ſo tyed, that in a traunce he fell downe to the ground. *Diana*, *Iſmenia*, and *Clenarda*, being next vnto him, tooke him vp againe, and with comfortable wordes of hope recouered his diſmayed ſoule: And ſo comming to himſelfe againe, he thanked them many times. *Polydorus* and *Clenarda* were not a little glad at thoſe newes, ſeeing now that all their ſorrowes ſhould haue an ende by the happie comming of their ſiſter *Alcida*. And *Diana* and *Iſmenia* were alſo verie ioyfull, as well for their companions good hap, as alſo for the hope they had of their owne good fortunes and helpe to receiue it at her hands, who wrought ſuch miracles and woonders. *Diana*, bicauſe ſhe would know ſomething of *Syrenus*, ſaid thus vnto her. The great hope of content that thou haſt giuen me (faire Nymphe) by telling me of that, which is in *Felicias* Palace for *Alcidas* comming, is not ſmall; but yet greater ſhould I haue, if thou wouldeſt tell me what Shepherds of account are there alſo. There are many woorthie Shepherds (anſwered *Arethea*) but thoſe that I do beſt remember are *Syluanus* and *Seluagia*, *Arſileus* and *Beliſa*, and one other more principall then theſe, called *Syrenus*, whoſe vertues and deſerts *Felicia* hath in great eſtimation; but he is ſuch an enimie to loue, that he makes all the reſt that are there to woonder at him. *Alcida* is of like qualitie and condition, in ſo much that euer ſince ſhe came thither, both of them

haue

haue not beene aſunder, diſcourſing of hate, obliuion, and diſdaine. And ſo I am verie certaine, that *Felicia* made them come to her Court to marrie them togither, being both of one minde, and their conditions being ſo ſemblable one to the other. For though he be but a Shepherd, and ſhe a noble Ladie, *Felicia* yet by her ſupernaturall powers can giue him valour, force, riches, and wiſedome, which is the trueſt nobilitie of all the reſt. And *Arethea* following on her ſpeech, turning to *Marcelius*, ſhe ſaid thus vnto him. By this (Shepherd) thou ſeeſt how thy ioy is in hazard to fall to anothers lot; defer not therefore the time, bicauſe if thou commeſt betimes, thou maiſt preuent *Syrenus* of his match. But when *Diana* heard theſe words, ſhe felt the greateſt griefe that might be, and had ſhewed it by teares and outcries, if baſhfulnes and modeſtie had not beene an impediment to it. *Marcelius* ſuffered the like paine for the ſame cauſe, and was ſo tormented with it, that he thought to haue dyed for verie anguiſh of minde. So that on kniſe wounded *Marcelius* and *Dianas* hart, & one iealouſie moleſted their ſoules: *Marcelius* feared *Alcidas* marriage with *Syrenus*; and *Diana* the marriage of *Syrenus* with *Alcida*. The faire Nymph knew *Marcelius* & *Diana* very well, & thoſe that were with them, but ſhe diſſembled it very cũningly, as *Felicia* had told her how, telling *Marcelius* firſt a true tale, to giue him an vnexpected ioy; & after a fained matter, to kindle his deſire, & *Dianas* more; & alſo bi cauſe by theſe bitter news, the gladnes that they afterwards receiued, might be greater & more ſweet. Being now come to a broad & moſt faire Court, which was before the palace gate, they ſaw a reuerẽd old Lady cõming out of it, apparelled with a long gowne of black veluet, hauing a vaile on her head of white tynſell which hung down ouer her ſhoulders, being accompanied with three moſt faire Nymphes, repreſenting a moſt venerable and diuine Sybill. This Ladie was *Felicia*, and her Nymphes were *Dorida*, *Cynthia*, and *Polydora*. When *Arethea* was come before her Ladie and Miſtreſſe (but firſt telling her company that ſhe was *Felicia*) ſhe kneeled downe and kiſſed her hands, and ſo did all the reſt. *Felicia* ſeemed to be verie glad of their comming, and with a merie countenance ſaid vnto them. Woorthie Gentlemen, Lady, and famous Shepherds, although the ioy that I haue of your comming is great, yet the ſame that you ſhall reape by my ſight hereafter ſhall be no whit leſſe. But bicauſe you are ſomewhat wearie with your iourney, go and take your reſt, and forget your griefes, bicauſe you cannot want the firſt in my houſe, and the ſecond with my great knowledge ſhall be ſoone amended. They all humbly thanked her, ſhewing themſelues verie glad of their louing entertainment, and at laſt *Felicia* left them. Shee made *Polydorus* & *Clenarda* to ſtay there, ſaying, that ſhe had to talke with them; and the reſt being guided by *Arethea*, went to a chamber in the rich Palace, where they were feaſted that night, and ſerued with all things needfull for their reſt. This houſe was ſo ſumptuous and magnificent, and ſo full of all kinde of ſtately riches, & of curious and coſtly gardens, that there was not any other comparable vnto it. But I will not trouble my ſelfe in making any particular recount of the beautie and riches of it, ſince that was declared at large in the firſt part of this worke. I will onely tell how *Marcelius*, *Diana*, and *Iſmenia*, were lodged in two chambers in the Palace, hanged all about with rich Tapiſtrie, curiouſly wrought with gold and ſiluer, lodgings vnacquainted to ſimple Shepherds. They were there entertayned with a daintie and plenteous ſupper, ſerued with plate of gold and criſtall, and when they went to ſleep layde in ſtately beds, whoſe bodies yet (though with trauell & paine they were not a little wearied) with the ſoftnes & ſweetnes of them, & with the hope alſo that *Felicia* had giuen them, were inuited to a ſweet & repoſed ſleepe. On the other ſide *Felicia*

in

in company of her three Nymphes, and of *Polydorus* and *Clenarda* (telling them by the way, that they ſhould ſay nothing of *Marcelius*, *Dianas*, and *Iſmenias* comming thither) went to a moſt pleaſant garden, where they ſawe *Eugerius* paſſing the time away with his daughter *Alcida*. *Don Felix* and *Feliſmena*, *Syrenus*, *Syluanus*, and *Seluagia*, *Arſileus* and *Beliſa*, and another Shepherd were ſitting togither a pretie way off them about a fountaine. *Alcida* had yet on the ſame paſtorall weedes, that ſhe came apparelled with that day to the pallace, but ſhe was preſently knowne by her brother and ſiſter. The ioy that the brother and two ſiſters had to ſee themſelues altogither, and the gladnes that the father had to ſee himſelfe and them ſo well and happely met, moreouer the great affection wherwith they embraced each other, the louing talke that paſſed betweene them, and the ſundry queſtions that they asked of one another, cannot be with words nor writing declared. *Alcida* was rapt with ioy to ſee her brother and ſiſter; but was gladder to ſee *Polydorus*, then *Clenarda*, for the great preſumption that ſhe had, that *Marcelius* went away with her, leauing her in the deſolate Iland all alone. But *Felicia* purpoſing to cleere all theſe miſtes & errours, & to make an end of ſo many hard fortunes, ſpake thus vnto them. Though Fortune hath neuer ſo much (faire *Alcida*) by many kindes of iniuries ſhewed herſelfe thy mortall enimie, yet thou canſt not denie, but that with this content, that thou now enioyeſt, thou art fully reuenged of all her wrongs. And bicauſe the falſe imagination and deceit, wherein thou haſt liued hitherto, hating (without cauſe) thy louing *Marcelius*, if thou liueſt ſtill in it, is enough to alter thy hart, and to giue him much ſorrow and greefe; it ſhall be therefore very needfull for thee to ſhake off this cõceit & iniurious ſuſpicion out of thy mind. That which thou thinkeſt of *Marcelius*, is cleane contrarie, bicauſe it was not his fault when hee left thee in the Iland, but the deceite of a vile traytour and of Fortune, who now to ſatisfie the iniurie that ſhe hath done thee, hath brought thee hither vnto me, which thou ſhalt finde to be as true as my mouth (neuer accuſtomed to faine and lie) hath plainly and ſincerely told thee. Thy ſiſter *Clenarda* can make a large report vnto thee of all that hath paſſed about this matter, harken to her, and beleeue her words, bicauſe I ſweare vnto thee, that all that ſhe ſhall tell thee, is moſt true. Then *Clenarda* began to tell the whole matter & how it hapned, purging *Marcelius* and herſelfe, and reciting at large the treaſon and villany of *Sartoſano*, and all the reſt, as you haue heard before. Which when *Alcida* heard, ſhe thought herſelfe very well ſatisfied, and then the long hatred, which ſhe bare to *Marcelius*, went out of her hart with the deceit, the onely occaſion of it. And then the ſmothered loue, and hidden fire began to reuiue in her breſt, being cleerely ridde of her old ſuſpicion, as alſo by the operation of thoſe charming words that *Felicia* made in her ſoule, and being in that mind, ſhe ſaid vnto *Felicia*. Mine errour I acknowledge (moſt honorable and ſage Ladie) and the great benefite that you haue done me, by deliuering me from it. But if I loue now *Marcelius* (the miſte of vniuſt ſuſpect being driuen from mine eies) and he being abſent as he is indeed, I ſhal neuer the more for this happines attaine to the top of that ioy which I hope for at thy hands; but ſhall rather be afflicted with ſo great greefe of minde, that to remedie the ſame, I ſhall ſtand in neede of newe fauours at thy gracious handes. It is a good token of loue (anſwered *Felicia* againe) to take thought for the abſence of the beloued, but let not this greeue thy minde, for I will be carefull for thy contentment: Now hath the Sunne hidden his beames, and it is good time to take ſome reſt. Goe therefore with thy father and ſiſter to repoſe thy ſelfe, bicauſe we will to morrow take order for theſe affaires. When ſhe had thus

ſayd,

ſaid, ſhe went out of the garden, and ſo did *Eugerius* and his daughters, repayring to the chambers that *Felicia* had appointed for them in her pallace, which were ſeparated from that where *Marcelius* lay, & the reſt of his company. *Don Felix* & *Feliſmena* with the other Shepherdes and Shepherdeſſes taried a pretie while about the fountain, & then went to ſupper, appointing to meet there the next morning following one hower before day, to take the freſh ayre of the morning. So therfore as the hope of the pleaſure of the next morrowes meeting made them paſſe away the night with ſleeping but a little, they roſe vp all ſo earely in the morning, that before the appointed hower they were ready at the fountaine with their tuned inſtruments. *Eugerius* with his ſonne and daughters aduertiſed of the muſicke, did alſo riſe vp, and went thither. They beganne to play and ſing, and to make much ſport and paſtime by the light of the Moone, which with a full and bright face gaue them as cleere light as if it had beene day. *Marcelius*, *Diana*, and *Iſmenia*, laie in two chambers one ioyning to the other, whoſe windowes looked into the garden: And although they could not ſee the fountain thorow them, by reaſon of the high & thick Laurell trees which were about it, yet might they heare well what they ſaide. So therfore when *Iſmenia* (lying awake) heard the noiſe they made, and the merriment and ſongs of the Shepherds, ſhe awaked *Diana*, and *Diana* knocking at the wall that was betweene both their chambers awoke *Marcelius*, and ſo all of them went to their windowes where they were neither ſeene nor knowne. *Marcelius* gaue attentiue eare, if he might perhaps heare *Alcidas* voice. *Diana* did diligently liſten to heare her *Syrenus*. *Iſmenia* onely had no hope to heare her *Montanus*, becauſe ſhe knew not that he was there. But yet her Fortune was better then ſhe was aware of, for at that very inſtant a Shepherd ſung to the ſound of his Baggepipe this Sextine that followes.

THe faire, the freſh, the red, and roſie morning
Doth follow ſtill the long and tedious night,
And after darknes comes the ſunſhine day,
When Nymphes goe foorth to walke the freſheſt meades,
The aire reſounding with their ſweeteſt ſongs,
And cheerefull notes of many chirping birdes.

I am leſſe happy then the pretie birdes,
That are ſaluting of the merrie morning,
With ratling foorth their ſugred notes and ſongs:
For in the morne I mourne, as in the night,
Be this a deſart or moſt fragrant meade,
Be this a cloudie or moſt ſhining day.

In ſuch a hapleſſe hower, and diſmall day
So dead I was, that neuer can theſe birdes,
Which in the dawning ioy both hill and meade,
Nor the Vermillion face of freſheſt morning
Driue from my ſoule a darke and deadly night,
Nor from my breſt a lamentable ſong.

My voice ſhall neuer change her woomed ſong,
And for my ſelfe it neuer will be day:

But

But I will first die in eternall night,
Though more and more doe sing the warbling birdes,
And fairer rise the bright and purple morning,
To shine vpon, and cherish this faire meade.

O irkesome garden! and O dolefull meade!
Since she, that cannot heare my plaining song,
And with her beames of beautie staines the morning,
Doth not giue light vnto my needefull day:
O trouble me no more you prating birdes,
For without her your morning is but night.

In that time of the still and silent night,
When in the townes, the hils, the vales, and meades,
All mortall men take rest, the beastes and birdes,
I most of all doe force my greeuous song,
Making my teares euen with the night, and day,
At noone, at night, and after in the morning.

One Morning *onely conquere must my* Night,
And if one Day *illustrate shall this* Meade,
Then will I heare with ioy the Songs *of* Birdes.

By this time *Ismenia* that was harkening at the window, knew that he that did sing, was her husband *Montanus*, and tooke so great delight to heare him, as greefe in hearing of that which he sung. For she thought, that the paine that (hee saide in his song) he was troubled with, was for anothers sake and not for hers; but she was by and by driuen out of this doubt, for she heard him (when he had made an end of his song) giue a maruellous great sigh, and saide. Ah wearied and sorrowfull hart! how ill didst thou abuse thy selfe and her in giuing credite to a simple surmise, and how iustly dost thou now suffer the sorrow, that thine owne lightnes hath procured? Ah my beloued *Ismenia*! how better had it bin for me, that thy zealous loue had not caused thee to seeke me thorow the worlde, bicause when I had come backe againe to our towne (and knowing mine owne fault) I might haue found thee in it? Ah wicked *Syluena*, how ill didst thou requite him, that euer did thee good from his cradle? Alas I woulde haue thanked thee for the discouerie of the treacherie, which afterwards thou toldest me, declaring to me the truth of the matter, but that it came too late, which then auailed no more, nor nowe, but for my greater paine and greefe. *Ismenia* hearing this, thought herselfe the happiest woman in the world, and was so glad at this good fortune, as may be possiblie imagined. The teares trickled downe her cheekes for ioy, and like one that was now neere vnto the ende of her troubles she saide. Now is the time of my happie daies come, and this house is onely made to helpe those that liue in distresse and woe. *Marcelius* and *Diana* were woonderfull glad for *Ismenias* ioy, and had by this, great hope of their own. *Ismenia* would by and by haue gone out of her chamber into the garden, and euen then when *Marcelius* and *Diana* were perswading her to staie, thinking it better to attend *Felicias* will and pleasure, they heard new songs about the fountaine, and *Diana* knew that it was *Syrenus* that sung them. *Ismenia* and *Marcelius* held their peace, bicause they would not

not trouble *Diana*, who giuing an earneſt eare to the voice of her beloued husband heard him ſing this ſong following.

Syrenus.

LOuers, with pride enioy your full content,
To ſee your ſelues in fauour and in grace,
For I doe ioy to ſee my torments ſpent,
And ioy to ſee them in obliuions place:
I ioy to ſee my captiue hart ſo free,
I ioy to ſee my ſelfe in libertie.

For after ſuffring worldes of endleſſe thrall,
The fauours of a proud and ſcornefull dame
So lately come, and ſeldome doe befall,
That euen the beſt, and greateſt of the ſame
Is, not to neede them, nor to be poſſeſt
Of trifling toies a fond and fained ieſt.

Now laugh mine eies, and thanke Dianas *vaine,*
Thanke her that brought you to this happy turne,
Her cruelties and hate your life did gaine,
By her diſdaine, by her vnſeemely ſcorne
Your libertie, in bondage led away,
You haue redeem'd, thriſe happy be that day.

For if by ſuffring torments for her ſake,
Ten thouſand times more beautifull ſhe weare,
And deereſt loue to me if ſhe did make,
Yet ſuch content, as now in hating her,
I ſhould not haue: And this doth ioy my hart,
That my diſdaine doth beare ſo great a part.

O ſouereine God! that once I might but knowe
Greefe without hope to ſeaſe vpon thy ſoule,
And that the God of loue would wound thee ſo,
And ſo thy ſcornefull hart with paines controule,
That fully vnreueng'd I might not be,
For that great wrong which thou haſt done to me.

For then I would (and leſſe it were not meete)
Be to thy greefe ſo cruell and ſo fierce,
That if with teares, and lying at my feete,
Thou didſt thy paines and torments all rehearſe,
And at my handes thy life if thou didſt craue,
Anſwere I would, Thy life I would not ſaue.

God graunt thou maiſt for euer ſeeke me out,
And (Shepheardeſſe) that I my ſelfe may hide:

That

That thou might'st say: O turne thee once about,
And looke on me: and that I may deride,
And answere thee, whom now I haue forgot,
Hence (Shepherdesse) away and vexe me not.

That thou maist say for thee I die in paining,
And on my knees to thee I come a creeping,
What noueltie is this, O what disdaining?
And I may goe, and leaue thee thus a weeping,
And answere thee for paines that I did borrow,
I ioy and laugh to see thee in this sorrow.

If this thou doubt'st with solemne oth I sweare,
That while I liue, I will doe this and more:
For now no paines, nor torments I doe feare,
And suffer not, as I did once before:
And I did neuer loue so much thy name,
As from my hart I now abhor the same.

And glad I am he hath forgot thee quite,
That for thy sake was once so great a foole;
And for thy loue did suffer such despite,
And such fond lessons in blinde fancies schoole:
And it is meete that he should suffer shame,
That in these follies was so much to blame.

For cruell Loue with Fortune doth agree,
And tickle Fortune like to Cupid wauers:
Then (iolly Shepherdes) I would counsell yee
Not to gape after Loues, and Fortunes fauours:
And if ye meane a sweete life to procure,
Freedome imbrace, and captiue Loue abiure.

O that thou heard'st me now (ingrate Diane)
To vnderstand, what I doe say more cleere,
And how much more my soule doth yet retaine
In plainer termes, if thou wert present heere,
To tell thee, that I might vnto thy face
Degorge my minde vnto thy great disgrace.

But yet it is the best (to ioy my hart)
For thee to shun the presence of my sight:
For I shall loose (no doubt) no little part
Of that great ioy, that pleasure, and delight
Of my reuenge, for it would pitie mee
And greeue me too I thinke in seeing thee.

Then doe I wish, that I may neuer see
Thy greeuous presence, nor thy face againe,

Bicauſe vnto my ſoule it needes muſt be
A greater torment and more cruell paine,
To ſee thee when I ſweare, I loue thee not,
Then when thou had'ſt my deereſt loue forgot.

It happened to *Diana* as to thoſe which hearken to their owne harmes; for in hearing *Syrenus* diſdainfull reſolution, ſhe conceiued ſo great griefe in her minde, that I am not able to expreſſe it, and therefore thinke it better to leaue it to the iudgment of wiſe men. Let it ſuffice you to know, that ſhe thought to haue dyed at that preſent time, and therefore it was verie needfull for *Marcelius* and *Iſmenia* to comfort her vp, and to incourage her with ſuch good reaſons, as were ſufficient for ſuch an extreme griefe; one of them was in telling her, that the knowledge and skill that *Felicia* had (in whoſe houſe they were) was not ſo ſmall, but that it had remedied woes of greater paine and conſequence, as ſhe had ſhewed but a little before by *Iſmenia* as diſdained of *Montanus*. As they were thus talking togither, the golden morning beginning to diſcouer it ſelfe, the Nymphe *Arethea* came in to that chamber, and with a cheerefull countenance ſaid vnto them. I wiſh as fortunate and good daies to you (noble Gentleman & faire Shepherdeſſes) as are due to your deſerts and vertues. My ſage Ladie *Felicia* hath ſent me hither to know, if you haue ſlept more contentedly this night then you were wont to do, and to bring you along with me into the garden, where ſhe hath to ſpeake certaine words with you. But you *Marcelius* muſt leaue of theſe Shepherds garments, and put on this apparell that I bring here, fitter for your calling and degree. *Iſmenia* would not ſtay for *Marcelius* anſwer, for ioy of the good newes, but ſaid. The gladſome tydings that with thy ſweete ſight thou haſt brought vs this morning (O happie Nymphe) God requite for vs, ſince it lies not in our power to recompence ſo great a debt and courteſie. The content that thou wouldeſt know of vs, is not little, with being only in this houſe, and how much happier haue we beene in it this morning, when *Marcelius* and I haue recouered our liues welnie loſt before, and *Diana* no ſmall hope to the attayning of her deſires? But bicauſe we muſt obay the command of ſo great and wiſe a Ladie as *Felicia* is, let vs not delay the time to go into the garden, and let her wiſedome diſpoſe of vs at her beſt pleaſure. Then *Arethea* tooke the apparell that *Marcelius* ſhould put on from another Nymphe that brought it, and with her owne hands helped to put it on, which was ſo rich, and garniſhed ſo brauely with gold and precious ſtones, that it was of infinit value. They went out of that quadrant, and all of them following *Arethea*, by one of the Palace gates they went into the garden. This Orchard of the one ſide was enuironed with an arme of a goodly riuer, of the other ſide of it ſtoode moſt ſumptuous and ſtately buildings belonging to *Felicias* Palace, and the other two ſides compaſſed about with two wals, curiouſly plaiſtered with Ieſmines, Woodbind, and other herbes and flowers paſſing delightfull to the eie. But of the pleaſantnes of this place, it is more copiouſly entreated of in the fourth booke of the firſt part. Now after they were come into it, they ſaw how *Syluanus* and *Seluagia* ſeparated from the other company, were togither all alone in a little meadow that was neere to the gate. There did *Arethea* leaue them, willing them to ſtay for *Felicia* there, bicauſe ſhe was to go againe to the Palace to tell that ſhe had done the thing, that was giuen her in charge. *Syluanus* and *Seluagia* that were there, knew *Diana* by & by, and maruelled much to ſee her there. *Seluagia* knew *Iſmenia* alſo, which was of her own towne, and ſo there was great courteſie between them

them and many embracings, ioyfull to see each other there after so long a time. *Seluagia* then with a merie countenance said vnto them. Faire *Diana* is welcome, whose disdaine was an occasion to make *Syluanus* mine. And welcome also faire *Ismenia*, who with thy deceit didst giue me so much paine, that for remedie of it I came hither, where I haue changed it into a happy estate. What good fortune hath brought you hither? That (said *Diana*) which we receiue of thy sight, and that, which we hope for at *Felicias* hands. O happy Shepherdesse! how glad am I of the content that thou hast gotten here: God confirme thy fortune so prosperous, that thou maist enioy it many yeeres. *Marcelius* offered not to speake any thing amongst them, bicause he neither knew *Syluanus* nor *Seluagia*. But whilest the Shepherds were occupied about their congratulations and curtesies, hee was beholding a Gentleman and a Ladie, that hand in hand went walking vp and downe an Alley in the Garden, being verie merrie one with the other. He tooke a certaine pleasure in beholding the Ladie, and his minde gaue him, that he had seene and knowne her before: Wherefore to cleere himselfe of that doubt, comming to *Syluanus* he said. Although it is a point of discurtesie to interrupt your friendly greetings, yet woulde I faine knowe (gentle Shepherd) what Lord and Lady those are that walke there togither. Their names (said *Syluanus*) are *Don Felix*, and *Felismena*, husband and wife. Then *Marcelius* hearing *Felismenas* name, altered his countenance and said. Tell me, I praie you, whose daughter *Felismena* is, and where she was borne, if thou dost perhaps knowe, bicause I care not so greatly to enquire of *Don Felix*. I haue heard her oftentimes tell (said *Syluanus*) that she was borne in *Soldina* the cheefest citie of all *Vandalia*, her father being called *Andronius*, and her mother *Delia*. But I praie you Sir, do me the fauour to let me know what you are, and why you made this demand? My name (saide *Marcelius*) and all else that thou seekest at my hands, thou shalt knowe heereafter. In the meane time do me this curtesie, that since thou art acquainted with Lord *Felix* and *Felismena*, craue leaue of them that I may speake a fewe words with them, bicause I would aske her a question that may redounde (perhaps) to much ioy and good on both sides. It likes me well (said *Syluanus*) and then he went by and by to *Don Felix* and *Felismena* and told them, that a Gentleman not farre off would faine entreat with them in certaine affaires if they thought it not troublesome vnto them. They staied not a minute, but came to the place where *Marcelius* was. And after curteous salutations, *Marcelius* said to *Felismena*, Ienquired (faire Lady) of this Shepherd thy countrey, name, and parents, who told me that which by thine owne report he knowes concerning the same, and bicause I knowe a Gentleman which was borne in the same citie, who is also sonne to a Lord (if I be not deceiued) whose name is like to thy Fathers; Tell me then (curteous Lady) if you haue anie brother, and what his name is, bicause (it may be) he is the same, whom I knowe. With this *Felismena* gaue a great sigh and saide. O noble Gentleman! how much doth thy demand penetrate my hart? Know therefore, that I had a brother, borne with me at one birth, and being but a childe at twelue yeeres old, my father *Andronius* sent him to the king of *Portugales* court, where he liued many yeeres. This is as much as I can tell of him, and that which I told *Syluanus* and *Seluagia* that are heere present, on a time at the fountaine of the Sicamours, after that I had deliuered the three Nymphes, and killed three Sauages in the meadowe of the Laurell trees. From that time hitherto I haue heard nothing of him, but that the king sent him as Captaine into the coast of *Africa*: and bicause I haue a good while since wandred vp and downe the world, following mine owne destinies and fortune, I knowe not

whether he be aliue or dead. Then *Marcelius* could not ſtay himſelfe any longer, but ſaid. I haue indeed (ſweet ſiſter *Feliſmena*) bin dead hitherto, bicauſe I haue wanted thy good company, and now am reuiued, in that I haue beene ſo happie a man to ſee thee. And in ſpeaking theſe wordes he louingly embraced her. *Feliſmena* remembring well *Marcelius* kinde of geſture and his countenance in her minde, did now cleerely ſee that he was the ſame indeed, and ſo was vndoubtedly reſolued, that he was her owne brother. The ioyfull greeting that paſſed betweene the brother, ſiſter, and couſen, was great; and the gladnes that *Syluanus* and *Seluagia* tooke to ſee them ſo happely mette togither, not ſmall. There were many louing ſpeeches exchanged, many teares of ioy and ſorrow powred out, many demands and queſtions, hopes reuiued, determinations concluded, and many wordes and things of ioy and reſt mutually ſpoken and done. They ſpent in theſe congratulations one whole hower, which was little enough for the large hiſtory & accidents that they had to diſcourſe of after ſo long an abſence. But bicauſe they might better and more ſafely talke of thoſe matters, they ſat themſelues downe in that little meadow vnder a ranke of Sicamours, whoſe wreathed boughes loden with leaues, made a delightfull and coole ſhadow, defending them from the heat of the radiant ſunne, which was with ſome heate mounted vp the Hemiſpheare. Whileſt *Marcelius, Don Felix, Feliſmena, Syluanus*, and the Shepherds were talking togither of theſe matters, at the other end of the garden neere vnto the fountaine (as it is ſaide before) were *Eugerius, Polydorus, Alcida*, and *Clenarda*. *Alcida* had that day left of her paſtorall weedes as *Felicia* had commanded, and was now apparelled and adorned very richly with coſtly garments and iewels that ſhe willed ſhoulde be giuen her. But as *Syrenus* was alſo there, *Montanus, Arſileus*, and *Beliſa*, ſinging and ſporting togither, they maruellouſlie delighted *Eugerius* and his ſonne and daughters, that were harkening to them. And that which did moſt of all pleaſe them, was a ſong which *Syrenus* and *Arſileus* did ſing one againſt another in diſpraiſe and fauour of *Cupid*: For they ſung with an earneſt will and deſire in hope of a braue chriſtall cup, which *Eugerius* had promiſed for a reward and prize to him that did ſing beſt. And ſo *Syrenus* to the ſound of his Rebecke, and *Arſileus* to the tune of his rurall Baggepipe, began to ſing in maner following.

Syrenus.

O Eies that are not now as once tormented,
When firſt my ſtar enueagled and diſguis'd you:
O ioyfull thoughts, and quiet minde abſented,
O careleſſe hart, now will I once aduiſe you,
That ſince you made Diana *diſcontented,*
To ſee, loue, thinke on you, let this ſuffice you,
That I doe hold your counſell beſt of many,
In vaine to ſee, nor loue, nor thinke of any.

Arſileus.

O eies that haue to greater light attained,
Looking vpon that ſunne, your onely treaſure,
O ioyfull thoughts, in thouſand woes diſtrained,
O happy hart, the ſeate of ſecret pleaſure:
Although Beliſa *would haue once diſdained*
To ſee, to loue, or thinke on me at leiſure,

Yet

Yet hold I this a heauen, as like was neuer
To see, to loue, and thinke on her for euer.

Syrenus would haue replyed to *Arsileus* answer, if he had not beene interrupted by *Eugertus*, who said. Since you must (iolly Shepherds) receiue your reward at my hands, it is good reason that you sing in such sort, as may best content me. Sing thou *Syrenus* first those verses which thy muse shall dictate vnto thee: and then thou *Arsileus* shalt sing as many againe, or those which thou shalt best thinke good of. It pleaseth vs well (said they) and then *Syrenus* began thus.

Syrenus.

LEt now the goodly spring tide make vs merie,
And fieldes, which pleasant flowers do adorne,
And vales, meades, woods, with liuely colours flourish,
Les plentious flockes the Shepherds riches nourish,
Let hungrie woolues by dogs to death be torne,
And lambes reioice, with passed winter wearie:
Let euery riuers ferrie
In waters flowe, and siluer streames abounding:
And fortune, ceasselesse wounding,
Turne now thy face, so cruell and vnstable,
Be firme and fauourable:
And thou that kill'st our soules with thy pretenses,
Molest not (wicked loue) my inward senses.

Let countrie plainnes liue in ioies not ended,
In quiet of the desart meades and mountaines,
And in the pleasure of a countrie dwelling:
Let Shepherds rest, that haue distilled fountaines
Of teares: prooue not thy wrath, all paines excelling,
Vpon poore soules, that neuer haue offended:
Let thy flames be incended
In hautie courtes, in those that swim in treasure,
And liue in ease and pleasure:
And that a sweetest scorne (my woonted sadnes)
A perfect rest and gladnes
And hils and dales, may giue me: with offences
Molest not (wicked loue) my inward senses.

In what law find'st thou, that the freest reason,
And wit, vnto thy chaines should be subiected,
And harmelesse soules vnto thy cruell murder?
O wicked loue, the wretch that flieth furder
From thy extremes, thou plagu'st. O false, suspected,
And careless boy, that thus thy sweetes dost season,
O vile and wicked treason.
Might not thy might suffice thee, but thy fuell
Of force must be so cruell?

To be a Lord, yet like a Tyrant minded,
Vaine boy with errour blinded,
Why doſt thou hurt his life with thy offences,
That yeelds to thee his ſoule and inward ſenſes.

He erres (alas) and fowly is deceiued
That cals thee God, being a burning fire,
A furious flame, a playning greefe and clamorous,
And, Venus ſonne (that in the earth was amorous,
Gentle, and milde, and full of ſweete deſire)
Who calleth him, is of his wits bereaued,
And yet that ſhe conceaued
By proofe, ſo vile a ſonne and ſo vnruly,
I ſay (and yet ſay truly)
That in the cauſe of harmes, that they haue framed,
Both iuſtly may be blamed:
She, that did breede him with ſuch vile pretenſes,
He, that doth hurt ſo much our inward ſenſes.

The gentle ſheepe and lambes are euer flying
The rauening woolues and beaſtes, that are pretending
To glut their mawes with fleſh they teare aſunder:
The milke white doues at noiſe of fearefull thunder
Flie home amaine, themſelues from harme defending,
The little chicke, when puttocks are a crying:
The woods and meadowes dying
For raine, of heauen (if that they cannot haue it)
Doe neuer ceaſe to craue it:
So euery thing his contrarie reſiſteth,
Onely thy thrall perſiſteth
In ſuffring of thy wrongs without defences,
And leis thee ſpoile his hart and inward ſenſes.

A publike paſſion, natures lawes reſtraining,
And, which with wordes can neuer be declared:
A ſoule twixt loue, and feare, and deſperation,
And endleſſe plaint, that ſhuns all conſolation,
A ſpendleſſe flame, that neuer is impaired:
A friendleſſe death, yet life in death maintaining:
A paſſion that is gaining
On him, that loueth well and is abſented.
Wherely it is augmented,
A iealouſie, a burning greefe and ſorrow.
Theſe fauours louers borrow
Of thee fell Loue, theſe be t'yr recompences,
Conſuming ſtill their ſoule and inward ſenſes.

Arſileus, after that *Syrenus* had ended his ſong, began to tune his Bagpipe, and after he had played a little while vpon it, anſwering euerie ſtaffe of his Competitor in order, he ſung as followeth.

Arſileus.

Arsileus.

O Let that time a thousand monthes endure,
Which brings from heauen the sweete and siluer showres,
And ioies the earth (of comforts late depriued)
With grasse and leaues, fine buds, and painted flowres:
Eccho returne vnto the woods obscure,
Ring foorth the Shepherds songs in loue contriued:
Let olde loues be renued,
Which angrie winter buried hath of late:
And that in such a state
My soule may haue the full accomplishment
Of ioy and sweete content:
And since fierce paines and greefes thou dost controule,
Good loue doe not forsake my inward soule.

Presume not (Shepherds) once to make you mery
With springs, and flowres, or any pleasant song,
(Vnlesse milde loue possesse your amorous brestes)
If you sing not to him, your songs doe werie,
Crowne him with flowres, or else ye doe him wrong,
And consecrate your strings to his behestes:
I to my Shepherdesse
My happie loues with great content doe sing,
And flowres to her doe bring.
And sitting neere her by the riuer side,
Enioy the braue springtide.
Since then thy ioies such sweetnesse doe enroule,
Good loue doe not forsake my inward soule.

The wise in ancient times a God thee nam'd,
Seeing that with thy power and supreme might
Thou didst such rare and mighty woonders make:
For thee a hart is frozen and inflam'd,
A foole thou mak'st a wise man with thy light,
The coward turnes couragious for thy sake:
The mighty Gods did quake
At thy commaund: To birdes and beasts transformed:
Great monarches haue not scorned
To yeeld vnto the force of beauties lure:
Such spoiles thou dost procure
With thy braue force, which neuer may be toulde
With which (sweete loue) thou conqu'rest euery soule.

In other times obscurely I did liue
But with a drowsie, base, and simple kinde
Of life, and onely to my profit bend me:
To thinke of loue my selfe I did not giue,

Or

Or for good grace, good partes, and gentle minde
Neuer did any Shepherdesse commend me:
But crowned now they send me
A thousand garlands, that I woon with praise,
In wrestling daies by daies,
In pitching of the bar with arme most strong,
And singing many a song,
After that thou didst honour, and take hould
Of me (sweete loue) and of my happy soule.

What greater ioy can any man desire,
Then to remaine a captiue vnto loue,
And haue his hart subiected to his power?
And though sometimes he taste a little sower,
By suffring it, as milde as gentle doue,
Yet must he be, in lieu of that great hire
Whereto he doth aspire:
If louers liue afflicted and in paine,
Let them with cause complaine
Of cruell fortune, and of times abuse,
And let them not accuse
Thee (gentle loue) That dost with blisse ensoulde
Within thy sweetest ioies each louing soule.

Behold a faire sweete face, and shining eies,
Resembling two most bright and twinkling starres;
Sending vnto the soule a perfect light:
Behold the rare perfections of those white
And Iuorie hands, from greefes most sure bars:
That minde wherein all life and glorie lies,
That ioy that neuer dies,
That he doth feele, that loues and is beloued,
And my delights approoued
To see her pleas'd, whose loue maintaines me heere:
All those I count so deere,
That though sometimes Loue doth my ioies controule,
Yet am I glad he dwels within my soule.

There was not one there amongst them all but tooke great delight in the Shepherds songs. But *Eugerius* comming to giue his verdict, praise, and reward to him that had sung best, could not so soone conclude of the matter: he stept aside to *Montanus* to heare his opinion, whose iudgement was, that one had sung as well as another. Then *Eugerius* turning to *Syrenus* and *Arsileus*, said. My opinion is (cunning Shepherds) that you are equall in the subiect of this contention, and that, if old *Palemon* were reuiued, and made an indifferent iudge betweene you, hee could not confesse (I thinke) any superioritie in your skill. Thou art *Syrenus* worthie to beare away the cristall cup; and thou *Arsileus* deseruest it as well, so that I should offer you great wrong, if I did not define who is conqueror, and who is conquered. To resolue my selfe therefore of this doubt with *Montanus* opinion, I say that

that to thee (*Syrenus*) is allotted the Cristall cup, and to thee (*Arsileus*) this Calcedonian cup of no lesse value, which worthily thou hast wonne. To both of you therefore I giue cups of like value, both of them of account amongst *Felicias* treasure, and by her bountifull hands bestowed on me. The Shepherds were well pleased at the wise iudgement, and rich rewardes of bountifull *Engerius*, to whom they gaue many thankes. But *Alcida* by this occasion calling to minde her passed times, said. If the deceitfull errour, wherewith I haue beene blinded so long, had endured till now, I would not then cõsent that *Arsileus* should be rewarded equally with *Syrenus*: But since I am now free from it, and wounded afresh with the loue of my betrothed *Marcelius*, for the paine which I suffer for his absence, I like well of that which *Syrenus* did sing; and for the ioy and sweete delight which I expect, I also commend *Arsileus* song. But take heed careless *Syrenus*, that these complaints which thou makest of *Diana*, be not like to those wherewith I blamed *Marcelius*, bicause thou maist not repent thee of thy hardnes of hart and disdaine, as I haue done. *Syrenus* smiled at this and said: What greater blame may be laide vpon that Shepherdesse, who after she had forsaken me, married her selfe to a iealous, peruerse, and vnfortunate husband. Then *Alcida* answered. Vnfortunate indeed he hath beene enough, since he cast his eies vpon me: and bicause it comes fit to the purpose, I will tell thee that, which yesterday (by reason of *Felicias* discourses and affaires with me) I could not declare vnto thee, when as we were talking about *Dianas* matters: and to this end especially, bicause thou mightest forget all iniuries past, and shake off thy wrongfull obliuion, when thou shalt vnderstand of the strange and vnluckie accident, that by my contempt befell to miserable *Delius*. I haue told thee before, how I was talking and singing with *Diana* at the fountaine of the Sicamours, and how iealous *Delius* came thither, and sorrowfull *Marcelius* after him in a Shepherds habit, at whose sight I was so grieued, that I fled from him incõtinently into a wood that was hard by. But when I came to the other side of the wood, I heard a far off a voice that still cryed, *Alcida*, Oh *Alcida*, stay, stay: which made me to thinke that *Marcelius* followed me; and bicause I would not fall into his hands, I ran as fast as I could away. But by that which afterwards happened, I knew that it was *Delius*, husband to *Diana*, that came running after me. And bicause I had run a great way, and began to be wearie, I then went so easily, that he followed me in sight. I knew him, and staied to know what he would haue, not thinking once of him, nor of the cause of his comming. And when he was before me, what by the faintnes of his running, and by the anguish of his minde that troubled him, he was not able to vtter one word. At the last with rude and ill formed reasons he said, that he was in loue with me, praying me after his homely manner to loue him againe, and many other things (I know not what) which shewed his little wit, and simple behauiour. To tell the very truth I laughed at him, and the best I could, endeuoured to comfort him, and to make him forget his folly, but it auailed nothing; for the more I disswaded him from it, the more foole he was. In faith (Shepherd) I sweare vnto thee, that I neuer knew man in my life so assotted with sudden loue. But as I went on my waies, and he following me at an inch, we came to a village a mile distant from his towne, and there, when he perceiued my rigour, & that I had flatly denied him, for verie griefe and anguish of minde he fell sicke. He was lodged there by a Shepherd that knew him, who as soone as morning came, certified his mother of his malladie. *Delius* mother came thither with a heauie hart in great haste, and found her sonne tormented with a burning feauer. With much sorrow she lamented his case, and did

importune

importune him to know the cauſe of his griefe, but no other anſwer would he giue her, but ſob, ſigh, and weepe. The louing mother powring forth many a bitter teare, ſaid vnto him. Oh my deere Son! what an vnfortunate chance is this? Hide not the ſecrets of thy hart from me, behold I am thy mother, and (perhaps) I knowe ſome part of them alreadie. Thy wife told me laſt night, that at the fountaine of the Sicamours thou didſt forſake her, running after I knowe not what vnknowne Shepherdeſſe, tell me if thy greefe doth grow thereby, and be not afraid nor aſhamed to impart it to me; for ill may that malladie be cured, the cauſe and beginning whereof is vnknowne. Oh ſorrowfull *Diana*! thou didſt this day go to *Felicias* temple to learn ſome newes of thy husband, and he was neerer to thy towne, and weaker then thou wert aware of. When *Delius* heard his mother ſpeake theſe words, he anſwered not a worde, but gaue a great ſigh, and then redoubled his painefull agonie. For before he complained onely of Loue, but at theſe wordes with loue and iealouſie he was moſt greeuouſlie moleſted. For when he remembred that thou (*Syrenus*) wert here in *Felicias* pallace, and hearing that *Diana* was come hither, fearing leaſt her olde and mortified loue might be rekindled againe in her, he fell into ſuch a frantike madnes, that, being aſſaulted with two moſt fierce and cruell torments, he ended his life in a furious traunce, vnto the greateſt greefe of his ſorrowfull mother, kinſefolkes, and lamenting friends. In very truth I could not chuſe but be ſorrowfull for his death, knowing my ſelfe to be the chiefeſt cauſe of it, but I coulde haue done no leſſe for ſafegard of mine owne content and honor. Onely one thing greeued me not a little, that not contenting him with any comfortable deede, I gaue him not (at the leaſt) ſome gentle words, whereby he might not then (perhaps) haue come to ſo ſudden a death. In the ende I came hither, leauing the poore ſoule dead, and his kinsfolkes weeping for him, not knowing the cauſe of his death. Thus haue I digreſſed (yet to the purpoſe) to make thee knowe what harme a cruell diſdaine and forgetfulnes procureth, and alſo bicauſe thou ſhouldeſt vnderſtand of *Dianas* widowhood, and conſider with thy ſelfe, if now it were good for thee to change thine intent, ſince ſhe hath changed her condition and eſtate. But I maruell much that *Diana* departing from her towne yeſterday (as *Delius* mother ſaide) to come to this place, is not yet heere. *Syrenus* gaue attentiue eare to *Alcidas* words, and when hee heard of *Delius* death, his hart began ſomewhat to alter and change. There did the ſecret power alſo of ſage *Felicia* worke extraordinary effects, and though ſhe was not preſent there, yet with her herbes and wordes, which were of great vertue, and by many other ſupernaturall meanes, ſhe brought to paſſe that *Syrenus* began now againe to renewe his old loue to *Diana*: which was no great maruell, conſidering that by the influence of his celeſtiall conſtellation he was ſo much enclined to it, that it ſeemed *Syrenus* was not borne but onely for *Diana*, nor *Diana* but for *Syrenus*.

The prouident and moſt wiſe Ladie *Felicia* was now in her magnificent and rich pallace, enuironed about with her chaſte Nymphes, working with ſoueraigne and ſecret verſes the remedies, and content of all theſe Louers. And as ſhe ſawe by her diuine wiſedome, that by this time *Montanus* and *Alcida* being by their imaginations deceiued, had now acknowledged their errours, and that hard harted *Syrenus* had mollified his obſtinate and rigorous diſpoſition, ſhe thought it now high time vtterly to confound olde errours, and to eaſe the long trauels and troubles of her gueſtes, by exchanging them into ioyfull and vnexpected happines. Going therefore out of her ſumptuous pallace, attended on by *Dorida*, *Cynthia*, *Polydora*, and manie other goodly Nymphes, ſhe came to the delightfull garden, where the Lordes,

Ladies,

Ladies, Shepherds and Shepherdesses were: The first that she saw there, were *Marcelius*, *Don Felix*, *Felismena*, *Syluanus*, *Seluagia*, *Diana*, and *Ismenia*, sitting in one of the corners of that little square meadow neere vnto the great gate, as is aforesaide. When they sawe the reuerend Lady comming towards them, they all rose vp, and kissed those hands, in which they had placed their cheefest hope and remedies. She courteously saluted them againe, making a signe vnto them that they shoulde all follow her, which most willingly they did. *Felicia* attended on by this amorous traine, crossing euery part of this great and pleasant garden, came at the last to the other part of it to the fountaine, where *Eugerius*, *Polydorus*, *Alcida*, *Clenarda*, *Syrenus*, *Arsileus*, *Belisa*, & *Montanus* were. They all rose vp, in honor of the sage Matron. And when *Alcida* espied *Marcelius*, *Syrenus Diana*, and *Montanus Ismenia*, they were all astonished at the sight one of another, and verily thought they were in a dreame, standing like enchaunted persons, and not beleeuing their owne eies. The wise Ladie commanding them all to sit downe againe, and shewing by her countenance that she was to entreat of important affaires, sat her downe in the middes of them all, in a chaire of Iuorie, grauen with gold and precious stones, and spake in this sort. Nowe is the hower come (renowned and faire assemblie) wherein with my hands I meane to giue you all your long desired and happie contentment: for by diuers strange meanes, and vntroden waies I haue made you come to my Palace for no other intent and purpose. Since you are heere therefore altogither wel met, where the matters and meanes of your happie loue and life to come must be determined, my desire is that you would follow my will, and obey my commands herein. Thou art *Alcida*, by the true testimonie and report of thy sister *Clenarda*, cleerelie deliuered from the suspicion of thy deceiued imagination. And I knew well enough that, after thou hadst forsaken that cruell disdaine, the absence of thy *Marcelius* did not a little greeue thee. Come hither therefore, and offer thy selfe vnto him, for this absence shall not be long, which hath rather beene so short, that at that time when thou complainedst to me of it, *Marcelius* was in my pallace. Nowe thou hast him heere before thee, as firme and stedfast in his first loue, that, if it pleased thee, and thy Father, brother and sister, he would thinke himselfe the happiest man aliue, to solemnize this desired marriage long since betrothed. The which besides that it must needes cause great ioy and gladnes, being betweene such principall and noble personages, shall make it more perfect and absolute, by reason of *Felismena* his sisters presence, whom *Marcelius* after many yeeres past, hath happely found out in my Palace. Thou *Montanus* by *Syluerta* herselfe, that betraied thee, art rid from thy erronious opinion. After which time thou didst weep continually for the losse of thy faithfull wife *Ismenia*, who now is come to liue & die in thine armes, and to comfort all thy sorrowes, after that thorow out all Spaine, with many a wearie iourney, and many dangers, and troubles she hath sought thee out. But now last of all it resteth to remedie thy paines (faire *Diana*) before which time I meane to aduertise thee of that which *Syrenus* and some of these Shepherds doe know by *Alcidas* report, although it will be but a sorrowfull tale in thine eares, and a grieuous corosie to thy pitifull hart. Thy husband *Delius* (faire Shepherdesse) as it pleased the inexorable destinies, hath ended the course of his life. For the losse whereof I know well (*Diana*) that thou hast great cause to lament, but yet in the end all men are bound to pay this tribute to Nature, and that which is so common a thing, ought not extremely to grieue any one. Weepe not (faire *Diana*) for thou breakest my hart asunder in seeing thee powre forth such dolorous teares, drie vp thine eies, comfort

thy

thy ſorrowes, and cheere vp thy ſelfe. Put on no morning weeds, and make no long moan, for too much lamentation & ſorrow is not allowed in this houſe, when as alſo the heauens haue reſerued for thee ſome better hap, then that which thou had'ſt of late. And ſince there is no remedie for that which is lately done, it belongeth to thy wiſedom to forget what is paſt, and to my skill & power, to giue order to things preſent. Heere is thy old louer *Syrenus*, whoſe hart by my operations, and by the reaſon that bindes him to it, is become ſo tender, gentle, and chaunged from his former hardnes, that now for his great contentment, it onely behoooueth him to conclude a marriage with thee. That which I requeſt of thee is, that thou wilt obay my will in a thing which ſo greatly concerneth thy happie and ioyfull life: The which, although it may ſeeme to offer ſome iniurie to thy husband that is dead to marrie ſo ſoone againe; yet being a thing practiſed by my decree and autoritie, cannot any waies be deemed ill. And thou *Syrenus* ſince thou haſt begun to giue place in thy hart to honeſt and vertuous Loue, make now an ende to yeelde vp thy thoughts and deeds to it: and let this merie and happie mariage be put in effect, to the fulfilling of which, all the fauourable ſtars are inclined. The reſt of you, which in this delightfull garden enioy your happie content, reioice in your minds; make merie paſtimes; play vpon your tuned inſtruments; ſing ſweete Ditties, and exerciſe your ſelues in delightfull ſports and conuerſation, in honour and memory of theſe ioyfull meetings, and happie marriages. Sage *Felicia* had no ſooner ended her ſpeech, but all of them were verie willing to do as ſhe commanded them, liking well of her motion, and maruelling at her ſingular wiſedome. *Montanus* tooke his wife *Iſmenia* by the hand, thinking themſelues thriſe happie and fortunate; and betweene *Marcelius* and *Alcida*, *Syrenus* and *Diana*, at that inſtant a holy and virtuous marriage was ſolemnly celebrated with great loue, firmnes, and ſumptuous accuſtomed ceremonies.

All the reſt exceeding glad for theſe happie accidents, ſung and reioiced with maruellous applauſe. Amongſt the which, *Arſileus* for the great good will that he bare to *Syrenus*, and for the friendſhip betweene them both, at the ſound of his Rebecke, ſung this Caroll in memorie and ioy of the new marriage betweene *Syrenus* and *Diana*.

LEt now each meade with flowers be depainted,
Of ſundrie colours ſweeteſt odours glowing:
Roſes yeeld foorth your ſmels, ſo finely tainted,
Calme windes, the greene leaues moone with gentle blowing:
The chriſtall riuers flowing
With waters be increaſed:
And ſince each one from ſorrowes now hath ceaſed,
(From mournefull plaints and ſadnes)
Ring forth faire Nymphes, your ioyfull ſongs for gladnes.

Let ſprings and meades all kinde of ſorrow baniſh,
And mournefull harts the teares that they are bleeding:
Let gloomie cloudes with ſhining morning vaniſh,
Let euery bird reioice, that now is breeding:
And ſince by new proceeding,
With marriage now obtained,

A great content by great contempt is gayned,
And you deuoid of ſadnes,
Ring forth faire Nymphes, your ioyfull ſongs for gladnes.

Who can make vs to chaunge our firme deſires,
And ſoule to leaue her ſtrong determination,
And make vs freeze in Iſe, and melt in fires,
And nyceſt harts to loue with emulation:
Who rids vs from vexation,
And all our minds commaundeth?
But great Felicia, *that his might withſtandeth*
That fild our harts with ſadnes,
Ring forth faire Nymphes, your ioyfull ſongs for gladnes.

Your fields with their diſtilling fauours cumber
(Bridegroome and happie Bride) each heauenly power
Your ſtockes, with double lambes increas'd in number,
May neuer taſte vnſauourie graſſe and ſower:
The winters froſt and ſhower
Your kids (your pretie pleaſure)
May neuer hurt, and bleſt with ſo much treaſure,
To driue away all ſadnes,
Ring forth faire Nymphes, your ioyfull ſongs for gladnes.

Of that ſweete ioy delight you with ſuch meaſure,
Betweene you both faire iſſue to ingender:
Longer then Neſtor *may you liue in pleaſure:*
The Gods to you ſuch ſweete content ſurrender,
That may make milde and tender
The beaſts in euerie mountaine,
And glad the fields and woods and euerie fountaine,
Abiuring former ſadnes,
Ring forth faire Nymphes, your ioyfull ſongs for galdnes.

Let amorous birds with ſweeteſt notes delight you,
Let gentle winds refreſh you with their blowing,
Let fields and forreſts with their goods requite you,
And Flora *decke the ground where you are going:*
Roſes, and vilets ſtrowing,
The Iaſmine and the Gilloflower
With many more: and neuer in your bower
To taſte of houſhold ſadnes,
Ring forth faire Nymphes, your ioyfull ſongs for gladnes.

Concord and peaze hold you for aye contented,
And in your ioyfull ſtate liue yee ſo quiet,
That with the plague of iealouſie tormented
Ye may not be, nor fed with Fortunes dyet:

And that your names may flie yet
To hils vnknowen with glorie,
But now bicauſe my breſt ſo hoarſe, and ſorie
It faints, may reſt from ſinging,
End Nymphes your ſongs, that in the clouds are ringing.

When *Arſileus* had made an end of his ſong, there was ſuch a generall reioicing, that it woulde haue cheered vp the moſt ſorrowfull harts that euer were. Sweete and delightfull ſongs reſounded in euery part of the garden, the tuned inſtruments made more then earthly Harmonie, and it ſeemed that the bloſſomed trees, the gliding riuer, the pleaſant fountaine, and the chirping birdes reioyced at that feaſte. After that they had a pretie while delighted themſelues in this kinde of exerciſe, *Felicia* thinking it time to go to dinner, commanded that it ſhoulde be brought to the fountaine where they were. Whoſe commaunde the Nymphes obeying, preſently buſied themſelues ſeuerally to prouide for dinner; and ſetting the tables and cupbordes of plate vnder the ſhadowe of thoſe greene trees, euerie one ſitting in order as *Felicia* appointed them, beganne to taſte of thoſe delicate and daintie meates that were ſerued in, and moſt of them in plate of great value. Dinner being done, and returning to their former pleaſures, they made much ſport and merriment with many feaſtes and paſtimes, which ſhall be ſet downe in the Booke following.

The end of the fourth Booke.

The fifth Booke of the third Part of Diana.

THeſe Louers were ſo well pleaſed with their happie eſtate, euerie one ſeeing himſelfe in his deſired companie, that they quite forgat their former troubles. But wee, that a faire off beholde and marke the paines and troubles that their contentment coſt them, the dangers that they were in, and the miſhaps and croſſes that they had before they came to this happines, muſt be well aduiſed and take good heed, that we put not our ſelues into like inconueniences, although our after reward and repoſe were more certaine then theirs; and the rather being ſo vncertaine and doubtfull, that for one that hath good happe, a thouſand there are, whoſe long and painefull liues with deſperate death haue beene rewarded. But leauing this aſide, let vs entreate of thoſe feaſtes and paſtimes, which were made in *Felicias* garden for ioy of the new eſpouſals, and obliuion of old iniuries and deceits, although it is not poſſible to ſet them downe in particular. *Felicia*, at whoſe command all were obedient, and in whoſe direction the whole order and ſubſtance of the feaſt conſiſted, willed the Shepherds (for their firſt paſtime) to dance togither, to the tune of certaine ſongs that they themſelues ſhould ſing: And ſo ſitting downe with *Eugerius*, *Polydorus*, *Clenarda*, *Marcelius*, *Alcida*, *Don Felix*, and *Eliſmena*, ſhe declared vnto the Shepherds her will and pleaſure. Then they all roſe vp, and *Syrenus* taking *Diana* by the hande, *Syluanus* *Seluagia*, *Montanus Iſmenia*, and *Arſileus Beliſa*, began to foote ſo braue and ſweete a dance, as anie that the faireſt *Driades* and *Napees* with their yealowe haire like threedes

threedes of fine Arabian golde hanging looſe and blowen abroad with the windes were euer wont to dance in the greene and pleaſant forreſtes. There was no curteous contention amongſt them, who ſhould begin to ſing firſt: For *Syrenus*, who was the chiefeſt man in all that feaſt, being ſomewhat aſhamed of the ſmall regard hee had of *Diana* till that time, the thought whereof (he alſo ſuſpected) was likewiſe a hinderance vnto him from iuſtly excuſing himſelfe, reſolued in ſong to tell *Diana* his minde, which ſhame woulde not permit him to acquaint her with in familiar talke. Therefore without any more adoo (the reſt anſwering him as it was decreed) he ſung as followeth.

I Should haue dide, and neuer viewed thee
(Faire Shepherdeſſe, vnwoorthily forgot)
Since that I durſt preſume to liue, and bee
Before thy ſweeteſt ſight, and loue thee not.

A happy loue, and fortune I ſhould prooue,
Both which my paines and ſorrowes ſhould abate,
If by remembring of thy deereſt loue,
I ſhould forget the greefe of former hate.

For now the feare of death, and leeſing thee,
Ifeare will be my guerdon and my lot,
Since that I durſt preſume to liue, and bee
Before thy ſweeteſt ſight, and loue thee not.

Diana was of a contrarie opinion. For hauing ſatisfied her old obliuion and diſdaine that ſhe had of *Syrenus* with a renewed and entire loue of him againe, and ſeeing herſelfe ſufficiently recompenced for her paſſed paines and greefes, ſhe had now no cauſe to lament the ſmall care ſhe had of him in times paſt, but rather finding her hart filled with all content and ioy that ſhe could wiſh, and free from all paine, by manifeſting her gladnes and blaming *Syrenus* needleſſe excuſe, ſhe anſwered him with this ſong.

MY ſoule doth leape for ioy to haue
My wiſhed loue againe,
For there's no other ioy to craue,
Nor greefe to giue me paine.

I doe not thinke of ſorrowes paſt,
Our loue it may offend:
Of any preſent greefe to taſte,
For hate that hath an end.

Reioice (my ſoule) ſuch bliſſe to haue,
Since with ſo high a gaine,
There is no other ioy to craue,
Nor greefe to giue me paine.

While *Diana* was ſinging her ſong, there came a moſt beautifull Shepherdeſſe to the fountaine, but newly (as it ſeemed) come to *Felicias* Palace, and being tolde, that the Ladie was in the garden, ſhe came thither to ſee her and to talke with her. Being come to the place where *Felicia* was, ſhe kneeling downe before her, kiſſed her hands, and ſaid vnto her. Pardon (good Lady) my boldnes, for comming into this preſence without leaue, ſince the deſire I had to ſee you, and the neede which I haue of your skill and wiſedome, was ſo great, that I was forced hereunto. I bring with

me my hart surcharged with greefe, the remedie whereof is onely in your handes, but it is so great, that it requireth some fitter time, occasion, and place to tell it at large, bicause it is against good manners to interrupt this merrie companie with matter of sorrow and greefe. *Meliſea* (for so was this Shepherdesse called) was yet on her knees before *Felicia*, when she perceiued a Shepherd comming along in an Alley of the Orchard towards the fountaine, and in seeing him, saide. This is an other greefe (good Ladie) so troublesome and painfull vnto me, that for the deliuerie of the same also, I haue no lesse neede of your gracious helpe and fauour. By this time the Shepherd (whose name was *Narciſus*) came in presence of *Felicia*, and of those Lordes and Ladies that were with her, and making lowe obeisance, he began to make a great complaint against the Shepherdesse *Meliſea* that was present there, saying, that he suffered great torments for her sake, and receiued not from her again one fauourable or gentle word: Insomuch that in pursute of her loue and company to that place, he had come very fatre, and she not suffred him so much as to declare his greefe to her cruell and disdainfull eares. *Felicia* commanded *Meliſea* to rise vp, and cutting off their troublesome contentions, saide. It is not now time to harken to long and tedious complaints, wherefore be content for this time *Meliſea* and giue *Narciſus* thy hand, and go both into that dance, and for the rest wee will heereafter finde out a remedie at fitter time. The Shepherdesse would not gainsaie the Ladies command, but hand in hand with *Narciſus* she went to dance with the other Shepherds. And at this time happie *Iſmenia* that was readie to sing, shewing by her outward countenance signes of inward content, which after so long sorrow she inioyed, sung in this sort.

Such ioy I feele doth in my soule surmount,
That now againe I thinke it nothing strange:
If that a pleasure of so great account
Doth cost two thousand torments for exchange.

Still did I looke but still my comforts staied,
But when my soule did once enioy the same,
With their content and sweete delight I paied
My staying, and their tariance did not blame.

Let paines therefore within my soule surmount,
Sorrowes and plaints to me shall not be strange,
If for a pleasure of so great account,
They giue me thousand torments in exchange.

All the while that *Iſmenia* was singing, and before, and after, she neuer cast her eies off her beloued *Montanus*. But he, who was somewhat ashamed of his fonde conceit wherein he had liued so long, to the great griefe of his wife, durst neuer looke on her but by stealth, and at euerie turne of the daunce, when she could not see him againe: the reason whereof was, bicause when sometimes he went about to looke her in the face, he was so much confounded with shame of his folly that was yet so fresh in his memorie, and was so much ouercome with the light of those two radiant eies of her, which with great affection continually beheld him, that he was forced to cast his downe to the ground. Whereby seeing that he lost a great part of

of his delight, by not looking on her, whom he accounted his chiefeſt felicitie, and making this the occaſion and matter of the ſong, he ſung to his beloued *Iſmenia* in manner following.

TVrne thy faire eies (wherein my ſhame
I ſee) faire Shepherdeſſe, aſide:
For looking on me with the ſame,
To looke on thee, I am denide.

With thy two ſunnes ſo doſt thou giue,
And caſt me beames with pearcing eie,
That though by ſeeing thee I liue,
Yet when thou look'ſt on me I die:
Eies that are of ſuch art and frame,
Thou muſt beware to keepe aſide,
For looking on me with the ſame,
To looke on thee I am denide.

Like as the ſnowe vnto the ſunne,
And as the marke vnto the ſlight,
As cloudes are with the windes vndone,
As waxe before the fires light:
So doe thy faireſt eies with ſhame
Confound me, and my ſoule denide:
For looking on me with the ſame,
To looke on thee I am denide.

Behold what mightie loue is bent
To doe, and fortune doth ordaine
To make my ſorrowes ſtill augment
By the ſweete guerdon of my paine.
Thine eies doe feede my amorous flame,
And ſight of them my life doth guide:
But if thou view'ſt me with the ſame,
To looke on thee I am denide.

Meliſea, who was all this while dauncing againſt her will with *Narciſus*, whom ſhe could not abide, with a diſdainfull ſong thought to be reuenged on this griefe, and iuſt to the purpoſe of thoſe paines and griefes, wherewith the Shepherd ſaid he died euerie daie for her ſake, making but a mocke and ieſt of them, did ſing thus.

YOng Shepherd, turne aſide, & moue
Me not to follow thee,
For I will neither kill with loue,
Nor loue ſhall not kill mee.

Since I will liue, and neuer fauour ſhowe,
Then die not for my loue I will not giue:
For I will neuer haue thee loue me ſo,
As I doe meane to hate thee while I liue.

That ſince the louer ſo doth proue
His death, as thou doſt ſee,
Be bold I will not kill with loue,
Nor loue ſhall not kill mee.

Narciſus tooke no meane griefe to heare the cruell ſong of his deereſt Loue, but encouraging himſelfe with the hope that *Felicia* had giuen him, and forced by the conſtancie and fortitude of his enamoured hart, he anſwered her with two ſtaues, which he adioyned to a certaine old ſong, that ſaid thus.

IF to belou'd it thee offends,
I cannot chooſe but loue thee ſtill:
And ſo thy greefe ſhall haue no end,
Whiles that my life maintaines my will.

O let me yet with greefe complaine,
Since ſuch a torment I endure:
Or elſe fulfill thy great diſdaine,
To end my life with death moſt ſure.
For as no credit thou wilt lend,
And as my loue offendes thee ſtill,
So ſhall thy ſorrowes haue no end
Whiles that my life maintaines my will.

If that by knowing thee, I could
Leaue of to loue thee as I doe,
Not to offend thee, then I would
Leaue of to like and loue thee too,
But ſince all loue to thee doth tend,
And I of force muſt loue thee ſtill,
Thy greefe ſhall neuer haue an end,
Whiles that my life maintaines my will.

Meliſea was ſo hardened in her crueltie, that *Narciſus* hauing ſcarce ended the laſt words of his ſong, and before another did ſing, ſhe replied in this manner.

ME thinks, thou tak'ſt the woorſer way,
(Enamoured Shepherd) and in vaine,
That thou wilt ſeeke thine owne decay,
To loue her, that doth thee diſdaine.

For thine owne ſelfe, thy wofull hart
Keepe ſtill, elſe art thou much to blame,
For ſhe, to whom thou gau'ſt each part
Of it, diſdaines to take the ſame:

Follow not her that makes a play,
And ieſt of all thy greefe and paines,
And ſeeke not (Shepherd) thy decay
To loue her, that thy loue diſdaines.

Narciſus could not ſuffer *Meliſeas* ſong to paſſe without an anſwer, and ſo with a milde grace he ſung theſe new verſes vpon an old ſong, that ſaid.

SInce thou to me wert ſo vnkinde,
My ſelfe I neuer loued, For
I could not loue him in my minde,
Whom thou faire Miſtreſſe doſt abhor.

If viewing thee, I ſaw thee not,
And ſeeing thee I could not loue thee,
Dying, I ſhould not liue (God wot)
Nor, liuing, ſhould to anger moue thee.

But it is well that I doe finde
My life ſo full of torments: For
All kinde of ills doe fit his minde,
Whom thou (faire Miſtreſſe) doſt abhor.

In thy obliuion buried now
My death I haue before mine eies,
And heere to hate my ſelfe I vow
As (cruell) thou doſt me deſpiſe:

Contented euer thou didſt finde
Me with thy ſcornes, though neuer (for
To ſay the truth) I ioyed in minde,
After thou didſt my loue abhor.

The contention betweene *Narciſus* and *Meliſea*, delighted them all ſo much, that the generall reioycing of that feaſt had beene greatly augmented by it, had it not bin diminiſhed with the manifeſt apparance of the rigor that ſhe ſhewed *Narciſus*, and with the pitie that they had of thoſe paines, which he ſuffered for hir ſake. After *Narciſus* had made an ende of his ſong, all of them turned their eies to *Meliſea*, thinking ſhe would haue replyed againe. But ſhe held her peace, not bicauſe ſhe wanted nipping and cruell ſongs to encounter and vexe the miſerable Louer with, nor will to reply; but bicauſe ſhe would not be troubleſome to all that merie companie. *Seluagia* and *Beliſa* were afterwards requeſted to ſing, who excuſed themſelues, by alleaging their inſufficiencie. Nay that were not well (ſaid *Diana*) that you ſhould goe from the feaſt without paying your ſhot. And this muſt not ſo ſmoothly paſſe away (ſaid *Feliſmena*) without the conſent of vs all heere, who meane to participate the ſweete delight of ſo delicate voices as yours are. We will not be ſlacke (ſaid they againe) to do you anie ſeruice (little though it be) in this ſolemnitie; but pardon our ſinging (I pray you) for in all other things we will be willing to do our endeuours. I will not for my part giue my conſent (ſaide *Alcida*) to exempt you from ſinging, or at the leaſt that ſome others ſhall ſing for you. Who can better do it (ſaid they) then *Syluanus* and *Arſileus* our husbands. The Shepherdeſſes ſay well (ſaid *Marcelius*) and it would be beſt (me thinkes) if both did ſing one ſong, and one anſwere another in it, for it ſhall be leſſe troubleſome to them, and more pleaſant to vs. All of them ſeemed to take great delight at that kinde of ſinging, bicauſe they

they knew, how the readines and liuelines of their wits would be ſhewed and tried by it. And ſo *Syluanus* and *Arſileus* ſeeming to be well content, leading their daunce about againe, ſung in manner following.

Sylu. *SHepherd, why doſt thou hold thy peace?*
Sing: and thy ioy to vs report.
Arſil. *My ioy (good Shepherd) ſhould be leſſe,*
If it were told in any ſort.
Sylu. *Though ſuch great fauours thou doſt win,*
Yet deigne thereof to tell ſome part:
Arſil. *The hardeſt thing is to begin*
In enterpriſes of ſuch arte.
Sylu. *Come, make an end, no cauſe omit*
Of all the ioies that thou art in,
Arſil. *How ſhould I make an end of it,*
That am not able to begin.
Sylu. *It is not iuſt, we ſhould conſent,*
That thou ſhouldſt not thy ioies recite,
Arſil. *The ſoule that felt the puniſhment*
Doth onely feele this great delight.
Sylu. *That ioy is ſmall, and nothing fine,*
That is not told abroad to many,
Arſil. *If it be ſuch a ioy as mine,*
It can be neuer told to any.
Sylu. *How can this hart of thine containe*
A ioy, that is of ſuch great force?
Arſil. *I haue it, where I did retaine*
My paſſions of ſo great remorce.
Sylu. *So great and rare a ioy as this*
No man is able to withhold,
Arſil. *But greater that a pleaſure is,*
The leſſe it may with words be told.
Sylu. *Yet haue I heard thee heeretofore*
Thy ioies in open ſongs report:
Arſil. *I ſaide, I had of ioy ſome ſtore,*
But not how much, nor in what ſort.
Sylu. *Yet when a ioy is in exceſſe,*
It ſeeſe it will vnfold,
Arſil. *Nay ſuch a ioy ſhould be the leſſe,*
If that it might be told.

The Shepherds would haue ſung one verſe or two more, when a goodly companie of faire Nymphes (as *Felicia* had appointed) came to the fountaine, and euerie one playing vpon her ſeuerall inſtrument, made ſtrange and delightfull harmonie. One of them plaied on a Lute; another on a Harpe; another made a maruellous ſweet countertenour vpon a Recorder; another with a peece of a fine quil made the ſiluer ſtringed Cyterne ſweetely to ſound; others the ſtringes of the baſe Viall with roſined haires; others with Virginals and Violins made delicate changes in the aire,

aire, and filled it with ſo ſweete muſicke, that in a manner it aſtoniſhed them that heard it, and made them to maruell no leſſe at it. Theſe Nymphes were ſtrangely apparelled, and paſſing faire to behold, euerie one in her proper colours, their locks of golden haire hanging looſe to the wauering winde, with fine coronets on their heads, and ſweete flowers tied togither with threds of gold and ſiluer. The Shepherds ſeeing this melodious quier of angels, left of the daunce that they had begun, and ſat downe, giuing attentiue eare to the heauenly muſicke, and concent of the ſundrie ſweete inſtruments that they plaied on, which ioyned ſometimes with cleere and delicate voices, mooued ſtrange and rare delight. Then came out by and by ſixe Nymphes apparelled with crimoſin Satten, embrodered with flowers & leaues of gold and ſiluer, wearing rich caules vpon their heads, which were filled and wrought with Rubies and Emerauldes, from the which hung downe vpon their faireſt browes Diamantes of incomparable value, with pendants at their eares, of the rareſt Pearles and richeſt Diamonds that could be founde. They had crymoſin Buskins on their legs that were finely printed and gilt, with their bowes in their hands, and their quiuers of arrowes hanging behinde their ſhoulders. In this ſort they began to dance to the ſound that the inſtruments made, but with ſo braue a grace, that it was a rare ſight to behold them. And being in the middes of their dance, there lept out on the ſudden a ſtately white Hart, marked all ouer with little blacke ſpots, which ſeemed very pleaſant to the eie: his painted hornes with golde were large, high, and branchie. In breefe it was ſuch an one, as *Felicia* could beſt deuiſe to make that companie ſport. When the Nymphes eſpied the Hart, they ranne rounde about him, and dancing neuertheleſſe without miſſing one ſtraine of the muſicke that plaied ſtill, with a braue concord they began to ſhoote at him, the which leaping from one ſide to another after the arrowes were once flien out, with manie nimble and pretie skips did the beſt to defend himſelfe. But after they had a pretie while ſported themſelues with this paſtime, the Hart beganne to breake out from them amongſt the orchards and courts, the Nymphes purſuing him amaine, vntill they chaſed him out of the Garden, who with their ioyfull cries and pleaſant hallowing made a delicate noiſe, which the other Nymphes & Shepherds ſeconded with their voices, taking a moſt ſingular delight in this dance. And with this ſport the Nymphes made an end of their muſicke. In the meane time ſage *Felicia*, bicauſe there ſhould not want ſome profitable leſſon to be gathered out of thoſe pleaſures for the direction and inſtruction of life, meaning to trie their conceits about the obſcure myſteries and ſignifications of that dance, ſaide to *Diana*. Canſt thou tell me (faire Shepherdeſſe) what is ment by the chaſe of this goodlie Hart, beſides the thing it ſelfe? To whom ſhe ſaide againe, I am not ſo wiſe (gracious Ladie) that I am able to expounde myſteries, nor to diſſolue your hard queſtions. Why then will I tell thee ſaid *Felicia*, what matter is conteined vnder that inuention. The Hart is mans hart, made faire with delicate thoughts, and rich with quiet content. It ſubmitteth it ſelfe to humane inclinations, which ſhoote mortall arrowes at it, but with diſcretion remoouing it ſelfe into diuers parts, and applying it ſelfe to honeſt exerciſes, it muſt defend it ſelfe from ſo many hurtfull arrowes, that ayme ſo cruelly at it. And when it is purſued of them, it muſt flie away ſpeedilie, thereby to ſaue it ſelfe, though thoſe humane and fraile inclinations which ſhoote ſuch arrowes, will not ceaſe to purſue it, and will neuer leaue to accompanie it, vntill it eſcapes out of the orchard of life. How can I vnderſtand (ſaide *Diana*) ſo difficult and Morall a concluſion, as this, when as the queſtions and Riddles which wee

Shepherdeſſes

Shepherdesses exercise and disport our selues with (to this but plaine and easie) I could neuer yet dissolue nor expound. Make not thy selfe so vnskilfull (saide *Seluagia*) since I haue knowne the contrarie in thee, and that there was neuer any Riddle so hard, but was easie enough in thy vnderstanding. In good time (saide *Felicia*) for now we may wel try her cunning, which pastime wil affoord no lesse delight then the other before. Propound her therfore euery one of you a Riddle, for I know *Diana* will acquite herselfe with you all. It liked them all well; but *Diana*, who had not such confidence in her cunning, that she durst oppose her skil to such difficult questions as she thought they woulde propounde, but bicause she woulde obey *Felicia* and please her *Syrenus*, who seemed to take a pride and delight therein, she was content to take in hand the charge that they imposed vpon hir. *Syluanus*, who was very ready in propounding of Riddles, made the first, saying. Bicause I know well (faire Shepherdesse) that thy pregnant and liuely wit is able to discouer hard and hidden matters, and that thy skill is no lesse sufficient to compasse and attaine to intricate and high things, I will therefore (by thy fauour) aske thee a question, by answering which, I know thou wilt manifest thy delicate and ripe wit. Tell me therefore what this Riddle meanes?

A Riddle.

Neere to a Shepherd did a damsell sit,
As leane as withered sticke by scorching flame:
Her body as full of eies as might be in it,
A toong she had, but could not mooue the same.
Her winde she drew aboue, and eke beneath,
But from one part she neuer yet did change,
A wofull Shepherd came to kisse her breath,
Then made she plaints most sorrowfull and strange:
The more the Shepherd put his mouth vnto
Her mouth in stopping it, she cried amaine,
Opening her eies, and shutting them againe.
See now what this dumbe Shepherdesse could doe,
That when her mouth he did but touch or kisse,
He waxeth dumbe, but she still speaking is.

This Riddle (said *Diana*) although it be somewhat hard, shall not trouble my wit much, for I haue heard thy selfe propound it on a day at the fountaine of the Sicamours; and because there was no Shepherd there that could tell the meaning of it, thy selfe didst expound vnto vs, saying, that the Damosell was a Bagpipe or a Fluite played vpon by a Shepherd. And thou appliedst all the parts of the Riddle to the effects that happen commonly in musicke. All of them laughed to see how *Syluanus* memorie had deceiued him, and how *Dianas* so readily found it out; wherefore *Syluanus* to acquite himselfe, and to be reuenged of his shame, smiling said. Maruell not at my weake memorie; for this forgetfulnes seemes not so ill as *Dianas*, nor so hurtfull as that of *Syrenus*. Thou hast now paide vs home (said *Syrenus*) and better thou shouldest haue done, if our obliuions had not beene changed into so perfect affections and happie estates as now they are. No more (said *Seluagia*) for all is well spoken. But answere me *Diana* to that, which I will aske thee, for I will trie if I can speake in a darker language then my *Syluanus* did: The Riddle is this.

A Riddle.

I Sawe a hill vpon a day,
Lift vp aboue the aire:
Which watered with blood alway
And tilled with great care,
Herbes it brought foorth
Of mickle woorth.
Pulling a handfull from that ridge
And touching but the ſame,
Which leauing neere vnto a bridge,
Doth cauſe much ſport and game,
(A thing ſcarce of beleefe)
Lamenting without greefe.

Diana looking then towards her husband, ſaid. Doſt not thou remember (my *Syrenus*) that thou haſt heard this Riddle that night, when we were togither in my vncle *Tranius* his houſe? And doſt not thou remember alſo how *Maroncius* ſonne to (*Fernaſus*) did propound it? I remember verie well (ſaid *Syrenus*) that he did put it there, but told not (as I thinke) the ſignification of it. But then I remember it (ſaid *Diana.*) For he ſaid, that the field was that part of the horſe from whence they pull out his longeſt haires, wherewith the Rebeckes being ſtrong, make a tuned noiſe, although they ſuffer neuer the more any paine or hurt. *Seluagia* ſaid, that it was ſo, and that *Maroncius* Author of the Riddle, had told it for a fine one, although he had many more better then that. There are many pretie ones, ſaid *Beliſa*, and one of them is, that I will now put: wherefore call thy wits togither *Diana*, for this time thou ſhalt not eſcape ſcot free: and it is this.

A Riddle.

WHat bird is that ſo light,
Her place that neuer changeth:
She flies by day and night,
In all the world ſhe rangeth:
Ouer the ſea at once ſhe flies,
Mounting aboue the loftie skies.
She's neuer ſeene by eies,
And who doth ſeeke to ſhow her
Hath beene accounted wiſe:
Yet ſometimes we doe knowe her,
Onely the wals by viewing well
Of her cloſe houſe, where ſhe doth dwell.

Thy Riddle *Beliſa* (ſaid *Diana*) hath beene more vnfortunate then the reſt before; for I had not declared any of their ſignifications, if I had not heard them before now, and this which thou haſt put, as ſoone as I heard it, I vnderſtood it, which of it ſelfe is ſo eaſie and manifeſt, that any indifferent conceite (I thinke) is able to diſſolue it. For it is verie cleere, that by the birde which thou ſpeakeſt of, ones thought is vnderſtood, which flies with ſuch ſwiftnes, that is not ſeene of any body, but coniectured and knowen by the outward ſignes and geſture of the bodie, wherin it is included. I confeſſe my ſelfe ouercommed (ſaid *Beliſa*) and haue no more to ſay, but that I yeeld my reaſons to thy diſcretion and wit, and my ſelfe to thy diſpoſition and will. I will reuenge thee (ſaid *Iſmenia* to *Beliſa*) for there comes an obſcure probleme to my minde, that hath poſed the wiſeſt Shepherds, which I will propound, and thou ſhalt ſee how I will grauell *Diana*, who ſhall not be ſo fortunate (I thinke) in expounding it, as ſhe hath beene in the reſt, and looking vpon *Diana*, ſhe ſaid.

A Riddle.

TEll me what Maſter he may be,
Whoſe Maſter is his man?
Bound like a ſenceleſſe foole is he,

Wittie,

Wittie, it nothing can.
Vnlearned, yet he doth abound
In learning graue and most profound:
When that I take him by the hand,
Although I heare him not,
His meaning yet I vnderstand,
Though him I haue forgot.
So wise is he, though wordes nor motions showing,
Yet thousand things he tels me woorth the knowing.

I would haue beene well contented (said *Diana*) and thought my selfe happie to haue beene ouercommed by thee (beloued *Ismenia*) but since in beautie, and in other perfections and graces thou goest far beyond me, I shall gaine no great praise & glorie by ouerthrowing thy purpose, whereby thou thoughtest to haue entrapped me with thy Riddle. It is now two yeeres, since a certaine Phisition of *Leon* came to attend my Father in his sicknes, & as he had a booke one day in his hands, he gaue it me, & I began to read. And the great profit occurring to my mind that is commonly taken in reading of bookes, I told him, that they were like doombe Masters, that were vnderstoode without speaking. Then to this purpose he told me this Riddle, wherein some rare matters and excellent inuentions of bookes are particularly set downe and noted. In good sooth (said *Ismenia*) there can none of vs Shepherds ouercome thee, wherefore our courage is quailed in passing any farther in this contention, vnlesse these Ladies heere meane to giue thee afresh assault with their weapons, and to make thee yeeld. *Alcida*, which till that time had held her peace, taking great delight in hearing the musicke, and looking on the daunces and sports, and to behold and deuise with her beloued *Marcelius*, being also very desirous to haue one part in that sport, said: Since thou hast (gracious *Diana*) subdued all the Shepherds with thy skill, it is not reason that we should also passe safely away without our Riddles, the which although I know thou wilt as easily dissolue (and mine especially) as thou hast done the rest; yet bicause it may perhaps delight thee, I will propound it. When I sayled on a time from *Naples* into *Spaine*, by the way the master of the ship told it me, and I committed it to memorie, bicause me thought it was a pretie one: and this it was.

A Riddle.

SHew me a horse of such a kinde,
That in the strangest fashion
Doth neuer eate, but of the winde
Doth take his sustentation:
Winged before, and wing'd behinde:
Strange things he doth, and wondrous deeds:
And when he runs his race,
Vpon his breast with haste he speedes.
His reines with maruellous grace
Come from his sides that neuer bleedes.
And in his course he doth not faile,
If rightly he doth wag his taile.

When *Diana* had heard this Riddle, she was a pretie while thinking with her selfe how she might expound it, and hauing framed the discourse in her minde, which was necessarie for the answere, and considered well of euerie part in it; at the last, she said. As it is great reason (faire Ladie) that I remaine conquered at thy hands: So it is no lesse, that whosoeuer renders himselfe to thy gentlenes, he yeelde himselfe also to thy discretion, whereby I esteeme him not confounded, but happy. And if by the horse of thy Enigma, a ship be not vnderstoode, I confesse then that I

cannot

cannot declare it. Thou haſt ouercome me more (ſaid *Alcida*) with thy anſwer, then I haue done thee with my Riddle; for to confeſſe it plainly vnto thee I vnderſtood it not, before thou hadſt ſubtilly expounded it. By chaunce I haue hit it, ſaid *Diana* (as I thinke) and not by any skill, ſpeaking at randome, and not thinking to hit it ſo neer. Howſoeuer thou didſt it (ſaid *Alcida*) it cannot otherwiſe be but that it proceeded from thy readie wit and ripe iudgement. But I pray thee now (faire Shepherdeſſe) diuine what my Siſter *Clenardas* Riddle is (which I know is no ill one) that ſhe ſhall put thee, if ſhe can at the leaſt remember it. And then turning her ſelfe to *Clenarda*, ſhe ſaid vnto her. Propound to this wittie Shepherdeſſe (good ſiſter) that Riddle, which one day in our citie (if thou remembreſt) thou didſt put to *Berinthius* and *Clomenius* our coſins, when we were merie togither in *Eliſonias* houſe. I am well content (ſaid *Clenarda*) for I remember it well, and was purpoſed to tell it: and this it is.

A Riddle.

TEll me (good Sirs) what Bird is that that flies
Three cubits high, and yet doth neuer riſe,
With more then thirtie feete that mount and fall,
With wings that haue no plume nor pens at all:
Beating the aire it neither eates nor drinks,
It neither cries, nor ſings, nor ſpeakes, nor thinks.
Approching neere vnto her cruell death,
She wounds, and kils vs with the ſtones ſhe throwes:
A friend to thoſe that ſpend their deereſt breath
In ſpoiles, and thefts, in mortall wounds and blowes:
Wherein ſhe takes her pleaſure and her fill,
Hiding the men in waues that ſhe doth kill.

I ſhould neuer expound this Riddle (ſaid *Diana*) if I had not heard the meaning of it by a Shepherd in my towne, who had ſometimes failed. And yet I cannot tell whether I remember it or not, but I thinke, he ſaid that a Galley was vnderſtood by it, which being in the middeſt of the dangerous waues, is neere to death, and being accuſtomed to robbing and killing, caſteth the dead carcaſes into the Sea. By the feete he told me, that the oares were ment, by the winges the ſayles, and by the ſtones that it threw, the pellets. We muſt in the end (ſaide *Clenarda*) goe one equall with another, for one deſerues no more praiſe then another. Truely thy great knowledge *Diana* makes me to woonder much, and thou canſt receiue no reward ſufficient enough for ſo great deſerts, but onely by being *Syrenus* wife. Theſe and other curteous ſpeeches they paſſed, when *Felicia*, beholding the fine wit, the comely grace, the paſſing behauiour, and ſweete actions of *Diana*, and marueiling much at them, tooke off from her finger a verie rich ring, ſet with a ſtone of infinite value, which ſhe did ordinarilie weare, and giuing it her for a rewarde of her wittie anſwers to thoſe Riddles, ſaid. This ſhall ſerue for a token of that, which I meane to do for thee (faire Shepherdeſſe) keepe it therfore wel, for in time of thy need the vertue of it may not be a litle profitable vnto thee. *Diana* & *Syrenus* both rẽdred humble thanks to *Felicia*, for ſo great a gift, with deuoutly kiſſing her reuerend hands. Who after ſhe had ſufficientlie & curteouſly made an end of his thanks, ſaid: I haue noted one thing in all theſe Riddles, which is this, that the Shepherdeſſes & Ladies haue propounded the moſt of them, and that the men haue held their peace in ſuch ſort

that

that they haue cleerely ſhewed, that in daintie and wittie conceits they haue not ſo fine a vaine as women haue. *Don Felix* then ieſting ſaid. It is no great maruell that in ſharpnes of wit they excel vs, when in all other perfections they come nothing neer vs. *Beliſa* coulde not digeſt *Don Felix* his merrie ieſt, thinking (perhaps) that he ment it in good earneſt, but looking vpon all the women, ſaid. We will agree (*Don Felix*) that men excell vs, but therein we ſhew our goodnes, and our vertues in our voluntarie ſubiection to their will and skill. But yet knowe this, that there are women which for their vertues and deſerts may be paragoned to the woorthieſt and wiſeſt men, for though gold lies hidden & vnknown, yet it looſeth not therefore any part of that value and prize of that which is currant. For the truth and force of our praiſes is ſo great, that it maketh you publiſh them to your ſelues, which ſeeme to be our enimies. *Floriſia* a Shepherdeſſe renowned for great knowledge and wiſdome, was not (*Don Felix*) of your opinion, when in our towne on a day at a certaine marriage (where was a confluence of many Shepherds, men, and women, that from townes farre and nie had come to that feaſt) to the tune of a Rebecke, and of two Harpes, which three Shepherds ſweetely plaied on, ſhe ſung a ſong in the praiſe and defence of women, which not onely pleaſed them, but alſo delighted all the men there, of whom ſhe ſpoke but little good. And if you are too peruerſe and obſtinate in your opinion, it ſhall not be amiſſe to rehearſe it to you, to make you leaue of your blinde errour. They laughed all hartely to ſee *Beliſa* ſo cholericke, and made no ſmall ſport thereat. In the end old *Eugerius* and his ſonne *Polydorus*, bicauſe they would not be depriued of that merrie ſong which they expected at *Beliſas* handes, ſaid vnto her. The praiſe (faire Shepherdeſſe) and defence of women is iuſtly due vnto them, and no leſſe delightfull to vs to heare it with thy delicate voice repeated. It pleaſeth me well (ſaid *Beliſa*) if it like you, for there are many ſharpe and ſtinging inuectiues, if I could remember all the verſes in it; but yet I will begin to recite them, bicauſe I hope that in ſinging them, one will reduce another to my minde. Then *Arſileus*, ſeeing that *Beliſa* was preparing herſelfe to ſing, began to tune his Rebecke, at the ſound whereof ſhe ſung the ſong, that ſhe heard *Floriſia* in times paſt ſing, which was this.

Floriſias *Song*.

FLie ſtorming verſe out of my raging breſt
With furious anger, malice, and deſpite:
Indigned ſpirits, once at my requeſt
Powre foorth your wrath and pen prepare to write
With ſcornefull ſtinging and inuectiue ſtile,
Againſt a people brutiſh, baſe, and vile:
A vile, peruerſe and monſtrous kinde of men,
Who make it but their paſtime, and their game,
With barbarous mouth and with vnciuill pen
To ſlaunder thoſe, who leſt deſerue the ſame:
Women I meane a workmanſhip diuine,
Angels in ſhape, and Goddeſſes in minde.

Thou wicked man that doſt preſume too hie
Of thy perfections, but without deſart,
Falſe man I ſay, accuſtomed to lie,

What euill canst thou thinke within thy hart,
Or speake of her, whose goodnes more or lesse,
Doth fill the world so full of happinesse,
But onely this, that woman was the cause,
Though not alone, of one exceeding ill,
In bringing foorth (constrained by natures lawes)
A man, whose mischiefes all the world doth fill:
Who after that he is conceiu'd and borne,
Against his mother proudly lifts his horne.

Whom if she had not borne, poore silly dame,
With fewer greefes her life shee might haue lead,
For then he should not slaunder thus her name,
And such a crowe she should not then haue bred,
That being hatch'd, her dam would thus despise,
And daily labour to plucke out her eies.
What man in all the world did euer knowe,
(Although the tendrest father he had beene)
Those cares, and greefes, that sorrow, and that woe,
Which wiues haue for their husbands felt, and seene?
And how the louing mother for her sonne
With sorrow hath beene oftentimes vndone?

Behold with what affection, and what ioy,
What gentlenes, and what intensiue loue,
The mother doth intreate her little boy?
Which after doth a Traitour to her proue:
Requiting ill her paines and loue so kinde
With powring sorrowes still into her minde.
What iealous feares, what fearefull iealousies,
Doe haunt the mother for her cruell sonne?
What paine, when that in any paine he lies,
What greefe, when that with greefe he is vndone?
What perfect gladnes, and what sweete content,
When that he is to any goodnes bent?

Alas how pensiue and how sad they ar,
If that their husbands suffer any paine:
What sorrow, when they trauell somewhat far,
What moane, when that they come not soone againe:
A thousand greefes to heare their losse of wealth,
Ten thousand deathes to heare their want of health.
But men that are so full of false deceate,
Our daily sorrowes neuer doe requite,
Or thinke of them, though they be neuer so great,
But rather such their malice and despite
Is, that our louing cares both great and small,
Vniust suspects, and iealousies doe call.

The cause of which surmise is onely this,
That as these wicked and detested men
Of custome are enclined to stray amisse,
And in false loue their wits and wealth to spend,
Do thinke it now a burden to their liues,
To be belou'd so truely of their wiues.
Then since in louing them we euer finde
Our selues apayde with hatefull scorne and blame,
I thinke it best, for easing of our minde,
Quite to forget their nature, sexe, and name:
Or else to leaue our ioies in looking on them,
Or if we looke, not once to thinke vpon them.

But yet it is a pretie iest to see
Some kind of men, whose madnes is so great,
That if the woman will not wholly bee
At their desires, then in a franticke heat
They call her Tygresse, cruell, and vnkinde,
And traitoresse vnto a louing minde.
Then shalt thou see these men vnseemely call
The modest women, whom they would haue naught,
Coy and disdainfull to conuerse with all:
And her that's chaste, vnmanner'd and vntaught.
Those that be wise and sober, full of pride:
And cruell those, whose honesties are tride.

I would to God that those dishonored names
Did fit them all, as well as all the rest,
Then none of them should bide so many shames,
Nor be deceiu'd by men, that loue them best:
For being cruell, proude, and rusticall,
They would not loue, nay could not loue at all.
For if the thing, which they so faine would haue,
By any meanes they cannot once obtaine,
Then do they wish for death, or for their graue:
But yet the same no sooner they attaine,
But make it but a sport and merie game,
And straight forget that ere they lou'd the same.

They faine themselues most sorrowfull and sad,
And wearied with a long and painfull life:
They still do tell the paines that they haue had,
And other lyes, which are with them so rife:
They call themselues vnhappie, poore, and blinde,
Confounded slaues, yet all but words of winde.
O how they can make Oceans of their eies!
And terme their flames their torments and their paines,
And breath out sighes, like vapours in the skies,
And belch out sobs like Aetnas burning vaines:

And crie, lament, and mourne, and other while
Dissemble like the weeping Crocodile.

Sometimes they make themselues like conquered slaues,
Sometimes themselues most valiant they do faine,
Sometimes great Lords, with many other braues,
Sometimes throwen downe, and vanquished againe:
Their wounds their ioyes, their paines their pleasures make
And happie comfort in their prisones take.
A thousand times they curse their hapless stars,
Despising life, and happie death implore:
Yet in the end so valiant in these wars
Of life and death, and other passions more,
That thousand deaths they say they passe and trie,
And yet they neuer make an end to die.

They giue, they gaine, they heale, they wound, they plie,
their soule, their life, their harms, their harts, their teares,
they ioy, they liue, they burne, they paine, they die,
with hap, with hope, with heate, with greefe, with feares.
And so in all their loues, and what they say,
There is a strange confusion euerie way.
And for this cause when Melibe in vaine
With daily suites his loue to me did make,
By telling me his amorous greefe and paine,
and euerie other passion for my sake:
I answered him (good Shepherd) let not grieue thee,
I vnderstand thee not, and lesse beleeue thee.

See therefore men how iustly you deserue
To leese our loue defam'd by your abuse:
Since from this counsell we must neuer swerue,
(As by the wisest dayly put in vse)
To put no faith nor trust in any lyer,
Nor loue that man, whom loue cannot inspire.
From this day therefore call vs now no more
Vnpitifull and cruell homicides,
For tis no reason, that vpon our score
You should nicke vp so many merie tides,
Nor with our liues and honours (to our cost)
Enrich your selues, and after make your boast.

For if (perhaps) a chaste and honest maide
Should looke vpon you in familiar sort,
Or talke with you, then straight it would be saide,
That she is light, and then with false report
Will iudge her naught, by fauouring with a kisse:
Fie shameless men, why blush you not at this.
And in this sort the Shepherdesse and dame
Of what degree soeuer that they bee,

On enerie side doth suffer wrong and blame,
Since that your wicked toongs in one agree
To call them shamelesse if they loue you well;
And cruell, if your loue they do expell.

And now you hold vs (which is worst of all)
For such accursed women, and so naught
That all those ils which vnto you befall,
You say you haue them onely by our fault.
For your misfortunes deaths, and other harme.
You say they come by our enchants and charmes.
Nay they do rather happen vnto you
By want of wisedome and your simple sence,
And not by our beautie; for most true
It is that Paris folly and offence
Did cause the ruine of King Priames towne:
And not faire Hellens beautie cast it downe.

But why so like dishonest women do you
With lying toongs so basely vs entreate?
When that so oft you do allure vs to you
With feastes, and maskes, and all of them so great,
That scarce you let vs rest in any sort,
But forcibly do draw vs to your sport.
Then of our honours, and of our estates
You haue no care, and no respect at all,
For we no sooner gone out of your gates,
And from your feastes, which we regarded small,
But by and by your toongs do goe awrie,
Misterming vs that could not you denie.

And yet you are so blinded in this ill,
And troublesome, when that your suites you mooue,
That you will haue the woman (gainst her will)
To die in hot desire of your loue.
So rude you be, that you are not content
To haue some small and modest fauour lent.
And thus the liues of these poore silly dames,
Which otherwise were modest, milde, and chaste,
And therewithall their honours and good names,
Like traitours vile you conquer, spoile, and waste.
So that those women that haue gone astray,
By your meanes were brought vnto decay.

But now what pen, what toong or golden verse
Of women may the vertues rare set downe?
How may my simple skill and wit rehersse
Their praises and perfections of renowne?
Their constancie, their loue and faith so pure,
Which in their harts remaines so firme and sure.

In many things the greatnes of their minde
They shew, contemning base and doubtfull feare:
As those, whose tender loue hath beene so kinde
Vnto their husbands, when they liuing were,
That all their moanes and sorrowes for their death
They ended soone, by stopping of their breath.

And if for vertue, and his chaste intent
Hippolytus deserued any praise,
On th'other side behold that excellent
And noble Roman Matrone in her daies
With stabbing dagger giuing vp the ghost,
I meane faire Lucrece, for her honour lost.
It was no doubt great valour in the youth,
As neuer like hath beene in all the rest,
Who vowing to his father faith and truth,
Deni'd his stepdames foule and fond request.
All which admit: Hippolytus is but one,
But thousands of Lucrecias haue beene knowne.

Cities haue we more (our beauties set aside)
For in good letters famous haue we bin:
And now to prooue our iudgements often tride,
And sharpnes of our finest wits therein,
Let Sappho and Corynna well suffice,
Who when they liu'd, for learning got the prise.
And learned men doe therefore banish vs
Their schooles, and places where they do dispute,
For feare (if we should argue and discusse)
With praise we should their arguments confute:
Too proud therefore, they would not by their will,
That women should excell them in their skill.

And if some authors, scorned in their loues,
Haue written ill of women, in their hate,
Not this our credits any whit disprooues,
And can as lesse diminish our estates:
Since they themselues haue writ as ill of men,
Beleeue not then their lying toongs and pen.
Yet this doth cause some small and little change,
And alteration in our great deserts:
For they must needes (and sure it is not strange,
Considering their vile malicious harts)
In whatsoeuer they doe write or say,
To speake the woorst of women that they may.

But yet among these Authors thou shalt finde
Most famous women, and most excellent:
Peruse their works but with indifferent minde,

And

And thou shalt see what numbers they present
Of good and honest Dames, before thine eies,
Of louing, faithfull, holy, chaste, and wise.
They doe adorne the world with goodly graces,
And with their vertues giue it golden light:
The shining beautie of their sweetest faces
Doth fill each hart and eie with great delight.
They bring all comforts, gladnes, peace, and ioy,
And driue away all sorrowes, and annoy.

By them (false men of bad, and wicked mindes)
You get great honour, glorie, and renowne:
And for their sakes, inuenting sundry kindes
Of verses, get sometimes the Laurell crowne:
And for their loue, in Martiall feates againe
To golden praise and fame you doe attaine.
You therefore that imploy your wits and time,
In searching out the course of others liues,
If that you finde some woman toucht with crime
Amongst so many widowes, maides, and wiues:
Condemne not all for one poore soules offence,
But rather hold your iudgements in suspence.

And if so many Dames so chaste, and faire,
Cannot subdue your proud and hautie harts,
Behold but one, whose vertues are so rare,
To whom the heauens so many goods imparts,
That onely she possesseth in her brest
As many giftes, nay more then all the rest.
The braue st men, and most heroicall,
And those that are most perfect in conceate,
I see this Lady far excell them all,
With her diuine perfections, and so great,
Which Orpheus did sing vpon a day,
As on his harpe most sweetely he did play.

Saying: That in that happy land, where white
And chalkie cliffes are steept in Brittish seas,
A morning star should rise exceeding bright,
Whose birth will siluer Cynthia much displease,
In that her golden light, and beauties gleames
Shall far surpasse her brothers borrowed beames.
And such a Lady shall she be indeede,
That she shall ioy each hart with happy chaunce:
Her woorthy house, wherein she shall succeede,
With titles of great praise she shall aduaunce:
And make the same more glorious and more knowne,
Then euer did the Affrican his owne.

Make triumphes then for birth of such a dame,
And let each hart be glad that hath beene sorie:
Reioice Meridian springs from whence she came;
You linage her, she honours you with glorie,
Her name from East to West, from North to South
Is well esteem'd and knowne in euery mouth.
Come then you Nymphes, resigne to her your powers,
Faire Nymphes that follow Cynthia in her chace,
Come waite on her and strowe the ground with flowers,
And sing in honour of her matchlesse grace:
And Muses nine that dwell in mount Parnasse
Let verse nor song without her praises passe.

Thou dar'st not Rome (in seeing her) presume
With Brutus stately Iland to compare,
But sooner wilt thy selfe with greefe consume,
To see how far she doth excell those faire
Ladies of Rome renowned in their daies,
In euery thing wherein they got most praise.
In bountie Porcia she shall much exceede,
In wisedome passe Cornelia Pompeies wife,
In honour Liuia, so haue her stars decreed,
And chaste Sulpitia in modestie of life:
Her beautie and the vertues in her brest,
Eugeria staines, and conquers all the rest.

This is the Thought that honours my desire,
This is my Parnasse and Aonian spring,
This is the Muse that giues me holy fire,
This is the Phœnix with her golden wing,
This is the star, and power of such might,
That giues me glorie, spirit, plume and light.
Petrarke had left his Laura all alone,
Folchet Aldagias praise with loftie stile,
Guilliaum the Countesse of Rossiglion,
Raymbald his Lady Morie Verdefueille,
To grace his verse he would besides refuse
The Countesse of Vrgiel for his Muse.

Anacreon Euripile defied
And Americ, Gentile, Gascoignes light:
Raymbald the Lord of Vacchieres denied
Of Monferrato Beatrice to delight
With sweetest verse to win her noble grace
Sister vnto the Marquis Boniface.
Arnoldo Daniel had as much repented
Bouilles praise his Lady long agon,
Bernard had neuer with his verse contented

The faire Vicounteſſe *of* Ventideon.
(Though theſe were Dames of beautie and renowne,
Gracing each Poet with a Laurell crowne.)

If they had ſeene this Lady in their time,
Who all their gifts and beauties doth poſſeſſe,
They had ſtrain'd foorth inuention, verſe, and rime,
To celebrate ſo high a Patroneſſe.
On her their thoughts and pens they had imployed,
Happy ſo rare a Muſe to haue enioyed.
This did Orpheus *ſing with ſweeteſt verſe,*
And Eccho *anſwered to his ſiluer voice,*
And euery time he did the ſame rehearſe,
The land and ſea did preſently reioice
To heare the ioyfull newes of ſuch an one,
By whom their honour ſhould be ſo much knowne.

Now then from this day foorth and euermore
Let wicked men their falſe opinions leaue,
And though there were not (as there is) ſuch ſtore
Of woorthy Dames (as vainly they conceiue)
This onely one *with honour ſhall recall,*
And amplifie the glorie of vs all.

The praiſe and defence of women, and the braue grace and ſweet note where-with *Beliſa* ſung it, pleaſed and delighted them all paſſing well. Wherefore *Don Felix* acknowledging himſelfe ouercommed, *Beliſa* was well content, and *Arſileus* her husband not a little proude. All the men there confeſſed all to be true that was ſaid in the ſong, and ſung in the fauour of women; and all that to be falſe that was ſaid and ſung in the diſpraiſe and diſgrace of men, and eſpecially thoſe verſes which inluriouſly inuayed againſt their falſhood, deceits, and diſſembled paines in loue; with affirmation rather of their firmer faith and truer torments, then they outwardly expreſſed. That which moſt of all pleaſed *Arſileus*, was the anſwere of *Floriſia* to *Melibeus*, bicauſe it was no leſſe pithie then pleaſant; and alſo bicauſe he had ſometimes heard *Beliſa* ſing a ſong vpon that matter which delighted him very much. Wherefore he praied her to reioice ſo noble and merie companie as that was, by ſinging it once againe. Who, bicauſe ſhe could not denie her deere *Arſileus*, although ſhe was ſomewhat wearie with her laſt ſong, to the ſame tune did ſing it: and this it was.

POore Melibee *of loue and hope forgot,*
Told to Floriſia *greefes that he had paſt,*
She anſwered him: I vnderſtand thee not,
And leſſe beleeue thee (Shepherd) what thou ſaieſt.

He ſaith: My peereleſſe Shepherdeſſe,
Behold the paine wherewith I die,
Which I endure with willingneſſe,
And ſeeke that greefe, which I would flie:
My hot deſires doe burne and die I wot,

Hope

Hope is my life, but feare the same doth waste:
She answered him: I vnderstand thee not,
And lesse beleeue thee (Shepherd) what thou saiest.

He saith: The pale and pinching care
Hath beene so pleasant to my minde,
That how much more fals to my share,
The more I doe desire to finde:
I craue no guerdon for my painefull lot,
But as I loue, to be belou'd as fast:
She answered him: I vnderstand thee not,
And lesse beleeue thee (Shepherd) what thou saiest.

He saith: My death should now redresse
My paines, but for the greeuous ill
Which I should feele (faire Shepherdesse)
In leauing of to see thee still:
But if I see thee sad, a harder knot
Of greefes I feele, and greater death doe tast:
She answered him: I vnderstand thee not,
And lesse beleeue thee (Shepherd) what thou saiest.

He saith: In seeing thee I die,
And when I see thee not, I paine,
In seeking thee, for feare I flie,
I haue to finde thee out againe.
As old Proteus *was woont to change his cote,*
Figure, and shape which long time did not last:
She answered him: I vnderstand thee not,
And lesse beleeue thee (Shepherd) what thou saiest.

He saith: I doe pretend to craue
No more good then my soule can get:
Bicause with that small hope I haue,
(Me thinkes) I doe offend thee yet.
For suffring for thy sake the smallest iot
Of wounding greefe a thousand ioies I tast:
She answered him: I vnderstand thee not,
And lesse beleeue thee (Shepherd) what thou saiest.

Whilest *Belisa* was singing both her songs, *Felicia* commaunded a Nymphe to ouersee and set in order a gallant sport and pastime, which was prepared before, and which should presently insue, which she so well executed, that euen then, when the Shepherdesse had ended her song, they heard a great noise and hurly burly in the riuer hard by, as it were the beating of oares in the water. Whereupon all of them went towards it, and being come to the riuer side, they saw twelue little ships comming in two seuerall nauies from the riuer beneath, brauely depainted with diuers colours, and verie richly set forth. Sixe of them bore sailes of white and crimosin damaske, and their displayed flags in the tops, & streamers in their poupes

of

of the ſame colours: And the other ſixe, their ſailes, flagges, and ſtreamers of murrey ſattin with yellow ſhrouds and tackling to the ſame. Their oares were brauely gilt all ouer; and they came decked, ſtrowed, and adorned with many ſweete flowers, and garlands of Roſes. In euerie one of them were ſixe Nymphes apeece, apparelled with ſhort moreſco gownes: they of the one fleete with crimoſin veluet laid on with ſiluer lace and fringe; and they of the other, of murrey veluet embrodered with curious workemanſhip of gold, hauing on their armes a ſleeue of golde and ſiluer made fit vnto them, and carrying their targets on their armes after the manner of the valiant Amazones. They that rowed theſe fiue ſhips, were certaine Sauages, crowned with garlands of Roſes, and bound to their ſeats with chaines of ſiluer. There aroſe amongſt them a great noiſe of drums, trumpets, ſhagbotes, cornets, and of many other ſorts of muſicke; at ſound of which two and two togigither with a maruellous ſweete concent keeping iuſt time and meaſure, entered into the riuer, which cauſed great woonder in them that looked on. After this they parted themſelues into two nauies, and out of both of them one ſhip apeece of defiance and anſwere came out, the reſt remayning beholders on either ſide. In each of theſe two ſhips came a Sauage apparelled with the colours of his owne ſide, ſtanding bolt vpright in the forecaſtle, carrying on his left arme a ſhield, which couered him from top to toe, and in his right hand a launce, painted with the ſelfe ſame colours. They both at one time hoyſted ſaile, and with force of oares ran one againſt the other with great furie. The Nymphes and Sauages, and they that fauoured each partie, made great ſhootes and cries to encourage their ſides. They that rowed, emploied all their force, the one ſide and the other ſtriuing to ſaile with greater violence, and to make the ſtronger encounter. And the Sauages being welny met togither, and armed with their targets and launces, it was the greateſt delight in the world to ſee how they were encouraged to this encounter, and how they ſped in it: For they ſtoode not ſo ſurely, nor had not ſo great dexteritie in their fight, but that with the great violence that the ſhips met one another, and with the puſhes that they gaue with their launces vpon their targets, they were not able to ſtande on their feete, ſometimes falling downe vpon the hatches, and ſometimes into the riuer. Wherewith the laughter of them on the ſhoare encreaſed, and the reioycing and triumphes of them, whoſe ſide had done beſt, and the muſicke to encourage them on both ſides. The iuſters, when they fell into the water, went ſwimming vp and downe, vntill being helped by the Nymphes on whoſe ſide they fought, they made a freſh encounter, and falling into the water againe, redoubled the laughing of the beholders, and the ſport with exceeding glee and meriment. In the end the ſhip with white and crimoſin ſailes came on ſo faſt, and with ſuch force, and her champion ſo ſteadie in his place, that he ſtoode ſtill on foote, bearing downe his aduerſarie before him into the riuer. Which when the Nymphes of his ſquadron perceiued, made ſuch triumphe, with hallowing, and ringing ſuch a ſtrange peale of muſicke, that the other ſide was halfe abaſhed, and daſht from any farther enterpriſe: But eſpecially one proude and ſtoute Sauage amongſt the reſt, who, being ſomwhat aſhamed and angrie at their foile, ſaid. Is it poſſible that there is any in our company of ſo ſmall courage and ſtrength, that is not able to abide ſo feeble and light blowes? Vnlocke this chaine from my legs, and let him that hath prooued himſelfe ſo weake a iuſter, row in my place, and you ſhall ſee how I will make you conquerours, and confound our enemies in their owne fooliſh triumph. He had no ſooner ſaide the word, but deliuered from his chaine by a Nymphe, with a braue

courage

courage he tooke his launce and target, and manfully ſtood vpright in the prow of the ſhip. Then the Sauages with valiant mindes began to row on both ſides, and the Nymphes to make loude voices in the aire. The contrarie ſhip came with the ſame force as before, but her Sauage had little need to ſet his ſtaffe in reſt to get the victorie; for the champion that had braued it ſo much, before they met, with the great force and haſte that the ſhip carryed him, could not poſſibly keepe himſelfe on foote, but that with ſhield and ſpeare he fell into the water, giuing a manifeſt and cleere example, *That the proudeſt and moſt preſumptuous fall moſt often into greateſt diſgraces.* The Nymphes tooke him vp againe (who went ſwimming vp and downe) although he little deſerued it: But the fiue other ſhips ſpoken of before, remaining aſide by themſelues, ſeeing their captaine ouercommed, what with choler, ſhame, and deſire to regaine the victorie, and their loſt honours, came all ruſhing out at once. The other fiue of white and crimoſin did the like, and then the Nymphes beſtirred them in throwing perfumed pellets and muskebals of white and red waxe, and painted egſhels full of orange and roſe water, making ſuch a ſhrill ſhoute, and fighting with ſo good order and valour, that there they brauely figured a ſhip yeelding it ſelfe, as if it had beene ſo in good earneſt. At the end whereof the ſhips with the murrey colours ſhewed themſelues ouercommed with ſtriking ſaile, & yeelded to the other Nymphes, who like valiant conquerours, leaped into them by and by, and then with the ſame muſicke as before, came to the riuer banks, where they diſimbarked the conquerours, and thoſe that were vanquiſhed, with the Sauages their captiues, making a goodly ſhew with their ſeuerall and ſingular beauties. When this ſport was finiſhed, *Felicia* with *Eugerius*, & the other companie following them, went backe againe to the fountaine, where they were no ſooner come, but they found a Shepherd, that during all the time of the fight by water, had beene in the orchard, and had ſitten neere vnto the fountaine. He ſeemed verie comely and gracious in all their eies, but eſpecially in *Felicias*, who knew him incontinently, and ſaid thus vnto him.

Thou couldeſt not haue come at a better time *(Turianus)* for remedie of thy greefes, and for encreaſe of this ſolace and ſport. We will hereafter take care for thy greefe, and helpe it at fitter time, as for the reſt, thou muſt ſhew this goodly companie, how much thou canſt delight with thy ſweete ſinging. For now I ſee thee with thy Rebecke out of thy ſcrip, asthough thou wouldeſt pleaſe this faire companie, ſing ſomething of thy *Elumia*; for thou ſhalt for this ſeruice ſee thy ſelfe hereafter well ſatisfied and contented. The Shepherd was amazed to heare *Felicia* call him by his name, and the Shepherdeſſe his loue by hers, and that ſhe promiſed him ſome lightning of his paine: Wherefore meaning to requite ſuch offers with rather obeying her commaund, then onely with ſimple thankes to gratifie them, all of them being ſet, and keeping ſilence, he began to play a while on his Rebecke, and to ſing that which followeth.

Prouençall Rythmes.

WHen that with thouſand parti-coloured flowers
The ſpringtide comes in euerie pleaſant mead,
And glorious Titan, *free from winters ſhowers,*
With golden beames the fields doth ouerſpread,
The Shepherds rich and frollicke in their bowers,
With pipes and ſongs their flockes to fields do lead:

The

The nightingall with warbling throte
Doth ing forth many a pleasant note,
that makes the woods to ring:
The fountaines cleere as Christall glasse,
About the which, vpon the grasse
The Nymphes do sit and sing:
But let Eluinia turne her eies from all those sweete delights,
Then doth continuall winter rage with stormy daies and nights.

When that the freezing Northren windes disgrace
The fragrant flowers, the stately trees and tall
Of all their pride, and couereth euery place
With flakes of snow, which neuer cease to fall:
And nightingals their songs leaue for a space,
And desert fieldes, that haue no greene at all:
The daies are yrkesome short and sad,
The cold nights blow, as they were mad,
With many a bitter blast:
The cloudes as darke as any pitch,
And thicke as lothsome mud in ditch,
The aire do ouercast:
But let Eluinia walke the fields or where it please her best,
There merie springtide doth returne her praises to protest.

If that the angrie heauens sometimes throw downe
A fearfull lightning or some cruell thunder,
The silly Shepherd far from wood or towne,
Begins to feare, to tremble and to wonder,
And if the hayle fall thicke vpon the ground
Like little stones, do beat and burst asunder
The fruit, and leaues in euerie place,
And spoiles the flowers of their grace,
A strange, and pitious sight:
The Shepherd runs away amaine,
Leauing his sheepe vpon the plaine
With swift and fearfull flight:
But let Eluinia walke the fields her beautie euerie where
Doth cleere the heauens, and rids the Shepherds hart from trembling feare.

And if by chaunce I sing or pipe on hie,
Vnder the shade of Elme or little hill,
The Song thrush and the heauenly Larke replie
Vnto my songs, with sweetest notes at will:
And when the fresh and Western windes in skie
Breath forth an aire, so pleasant and so still:
When euerie ioy, and sweete content,
And euerie day in pleasures spent
Doth giue me new delights,
And free from feare with liuely cheere

In happines I ſpend the yeere,
The pleaſant daies and nights:
But if Eluinia *once do frowne, I am much more afraide*
Then if a burning lightning had my ſences all diſmaide.

If that Diana *goeth forth to chace*
The ſauage beaſtes, with bended bow to tame,
With troups of Nymphes that waite vpon her grace
Whoſe thoughts chaſte ſports and exerciſe do frame:
And with the ſame with great delight do trace
The woods and lawnes in ſeeking out ſome game.
Hamadriades *and* Napees *faire*
With ſtrowing Roſes, do prepare
The way before their Queene:
The Nymphes that follow ſweetly ſing,
And hils and dales with triumphes ring,
And woods both freſh and greene:
But if ſhe come vnto the wood, where my Eluinia *chaceth*
She makes her ſilent, quailes her pride, and beauties all diſgraceth.

And when her bodie whiter then the ſnow
She waſheth in the fountaine chriſtall bright,
If thither Cynthia *ſhould but chaunce to goe,*
And ſee thoſe parts ſo daintie and ſo white,
For ſhame ſhe would caſt downe her eies I know,
And ſo depart, confounded at that ſight:
For in thoſe fountaine waters cleere
So braue a figure doth appeere,
As like was neuer ſeene:
So faire a face, ſuch golden haire
With rareſt grace are ſhining there
As like hath neuer beene:
And bold Acteon *if he did but ſee there alone,*
Had not beene turn'd into a Hart, but to a Marble ſtone.

A thouſand times my ſong I will reply thee,
In euerie place where I doe feed my ſheepe,
But hence away, for pitie now go hie thee
Vnto my Loue, and tell her how I weepe.
See if thou canſt but mooue her hart
To ſome ſmall pitie of my ſmart,
And of my little reſt:
Go to my faire and fatall ſtar,
Tell her what wounding thoughts do war
Within my painfull breſt.
O happie man if that thou mighteſt this grace of Fortune trie,
To ſee Eluinia *change her minde, or elſe thy ſelfe to die.*

How much the ſweete voice and gentle grace of this enamoured Shepherd pleaſed them all, I am not able to expreſſe, whoſe ſong was ſo melodious, and perſonage

ſonage ſo faire and comely, that he ſeemed to be *Apollo*, who had ſometimes taken vpon him a Shepherds ſhape for the loue of a countrey wench, for they could not iudge any more like vnto him for perfection in beauty, and ſweetnes in ſong: whereupon *Montanus* maruelling much, ſaid. *Elumia* (gentle Shepherd) is not a little beholding to thee, of whom thou haſte ſo ſweetely ſung, not onely for the fauour ſhe hath got, to be beloued of ſo gracious a Shepherd as thy ſelfe; but by hauing her beauties, and virtues with thy delicate compariſons and daintie verſes ſo highly commended. And ſhe being beloued of thee, it cannot be otherwiſe imagined, but that her perfections of bodie and vertues of minde are moſt rare and excellent. And that which doth not a little helpe to the accompliſhment of her gifts, is the delight and dexteritie that ſhe hath in hunting, for which thou didſt compare her with *Diana*; bicauſe it is one of the braue qualities which make both Nymphes and Shepherdeſſes to be thought more beautifull and gracious, and moſt worthie of golden praiſes: For I my ſelfe did ſometime know a Shepherd in our towne, and my *Iſmenia* and *Seluagia* knew him alſo verie well; who being enamoured of a Shepherdeſſe (called *Argia*) was with none of her paſſing graces more captiuated, then with her ſingular cunning in ſhooting and delight that ſhe had in her bowe, which was continually in her hande, and her quiuer of ſteely headed arrowes at her backe, wherewith ſhee hunted, wounded, and killed, the nymble footed Does, wilde beaſtes, and ſimple birdes. For which delight her louing Shepherd (named *Olympius*) did ſometimes ſing a pretie Sonnet, made of the skill, beautie, and cruelty of that Shepherdeſſe, fayning a challenge and contention betweene her, the Goddeſſe *Diana* and *Cupid*, whether of them three ſhould ſhoote beſt, a fine and delicate conceit, which ſometimes to delight me, I euer haue by hart. With this *Clenarda* ſtept foorth and ſaid. It is reaſon *Montanus* that we enioy part of that delight with thee in hearing it: And nothing can pleaſe me better, then to heare thee ſing it for the great loue and deuotion that I haue to that exerciſe. I am content (ſaid *Montanus*) if I ſhall not ſeeme troubleſome with it. That cannot cauſe any trouble (ſaide *Polydorus*) which with ſo generall delight ſhall be heard. *Montanus* then playing on his pipe ſung *Olympius* Sonnet, which was this.

Diana, Loue, *and my faire* Shepherdeſſe,
Did in the field their chiefeſt cunning trie,
By ſhooting arrowes at a tree neere by,
Whoſe barke a painted hart did there expreſſe:
Diana *ſtakes her beautie mercileſſe,*
Cupid *his bowe,* Argia *her libertie:*
Who ſhewed in her ſhot a quicker eie,
A better grace, more courage, and ſucceſſe:
And ſo did ſhe Dianas *beautie win,*
And Cupids *weapons, by which conquer'd prize*
So faire and cruell ſhe hath euer bin,
That her ſweete figure from my wearied eies,
And from my painfull hart her cruell bowe
Haue ſtolne my life and freedome long agoe.

This Sonnet was maruellous delightfull to them all, and the ſweetnes, wherwith *Montanus* ſung it, a great deale more. And after they had diſcourſed of euery particular part and matter of it, *Felicia* ſeeing the night came on, and thinking ſhe had

had feasted and sported her guests that day sufficiently, made a signe by her countenance, that she would say something; whereupon they left of their mirth and talke for a while, and with attentiue mindes harkened vnto her: and silence being kept, with her accustomed grauitie, she thus began to speake.

I am vndoubtedly perswaded (noble Lordes and Ladies, and you worthy Shepherds) that, since the time that you came to my house, you haue no cause to complaine of my fauours bestowed on you, nor of the diligence and seruice of my Nymphes employed for your sakes. For the desire which I had to please you all, was so great, and the delight which I take to helpe distressed men to their contentment, so proper to my nature, that (me thinks) if I had done a great deale more for you, it had bin but little in respect of that which your virtues deserue. Onely *Narcisus* with the crueltie of *Melisea*, and *Turianus* with the disdaine of *Eluina*, remaine discontent amongst you all. Whom it shall now satisfie to comfort themselues with hope of their future felicities, since that my word (which was neuer stained with deceit and lye) hath assuredly promised them a speedie and full contentment by those meanes which shall be most expedient for them. I see old *Engerius* glad with his sonne, his daughters, and his sonne in law, and not without cause, since for loue of them he hath passed so many dangers, and suffered such extreme paine, sorrow, and anguish of minde. *Felicia* hauing ended her speech, *Engerius* wondered greatly at her wisedome, and the rest were satisfied and well content with so gentle and courteous instructions, wherby they gathered out of them profitable lessons to lead from thence forth a virtuous and happie life. And so all of them rising from their places about the fountaine, and following the sage Ladie, went out of the garden into the Palace, euerie one to their seuerall lodgings, accommodating their mindes to the ioyfull feasts & princely sports of the next day following: The which, and that which happened to *Narcisus*, *Turianus*, *Taurisus*, and *Berardus*, with the delectable historie of *Dantem*, and *Duarda* the *Portugale* Shepherds (which for certaine respects is omitted heere) and many other things of great delight, pleasure, and profit, are handled in the second Part of this Booke.

All these three Partes were finished the first of May 1583.

Boto el amor en Yugo.

Faultes escaped.

Page 7. *line* 35. *reade* debt. *page* 40. *line* 3. *read* See. *p.* 60. *l.* 18. *r.* Ash colour veluet hose. *p.* 62. *l.* 45. *r.* be not deuided. *p.* 73. *l.* 42. *r.* nurse. *p.* 80. *l.* 20. *r.* brake with. *p.* 88. *l.* 34. *r.* Ill. *p.* 99. *l.* 40. *r.* Vique. *p.* 104. *l.* 36. *r.* temerous. *p.* 139. *l.* 31. *r.* such beautie. *p.* 145. *l* 13. *r.* away. *and l.* 46. *r.* hap. *p.* 149. *l.* 10. *r.* And she. *p.* 153. *l.* 1. *r.* heades. *p.* 163. *l.* 22. & 23. or to mistrust. *p.* 174. *l.* 11. *r.* all goodes. *p.* 190. *l.* 29. *r.* not them. *p.* 195. *l.* 1. *r.* turne amaine. *p.* 208. *l.* 39. *r.* mids was greene to shew that in the mids of. *p.* 213. *l.* 22. *r.* sure. *p.* 228. *l.* 11. *r.* But rude. *p.* 230. *l.* 31. *r.* legge, where. *p.* 253. *l.* 24. *r.* As aires. *p.* 257. *l.* 19. *r.* a gloze. *and l.* 47. *r.* with our. *pag.* 282. *l.* 1. *r.* was now. *pag.* 284. *l.* 25. *r.* loth. *p.* 286. *l.* 35. *r.* with rurall. *p.* 309. *l.* 39. *r.* dorre. *p.* 311. *l.* 1. *r.* were wrought. *p.* 331. *l.* 32. *r.* vertuous. *p.* 340. *l.* 3. *r.* she spake.